

VOLUME 3



# DECODING THE DELUGE

and finding the path for civilization

By David  
Huttner



***DECODING THE DELUGE***

*And Finding the Path for Civilization*

**Volume III of Three Volumes**

by

**David Huttner**

Version: 26.32; Release date: February 12, 2026  
Cover by A. Watson, Chen W. and D. Huttner  
Copyright 2026, by David Robert Huttner

The rights to this book, both the digital and the hardcopy book rights, in all languages, are henceforth in the public domain. You may copy, print, translate, and sell it, unaltered but royalty free. Email your comments, questions and suggestions to me, David Huttner, at [drhuttner@gmail.com](mailto:drhuttner@gmail.com).

Other Works of David Huttner, Available as Free eBooks at  
[PeaceLoveAndProgressParty.org](http://PeaceLoveAndProgressParty.org) and Soon to be Available Autographed and in  
Hardcopy at <http://www.DavidHuttnerBooks.com>, Include:

*Decoding the Deluge and finding the path for civilization, Vols 1&2*

*Irish Mythology passageway to prehistory*

*Stage II of the Nonviolent Rainbow Revolution*

*Making the Subjective and Objective Worlds One*

*Just Say No to Latent Homosexual Crusades*

*Social Harmony as Measured by Music (a lecture)*

*The First Christmas (a short play)*

*Selected Works of David Huttner Volumes 1, 2 and 3*

*Heaven Sent*

*Converting the World to English*

*What the Non-Chinese Peoples Must Do to Compete and End P(l)andemics*

## **Table of Contents for This Volume 3**

[Other Works of Author David Huttner](#)

[List Of Illustrations for Volume 3](#)

[List Of Tables for Volume 3](#)

[36. Digging Up the Sumerian Garden](#)

[37. The Polynesians, Easter Island And  
The Prophets of Cargo](#)

### **CONCLUSION**

### **APPENDICES**

[A. The Roman Saturnalia: A Second Sin Rite](#)

[B. Old Wine, Australian Bottles](#)

[C. Osiris in The Underworld: Egypt in A Nutshell](#)

[D. Stonehenge and Other Rock Monuments](#)

[Around The World](#)

[E. The Common Core to The World's Earliest](#)

["Heroic" Literatures](#)

[F. Iman Wilkens Finds Troy](#)

[But Fails to Understand Religion](#)

[G. Understanding Ice Cycles as We Must to Interpret What Remains](#)

[Of Plato's Atlantis and Pin Down the Start of the Neolithic](#)

[H. Uncovering the First Americans](#)

[List Of Works Referred to In the Text](#)

[Connect With Dave](#)



## List of Illustrations and Drawings for Volume 3

[Figure 63k: Early, Sumerian grain gods and goddess](#)

Figure [64a](#) & [b](#): Polynesian Triangle

[Figure 65: Wooden statue of Moai Kavakava, Polynesian primal father](#)

[Figure 66: Old moai stone statue from Easter Island](#)

[Figure 67: Moai from Ra'ivavae, a Cook Island](#)

[Figure 68: Easter Island marae platform, new style moai](#)

[Figure 69a: Buccaneer John Davis \(Robert Searle\)](#)

[Figure 69b: Rock-Carved "Birdman," Orongo Village, Easter Island](#)

[Figure 70a: Birdman Cult's pirate ship with \(divine\) turtle anchor](#)

[Figure 70b: Graph of Climbing CO<sub>2</sub> Levels](#)

[Figure 70c: The Baby Supply for 2011 and 2013](#)

Figure [70d](#) & [e](#): Carnival in Rio de Janiero

[Figure 71: Ice Age Australia](#)

Figures 72 & 73: [Wooden](#) and [Stone](#) *Churingas*

[Figure 74: Zervan Akdarana, the "God of Boundless Time"](#)

[Figure 75a: Rock face drawings, the earliest Australian art](#)

[Figure 75b: Emily Gap, near Alice Springs, Australia](#)

[Figure 76: Ilpintira of the Emu Totem](#)

[Figure 77: \*Impichiuma\* of the Hakea Flower Totem](#)

[Figure 78: Old cannibals in search of their killers](#)

[Figure 79a: Aerial view of Egypt](#)

[Figure 79b: Map of Ancient Egypt](#)

[Figure 79c: Coffin panel with hieratic text](#)

[Figure 80: Orthodox \(Heliopolis\) divine Egyptian cladogram](#)

[Figure 81: Osiris/Abydos, cosmic flower or primeval lotus](#)

[Figure 82: Sito, the primeval serpent](#)

[Figure 83: Representations of the Primeval \(Egyptian\) Mound](#)

[Figure 84: \*Khoprer\*, the divine beetle and her egg](#)

[Figure 85: The eye of Atum/Ra or Horus](#)

[Figure 86: Shu holding up Nut \(the sky\)](#)

[Figure 87a: Ubiquitous crowns of ancient Egypt](#)

[Figure 87b: Giza pyramids](#)

[Figure 87c: Topographical Map of Egypt](#)

[Figure 88a: Map showing most of the world's megaliths](#)

[Figure 88b: European stone worshippers](#)

[Figure 89: Typical dolmen](#)

[Figure 90: Map of European & Mediterranean chamber-tombs](#)

[Figure 91: Map of Central Asian chamber-tombs](#)

[Figure 92: Map of Oriental chamber-tombs](#)

[Figure 93: Chamber-tomb or tumulus with court](#)

[Figure 94: Floor plan of court-type tumulus](#)

[Figure 95: Europe's most famous chamber-tomb, New Grange](#)

[Figure 96a: Floor plans of typical passage tombs](#)

[Figure 96b: Wiltshire's antiquities](#)

[Figure 96c & d: West Kennet Long Barrow](#)

[Figure 97: Cup and ring markings](#)

[Figure 98: Ring markings on unrestored New Grange entrance](#)

[Figure 99: Solar Ship \(with Sail?\) from New Grange](#)

[Figure 100: Solar Ship from Locmariaker, Brittany](#)

[Figure 101: Solar Ship from Hallande, Sweden](#)

[Figure 102: The traditional curragh](#)

[Figure 103: Stone alignment or avenue](#)

[Figure 104: British Beakers over time](#)

[Figure 105a: Copper, tin and gold sources in Europe](#)

[Figure 105b: Europe circa 10,900 ya during the Younger Dryas](#)

[Figure 105c: Temperature and ice chart for the last 18 ky](#)

[Figure 105d: Cornwall tin mining areas,](#)

[Figure 106: An early cromlech \(stone circle or ring monument\)](#)

[Figure 107: Aerial view of Stonehenge and Heel Stone](#)

[Figure 108: Stonehenge I and Aubrey Holes](#)

[Figure 109: Hawkins' Astronomical Axes](#)

[Figure 110: Woodhenge, a Fraternal cromlech](#)

[Figure 111: The forerunners of the Christian cross](#)

[Figure 112: Stonehenge II](#)

[Figure 113: Stonehenge III](#)

[Figure 114: Goddess Urnanche](#)

[Figure 115: Odysseus](#)

[Figure 116a: Mithra slaying the Mithraic bull](#)

[Figure 116b: Topographical map of the Trojan plain](#)

[Figure 116c: Devil's Dyke in Cambridgeshire](#)

[Figure 116d: Fleam Dyke](#)

[Figure 116e: Likely lines for the invaders of Troy to have established](#)

[Figure 116f: Devil's Dyke in West Sussex](#)

[Figure 116g: Some people worth remembering](#)

[Figure 117a: Wandlebury Ring, the Remaining Center of What Once was Troy](#)

[Figure 117b: Ruins of the Palace at Knossos](#)

[Figure 117c: Palace at Knossos at it looked before 1450 BC](#)

[Figure 117d: Throne Room at the Palace at Knossos](#)

[Figure 118: An Ogham stone](#)

[Figure 119: The Ogham cipher](#)

[Figure 120a: North Atlantic Ice Age areas above sea level](#)

[Figure 120b: Europe and the glacier at the LGM \(last glacial max\)](#)

Figures [120c](#) & [d](#): Glacial lakes Agassiz and Missoula

Figures [121](#) & [122](#): Portrait busts of Socrates and Plato

[Figure 123a: Cahokia newspaper article w. C.M. Russell painting](#)

[Figure 123b: Niède Guidon and Serra da Capivada Park, Brazil](#)

[Figure 123c: Topographical map of northwest African coast](#)

[Figure 123d: The Nile Location of all Sudanese Pyramids](#)

[Figure 123e: Topographical map of Morocco](#)

[Figure 123f: The Serpent Effigy Mound of Adams County, Ohio](#)

[Figure 123g: A Classical Chacmool, this one from Tula](#)

[Figure 123h: A Pipe Decorated with a Paleolithic, Owl Chacmool](#)

[Figure 123i: Sacrificial knives found in North America](#)

[Figure 123j: The “Birdman” found in the Etowah Mound](#)

[Figure 123k: One of two Woodhenges found near Cahokia](#)

[Figure 123l: The Hopeton site, with typical Ohio Enclosures](#)

[Figure 124: North American point types](#)

[Figure 125a: Southeastern North America fishtail point distribution](#)

[Figure 125b: Typical Amazonian Blow Pipe](#)

[Figure 125c: Beringia circa 13200 years BPE](#)

[Figure 125d: Smithsonian Map of Once-extent Mounds in the Eastern USA, after Cyrus Thomas](#)

[Figure 126: Aerial view of Cahokia Mound’s Platform Top](#)

[Figure 127: Silbury Hill, a Typical Conical Mound](#)

[Figure 128: Poverty Point \(Louisiana\)](#)

[Figure 129a & b: Ocean Maximum/Last Glacial Maximum Map](#)

[Figure 130a: Figure 10b with Fatal Date Circled](#)

[Figure 130b: The Southern Mayan Area](#)

[Figure 131: The author \(David Huttner\)](#)

### **List of Tables for Volume 3**

[Table 4: Words Equivalent to “Old” Of Modern English](#)

[Table 5: Chronology of Ancient Egypt](#)

[Back to the top](#)

## Chapter 36: Digging Up the Sumerian Garden

*There lives more faith in honest doubt, believe me,  
than in half the creeds. --Alfred Tennyson*

In Chapter 35, we saw an Aztec myth about falling out of the garden due to picking blossoms from the tree of life, a crime that clearly equated with exterminating our parent species in the Species War. You've got to be wondering if Genesis 3 (Adam and Eve falling from the garden due to Eve picking from and Adam eating from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil) has the same meaning or (alternatively) relates to taboo sex as has been assumed by Freud and most modern men. A more thorough understanding of Mesopotamian mythology will provide the answer. Appendix D will give us absolute certainty of that answer. We'll then have a better understanding of our own, modern religion.

### ISHTAR AND TAMMUZ

Recall Professor Langdon's description of Ishtar in Volume 1 and the probability that she was once a witch. Langdon adds that she was also known as Quadishtu, the ordinary Babylonian word for harlot. She was priestess of the temple prostitutes. (See Langdon: 30.)

So, the witches, such as Gullveig (Chapter 21), Toci (Chapter 35) and Ishtar, were women who consorted with men of both subspecies. After the Species War victory, these collaborators would have been burned alive. During the Species War, they would have been always pregnant, thus their later association with fertility and nature *per se*. We can surmise that this group of highly charged, ambivalent, Species War victims became the "Earth Mothers," "Great Mothers" or "Mother goddesses." In the pages ahead, Sumerian data will verify this. These witch/Mother goddesses were thought to have had a special reason for migrating annually with the greenery to and from the underworld.

*It was thought that Ishtar and other Mother Goddess witches went regularly to the underworld to continue enjoying sexual relations with the Homo erecti.* That's why the first kings --who, as Graves informed us (Chapter 5), were the above-ground, magical lovers of the Mother Goddess --were dispatched and replaced at the first sign of any loss of virility. The first kings had to be as sexually satisfying as the *Homo erectus* gods if the Earth Mother and the vegetation were to return in full and on schedule.

In pagan times, prostitutes were fixtures in most of the temples for similar reasons. The temples were houses for gods who happened to be on earth. After



the defeat of the totem monsters (Species War victory) and the enthronement of Marduk and during Marduk's ordering and creation of the world, a passage of the Babylonian Creation Epic reads:

After King Marduk had issued the laws of the totality of the gods,  
And for the Anunnaki of Heaven and Earth had decreed their laws,  
The Anunnaki opened their mouths, saying unto Marduk, their lord:  
'O divine light, lord who has brought about our deliverance,  
What shall be our sign of deliverance before thee?

Come let us make a shrine, whose name is called,  
"Thy chamber, lo it is our place of repose by night";  
Come let us repose therein.  
Come, we will found a shrine as an abode for thee.  
On the day when we shall arrive, we will repose therein.'  
--Langdon: 307

Prostitutes were assigned to the temples to (mysteriously and in magical rituals) ingratiate any gods who might be traveling through the area. *Homo erectus* was thus assured that *Homo sapiens* had improved their attitudes and were deserving of divine beneficence. In their spare time and to make a living, the girls engaged in more concrete activities. A bronze model of a pagan temple, unearthed in Yunnan and on display in a Kunming, China park, confirms this primitive thinking. The women outside are depicted in sexually inviting positions. The roof depicts a large serpent, a welcome sign for the *Homo erectus* spirits flying overhead that this temple is for them. (Naturally I had to point all this out because Chinese people no longer prostitute themselves and couldn't make heads or tails of it.)

With the advent of modern times (trade, near-neighbor alienation and monogamy per Chapter 7) temple prostitutes and tales about the amours of the Earth Mother/Witches had to go. Prostitution and polygamy became abominations to all modern men who --for reasons necessary but unknown to themselves --had, *in their public aspect*, ceased to be libertines. Paganism's bacchanalian depiction of afterlife and the resurrection was left intact; but all traces of prostitution and polygamy became unacceptable within proper society.

So, at this time, our strait-laced, monogamous ancestors rewrote these myths to give the Earth Mothers a new motive for going to the underworld. The new motive reacted to the general tendency of rebellion to the new misery, to the forced monogamy to which modern people have yet to fully adapt, to the psychic impotence they have yet to conquer. In the new versions, Ishtar was said to have

married her own son; and it was understood that, as punishment for this violation of taboo, Ishtar or Tammuz had to seasonally serve time in Hell.

Fortunately, you don't have to rely completely on psychoanalysis and the logical development of my theories to know the nature of Ishtar's original underworld visits. The original myths would have included material that made great dramatic and burlesque acts in pagan pageants. Even the sanitized version of Ishtar and Tammuz preserved some of this for its entertainment value. For example, when Ishtar, goddess of love and war, arrives at the gate of Hell, wanting to conquer a realm instead of merely individuals, she says,

O watchman, open thy gate.

Open thy gate, I will enter.

If thou openest not the gate that I enter,

I will break the door and shatter the lock.

I will break the threshold and shatter the doors.

I will cause the dead to arise that they consume the living.

The dead shall be more numerous than the living. --Langdon: 330

Langdon reminds us that she made the same threat to Anu, father of the gods, in Gilgamesh when begging him to punish Gilgamesh for his rejection of her. It was understood that she had considerable influence with the Anunnaki (*Homo erectus* underworld gods).

Yet it is Ishtar's "sister," Ereshkigal, who is the reigning queen of Hell. That Ereshkigal is a *Homo erectus* unable to compete with the beautiful witch Ishtar is a safe bet based upon Ereshkigal's description (footnote 133, of Volume 1). So, Ereshkigal, wanting to avoid humiliation, consents reluctantly to Ishtar's admission. Ishtar then undergoes the customary admissions procedure: at each gate of hell, she is stripped of a portion of her raiment until she passes through the *seventh* and final gate clad only in her birthday suit.

Ishtar fails in this post-modern, renovated myth, to displace her sister Ereshkigal as the queen of Hell. Ereshkigal imprisons her immediately. Her prolonged imprisonment causes the vegetation to fail, the water to dry up and men and animals to become infertile. In desperation, the male gods work for her deliverance. Ea (Enki) forms an image with his mind and creates the beautiful eunuch *Asu-su-namir*. ("His coming forth is brilliant." Ishtar was also the patroness of eunuchs who served in temples.) Ea then sends Papsukkal, the gods' messenger, to Ereshkigal with this eunuch as a gift after instructing the eunuch:

"May Ereshkigal see thee and rejoice at thy presence.

After her heart becomes calm, her mind happy,  
Cause her to swear by the life of the great gods.  
Lift up thy head; turn thy attention to the leather halziqu vessel  
(saying),  
“Ho, O my lady, let them give me the leather halziqu vessel,  
That I drink water from” [*Has an artificial penis*].” --Langdon: 332

Although much of the text for the next part is lost and probably deliberately deleted, Ereshkigal is apparently affronted by the offer of the eunuch and his leather penis. At an earlier time, the leather penis would have been an uproarious reminder that it was the best that she could hope for with Ishtar on the loose in the kingdom. Embittered, Ereshkigal demands ransom (money) instead. (Langdon: 333-334) Then Langdon informs us that the Akkadian texts for the ending of the myth are in great confusion and the Sumerian version of the remainder of the legend is illegible. Yet somehow, for some reason, Tammuz is made to periodically take Ishtar’s place in Hell.

I’ll show you that the “Akkadian confusion” and the “Sumerian illegibility” of Tammuz and his role in the myth relate to his conversion from son to brother of Ishtar. As modern men became more resigned to their monogamous sufferings, it became less necessary to suppress their polygamous longings with reaction formations. It was no longer necessary to punish Tammuz for incest with his mother. Moreover, a more appropriate prehistoric role and punishment for Tammuz were conceived. It was a role and corresponding punishment that the Akkadian priests --pursuant to their ever-more-perfect interpretation of Paleolithic myth and prehistory --needed to incorporate into the orthodox theology. It was a role and corresponding punishment that had been addressed only by a stand-alone myth that did not fit into the orthodox Ninurta (Marduk) history. Furthermore --as you’ll see in the next two sections --this role and punishment were not appropriate for the son of someone who had been the lover of the *Homo erectus* gods. So, Tammuz had to become the brother instead of the son of Ishtar, and the unconscious punishment for this sibling incest still provided a motive for the Earth Mother’s annual journey to the underworld and some degree of reaction formation to pervasive sexual frustration and the inevitable longing for a return to polygamy.

Before you meet Tammuz, you should meet some of the other Sumero-Babylonian luminaries. I’ll tell you about them as we review...

## THE BABYLONIAN CREATION EPIC

To the Sumerian pantheon of more than five thousand deities, the Akkadians, Babylonians and Assyrians added a few more; “but in the great scholastic period of Sumerian theology (25th to 23rd centuries), the pantheon was reduced to a logical scheme; the temple liturgies for daily use in the church calendar, for festivals and expiation rituals, appeared then in their final canonical forms.” (Langdon: 88)

The Babylonian Creation Epic was a production of Babylon’s priests. With mostly minor changes, it incorporated an abbreviated Sumerian pantheon. The few major changes concerned Marduk. Bêl-Marduk (“the Lord-Marduk”) displaced Ninurta. His supremacy was dogmatized. His death and resurrection absorbed and eclipsed Tammuz. The Species War victory was equated with creation. These are examples of syncretism. They glorified Marduk, promoted the Marduk cult in its competition with other cults and reflected our immediate ancestors’ growing confidence and pride in *Homo sapiens* civilization. Although the adherents of other cults, especially non-Babylonians, did not originally support these modifications, “it is clear that the theories propounded in this epic are those that prevailed henceforth among Semitic peoples” (Cf. Langdon: 278-279, 289). Here is the Epic, with my comments as appropriate.

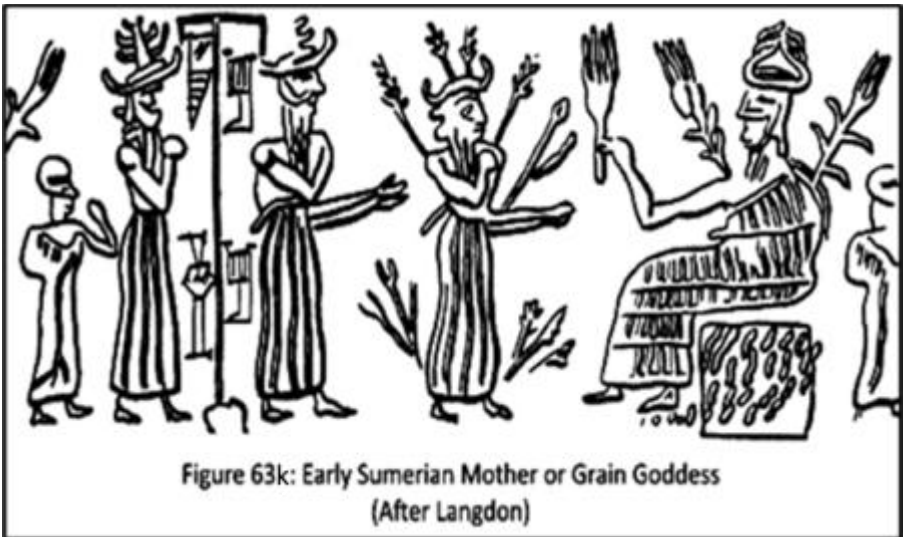
The primal father was Apsû, whose totem symbol was “the nether sea of fresh water.” Unlike his principal wife and “the dragon of the ocean,” Tiamat, Apsû is almost totally lacking in descriptive modifiers. Due to the apparent loss of most of the Apsû-related prehistory, he is rarely personified. This fading of the primal father is understandable in Mesopotamia, which is the origin of the most traumatic start of the Species War. Mesopotamia’s nearness to the African sites of the primal deed did not stop the Species War from overshadowing it.

Professor Langdon discounted the Mesopotamian belief that all things were descended from water (from Apsû). He described this proverb as modern theory, but he was mistaken. He wanted to believe (pursuant perhaps to modern, religious beliefs) that the earliest Sumerian mythology was monotheistic. The “God” he envisioned atop the earliest Sumerian pantheon was An (Anu). His evidence for citing An as the object of an early, Sumerian monotheism was An’s status as the sky god and his name, which means “high.” We’ll see that, although important, An is only (like Cronus, the Egyptian Seth, Odin and many others) a symbol for *Homo erectus per se*. Langdon, failing to see the Species War beneath its Great Flood cover, couldn’t distinguish the primal father from the father species.

The Sumerians, on the other hand, knew all about *Homo erectus*. Berossos, the Greek writer and priest of Bêl-Marduk, was able, as late as Alexandrian times, to learn much about the original, Paleolithic, totem forms of myth and ritual:

“He says that there was a time when all was darkness and water in which came to life monsters of peculiar forms. There were men with two wings and some with four wings, and two faces. They had two heads, one of a male, the other of a female, and were androgynous. Some had legs and horns of goats, some horses’ feet; some had the bodies of men and hindquarters of horses like hippo centaurs. There were men with heads of bulls, and dogs with four bodies and tails of fishes; there were horses with heads of dogs, and there were men and animals having heads and bodies of horses, with tails of fishes. All sorts of monstrous beings existed in this Chaos, and Berossos saw designs of them in the temple of Bêl in Babylon.” --Langdon: 290

Among the curious seals that are on the earliest Sumerian tablets, Langdon cited a variety of fantastic monsters, serpents and a “design of a tower rising by five stages to a smaller but higher top stage on only one side” (the “Tower of Babel”) and a grain goddess with a minor, male vegetation deity (Langdon: 89-90). Langdon expresses surprise that this male vegetation deity, who accompanies a precursor of Ishtar, possesses a beard. Tammuz, he notes, was always a youngster. But the beard could have been added at the time Tammuz was transitioning from son to brother. Langdon could have added -- in support of my theory of Ishtar’s original objective in descending to Arallû -- that in this seal, Figure 63k, *the goddess is taller than the grain god and his companions. Moreover, while she has a vertically elongated (Homo sapien) skull, the grain god has an occiput with not one but two rearward projections, doubly suggestive of Homo erectus’ bun.*



Now, look at how the Babylonian Creation Epic begins:

When on high the heavens were not named,  
[*H Before the Species War creation of Homo sapiens' gods,*]  
And below a home existed not,  
[*H When men roamed in hunting and gathering tribes,*]  
Apsû, the primeval, their engenderer,  
And the "Form" Tiamat, bearer of all of them,  
Mingled their waters together;

The secret chambers were not constructed and marshlands were not seen; [*H Before Homo sapiens founded their first communities. Notice too that here we see a hint of why Assyro-Babylonians thought life to have arisen from primeval waters. It **wasn't** because they were precocious students of microbiology. It was because their earliest-retained oral history was of Ur in a swamp. So, they assumed that our ancestors, and life generally, arose from water.*]

When none of the gods had been brought into being,  
And they were not named, and had not been assigned destinies,  
[*H Before the gods were thought to control the places where their corpses went,*]

Lahmu and Lahamu were brought into being and they were named.

The names of this male-female, pair of deities mean "hairy" (Black and Green: 115). The world belonged to (hairy) *Homo erectus* people, and they had digital language.

For ages, they grew up and became lofty.  
Anshar and Kishar were created more excellent than they.  
[*H Homo erectus evolved considerably before giving birth to our Homo sapien ancestors.*]  
The days lengthened and the years increased.  
Anu their son, the rival of his fathers--  
Anshar made Anu his first-born equal (to himself).  
And as to Anu, he begot Nudimmud,  
Nudimmud, begetter of his fathers was he. --Langdon: 92

Anshar and Kishar mean, "The Host of Heaven" and "The Host of Earth." Langdon (his page 291) says, "They were more excellent than the preceding deities. With them begins a series of emanations definitely regarded as gods of the pantheon and opposed to the powers of darkness." This suggests that "Anshar"

and “Kishar” respectively represent *Homo erectus* (the dead “Host of Heaven”) and *Homo sapiens* [the inheritor of (“Host” of) Earth]. They also represent the antagonists of the Species War, which made them into gods and was remembered as having brought light into the world.

“Nudimmud” indicated the water god and a title of Ea, the third member of the *Homo erectus* trinity, An, Enlil and Ea (Enki). As I told you previously, these three symbolized the various *Homo erecti* according to the realms in which their less edible body parts were disposed. You’ll soon see the evidence of this in its Babylonian Creation Epic context. Ea was also credited with creating the pantheon of artisan gods. The Babylonians said that Ea was the father of Marduk and man (H of *Homo sapien*). Earlier, the Sumerians had said that Enlil was the father of Ninurta (and by implication, *Homo sapiens per se*). Enlil was a god of Earth; and, like many other fierce *Homo erectus* gods (e. g. the Egyptian Seth, the Greek Typhon and the Hittite Teshub), he was also a god of winds. By most accounts, he was a hostile god who encouraged Nergal (the negative aspect of the sun god) to bring the various floods and destructions of men. Ea’s *Homo erectus* pedigree is certain. When not equated with “Lahmu” the sea serpent or “Oannes” the fish-man, he was, “wide-eared, wise, and mighty in strength.”<sup>1</sup> (Cf. Langdon: 103, 106, 292)

Here starts the detailed and lengthy description of the original sin, the murder of the primal father, Apsû, and his timeless, “Earth Mother” wife, Tiamat:

“[T]he gods banded themselves together, revolted against Tiamat, and glorified their defender (Ea). They troubled the mind of Tiamat with their singing in *Anduruna* (a name of the underworld in mythology) and their clamor was not diminished in the Apsû. According to this myth the gods still lived in the watery Chaos.

Their behavior was obnoxious to Tiamat, and Apsû, her husband, summoned Mummu, his messenger. Together they went to Tiamat.<sup>2</sup> They sat down before her and Apsû said:

‘Their way has become grievous unto me.  
By day I find not peace, by night I sleep not.

---

<sup>1</sup> Polynesian ancestors will better describe the differences between *Homo sapiens* and *Homo erectus* ears in the next chapter. As for the hearing ability of *Homo erectus* ears, recall that Germanic Heimdall could “hear grass growing.” Search for “Long Ears,” “Short Ears” and “Hearing Ear” in the eBook of this work.

<sup>2</sup> Mummu is sacredness, divinity, which derives from ambivalence. The primal father is the original sacred object, the “father” of sacredness. Since sacredness is generally acquired only after killing, it was said to be the active part of the god. It is a “messenger” in spreading the god’s fame.

I will destroy and confound their ways.  
Let tranquility reign and let us sleep, even us.'

Tiamat flew into a rage and planned to destroy the gods. Mummu urged his father Apsû to put an end to the rebellion.

'Apsû hearkened unto him and his countenance beamed.  
Because he planned injuries against the gods, his sons.  
The neck of Mummu he embraced.  
He lifted him to his knees and kissed him.'

These three planned the utter annihilation of the gods and they repeated their decision to them [H *This is the first mythology reference we've seen to the aggressiveness of the primal fathers. It is very realistic in that our primal fathers would have aggressed against their Homo erectus sons. Like the alpha males of other sexually-dimorphic, large mammals, they would have expelled them from the horde, when they reached sexual maturity. See Chapter 4.*]:

'The gods wept as they hastened.  
Silence reigned and they sat whispering.  
The exceedingly wise one, the clever in skill,  
Ea, who knoweth all things, perceived their plan.'

Time out! Look at the third line in the above stanza! Where have we seen "the exceedingly wise one" before? This epithet or "Atarhasis" was a common Akkadian name for Noah, of flood fame. (See Chapter 1.) By referring to the man who is about to murder the primal father as "the exceedingly wise one" or "Atarhasis," the same name that was often ascribed to the Babylonian Noah, our Babylonian ancestors are unwittingly admitting that "the Deluge" was also about murder and a preemptive attack. This common terminology facilitated the amalgamation of the traumas and gods. Continuing with the primal deed *per* the Babylonian Creation Epic and Professor Langdon's summary:

Ea's weapon, which he employed to subdue the dragon Apsû, was a curse and an incantation. The first combat between the gods and the dragons now arrives. Ea recited his curse over the waters and poured out sleep over Apsû as he lay in a cavern. Having him now at



his mercy, Ea castrated him, severed his sinews, and tore off his crown.

Here's a not-so-subtle clue as to what the conflict here is really about: "Ea castrated him, severed his sinews, and tore off his crown."

His splendor he took from him and he clothed himself  
with it.

He bound Apsû and slew him.

Mummu he tied and his skull he crushed.

He fixed upon the Apsû his dwelling.

Mummu he seized making firm his bands.

--Langdon: 292-293

"Mummu" is sacredness, so the reference here is to the paralysis caused by guilt and ambivalence, paralysis that Ea, the sons of the primal horde, had to overcome to kill their father, Apsû. This explains why paralysis of speech, keeping silent, became described as "keeping mum." Mummu is the Assyro-Babylonian and original sin precursor of Typhon. In any case, Ea and his wife Dankina are thereafter said to "take possession of the Apsû" (the fresh waters). [*H Exogamous Homo erectus, now cooperative and organized, took possession of the earth and reigned supreme atop Earth's food chain, until...*] Dankina gives birth to Marduk, causing him to "suck the breasts of goddesses." [*H The survival of the first Homo sapiens (mutated Homo erecti) was contingent upon Homo erectus women nursing, caring for and becoming attached to these strange babies. Recall that Rhea had to hide the baby Zeus to prevent Cronus from eating him.*] Subsequently, Marduk, "surpassed all in height, and his proportions [*H his forehead and height*] were immeasurably great, overpowering to behold" (Langdon: 294).

Next, Marduk is described as Janus-headed (two-faced), corresponding to many traditions describing sun gods:

Four were his eyes, four were his ears.

When he moved his lips, fire blazed forth.

Four ears grew large, and

His eyes behold all things even as that one (Ea). --Langdon: 294

The last line suggests one meaning of this doubling of his eyes and ears. Our immediate ancestors are boasting (falsely) that their champion was the equal in sensory ability of the original, *Homo erectus* sun god, Ea; and that --by

association --they are the equals of our archaic ancestors in sensory ability. *The "two faces of the sun god" refers to the transitional period, before the Homo sapien sun god fully replaced the Homo erectus sun god, a period when both shared this status.* Among the Germanic peoples, the double-headed eagle must have meant the same. Ditto for Roman Janus. We saw clearly in Scandinavia, Mesoamerica and Peru how *Homo sapiens* Species Warriors replaced *Homo erectus* counterparts as sun gods. It couldn't have happened overnight.

Another passage in Langdon also refers obliquely to the era when *Homo erectus* (Enlil) was the equal of Ninurta as a sun god. In this other account of creation, preserved in a late Assyrian copy, Heaven and Earth, before the "creation of man," were inhabited by "faithful twins," "and the mother goddesses had been made to thrive." (Cf. Langdon: 313) The last phrase of this statement verifies that *the "Mother goddesses," "Earth Mothers," "Great Mothers" etc. (e. g. Ishtar) were originally "witches."* *They were women who consorted with both subspecies. During the Neolithic, it was feared that the spirits of these always-pregnant "witches" controlled the verdure. So, the Homo sapien "witches" were forgiven for consorting with Homo erectus and given these eminent titles; but the memory of their polygamous ways had to be expunged in modern, monogamous times.*

In a later episode of the Creation Epic, Marduk employs the winds in his combat with Tiamat, as did Ninurta in struggle with Labu. This reference to the use of the winds suggests that the priests of Marduk were familiar with an earlier, independent Species War myth (Adapta), which employs the same metaphor more realistically. Labu, this great serpent, was described as having oppressed cities and peoples before being conquered by Ninurta. I strongly suspect that in some totem, Paleolithic myth or ritual, Labu --who is "fifty miles long and six cubits wide" --swallowed (cannibalized) someone. The struggle of this person to get out of the coiled serpent is strikingly like struggling to escape an intestine, which occurs in the Irish, "The Fisherman's Son and the Grúagach of Tricks." One of these begot the other and the myth about the labyrinth of Greek mythology, the myth wherein Daedalus builds the labyrinth to house the Minotaur for King Minos of Crete. The labyrinth may also have been associated with the maze of underground storage rooms beneath the palace at Knossos. Note also that "labyrinth" probably was derived from "Labu," which suggests that the Babylonian myth was the original. But returning to our present story, the Babylonian Creation Epic...

Tiamat, outraged by the murder of her spouse, creates a host of monsters (organizes numerous offspring) to make war upon the gods and avenge Apsû. The *Homo erectus* identity of all these monsters is transparent. Although the epic says

that there were eleven of them (one too few), those named are nine in number. (Number nine is, as we've seen, symbolic of death and dead *Homo erectus* and of hybrids whose gene line came to an end as do the digits with number nine [0,1,2,3,4,5,6,7,8,9].) The nine names are all abstractions, descriptions of fierce fighters; but the totem images are quite concrete. Kingu, their leader, is a dragon. Labu has been mentioned. When not a great serpent, Labu was a lion (Langdon: 286-287). Another is a winged lion; one is a scorpion man; Zu is a gigantic storm-god and a bird of prey --sometimes the horse Pegasus; the Assyrians included a winged human-headed animal with long beard; and one is an ostrich, a universal demon among the Semitic peoples. Chimera may also have originated as one of Tiamat's monsters. It had the torso of a lion and the lower body of a serpent. In Greek mythology, it represented the fiercest and last of the *Homo erecti* whom hybrid Bellerophon and Pegasus eliminated on their flights around the world. The most complex of Tiamat's monsters was Mushussrû. Mushussrû had the body and head of a serpent, the forefeet of a lion, the hind legs of a bird of prey and the tail of a scorpion. In the late period, Mushussrû was identified with the constellation Hydra.<sup>3</sup>

As we saw in passages cited in Chapter 19, the other gods were unable to stand up to Tiamat and her monsters. Ea and Anu fled before her, and an "assembly" of the Anunnaki and Igigi [*H proponents of order, the "good" Homo erectus gods and their Homo sapien Species War counterparts*] petition Marduk to come to their rescue. [*H Marduk, like the Homo sapiens whom he represents, was not involved in the primal deed, which has supposedly ignited the wrath of Tiamat.*] Marduk agrees on the condition that his word shall be supreme ever afterward. The gods agree to give him kingship of universal power and admit him [*H the Homo sapien victors of the Species War*] to their assembly [*H to the Sumerian pantheon*].

Once the deal is done, the young champion, "made ready bow and arrow and took a toothed-sickle in his right hand. Forked lightning he held before his face. Bow and quiver hung at his side...He was clad in a kaunakes, and a sheen of flames surrounded his head." --Langdon: 300

---

<sup>3</sup> Many myths, especially Irish myths such as "Kil Arthur," testify to *Homo erectus*' staying power, the cunning ability of the few surviving *Homo erectus* males to seclude themselves and mate with the seemingly innocuous, spared females to keep their race alive. Hydra, the nine-headed serpent that was slain by Hercules and grew two heads for every one that was cut off, symbolizes this phenomenon.

After a fierce struggle, Marduk gets the better of her:<sup>4</sup>

His arrow tore her belly, severed her inwards, and rent asunder her heart. He bound her and stood upon her corpse. Her host of dragons scattered and fled in terror. They sought to save their souls alive but were trapped and bound... All the eleven dragons were bound and cast into prison. Henceforth they became gods of the lower world. They were also identified with various constellations by the astronomers.<sup>5</sup> Kingu also was bound and handed over to Nergal, god of Arallû [*H the underworld*]. Marduk seized the Tablets of Fate from Kingu's breast, sealed them with a seal and fastened them to his own breast.<sup>6</sup> --Langdon: 302-303

Next, an esoteric and verbose passage is summarized by its last line: "He [*H Marduk*] caused Anu, Enlil and Ea to occupy their abodes [*H heaven, earth and fresh-water sea respectively*]." Of course, you and I know that what this really means is this: the *Homo erecti* who were burned in Deluge bonfires became associated with the heavens into which their ashes rose, and they were symbolized by Anu; those that were buried became associated with the underworld and condensed as Enlil; and those that were drowned or thrown as corpses into the waters became Ea, the lord of the Apsû. There was a tendency for all these *Homo erecti* to condense into one, into one Species War victim, into An (or Anu). Thus, Langdon confused An or Anu with the similar sounding and similarly fated primal father, Apsû.

But look at what the Babylonian Creation Myth is suggesting. It's suggesting, "We Mesopotamians never fought a 'Species War' against *Homo erecti per se*. We only killed the bad *Homo erecti*, the monsters that Tiamat, the Primal Mother created to avenge the killing of her mate. We did the good *Homo erecti*, the Anunnaki, a favor, for which they agreed to defer to us, to bequeath Earth to us." (When you need a criminal attorney, dial 1-800-BEROSSOS.)

The constellations, astronomical projections of our ancestors' obsessions, were similarly divided into three bands. The overhead band belonged to An, the southern to Ea and the northern to Enlil. The fifth, of the six Babylonian Creation Epic tablets, contained a poem on the creation of the heavens and Marduk's

---

<sup>4</sup> In the Sumerian forerunner, Ninurta's monster-foes are all males.

<sup>5</sup> Notice that this line confirms my speculation in Volume 2, that the identification of all the constellations was a product of our ancestors' obsession with "the Deluge."

<sup>6</sup> Marduk seizing the "Tablets of Fate" from Kingu is symbolic of *Homo sapiens* seizing *Homo erectus*' place atop the food chain and us thus being able to largely determine our own fate.

assignment of stations therein, stations (especially the planets) that influence the affairs of men.

Next, an assembly of all the gods, including the Anunnaki and Igigi, consented to Marduk's determination to create man, for which the blood of a god is needed. Kingu, the chief culprit of the Tiamat rebellion (Species War), falls victim. Marduk brought Kingu before Ea and slew him. From Kingu's blood Ea made "savage" man. (Cf. Fiore: 146) As I suggested in Chapter 19 and as the Epic will further suggest, this Mesopotamian episode refers to the creation of the "black- (or dark-) headed people." It provided a mythological rationale for the wishful thinking of Neolithic Mesopotamians who enslaved the last *Homo erectus* survivors and wanted to believe that these slaves were a third and inferior species. Like the American savages that enslaved black-skinned people many thousands of years later, they falsely claimed to have seniority (of birth or habitation) over their victims.

Then, as L. C. Geerts explained in Chapter 19, Marduk assigned the three hundred Anunnaki (*Homo erecti*) to the underworld and to the management of the "ways of the earth" and the three hundred Igigi (lesser, *Homo sapien* gods) to heaven. They agreed to the construction of temples, houses for the gods.

When the gods assembled to congratulate Marduk on his victory, Anu kissed Marduk's bow and gave it three names: one is lost on the tablets, one is Bow Star (Canis Major), and the other is "Long Wood." Do you see the meaning of "Long Wood?" A tree is suggested by this epithet. The original sin weapon, the club, and the second sin weapon, the bow and arrow, were both wooden weapons associated with trees. Keep "Long Wood" in mind. Let it incubate in your unconscious as we prepare to interpret Genesis 3, as we approach the authentic, Sumerian Garden of Eden in the last subsection of this chapter.

Next, Marduk issues decrees involving the "dark-headed people," decrees from a fragmented text that Fiore summarized for us in Chapter 19, decrees calling for services to the gods:

His command is made surpassing...  
He has been exalted, he the heroic son...  
His supreme rule is made surpassing...  
May he shepherd the dark-headed peoples...  
Forever without forgetting let them rehearse [his deeds].  
May he establish for his fathers the great cult offerings.  
May they... perform their upkeep, and appoint their festivals.  
May he smell incense; their food offerings may he receive.  
As an imitation of what he made in Heaven, on Earth a...  
Shall he order and the dark-headed people shall dwell...

Let mankind think of their god.

Langdon suggests filling in the lacuna of the *seventh* line from the top of this passage with “the people.” It may have read “the dark-headed people.” This tablet was among the many that Fiore described as “mutilated.” Recall that Tigay showed us -- with his comparison of the most early and recently excavated, standalone Gilgamesh tablets on the one hand and the Babylonian standard version of the epic on the other --that many of the changes were “surgical.” This section of the epic prescribed the use of the “black (or dark)-headed people” in the rites that will be described momentarily. Although they were substituting for their ancestors in these rites, they obviously did not measure up to the divine, *Homo erectus* descriptions that were so much inflated by reaction formations to guilt. Thus, we find here another reason why the remaining, enslaved and docile *Homo erecti* would have been thought of as an inferior race, a hybrid cross between gods and apes. Indeed, it was metaphorically correct to describe them as having been created by the blood of Kingu because their servility and degradation was a result of “Kingu’s” defeat.

The sixth and last tablet of the Babylonian Creation Epic lists the many different names for the various gods. It is of little interest to us.

Of great interest are other tablets that preserved directions for the second through the fifth days of this eleven-day, New Year’s (spring equinox) celebration. Ditto for some of the hymns cited by Langdon, hymns that describe the Babylonian Creation Epic rituals. I’ll show you only those lines and Langdon interpretations that suggest either the Species War or its aftermath as I have interpreted it or “services to the gods” that the black-headed people would have been likely to perform as surrogates for their ancestors. By Bronze Age times, *Homo erectus* Species Warriors had become “lesser gods.” Here are the lines:

“Thou (Marduk) burnest up the mighty ones by thy flame.” --  
Langdon: 315

“But the hymn speaks also of Marduk having cast the dragons  
into fire and then having mercy upon them.” –*Ibid.*

Take note: to have had mercy upon the “dragons” that were “cast into fire” confirms that all the *Homo erecti* were not killed.

“There was also a tradition, which will appear in the mystery  
ceremonies, of (*H casting Kingu into fire*).” –*Ibid.*

“They were clothed in red garments and their loins were bound with date palms. They remained in the temple of the god Sakut (Ninurta) until day six. Then a swordsman severed their heads and burnt them before Nabu [*H Marduk’s son*]. These were emblems of the serpent-dragon Mushussrû and the Scorpion-man, two of the monsters originally subdued by Ninurta. The ceremony again discloses a trace of a lost myth in which the dragons were cast into fire.” --Langdon: 316 [*H These would have been identical to the grisliest Aztec rites.*]

“Mars, usually the planet of Ninurta, is addressed as the Fire-god Gibil.” --Langdon: 317

This next one is virtually a flashing neon sign saying, “Deluge Bonfire”:

“Soon after sunset on the fifth day the high priest made a bundle of forty reeds each three cubits long, dug a trench in the temple-court and placed the bundle of reeds therein. Honey, cream, and oil were poured upon it and a white bull [*H our father species*] was brought to the trench. The reed bundle was set on fire. --Langdon: 319.

Again, forty equals ten (perfect or complete), times four (in all directions). As suggested by the forty days and forty nights of “the Deluge,” the Species War was total and complete and swept *Homo erectus* from every corner of the earth.

“A fire was kindled beneath an oven and a sheep placed on it; this meant Kingu, husband of Tiamat, whom Marduk burned. They lit firebrands at the oven, and these meant the merciless arrows ... of Bêl, which, as they were shot, carried terror and smote the mighty one, with blood and gore they were stained, sprinkling the mountains (with blood). The mountains meant the gods.” --Langdon: 320

“In the ceremony, the king lifted a weapon above his head and burned a she-goat; that meant Marduk who lifted weapons above his head and consumed in fire the sons of Enlil and Anu. Here again the myth of the casting of the dragons into fire appears in the ceremony, but not in the epic...” (Langdon: 321).

“In the ritual, a cavalryman, who [carries] a sweet fig and holds a... in his hand, and who brings it in to the god, showing the fig to the god and king, meant him whom they sent to Enlil whom they

bound and whose hand Nergal took (*Ibid.*) [H “*Knife*” was surgically removed, above. Dark, bulbous figs associate with charred *Homo erectus* scrotums. Marduk castrates Enlil as Ea castrated Apsû.]

“Eunuchs shouted, made clamor in the plain, hurling firebrands, emitting loud cries, lifted each other up, and acted distractedly; these symbolized those who against Enlil and Anu made uproar, and poured out their terror upon them, but whose...they (the gods) severed and [cast] into the Apsû.” (*Ibid.*) [H *testicles*]

Many tablets and texts preserve parts of the *Zagmuk*, the Epic of Creation at the Assyrian New Year’s Festival. This festival included the most recent Babylonian additions to the Creation Epic, one of which portrayed the death and resurrection of Bêl (the Lord) Marduk.

Professor Langdon correctly observed that this addition to the traditional epic represented an attempt by Babylonian priests [perhaps the greatest interpreters of myth (prehistory) that the world has ever known] to amalgamate or syncretize the cult of Ishtar and Tammuz. The latter was also tremendously popular because it presented a mythical example of resurrection (appealing to the universal longing for immortality) and presented it within a context that included unconscious, prehistoric truths.

Here’s the story of Marduk’s resurrection. Like the apparent death and renewal of the vegetation and the related and apparent cycles of the sun, Marduk died and was resurrected at Nineveh and Babylon. “That the myth and ritual were well known throughout Syria, Phoenicia, and Palestine, at least in certain mystic and Gnostic cults, [**H with which Paul was very familiar**] is certain” (Langdon: 322-323).

“At the start of the act, Bêl is missing and it is learned that he is imprisoned in the lower world, and a messenger hurries to cry out, ‘Who shall bring him forth?’ Nabu, Marduk’s son, seeks after the bound father. Men run through the streets yelling, ‘Where is he held?’ and Marduk’s wife prays to the Moon-god saying: ‘Give life to Bêl.’ She comes to the gate of the tomb seeking him and finds ‘twins’ guarding the tomb. Celebrants commence wailing for the bound god who has perished from among the living. Reference is made to the wounds of Bêl and his blood. A goddess descends to search for him.

An obscure reference refers to Nabu, Marduk’s living son, as saying, ‘I am not a sinner and have not been condemned to my father’s fate.’ Nabu then refers to another sinner who --like the two



robbers who were crucified with Paul's Jesus --has been condemned to die with Bêl. The head of a sheep is tied to the door of the temple of the Beltis [*H goddess*], which symbolizes the head of the sinner who they slew with Bêl. [*H Tammuz was a shepherd; so, the sheep's head is associated with him and the Beltis is his sister Ishtar, Beltis of Erech. But for the head to have been only the head of a sheep and not Tammuz' head, suggests that the Marduk priests weren't decided as to whether or not he deserved the death sentence. Surely, they would have wanted to be rid of a rival god, but not at the cost of mythological error.*] A messenger brings Ishtar the news and she descends only to find a sorcerer who gives her a garment of one of the deceased. [*H Again, they give her "a" garment and not all of his garments. These myth-making priests were undecided regarding Tammuz, undecided as to whether his "crime" merited a death sentence.*]" (Ibid.)

Langdon absurdly suggested that this garment was Marduk's and that the fragmented and obscure text here relates Ishtar's love for Bêl. To justify this, he cites her having suckled him. But many goddesses were supposed to have suckled Marduk; and as a mother goddess, Ishtar suckled all the gods and the kings of Assyria. As Ishtar descends into the underworld crying, "Oh my brother, my brother..." it is for Tammuz that she is crying. Tammuz was the other person, symbolized by the sacrificed sheep, who was punished with Bêl-Marduk.

"The Epic of Creation is then sung, narrating Marduk's mighty deeds, and the high priest wails: 'What was his sin? What was his sin?' Next the text speaks of the resurrection of the other person [*H Tammuz*] from the house of bondage where he had been sent by judgments imposed upon him. There is mad racing in the streets and some reference to Bêl's clothing, which had been brought to the temple of his wife, Beltis of Babylon. [*H If all the garments brought up from hell had been Marduk's, they would have been brought up at one time by the same messenger.*]" (Ibid.)

Although from here to the end of the story, the sources are said to be very sketchy, Professor Langdon shows a lack of interpretive imagination that is inconsistent with his education and intellect. One is almost forced to conclude that he was afraid of losing his chair at the university or of some similar sort of violent and hysterical reaction from neurotic Christians. As for me, there are empty seats behind the wheels of taxis all over town; and I am convinced that we

must break the worldwide tyranny of insane savages if our species is to survive and if life is to be worth living. I shall, therefore, continue...

Langdon notes that Bêl is resurrected but wonders why his chariot, which speeds to the New Year's Festival house, is without its master; and the celebrants who break into Bêl's tomb apparently do not find him or the body (Langdon: 322-325).

Anyone who is at all familiar with Paul's "Jesus" should see that Paul lifted all the basics of Jesus' death and resurrection from Bêl-Marduk: Bêl's fate is the same as that of Jesus. *He ascends to heaven to assume the heavenly throne after first being punished for (and absorbing all the responsibility and guilt that belongs to the rest of us for) the Species War. That's why Marduk's son pronounced himself innocent. That's why havoc had to be acted out in the streets of Babylon when Bêl was reported missing. Its purpose was to define him as a historical scapegoat for every man, a supreme substitute whose death would redeem the rest of us by slaking the angry gods' thirst for revenge and whose resurrection would provide hope of immortality for everyone.*

To his credit, Paul exceeded the Babylonian priests in condensing *Homo erectus* as "the Holy Ghost," the victims of both the first and the second sin as "the Father" and the perpetrators of both the sins as "the Son," as "Jesus."

Paul was also smart enough to see why Tammuz had to descend for judgment with Marduk. Paul noticed too how unrealistic it was to have a familiar god arraigned without citing the charges in his indictment. But to explicitly state those charges would expose the Species War theme. So, Paul substituted "two robbers" whose guilt and destiny would be uncontroversial, but whose association with *Homo sapien* Species Warriors was so general as to remain unconscious.

Do you see what the "crime" of Tammuz was? This "crime," that Tammuz appears to have acquired with the absorption of another god, enabled the Species War. Do you see to what sort of "criminal" the mother goddess/witch Ishtar could not be a mother and had to become instead a sister? Do you see why Tammuz invariably won his case before the underworld judges, why this god, celebrated each spring by scores of different names, was always acquitted? The logic to his acquittal has nothing to do with reviving vegetation.

We'll discover these answers in the next section. For now, take these hints: it was not just because the priests of Marduk wanted to be rid of a competitor that Tammuz was restored to life and released from Hell. His "crime" had to do with technology; and technology is morally neutral. It can be used for good or evil.

## OTHER SUMERIAN LEGENDS (ADAPTA AND TAGTUG)

There are two more important legends that we need now to examine. They will tell us what Tammuz' "crime" was and enable us also to see what happened in the original Sumerian "garden" --the garden upon which Genesis 3 is based.

The first legend, of *Adapta*, is in a poem that has been preserved only in one Canaanitic-Babylonian and one Assyrian fragment:

Adapta of Eridu was famed in legend as a sage, and his ordinary title *apqallu* indicates that he was one of the pre-diluvian wise men... "At that time, in those years, Ea created the sage, the Eridian like a leader among men." None could annul his command; he excelled in wisdom, and the Anunnaki, gods of the Ea pantheon, had given him his name. --Langdon: 175-176

Immediately suspect Adapta of being a condensation of the *Homo sapiens* Species Warriors. It sounds as if this "prediluvian wise man" was, like Atarhasis and Utnapishtim (Chapter 1), an "exceedingly wise" rebel leader in the commission of the second sin. Of course, the scene is not primitive enough for the original sin, which Ea has already committed; and the only leader whose command could not be annulled would be the commander of the *Homo sapiens* Species Warriors.

Next, we are assured that Adapta was -- originally -- a guiltless, faithful and obedient son of Ea (the *Homo erecti* whose fate it was to live among the fishes):

"His hands were clean, and he was a priest of lustrations (*pasisu*), who superintended the rituals. He worked with the bakers and provided the food and holy water in the cult of the Water god of Eridu, preparing the altar table, and without him it was not cleared away. He sailed a boat and pursued the trade of fishing for Eridu [*H Eridu was once near the mouth of the Euphrates River*]. Daily he guarded the sanctuary of Eridu, when the far-famed god Ea went in to his sleeping chamber. At the quay of Eridu, he embarked on a sailboat; the wind arose and his boat went out to sea, as he steered with his rudder. The south wind blew, and his boat sank." --Langdon: 176

As you already know, the wind was symbolic of Enlil, of the god of earth and winds, of the *Homo erecti* who were planted. In retaliation for some aggressive or tyrannical acts committed by the *Homo erecti* living to the north (the "south" or southerly "wind"), Adapta opts for war:

“‘I will break thy wings,’ he said to the south wind, and as he spoke the wings of the south wind were broken.” –*Ibid.*

So, push came to shove. *Homo sapiens* and *Homo erectus* may have been, like men marooned at sea, in a situation where one had to kill and eat the other. Breaking the south wind is symbolic of *Homo sapiens* breaking through their northern border with the *Homo erecti*, leaving the lower (least desirable and flood-prone) part of the Tigris and Euphrates Valley and overrunning the upper (northern) part of this river valley.

“For *seven* days, the south wind blew not and so Anu called to his messenger *Ilabrat*:

‘Why has the south wind not blown  
Upon the land for *seven* days?’  
His messenger *Ilabrat* answered him:  
‘My lord, *Adapta*, son of *Ea*, the wings  
Of south wind hath broken.’” (*Ibid.*)

Saying that the news of the war reached Anu, the *Homo erectus* victims of the bonfire, the *Homo erectus* in heaven, the evolving “God,” is equivalent to saying that the fighting engulfed the world and resulted in *Homo erectus*’ extinction.

Langdon informs us that *Ilabrat* (or *Ili-abrat*, “god of the wings”) was Sumerian *Papsukkal*, the “Chief Messenger” of the gods whose clay figurines are often uncovered in boxes near the foundations of temples. Langdon’s sketch of *Ili-abrat* shows a stocky man in hooded sack cloth, holding a “wand” the length of a spear, chin covered with a full beard, lines suggesting a thick and continuous supra-orbital ridge and occiput resembling the white crown in my [Figure 87a \(1\)](#). *Ili-abrat* or *Papsukkal* is obviously a thinly disguised *Homo erectus*. (Cf. Langdon: 176) It gets better:

“*Ninsubur* is the deity to whom the titles *Papsukkal* and *Ili-abrat* really belong. On monuments, he is represented by a raven, sometimes accompanied by the inscription, ‘good *Papsukkal*,’ or ‘god *Sukkal*’ ... When Anu bestowed upon *Ishtar* her divine powers, he addressed her in the following words:

My faithful messenger, whose lips are precious, who knows my secrets, *Ninsubur-Ili-abrat*, my seemly messenger, verily shall be the executor of thy desires at thy side.

Before thee may he constantly make agreeable the intentions of god and goddess.

*Ninsubur is only a form of Tammuz*, who, with Ningishzida, guard the gate of Anu.” --Langdon: 177

Bravo Professor Langdon! (Stephen Langdon passed away in 1937, but his ghost is riding in the taxi with us.) Can you see, reader, how observant he was? His failure to see the general outline of Jesus’ resurrection in the fragmented texts of the earlier Marduk was not characteristic of him. Of course, Langdon is correct here. When it became necessary in modern times to transform Ishtar into a monogamous woman, the logical man to become her monogamous lover was either Ninsubur, her bodyguard and constant companion or Dumuzi. Ninsubur and the Sumerian predecessor of Tammuz, the ante-diluvian shepherd, king and god Dumuzi, were both identified with the “faithful shepherd of heaven,” Orion. (Cf. Langdon 177, 205) Dumuzi was the good shepherd and king that Ishtar, the mother goddess, searched for after the flood to mold men into an ordered society that the gods would not have to destroy again (*He a shepherd-king who could tame our Fraternal Complex and pacify the murdered and wrathful gods*). (Cf. a passage from the “Legend of Etana” in Langdon: 166-167) Dumuzi eclipsed Ninsubur over time, perhaps because fertility was ever more important to Neolithic men than to us and because messengers between men and the gods became less important as the most powerful gods were thought to be *Homo sapiens*. I will show you, before the end of this section, how Tammuz resulted from the condensation of Dumuzi and another god -- Tagtug. Even the name “Tammuz” was apparently derived from the “Ta” of Tagtug and the “muz” of Dumuzi (the “i” being a Sumerian suffix).

The rest of the Adapta myth can be summarized. It reflects our Mesopotamian ancestors’ desire to obtain literal immortality, “afterlife,” the eternal life that we imagine gods to have. It is one of the precursors of Genesis 3, which refers to man’s alleged loss of immortality due to being kicked out of the Garden of Eden.

The *Homo erectus* gods obtained their “immortality” (in myth and ritual) due to losing the Species War. The *Homo sapiens* winners of the Species War won the possibility of actual immortality for their descendants. For Sumerian descendants to want the former, divine form of immortality (humanity-wide and history-long remembrance) and literal immortality too was asking to have their cake and eat it too. (Why are the divine and literal forms of immortality mutually

exclusive? Because the extreme ambivalence felt toward a god, the ambivalence essential to “them,” will not exist in a highly civilized and cooperative world of the future in which people are able to live virtually forever. All the negativity will be long gone.) In most of their mythology, our Sumero-Babylonian ancestors referred to this “cake” as a plant (e. g. the plant that Gilgamesh sought and the serpent stole from him in his epic). In “Adapta,” the plant is the “bread and waters of life.”

With Ea’s help, Adapta answered Anu’s heavenly summons to account for the “broken wings of the south wind.” Adapta even won Anu’s sympathy by appearing before him in a late, *Homo erectus* disguise: “soiled, wearing sack cloth, and sporting boils all over his body.” But Ea, who was occasionally the benefactor of man, was coaching Adapta; and here the essential Ea, the condensation of the murdered *Homo erecti* of the sea, stepped forward. The wrathful Ea, “jealous of man,” deceived Adapta. Ea advised Adapta to refuse the “bread and water of life” that Anu was soon to offer, falsely claiming that it would be poisoned. So, Adapta refused the good-faith offering, lost his hopes of immortality and our Akkadian ancestors received a dose of bittersweet medicine for theirs. (Cf. Langdon: 177-183) Here Ea is equivalent to the (*Homo erectus*) serpent that steals immortality (the “plant” or “bread and waters of life”) from Gilgamesh.

Now for the other Sumerian myth, the myth of Tagtug:<sup>7</sup>

“Among the primeval heroes who were clients of the Water-god, Enki-Ea, was also one Tagtug... Tag-tug is invariably designated as a god, and the syllables mean, literally, ‘maker of garments.’” -- Langdon: 190

Like Adapta, this “maker of garments” was, “a client of Enki, and a doorkeeper of Enki in Eridu.” (*Ibid.*) In other words, Tagtug was associated with the Species War victors. He was a warrior-priest who was once confined with our first Mesopotamian ancestors at the mouth of (the “door” of) the Euphrates. But why would a man with these credentials be a maker of “garments”? At this early time, making garments (animal skin clothing) would have been women’s work. This taxi driver doesn’t believe it. It sounds to me as if these “garments” are covering up more than living flesh.

A long Sumerian poem on the origin of civilization stars Tagtug:

---

<sup>7</sup> Langdon follows the tradition (as I often do) of referring to lesser-known or eclipsed myths as legends. But if the material is sacred [related to the prehistoric objects of the godhead (of the two complexes)] the distinction between a “legend” and “myth” is just the result of a popularity contest.

“In the mountain of Heaven and Earth,  
 When Anu had created the gods, the Anunnaki,  
 [H Confirm that ‘Anunnaki’ means ‘offspring of Anu.’]  
 When the Grain-goddess had not been created,  
 And had not been made verdant,  
 When Tagtug, the...of the Land, had not yet been made,”  
 --*Ibid.*

This poem has an additional forty-one lines that all say very little. The in-line location of three of the poem’s four lacunae and the strategic loss of a modifier for Tagtug make the lacunae appear to have been surgical and intentional. This entire poem describes life before the “Deluge.” Notice that, “Tagtug had not yet been made.” Certainly, “Tagtug” does not refer to garments because they are much older than *Homo sapiens*, and garments are unlikely to be the subject of trauma that would cause their inventor to become the subject of sacred myth.

Of much greater help to us in defining Tagtug is another long Sumerian poem on paradise and the loss of eternal life. As Langdon correctly notes, it treats these subjects differently than does the poem on Adapta, and it is, “an almost complete parallel to the Hebrew legend of Adam and the Garden of Eden” (Langdon: 194).

The poem’s first lengthy section describes paradise, the abode of Enki and his wife Dankina, as a place without strife. Even the animals [H *before acquiring fiery Homo erectus souls*] are all vegetarians.

The next three sections describe Enki and the mother goddess Nintur. [H *Nintur, Nintu, Nintud and Ninhursag were all names for the Homo erectus mother goddess who was said, alternatively, to be the wife of An, Enki or Enlil.*] “The offspring of this divine pair was Tagtug...founder of civilization. He is described throughout as a god”<sup>8</sup> (Langdon: 197). [H *For Tagtug to be the child of two Homo erectus people and “the founder of civilization” tells us that he symbolizes Homo sapiens per se, all of us.*]

The next section of the poem describes Tagtug’s education. It has been heavily censored; but as Langdon notes, “Nintur seems to be giving him his education in a garden” (Langdon: 198).

Nintur assures Tagtug that Enki was his father. This simply says that we, *Homo sapiens*, are different from them and that they, *Homo erecti*, were our parent species.

---

<sup>8</sup> Where I have inserted “...”, Langdon writes “the weaver and smith.” This is obviously a much later characterization of Tagtug. It is significant only in so far as these later interpreters correctly perceived (or knew prior to editing) that Tagtug had something to do with technology.

Nintur orders two attendants to help Tagtug in the garden. Then Enki discovers Tagtug in the garden. In answer to Enki's "Who art thou," Tagtug admits that he is a gardener and makes mention of a fig. (As we have already begun to see and shall know with greater certainty in Appendix E, dark, bulbous figs were symbolic of charred *Homo erecti*, especially *Homo erectus* scrotums.)

Enki declares, "I will bestow upon thee the form of a god." In Langdon's words, "Tagtug joyfully opened the door of the temple." (He became a god due to something that he produced in the garden.)

This section of the poem --its preserved part --ends with three lines emphasizing that Enki educated Tagtug. (*Homo erectus* taught us his culture.) *Seven* plants are said to grow in the garden, and Nintur repeats to Tagtug that it was Enki who impregnated her (that Enki is Tagtug's father; *Homo erectus* is our father species). (Cf. Langdon: 198-9)

The next section of this poem is the heavily edited Sumerian version of the fall of man from the garden (the falling out of Tagtug and his ancestors, the falling out of *Homo sapiens* and *Homo erectus*). It begins with Enki naming the plants, which here are many, more than *seven* -- confirming that the previous reference to *seven* plants merely alluded to fraternal hostility in the garden. All these plants Tagtug may "gather therefrom and eat." The plant that we can imagine being forbidden to Tagtug (*Homo sapiens*) is not mentioned in the heavily fragmented (and probably edited) text. (Cf. Langdon: 199)

But there follows this curse:

Ninhursag [*H the mother goddess, Nintur*] spoke an oath in the name of Enki,

"The face of life until he dies shall he not see."

The Anunnaki sat in the dust (to weep).

Violently she spoke to Enlil,

"I, Ninhursag, bore thee a child and what is my reward?"

--Langdon: 200.

Enki has been killed; and his wife, the mother goddess, is enraged. She has ostracized the culprit. The culprit is not Tagtug son of Enki but the son of Enlil. Of course, Enlil was said to be the father of Ninurta, the Sumerian leader of the *Homo sapiens* Species Warriors.

Akkadian priests had to know the meaning of the five lines indented above. They knew also that Tagtug had assisted Ninurta in some strategic fashion. Undoubtedly, they saw a much greater part of this poem than we have; and they



knew --with at least as much certainty as do we --that *what Tagtug produced in the garden was Ninurta's (or Marduk's) weapon, the bow and arrow.*

*So, when it came time for "Marduk" to be indicted and tried by the gods so that the rest of us might be relieved of our guilt, "Tagtug" had to accompany Marduk as fathers accompany their children to juvenile court. Tagtug was the father of Marduk in the sense that the maker of the bow was father to its user. This is, of course, also the sense in which "Joseph the carpenter" was the earthly, Homo sapien father of Paul's Jesus, carpenters being the makers of the wooden weapons for both the original and the second sins. Paul transferred the symbolization of this relationship from the crucifixion scene to the nativity scene in his Christian Myth. [To fully understand the Christian nativity scene, notice that the three adoring and gift-giving wise men represent the Holy Spirit (angry Homo erectus who takes our lives), the primal father and the parent species per se of Homo sapiens, whom Jesus mostly represents. The animals around the manger symbolize lower life forms from which Man evolved.]*

But by this time, Tagtug and Dumuzi had already been absorbed by Tammuz, who used Tagtug's deed (the invention of the bow and arrow) as his reason for having to displace the newly monogamous Ishtar as the fertility god who seasonally escorted the vegetation to and from the underworld. Paul's nameless "robbers" who died with Jesus were substitutes for Tagtug (Tammuz). *Paul knew to acquit Tammuz, to release him from Hell, because the bow and arrow and the accompanying revolution in stone tools and technology per se were and are morally neutral. Technology can be put to positive or negative ends.*

We can safely assume that the Sumerian myth of Tagtug in the garden ends with Tagtug being expelled from paradise, with *Homo sapiens* losing the love of his (murdered) *Homo erectus* parents. But in the rest of this section and the next and last section of the poem, Enlil and the mother goddess each produce other people. The people created and named by the mother goddess are meant to compensate Tagtug (*Homo sapiens*) for his expulsion from paradise, and they are the "physician" gods whom our ancestors appealed to for help with their various, common ailments. [H *If you think your gods are angry with you, then you're going to need help from someone; and whoever answers that crazy call has got to be a quack.*]

The people whom Enlil creates are not easy to identify from the limited fragment that has been preserved. Langdon tells us that, "Enlil the begetter replied vehemently":

"Thou Ninhursag hast born me a child.  
And so, 'In my city I will make thee a creature' shall  
thy name be called.

...His head as a peculiar one he modeled.  
His feet (?) as a peculiar one he designed.  
His eyes as a peculiar one he made brilliant.”  
--Langdon: 201

Enlil is using his magical power of Mummu (poorly understood divinity) to make these people for the mother goddess, to compensate her for the loss of *Homo erectus*. Moreover, I believe that the third, fourth and fifth lines of the passage above are spoken from the point of view of the poem's *Homo sapiens* narrator. Each of these points, if true, would suggest that it is the “black (or dark) -headed people” that Enlil made. This confirms what L. C. Geerts told us in Chapter 19, Volume 1, namely, that the black-headed people were originally said to have been made by the Annunaki, the *Homo erectus* gods, either to replace the Igigi gods (*Homo sapiens*) in the digging of irrigation works (Geerts) or to replace the Annunaki/*Homo erectus*/Enki that Ninurta/Marduk killed in the Species War (Langdon). This is also what the Babylonian Creation Epic refers to in saying that the “blood of Kingu is used to create savage man.” Thus, distinguishing the “black-headed people” as a race made by the *Homo erectus* gods but inferior to them provided the fraudulent justification for *Homo erectus* slavery from the permanent Neolithic till the end of their days.

Although you may not need my help with what remains, millions who have come before me have already had their chance, tried and failed. Freud knew better than to even try to interpret Genesis 3. In Chapter 4, when we assumed that Freud's interpretation of the original sin applied to Genesis 3, we were putting too much faith in experts and not enough in ourselves. So, as I show off a bit by interpreting Genesis 3, line by line, don't take my word as “gospel” either. Let Alfred Tennyson's advice (at the top of this chapter) be your guide. My source here is The New American Standard Bible.

### GENESIS 3

In Genesis 1, “God” created the world and its creatures. Then “He” created a man and a woman in his own image. Much like the great Sumero-Babylonian possessors of Mummu, the Hebrew God had only to form an image in his mind and utter, “Let there be...,” and presto --the thing was made! It took him only six days to make the world.

Genesis 2 begins on the *seventh* day, god's day of rest. While he was resting, he apparently reflected upon his work because, as of Genesis 2:4, the chapter flashes back, focusing in upon the high points of creation. The Garden of Eden is

said to have been watered by four rivers. (Either “He” took back two of them, or the early delta had several estuaries.) In the garden, he placed two of his many trees that are, “pleasing to the sight and good for food.” These two, the only two to be named, are the “Tree of Life” and the “Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil.” God told the man, God’s gardener and cultivator, “From any tree of the garden you may eat freely; but from the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat from it you shall surely die.” A woman was then fashioned from the man’s rib; they were told to *be as one* [*H love each other*]; and the reader is informed that, “The man and his wife were both naked and were not ashamed.”

*We discovered the Species War to be the source of our animal alienation, our Second Mask, in Chapter 25. Prior to the Species War, our ancestors would have been as unashamed of their naked bodies as are the other animals. Next begins the chapter that is probably the most intriguing and dramatic chapter in the Old Testament. Italicized is my commentary on Genesis 3:*

1 Now the serpent was craftier than any beast of the field that the Lord God had made. And he said to the woman, “Indeed, has God said, ‘You shall not eat from any tree of the garden?’”

*Homo sapiens, Adam and Eve, are going to blame the serpent, Homo erectus, for the evil results of picking the forbidden fruit.*

2 And the woman said to the serpent, “From the fruit of the trees of the garden we may eat;

3 but from the fruit of the tree that is in the middle of the garden, God has said, ‘You shall not eat from it or touch it, lest you die.’”

*We already suspect that picking the fruit of this tree represents using Tagtug’s bow and arrow not just for hunting other animals but for killing our parent species, for tearing boughs or blossoms from Tamoanchan’s Xochitlicaca (tree) as Brundage described for us in Volume 2.*

4 And the serpent said to the woman, “You surely shall not die!

5 “For God knows that in the day you eat from it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil.”

*As I stated in Chapter 7, the original “Chosen People” didn’t concern themselves with the negative side of the ambivalent and universal elements of the godhead. Their early Jehovah seems to have been a wrathful God whose wrath they could wholly avoid by obeying His will. But that presumes the ability to know*

*His will and to be confident of that knowledge. Obviously, “the Chosen People” have never been that confident because here, in the very first book of their Torah, they have posited a Tree of Life and a Tree of Death; but they are not sure enough about the latter to call it what it is. Instead, they call it the “Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil,” as if knowledge of technology automatically leads one to commit evil (destructive) deeds, as if there ever were a moral alternative to struggling to learn the truth and then supporting the outcomes that truth demands (i. e. justice), as if anyone can do “God’s” will by keeping an ear peeled or doing what the rabbi says. And if “God” doesn’t always talk to us, how does the rabbi learn?*

*Tagtug/Tammuz was indeed associated with a “tree of the knowledge of good and evil.” But as Paul, in later times, discerned, he who only creates or masters technology is not guilty. One’s technology says nothing about one’s ethics, about how one uses that technology.*

*On the other hand, Ninurta/Marduk is associated with the Tree of Death, as is his bow, a name for which was “Long Wood.” Here, in Genesis 3, the serpent is tempting Adam and Eve to choose death, to do evil; but everywhere the serpent was symbolic of our Homo erectus ancestors, the first gods themselves. To blame the gods for their own destruction (in the Species War) is outrageously hypocritical but, as we’ve seen, typical of our child-like, primitive ancestors.*

*Neither does knowledge of technology, of any sort, give us knowledge of good and evil. Technology only increases our power, accentuates the good or evil of which we are capable. The knowledge of good and evil, ethics, is, as Rabbi Hillel once suggested, just a matter of applying the Golden Rule **consistently**. Until we apply it to our genetic competition, to the most vital sphere of social life, until we minimize the K and R strategies; it is inevitable that we will remain savages, savages that use technology about as much for evil purposes as for good ones.*

6 When the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was a delight to the eyes and that the tree was desirable to make one wise, she took from its fruit and ate; and she gave also to her husband with her, and he ate.

*Here in the male-dominated west, the woman (“Eve”) is blamed for the picking and eating of the forbidden fruit because this “rib of Adam” was thought to be the principal “bone of contention” between Homo sapien and Homo erectus. To my western-male mind, that sounds fair enough. But in the female-dominated east, if, for example, Chinese women had cared enough about the truth to keep any oral history, in a myth like this; Adam, a bad egg, would have picked the fruit, peeled it, served it on a platter and come back to offer seconds.*

7 Then the eyes of both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves loin coverings.

*Again, and as we learned in Chapter 25, our animal alienation, the shame we feel regarding our reproductive organs and animal functions, our Second Mask, which masks our animal/ great-ape being, resulted from the Species War, from the guilt that our ancestors felt after exterminating our parent species, from effectively expunging their memory and thus severing our link with the animal kingdom. Like other animals, very little children who have not yet absorbed our culture are unashamed of their bodies. Adam and Eve's need to cover their bodies after picking from the tree confirms that picking the fruit is symbolic of fighting the Species War, exterminating our parent species and blacking out the dirty deed.*

8 And they heard the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day, and the man and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God among the trees of the garden.

9 Then the Lord God called to the man, and said to him, "Where are you?"

10 And he said, "I heard the sound of Thee in the garden, and I was afraid because I was naked; so, I hid myself."

11 And He said, "Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten from the tree of which I commanded you not to eat?"

*"God" knew intuitively (our Hebrew ancestors were wise enough to know) of this cause-and-effect relationship between the Species War and the shame of nakedness (animal alienation). Some of our Irish ancestors understood this too and attempted to teach us with allegory and imagery that is incomparably rich and powerful. See the myth-tale, "Shaking Head," in my "Irish Mythology."*

12 And the man said, "The woman whom Thou gavest to be with me, she gave me from the tree, and I ate."

13 Then the Lord God said to the woman, "What is this you have done?" And the woman said, "The serpent deceived me, and I ate."

*When there is no one else to blame, what do we do? Blame the victim.*

14 And the Lord God said to the serpent,  
"Because you have done this,  
Cursed are you more than all cattle,  
And more than every beast of the field;

On your belly shall you go,  
And dust shall you eat  
All the days of your life;

*The belief that the serpent lost his legs as punishment for having instigated the Species War was: 1) encouraged by the half-hominid-half-totem representation of the Homo erecti at the Paleolithic-Neolithic boundary (See my Figure 82), 2) imaginatively supportive of the denial of responsibility for the Species War and the transference of that responsibility onto the “serpents” (the bad Homo erecti) and 3) supportive of the literal interpretation of the myth. It seems that “serpent” or “snake” has its literal meaning only when used by priests of the modern religions.*

15 And I will put enmity  
Between you and the woman,  
*Here’s something that all Homo sapien men wanted!*  
And between your seed and her seed;  
He shall bruise you on the head,  
And you shall bruise him on the heel.”

*Here’s more support for the literal interpretation of the myth, as demanded by the most neurotic folks with overactive superegos.*

16 To the woman He said,  
I will greatly multiply  
Your pain in childbirth,  
In pain, you shall bring forth children;  
Yet your desire shall be for your husband,  
And he shall rule over you.

*As we have acquired culture and selected each other for our intellectual and communicative abilities, the hominid cranium has grown dramatically, increasing the danger and difficulty of childbirth. But as my Figure 8 shows, this trend began long before the Species War.*

*“And he shall rule over you” attempts to justify and explain the male domination of western society – from which this myth derives. As I surmised in Chapter 13, western societies evolved from male-dominated hunting groups that left our first settled community (probably at Ur) after the start of the Species War. The fishing peoples who left Ur during the same period were replete with clever women who learned to fish rather than be dependent upon a male hunter. These marine groups became female dominated and migrated eastward along the Indian Ocean, evolving into our eastern societies.*

17 Then to Adam He said, “Because you have listened to the voice of your wife, and have eaten from the tree about which I commanded you, saying, ‘You shall not eat from it’:

Cursed is the ground because of you;

In toil, you shall eat of it

All the days of your life.

18 “Both thorns and thistles it shall grow for you;

And you shall eat the plants of the field;

19 “By the sweat of your face

You shall eat bread,

Till you return to the ground,

Because from it you were taken;

For you are dust,

And to dust you shall return.”

*Evolution and survival, life, has always been a struggle that every individual must lose in the end. The suggestion that it was otherwise when we lived in relative harmony with our parent species, the suggestion that “We’d all be in paradise to this day, were it not for those two numb skulls Adam and Eve,” is a replacement idea for Fraternal complex guilt. Similarly, “My parents should still be taking care of me” replaces Oedipus complex guilt (e. g. expressed as “I never should have had those jealous and murderous thoughts about her/him.”). Also, as Freud noticed, the belief in paradise, the “oceanic feeling,” is (at least in part) an unconscious memory of our prenatal existence in the womb.*

20 Now the man called his wife’s name Eve (living or life) because she was the mother of all the living.

*Geneticists now know that there is literal truth in this. As noted in Volume 1, we all descend from a single African woman. Once the Species War began, Homo sapiens living in Homo-erectus-dominated groups would have been distrusted, closely watched and forced to mate only with Homo erectus people. Recall how, in Chapter 10 of Volume 1, J. D. Clark provided us with apparent evidence of Homo erectus-organized, political oppression. He discovered that blade-making experimentation (H and probably stone knapping experimentation per se), in Africa, was suppressed during a 45-40 ky period that roughly corresponds to the Species War.*

21 And the Lord God made garments of skin for Adam and his wife, and clothed them.

*Again, Homo erectus made and wore animal-skin clothing before he began to occupy the upper latitudes during the Pleistocene, one to two million years ago. God giving Adam and Eve clothing at this time is required by the metaphor of falling from the garden into the cold, cruel world and by the positive side of our ambivalence toward Homo erectus and the other elements of the godhead. Only a thoroughly negative parent or father species would cast his children out of the garden and into the cold, cruel world -- wearing only their birthday suits.*

22 Then the Lord God said, "Behold, the man has become like one of Us, knowing good and evil; and now, lest he stretch out his hand, and take also from the tree of life, and eat, and live forever" ...

*Here is more of the usual false advertising that the purveyors of religion resort to: the promise of a possible quick and easy escape from death and suffering. The Gilgamesh priests, the Adapta priests and even the Brahmins were more honest in admitting that literal immortality is impossible for beings that are as ignorant and little evolved as we are.*

*The characters in our myths that are widely remembered, that achieved **figurative** immortality, whose memorability is as long as the life of our species, are symbolic of large groups of ancestors and relatives that fought **and died** at crucial turning points in our prehistory. It is only through collective, cooperative and arduous struggle that we slowly master the physical world and have a future hope of approaching **literal** (individual) immortality. Minimizing the K and R strategies is the most important foreseeable milestone on the road to that goal.*

*Genesis 3 is realistic only if we interpret it as saying that man is unlikely to ever achieve eternal life, literal immortality, (the tree of life that once was available to him in the garden) because he has chosen to acquire and misuse the knowledge of death. We eliminated the primal fathers and the whole of our father species and continue to have conflict-torn families and to control our population irrationally --by unnecessarily increasing the death rate. Minimizing K and R, maximizing equal opportunity and population control, will include setting our collective birth rate to the one corresponding to the greatest decrease in the death rate, which will maximize the rate at which we evolve and approach immortality.*

23 therefore the Lord God sent him out from the Garden of Eden, to cultivate the ground from which he was taken.

24 So, He drove the man out; and at the east of the Garden of Eden He stationed the cherubim, and the flaming sword that turned in every direction, to guard the way to the tree of life.



*The fall from the Mexican garden of Tamoanchan, the fall from the Sumerian and Semitic gardens and numerous North American myths about man's loss of immortality all refer mainly to the same "falling out" of Homo sapien and his parent species, Homo erectus.<sup>9</sup> Universally, the most feared element of the godhead, the "Grim Reaper" that has "taken our lives," has been Homo erectus per se, the "Holy Spirit." The roots of our modern religions are identical to those of the Kwakiutls and the other American Indians. Most of you should be glad that this worldwide taxi tour is only make-believe. You would have lost that bet we made in Chapter 23, and you would not have liked paying double the meter for this ride.*

*Though it would have become easier to decode, this last verse of Genesis 3 would have been more accurate if the myth-maker(s) had described the cherubim, rather than the sword, as flaming. It was the former (nameless, Homo erectus multitudes) whose corpses were disposed of in bonfires. The cherubim are symbolic of the prehistoric model of our Fraternal Complex, and the sword is symbolic of the ongoing aspect of that complex.*

***The guilt and fear that we acquired from the Species War did not cause us to fall from any garden. That happy garden, Tamoanchan, the Garden of Eden, etc. never existed. The Species War did set the precedent for all the negative, Fraternal complex behavior that deters us from creating that garden.***

*Not minimizing our Fraternal Complex, not setting limits upon our genetic competition (by minimizing the K and R class struggle as advocated in the Conclusion of this book) and not minimizing our Oedipus Complex (by adopting the Stage II reforms for marriage and child-rearing advocated in "Stage II of the Nonviolent Rainbow Revolution") are equivalent to choosing death over life.*

*Our instincts tell us that having children provides some semblance of immortality. But think about it. Science, e. g. the experiments of Sarich and Wilson (Chapter 10), assures us that our genes are not significantly different. Moreover, very few of us can even remember the names of ancestors further than two generations behind us. So, coping with our mortality by reproducing is ineffective in its goal and, more often than not, since our ascent to the top of Earth's food chain, negative in its consequences. Our excessive reproductive competition is what prevents us from rising to the higher levels of cooperation*

---

<sup>9</sup> Ella Clark noticed that, "Nearly all North American Indian tribes whose folk tales have been published have some explanation of the origin of death. Coyote is the central character in such myths among the Plateau tribes and some others" (E.E. Clark: 75). The Plateau that she refers to is that between the Pacific coastal range and the Rockies. Coyote, as you have already been told and seen, was the "trickster," the condensation of the negative aspect of the Species War victors. The Kalispel myth that Clark relates on her pages 75-77 defines this fall from grace and immortality better than any North American myth that I have seen.

*and more rapid scientific and technical progress that can ultimately enable us, as a species, to approach literal immortality. It is our failure to limit that competition, to minimize first our Fraternal Complex (by minimizing K and R) and our failure to abolish the Oedipal Complex (by inaugurating the Stage II system of marriage and child rearing) that keeps us in a savage and very mortal state, merely dreaming of the immortality and the paradise that we are otherwise and ultimately capable of approaching and creating.*

## Chapter 37: Polynesians, Easter Island and The Prophets of Cargo

*Was our future recorded here?*

*Each time history repeats itself, the price goes up. –popular saying*

The Polynesian Islands form a 20,000-square-mile triangle with New Zealand, the Hawaiian Islands and Easter Island as its corners. (See [Figure 64a and b](#), below.) They are home to a minuscule fraction of the human population, but to students of prehistory and religion they loom large. They are important for their history of romance, mystery and adventure, a history that permeates these islands and is perhaps best symbolized by the 800 to 1,000 gigantic *moai* stone statues of Easter Island.<sup>10</sup>

*Decoding the Deluge*, a comprehensive treatment of religion and prehistory and a basic biography of man, would be incomplete without a chapter on Polynesia. Worse still, without an Easter Island chapter, the uproar that this work is sure to elicit from knee-jerk neurotics would include a chorus of claims that, “Polynesian mysteries are impenetrable” or “Easter Island is the exception that disproves all the rules.”

These critics will be disappointed because interpreting Easter Island archaeology and mythology is only a minor challenge. As astute readers will suspect, these statues *do* represent the *Homo erectus* gods -- but only in part. They are a little bit tricky. Before we analyze the related mythology, let's acquire a basic understanding of the Polynesian people and their history of adaptation to these remote islands.

### POLYNESIAN CULTURE IN GENERAL

Research of recent decades suggests that differences between parts of prehistoric Melanesia, Micronesia and Polynesia were not as distinct as once thought. Nevertheless, certain physical traits, dialects, cuisine, tools, types of dress, navigational skills, weapons, patterns of social organization and religious belief are unmistakably Polynesian. Polynesians were and still are tall, strong and brown-skinned. The men wore only loincloths. The women wrapped themselves about the waist in *tapa*, the inner bark of the mulberry tree that was soaked and pounded into thin, papery material.

---

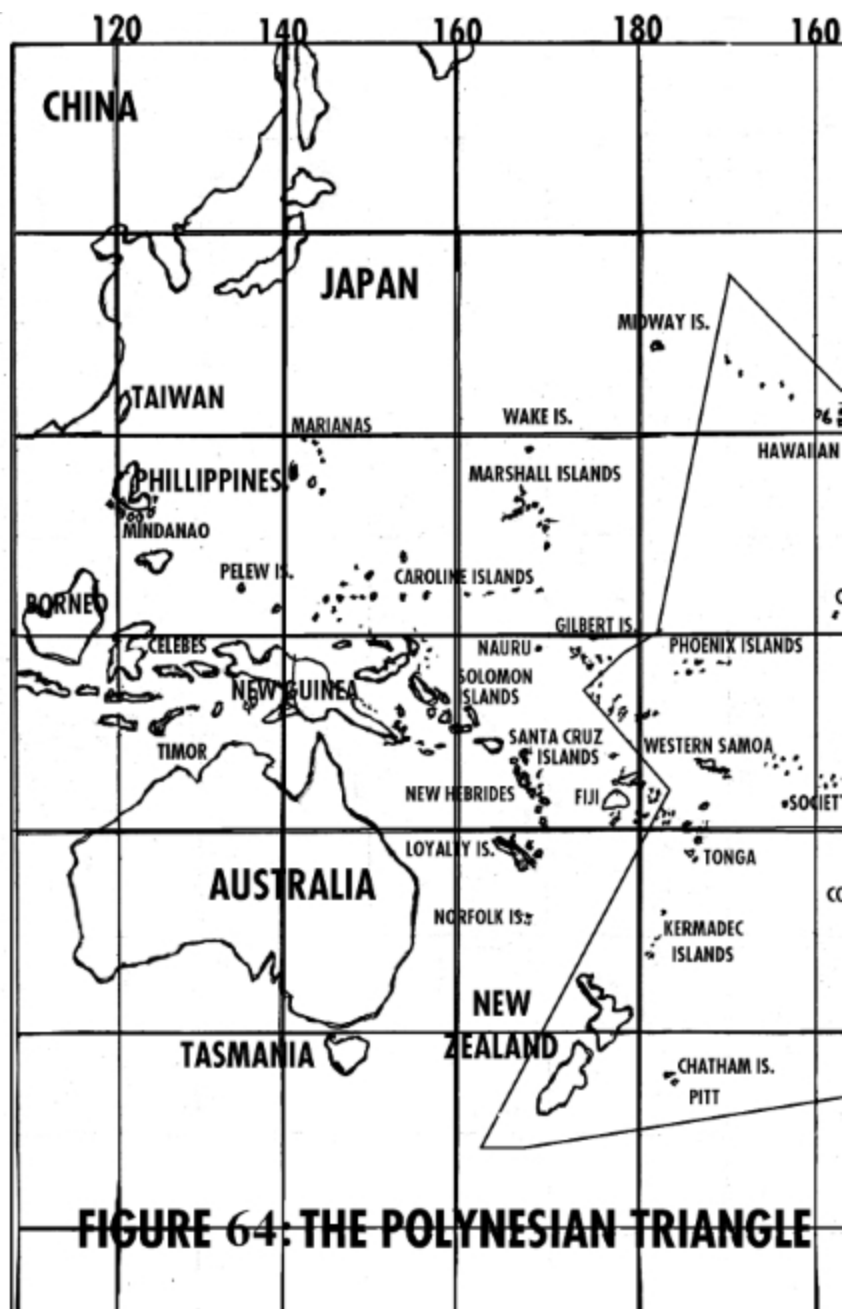
<sup>10</sup> These statues are world-renowned. They range in height from six to thirty ft. and are individually carved from volcanic tuff from the island's *Rano Raraku* volcano. The statues have dark, highly stylized, rectangular heads and torsos with elongated ears and noses. Their hands are placed upon their stomachs. Their exact number is uncertain because the island and its quarry have not been fully excavated.

“The islands are generally poor in their diversity of flora and fauna. In the case of Easter Island, almost all its pre-settlement trees were Chilean Wine Palm or some now-extinct close relative thereof. (Bahn and Flenley: 84-90) Easter Island was and remains remarkably poor in flora and fauna because of its volcanic origin approximately three million years ago and because of its extreme isolation. There was probably only one deliberate group of settlers to arrive there in pre-historic times, and most of the forty-six indigenous plant species that Swedish botanist Carl Skottsberg inventoried in 1956 probably did not come with them. It has been estimated that about half of the species arrived by bird; a third (all ferns) arrived by wind and a sixth by water. They arrived mostly from Southeast Asia and mostly in stepping-stone fashion during glacial periods when many of the Pacific’s now-submerged volcanic peaks were above water.” --Bahn and Flenley: 32-34

Polynesians generally lost the art of pottery making during their early migration across these islands, but they were no worse off without it. Most of their islands are fertile; and they enjoyed, year-round, yams, bananas, potatoes, coconut, breadfruit and great quantities of poi. Breadfruit grows very fast and is nourishing and tasty when cooked. Poi is cooked taro. Pounding it was the worst part of a Polynesian man’s work and kept him fit. Wild pigs, now extinct vegetarian dogs, chickens, ducks, rats and, what was for them an inexhaustible supply of marine resources provided protein. Polynesians transplanted many of these plants and animals as they migrated from Pacific island-to-island. Seines, for driving fish into bottlenecked rock weirs or small pools, were made from knotted lianas draped with large leaves and palm fronds.<sup>11</sup> Having no metal, prehistoric Polynesians carved their fishhooks from bone and cooked their

---

<sup>11</sup> Notice that because Polynesia had no dangerous animals toward which Polynesians would have become ambivalent, they almost never worshipped animals as totem symbols for the gods. The two exceptions were the bird and the turtle. As you’ll see, the frigate bird became the idol of Easter Island’s degenerate “Birdman” cargo cult; and the turtle was everywhere symbolic of the gods and reserved as food for the gods’ royal personators, the Fifth Mask folks.





in

food in communal earth ovens or *imus*.<sup>12</sup> Meat so cooked was sandwiched between layers of palm fronds or other kindling, larger pieces of wood, hard and round heat-absorbing stones, a layer of grass or banana leaves and a packing of fruits. Vegetables or fish were used to flavor the main dish. Land tenure tended to be more private:

“The Polynesian islands comprised territorial divisions (sometimes individual islets), which usually incorporated a portion of coastline and stretched to the mountainous interior. Settlements, concentrated along the coast or in the more fertile valleys, consisted of homesteads scattered among plantations, and often clustered around chiefly dwellings [*H large, high-roofed & thatched*]. The concept of aristocracy was highly developed in Polynesian society, with the chiefs having the power of life or death, and usually tracing their lineage back through a series of first-born sons to the tribal founder-ancestor.” --Bahn and Flenley: 70

Of course, ideally, we should all be first-borns; and we *all are* descended from the “gods,” despite most of our ancestors, at some stage, having forgotten the relevant prehistory.

“The social organization of ancient Polynesia was similar in pattern on all the islands. Yet on the larger settlements there was naturally greater sophistication with more elaborate social structures, ceremonies and protocol. Such refugees as had settled on a small atoll would be forced to abandon customs no longer practical and live by simpler rules than those of Tahiti, Samoa and New Zealand. It was also inevitable that the more prosperous, larger islands, out of contact with other islands for many generations, should develop elaborate variations on the original pattern. But before the white man came, from New Zealand to Hawaii, the basic structure of society, remained surprisingly unaltered over the centuries. The way of life suited the inhabitants without need of drastic change. A small and simple Polynesian group contained only two classes: aristocrats (which, of course, included the chief and his relatives and court) and commoners. Commoners could often claim descent from the original settlers -- a major point in claiming distinction -- but since they had

---

<sup>12</sup> As in pre-Columbian Mesoamerica and the Andean Cordillera, the wheel was unknown in Polynesia.

produced no important ancestors for generations there was no genealogy of them preserved among the priestly chants.” --Berry and Best: 49

Within the aristocracy, one's status was generally a function of his familial affiliation with either the chief or the number two man, the priest. The chief was divine and inherited his mana and his office. He was bred for size, strength and the ability to tolerate physical pain. He was expected to lead his people in their occasional wars and to secure god's providence. (The stocky body type was associated with mana and royalty.) War weapons were the war canoe, woven mat headdresses and vests, long, ornately carved wooden clubs and bamboo knives. The bow and arrow was known but never known to have been used in battle. Can you guess why? The sling was known but rarely used in battle and then only in a limited area. (Cf. Berry and Best: 59)

The priest, the number two man of this tribal aristocracy, was more likely to acquire his office by individual cunning. He was the real leader in peacetime, when the well-being of the people depended upon his sagacity to know when to pronounce or dissolve taboos to preserve the health of the people and their environment. Taboos were restrictions or compulsions, the reasons for which were unconscious or unspoken and the violation of which invoked automatic (magical or divine) punishment or death. Belief in the taboos was so strong that Polynesian religion had no need of rewards or punishments in an afterlife. Conceptions of an afterlife were relatively uniform. Most people believed that “Going into the night” meant entering a tree-hole or volcano entrance to the underworld where one expected to live a life like what one lived above ground. The pronouncement of taboos was sufficient to control or modify most behaviors, but taboos were apparently easier to create than to dissolve. “This system has led some anthropologists to believe that, at the time of the white man's coming, Hawaii was so rigidly controlled and restricted by taboo that further progress had become impossible” (Berry and Best: 113). Confirm Frazer.

The many ethnographic similarities between these remote islands result from their similar ecology and their pattern of discovery and settlement. New Zealand and some southern islands notwithstanding, the pattern was one of eastward steppingstones.

What caused people to voyage to uninhabited islands? Romantic explanations abound in the modern literature (e. g. Rogers' and Hammerstein's *South Pacific* and the factual accounts of H.M.S. *Bounty*). Mutinous sailors and their Tahitian friends and lovers sailed to uninhabited Pitcairn Island and then burned H.M.S. *Bounty*. Native folktales also offer no shortage of romance. The god Maui was vaguely both the leader of the primal brotherhood and the sun god.



In Hawaii, New Zealand and some other islands, where he was enroute to becoming the Supreme Being, Maui eloped with the beautiful wife of the creator serpent to become the first settler of these places.<sup>13</sup> More mundane migration motives are also provided by the ethnography: natural disasters (volcanoes, earthquakes, tidal waves, typhoons and droughts), famine and epidemics.

“Equally drastic, and no doubt more frequent, was man-made violence: warfare, raiding and violent family disputes leading to enforced and voluntary exile. The native histories of the Pacific are full of references to the flight of defeated parties... the first “boat people” seen on this ocean.” --Bahn and Flenley: 71

Although warfare was a major part of Polynesian life, priests were able, most of the time, to control their islands’ population. They did so through frequent infanticides, human sacrifice and the encouragement of free-loving, extended adolescent societies called *arioi*.

As for sacrifices, some people said that sacrifice in Tahiti --usually of captives from other tribes, especially exiled individuals --occurred, “one every six months. While others said it was for the most important prayers” (Howarth: 118). From the remains of ceremonial platforms in the Marquesas, Easter Island and elsewhere and from the earliest eyewitness accounts of numerous bonfires at these platforms, we shall see that these important “prayers” were apparently very frequent. In the Hawaiian Islands, the numerous individuals suitable for sacrifice constituted a separate and untouchable class (Bailey).

As for the *arioi*, those of you who don’t know Polynesian prehistory might think that I am inventing what follows unless I quote David Howarth verbatim:

“The only welcome interruptions in this placid life, the only days that were different, occurred when the *arioi* came. The *arioi* were a religious sect that, it was believed, had been founded in a distant age by a god named *Oro*. But they were so unlike any Jewish or Christian sect that visitors often refused to believe they had any religion at all; for they were not only a kind of priesthood but also traveling players, men and women, who gave professional and highly polished entertainments, called *heivas*, of singing, dancing, play-acting and wrestling, which everyone from miles around attended. Some of their plays were historical, but most were satires and comedies that made fun of the mannerisms of chiefs and later of Europeans. All the dances

---

<sup>13</sup> See David Lewis or Bailey for the various Maui legends.

were erotic; some were performed in the nude and gave demonstrations of special sexual techniques.

Off-stage, too, their behavior was not what Europeans expected of priesthood: they did not marry but, among themselves, continued the teenage practice of free indiscriminate love into adult life. When they had babies, they let them die: the second example of infanticide [*H the other being priestly selection*]. They traveled in parties large and small all over the Society Islands, the group of islands of which Tahiti is part, and there were similar institutions in some other parts of the Polynesian world. Large parties sailed from island to island in fleets of sea-going canoes, festooned with flowers and wearing -- if they wore anything -- a uniform of yellow girdles of leaves and red cloaks, singing rhythmical choruses and playing flutes and drums. One of Cook's<sup>14</sup> reliable observers saw them in a fleet of *seventy* canoes, which he reckoned carried *seven* hundred *arioi*. They must have been like a plague of locusts -- they all expected to be fed wherever they went -- but when they were heard or seen approaching everyone prepared to welcome them, all other work was abandoned, and the day became a gala.

None of the first three frigates to visit the island, English, French, or Spanish, happened to be in Tahiti when the *arioi* were there, and two Spanish padres were the first to see or hear a *heiva*. They were outraged and terrified. Cook was the first European to understand that these festivals were religious. The *arioi*'s creed had a strange superficial likeness to the Christian story: *Oro* was the son of the supreme god, *Te Atua*, and he had come down to earth and then returned to heaven. [*H Universally, sexual orgies would have followed both the original and the second sins, in the latter case, sex with captive Homo erectus women and liberated Homo sapiens.*] The *arioi*'s gospel had the same historical relationship to established

---

<sup>14</sup> Captain James Cook (1728-1779), British navigator and explorer of Antarctica, Australia and much of the Pacific, made several lengthy voyages to Polynesia, discovered the Hawaiian Islands for the modern world, wrote lucid accounts of his astute observations and spared his seamen from scurvy by being the first naval officer to well-supply his ships with fruits and vegetables. But his failure to understand the primitive custom of ritual gift exchange and the islanders' lack of private property and his inflexibility in holding the high king hostage to recover a "stolen long boat" resulted in his death from a spear wound during his second visit of Hawaii. *Nor could the (mostly bisexual) natives understand that the (mostly latent homosexual) sailors only pretended to value native women.* All in all, Cook was one of the most outstanding and humanitarian men of his age.

religion as Christianity had to Jewry, and the *arioi* were its apostles. But there the similarity ended. Oro's motive in coming to earth (*he came down a rainbow*) [*H emphasis mine*] was typically Polynesian: he had tired of heavenly [*H Homo erectus*] wives and had his eye on a beautiful girl on the holy island of Raiatea. [*H As we saw in Ireland and elsewhere, mythical marriage between the Homo erectus gods and Homo sapien royalty was thought to be a means of reestablishing peace between the sacred and mundane worlds.*] The *arioi*'s proselytizing was typically Polynesian too. Everyone, presumably, had a subconscious wish to go on behaving like a teenager all his life; so, the *arioi* offered that privilege to their members. And everyone enjoyed seeing comic plays and erotic dances, so that was what the *arioi* gave their congregations. However, the *arioi*'s creed and the older traditional beliefs were not mutually exclusive. On the contrary, the *arioi* were revivalists. Their visits were not too frequent, and they gave the people and the traditional priesthood a fresh vitality. Their entertainments always began with prayers, and they preached peace among the islands. Most seafaring visitors, not understanding the language, did not recognize the prayers for what they were; but most admitted, more or less shamefaced, that they liked the performance.

Anyone could join this strange society; it was the only thing equally open to people of every class. Novices had to be good at dancing and singing and had to know the society's sacred traditions and songs by heart, and show that they were inspired by falling into religious ecstasy. But class played a part in promotion to the higher ranks. The society had *seven* grades [*H of course*] of membership, and strict examinations had to be taken to rise from one to the next. Ordinary people seldom rose beyond the lower grades; the families of chiefs filled the upper ones. Only two vows were demanded: to obey superior officers and to kill any children that were born. This second, drastic promise did not worry the men: "every woman [*in the arioi*] is common to every man," Cook reported in his journal, and so no man could know if he had fathered a baby or not. Perhaps the women made the promise because they were stage-struck and concerned, like other actresses and dancers, with their appearance and agility. They did not want children who would have put a stop to their roving life. But the vows were not expected to be endless, and most members of the *arioi* left it sooner or later to marry and live a family life like anyone else. As retired stars, they kept the prestige and respect they had won in their prime." --Howarth: 38-40.

Even after Tahitians did marry and have children, they didn't "settle down." They didn't die sexually, as do people trapped in the dysfunctional marriages of our class society. Most Tahitians had at least one *taio*. A *taio* was a close friend with whom one exchanged names and identified. Your *taio* was another you, one with whom you exchanged spouses recreationally. Is it any wonder that both lonely sailors and puritanical missionaries were magnetically drawn to these islands as soon as the word got out that life here was the converse of what they had experienced?

With an ideal climate and an easily obtained, cornucopia of food, when the population and environment were under control, these islands were a virtual paradise.

"The islanders made sure that everyone had what he needed by a custom of mutual giving. It was not trade because they had no money; nor was it barter. A Tahitian would give anything to anyone who needed it, and expected nothing in exchange except the knowledge that if he was ever in need himself, somebody would do the same for him. [*H Except in New Zealand, primitive Polynesians couldn't disappear after sponging off everyone. The islands are too small for this.*] As a matter of course, they gave food to anyone who was away from his home and hungry, and with equal innocence they gave the pleasure of sex to anyone who was hungry for that. If a man's canoe was wrecked, his house blown down, or his net torn by sharks, his neighbors would give him their own and set to work to help him build another canoe or house or make another net. Nobody thought of himself as the permanent owner of anything. They had never heard of private property, except perhaps family ownership of land. So, they were never tempted into the sins of envy, selfishness or avarice. Nor were they cruel or unkind, either by nature or example."<sup>15</sup> --Howarth: 27.

This is, of course, the positive side of their tribal society. The negative side, the arch-conservatism, the suppression of all ambition, initiative and individuality was eloquently described for us by James Frazer. (See Chapter 3.) Aside from this tyranny of the mediocre but loving majority, there was only one constant

---

<sup>15</sup> Numerous accounts of the earliest seafarers tell of how Tahitian men and women would often tearfully beg naval officers not to flog their subordinates.

threat that, like a single cloud on the horizon of an otherwise clear-blue sky, could sweep over Polynesians faster than a storm at sea and convert paradise into hell: war.

It is possible that darker-skinned Melanesians had once driven Polynesians out of Fiji and its neighboring islands. The Polynesians of Tonga may have later turned the tables on some of these islands. These possibilities notwithstanding, Polynesian wars were internecine. Fighting was hand-to-hand; and, except in New Zealand, tactics seldom went beyond simple flanking movements. They had no experience with mounted warriors, armor, archers, skirmishers, sieges, ambushes, guerrillas or night raiders. (*Cf.* Berry and Best: 59-71.)

Sooner or later within his lifetime, a man would be expected to participate in one of these wars, to follow his chief into battle. Even if one's own island enjoyed internal peace, sooner or later the time would come, disrupting a month or many years of paradise, when a succeeding wave of migrants would catch up with them. Elaborate, swift and highly-maneuverable double canoes, tied in pairs like catamarans by cross poles supporting trim able sails and shelters for long-distance voyaging, would be surprisingly beached, bringing a few score or a few hundred war-painted and tattooed men bearing war clubs and bamboo knives. One of the chiefs and many of his warriors would be slain. "The enemy wounded were slain and usually formed a cannibal feast. Their heads were taken home in baskets as a sign of triumph." (*Cf.* Berry and Best: 70) If needed, warriors of the commoner class would be enslaved or held as captives until they were expected to go stoically "into the night" as the victims of religious sacrifice. The fortunate on the losing team made it to their canoes to try their luck at sea. But for them, being at sea in a small boat was not the trauma that it would be for one of us. In fact, one can almost say that, at sea, the Polynesian was in his element.

Of all primitive navigators, the Polynesians were far and away the most skillful. Polynesian fisherman would have found the islands that lie near mainlands. Many of the other islands are so remote from the nearest neighboring shore (e. g. Easter Island, 1400 miles from Pitcairn Island) that only well-planned, round-trip voyages of exploration by expert seamen and subsequent returns by catamarans crowded with men, women, animals, plants and possessions could have resulted in their successful settlement.

"The Polynesians were, in fact, among the most highly skilled seafarers and navigators the world has ever seen. They had an astounding knowledge of the night sky, and could steer by star paths using "star-compass" techniques that are still practiced over much of the Pacific; some had individual names for about two hundred stars, but recognized and used many other associated stars. They had an

amazing ability to detect surface currents and compensate for them. And they had the almost uncanny skill of steering by wave motion, guided by the barely perceptible swells reflected from islands beyond the horizon: as David Lewis remarks, “The skilled navigator comes to recognize the profile and characteristics of particular ocean swells as he would the faces of his friends, but he judges their direction more by feel than by sight.” The most advanced practitioners of this art would enter the water to judge the swells against the most sensitive part of the body, the scrotum --thus giving a whole new meaning to the term ‘ball-bearings.’” --Bahn and Flenley: 70

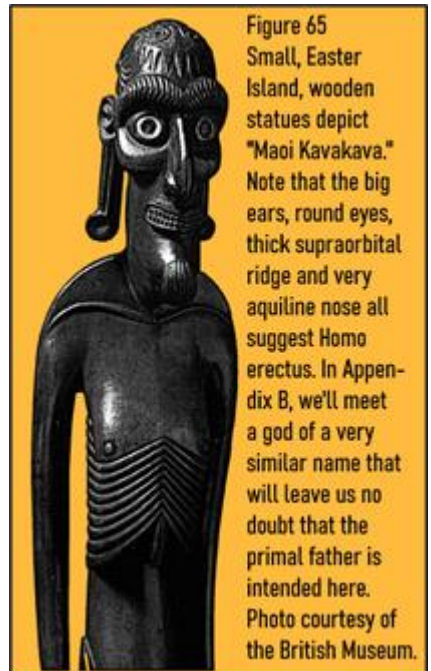
Thus, Polynesians colonized western Polynesia c. 3.2 kya (thousand years ago), the Marshall Islands by 200 B.C., all eastern Polynesia by 300-400 A.D. and New Zealand by 800 A.D. (Cf. Bahn and Flenley: 73)

Easter Island’s settlement and ancestral legends comprise the vivid and sacred core of Polynesian mythology. They will enable us to interpret Easter Island’s various statues and religious rites and see in them recordings of the same two complexes (Oedipal and Fraternal) that we have invariably found at the core of all religions and social problems.

## THE STATUES MYTHS AND RITUALS OF EASTER ISLAND

Let’s start first with the easiest one. Look at the small wooden statue of Figure 65, and don’t blame me for cropping the photo. These statues were very common on Easter Island. Listen to what Bahn and Flenley say about them. (Bahn and Flenley are the authors of what is perhaps the most scholarly book to date on Easter Island.)

“[T]he well-known wooden statuettes from the island, known as *Moai Kavakava* depict men with goatee beards and hooked noses, but also hollow cheeks, a spinal ridge and prominent emaciated ribs, which are often seen as indicators of famine. However, the bottom half of these



figures seems normal, healthy and well built, with rounded buttocks; they embody a complex symbolism, representing secondary gods, spirits of dead people or supernatural beings, and were used in dances to ward off evil spirits. (Melville reported that Typee priests in the Marquesas kept little wooden figures as oracles.) Like all the island's portable art objects, they have no date or stratigraphic provenance; nevertheless, they...imply that the islanders were well acquainted with...the physical results of mineral deficiency or starvation." -- Bahn and Flenley: 170

As you can begin to see from the last sentence, Bahn and Flenley think that these statues attest to periods of desperate poverty and starvation on Easter Island. Yet by their own admission and notwithstanding the increasing deforestation of the island until 1200 AD when this condition began to be slowly reversed, warfare and famine conditions did not break out on this remote island until some mysterious event c. 1680. This mysterious event sparked a social and environmental collapse that left the island in a depopulated state of anarchy for 200 years. These statues are obviously primitive and *not* images of the new white gods, examples of which we shall encounter anon. As for this *Moai Kavakava* statue "implying that the islanders were well acquainted with starvation," every Polynesian would have heard tales about mariners nearly starving after being shipwrecked or lost at sea. None of them would have had to experience starvation to know about it. Later in their book, Bahn and Flenley try to connect these *Moai Kavakavas* with the famine conditions that set in after the collapse of the island's civilization. (Cf. Bahn and Flenley: 170) Yet most of these *kavakavas* long predate the collapse, and starving people can ill-afford to devote their time and energy to statue making. Most of them can't even afford to bury their dead.

*These statues depict the primal father.* He is small and starving to death for the same reason that he is an oracle or great seer: he is very remote in time and the heavens; he is not much concerned with the affairs of men on earth, and it was not us but his own *Homo erectus* sons that killed him. So, he received very few sacrificial offerings. Yet his elevated position allows him to see and know of everything that happens on earth. Legend has it that when the two ghosts associated with these statues were spotted, they were at the topknot quarry, the highest area of the quarry. (Bahn and Flenley: 169) I suppose that the second ghost, if not a Christian corruption of the original legend, is that of *Moai Kavakava's* Earth Mother/wife.

Note also that his low forehead, thick supraorbital ridge and very aquiline nose suggest *Homo erectus*. Ears will be discussed below. The mandible and

ectomorphic body type are *Homo sapiens*; but remember, all religious phenomena, like dreams and neurotic symptoms *per se*, are compromise formations.

The best and most certain evidence of *Moai Kavakava*'s identity is his name! All over Australia, the aboriginals, whom we'll meet in Appendix B, practice similar rites involving identical *Kavavas*. *Kavava* looks very much like *Kavakava* and is unmistakably a primal father. *Kavakava* or *Kavava* was the name of or for the primal father who was ancestral to all these peoples. He was murdered at the dawn of civilization, during what the aborigines call the *altjeringa*. This was the time of *Homo erectus*' dominance, when there was no *Homo sapiens* society, when *Homo sapiens*, if they existed at all, were isolated, mutant members of *Homo erectus* society. Recall how Xiuhtecuhtli, the Aztec primal father, "was emaciated, bearded, deeply wrinkled, and bent over with extreme age." (See Chapter 35.) That's *Moai Kavakava*. Rest his soul.

Now, most Polynesians believed, as did most primitive peoples, that their ancestors were autochthonous (sprung from the soil). (Cf. Berry and Best: 13) Other Polynesian peoples, especially the more recent, eastern migrants like the Easter Islanders, still had oral histories of their ancestors' migration from islands further to the west. The Easter Islanders knew that their ancestors had come from an island to the west that they called *Marae Renga*. *Marae*, "meeting place," refers to the ceremonial area around the platforms that support moai statues. These statues and platforms surround Easter Island and are ubiquitous in the Marquesas. The most sacred oral histories were those relating to the Species War; and all primitive peoples feared and hoped that some of the "first people," "Balders," "viracochas," "giants," "snakes," "demons," "Titans," *etc.* had escaped in the direction in which their immediate ancestors (the Species War victors) had driven them.<sup>16</sup> Add to this an important observation by Bahn and Flenley:

"In many societies around the world, the very presence of the ancestors, whether as images or in the form of their bones (or both), frequently serves as a groups' best evidence that the land has always belonged to them. The figures [*H statues of ancestors on Easter Island*] literally stake a claim, connect a lineage to its ancestral land through a founding father or mother." --Bahn and Flenley: 121.

This, in addition to the alleged wrongs we've done to them, is why "royalty" and related "nobility" everywhere found it in their interest to play the starring

---

<sup>16</sup> The notable exception was the Hebrews who believed, probably correctly, that they had killed the last of the "Anakim." See Chapter 20.



roles in what had originated as the ultimate tricks of magician-priests and to trace their ancestry to (*Homo erectus*) “gods.”<sup>17</sup> Combine and condense all the information in these last three paragraphs; and, given the names, we can almost write Easter Island’s settlement myth without seeing it. Here it is:

“One tale relates that they left because of a cataclysm, when most of the land was submerged beneath the ocean. [H *This refers to the Great Flood; when, as we’ll see, the ocean level rose about 100 feet; and the tidal waves added another 100 feet. It was suitable as a screen memory for the Species War because most people believed that the former had been brought as punishment for the latter. In their minds, the two were inseparable. The Flood was super-effective as a screen for the Species War because the victims are not identified and are of minimal interest due to being unrelated to us, who are all descended from the survivors.*] However, the most common tradition says that Hotu Matua, a chief, was forced to flee that island [H *Marae Renga*] after being defeated in war --either at the hands of his own brother, or because of his brother’s misconduct with a rival chief’s woman. [H *Both alleged causes are perfectly symbolic of the Species War and reminiscent of Cain and Able, the Nephilim,*<sup>18</sup> *Paris and Menelaus (Appendix E), the Saturnalia (Appendix A) and countless other Species War myths and rituals. Moreover, Bahn and Flenley overlook here that Hotu Matua is not just any chief. Hotu Matua means “Great Parent.”*] One of Hotu Matua’s entourage, a tattooer called hau-Maka, had a prophetic dream of an island to the east with volcanic craters and pleasant beaches, on which six men could be seen. To fulfill his dream, Hotu Matua sent a canoe with six picked men to search for the island and await his arrival there. [H *The mythmakers are admitting that, “The Homo erecti, the great parents, settled Easter Island because we Polynesians (a people known for tattooing themselves) dreamed that they were there.” Recall Fraser telling us that primitives believe literally in their dreams. Whatever they dream actually happened or happens!*] He himself followed in a double canoe, and landed on the beach of *Anakena* after a voyage of six weeks. [H *No one would try to settle an island without men and women. Hotu Matua “sent only men” because these “six hand-picked*

---

<sup>17</sup> Recall from Ch 3 of v1, ff that magician-priests created the *ixtiltitzins* that became kings.

<sup>18</sup> Recall that the “Nephilim” of Genesis and the “Rephaim” and “Anakim” of the other books of the Pentateuch all refer to Neanderthal.

*men” supposedly mated with Homo sapiens, with ancestors of Easter Island’s aristocracy. See Chapter 21 for the psychoanalytic meaning of “six.”]* --Bahn and Flenley: 71

This is a condensation of the actual history of the settlement of Easter Island by Polynesians, probably from the Marquesas, with wishful thinking that *Homo erectus* Species War refugees preceded them. The latter are blended into the former and are surely imaginary. *Homo erectus* fossils have not been found anywhere in Polynesia.

I’ll tell you in advance: all the large, stone statues (the *moai*) on Easter Island represent the gods of the Species War. But there are two basic styles, and the new style gets a little bit tricky. Let’s look at them.

“From the islanders’ testimony and other Polynesian ethnography, it is virtually certain that the statues represented high-ranking ancestors, often served as their funerary monument and kept their memory alive -- like the simple upright slabs in front of platforms in the Society Islands, which represented clan ancestors or the statues dominating the terraces of sanctuaries in the Marquesas, which were famous old chiefs or priests.” --Bahn and Flenley: 120

But these latter statues of chiefs and priests are much, much smaller. The ambivalence felt toward the chiefs was not nearly as great as that felt for the “founding,” *Homo erectus* seven, *Hotu Matua* and his six men. Moreover, the royalty of these latter people, their own divinity, was conditional upon their being related to the *Homo erectus* gods. Finally, none of the large, stone, *moai* statues are known to have had specific names. At the time of the earliest European observations, they were referred to merely as “living faces” (Bahn and Flenley: 119). This would hardly be the case if they depicted Polynesian chiefs and priests. More confirmation that the statues represent the gods is provided by the islanders’ popular belief that the statues had the spiritual power to walk to their *ahus* (platforms). (Cf. Bahn and Flenley: 134.)

Closer to the mark is Bahn and Flenley’s observation of the meaning of the statues’ hands on their stomachs: “In the traditional maori carving of New Zealand, the hands were placed there to protect ritual knowledge and oral traditions because it was believed these were carried in the belly. Figures with hands on the abdomen are also common in the Marquesas and elsewhere in Polynesia” (Bahn and Flenley: 108). The log of Roggeveen, the Dutch explorer credited as being the first modern man to find Easter Island, also states that the

islanders set fires before the marae statues, “and then, sitting down on their heels with bowed heads, they bring the palms of their hands together, moving them up and down” (Bahn and Flenley: 119). This gesture is like one made by the Arunta of Australia with their wooden *churingas*. It shows respect for these ambivalent gods that are suspended in the air.

I’ll venture a more specific interpretation of hands on the belly. In a mythological context, a religious context of guilt and fear; hands on the belly indicates having and acknowledging a belly full of one’s Species War victims.

Of course, we know from Chapter 29 and preceding chapters what the fires mean. Everywhere, our primitive ancestors’ (and suburban Chicagoans’) obsession with bonfires and with ritualized sacrifice and cannibalism were repetition compulsion for the traumatic burning of the less-edible *Homo erectus*

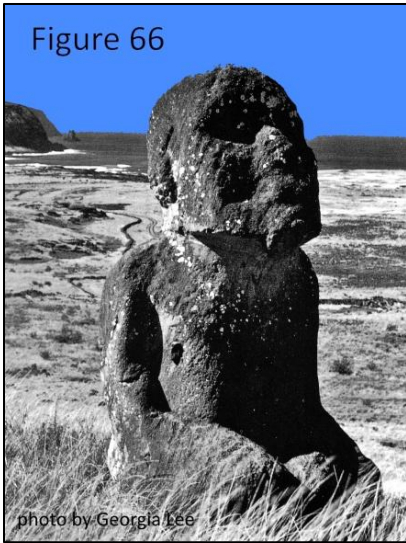
body parts. The archaeology of the maraes confirms this. Skulls of the dead were stacked on them, and cremation pits were behind many of them. If the earliest European observers failed to see the sacrifices in the marae fires of Easter Island that they saw elsewhere, it is probably because the natives didn’t wish to frighten these strange candidates for the fire.

Though much more numerous, Easter Island’s maraes (“meeting places”) are like the maraes of other Polynesian islands. These social and religious centers were built close to and parallel with the shore, and burial chambers were built into them. Others have cremation pits nearby, pits containing the remains of humans and animals and valuable

offerings such as fishhooks. (Cf. Bahn and Flenley: 147-148)

As Frazer insisted repeatedly in *The Golden Bough*, for primitive peoples, all deaths by invisible causes were murders by either evil witch doctors or the gods who regularly took men’s lives. That’s the main reason why the gods had to be placated – with blood.

Now, look at Figure 66, above. This kneeling statue was discovered on Easter Island in 1955 by Thor Heyerdahl’s team. It is like those that are associated with the maraes of the Marquesa Islands. (Statues are common throughout Polynesia, but they are especially numerous in the Marquesas and Easter Island due to their abundance of porous and relatively soft tuff formed by consolidation of volcanic ash and dust. Tuff is far easier to work with than igneous stone.) “The Australs too have monolithic stone sculpture -- at Ra’ivavae there was a *tiki* figure some



2.3m (7.5 ft.) tall; and it is known that Pitcairn Island also had hard red tufa statues standing on shrines. Unfortunately, the Bounty mutineers threw the latter off a cliff!" (Bahn and Flenley: 108) [H See Figure 67, photo by Peter Bellwood.]

Another statue, like these rotund moai but much smaller and of red scoria, was found near what is thought to be the earliest Easter Island platform. (Cf Bahn and Flenley: 149) Still another similar red statue, rotund, with round eyes and naturalistic features was exposed in the fill of a platform that was destroyed by a tidal wave in 1960. Bahn and Flenley admit that, "It is probable that such small red figures [H and the larger tuff ones of similar design] were the precursors of the moai, and stood on top of, or in front of, the earliest platforms just like the small statues or simple upright slabs that represent chiefs at the marae elsewhere in Polynesia" (Ibid.). They are correct in thinking that the new-style statues are a "separate but related phenomenon." (See Figure 68, below.)

The old-style, rotund moais with long-ears, such as Figure 66, represent the *Hanau Eepe and Hotu Matua*, the imaginary *Homo erectus* aborigines of the island.

The islanders gradually changed their conception of and fashion of representing the gods of the Species War. None of this happened over night. It must have taken them hundreds of years to learn how to move and erect -- and to cultivate the army of stone-carvers for -- the large moais. Once the manpower and the technology for large statues were in place, chiefs and priests (the lesser deities) had small statues made in their own honor.

The change in artistic style, from early naturalism to late abstraction, probably occurred for at least four reasons. You should all discern the first three reasons. The fourth is a bit tricky.

First, the late, blocky style would have looked much more formidable to potential invaders than the rounded, babyish, early style. Those statues that weren't left in the quarry were either lined up upon the ceremonial marae platforms, facing inland with eyes gazing toward the heavens as in Figure 68; clustered at landing sites; or partially dug into the hillsides. The latter two types were quite literally used to stake a claim to the land, as Bahn and Flenley suggested. They can be seen from miles out to sea and must have been intended



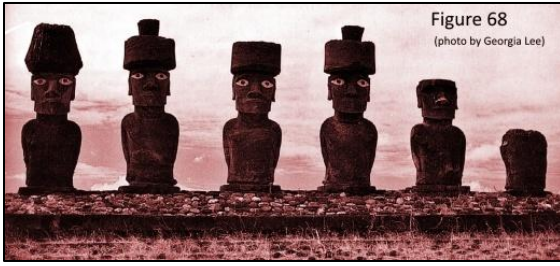


Figure 68  
(photo by Georgia Lee)

to discourage newcomers. For a very long time, or so it must have seemed, they did.

Secondly, the new-style moais date from 1100 or 1200 to c.1650 A.D. The pollen record for this period shows the deforestation and soil erosion of the island was

nearly complete during this period. (*Cf.* the graph in B&F: 215) Overpopulation and mounting interpersonal hostility, results of the Fraternal Complex raging out of control, were slowly killing their civilization. This had the same effect upon the art of Easter Island as it had upon the art of the southern Cordillera and Mexico and as it has had upon the modern, monotheistic world in general since the industrial revolution gave us the potential for wholesale global destruction of our environment. In a dying civilization, the patrons require the arts to be ever more abstract. Search for artistic decadence in Volume 2.

Thirdly, the new-style moais (Figure 68) more fully compromise the *Homo erectus* features of the statues as necessary to keep more modern and analytical minds unconscious of the gods' identity and to maintain neurosis. The new style converted *Homo erectus*' extreme mesomorphism into ectomorphism (short, thick bodies into tall, slender ones). And don't think for a minute that the islanders weren't fully conscious of this difference in body type: the other most sacred legend, which we'll consider momentarily, describes the war between the *Hanau Eepe* (long-eared people with stocky bodies) and the *Hanau Momoko* (short-eared people with slender bodies).

The fourth and tricky reason for the change in the artistic style of the moais is probably the most important reason. It's wholly mythological. Recall that in our decoding of Germanic mythology, especially the "War of the Aesir and Vanir" in Chapter 21, v2, we first saw that the *Homo sapiens*, Species War victors were ultimately included in the pantheon. Ditto for the Greeks, the Incas, the Irish, the Aztecs and several other peoples whom we have yet to study. Recall too that Hyam Maccoby provided the reason for this apotheosis of the Species War victors: *the executioner of someone toward whom we are ambivalent acquires the same ambivalence in inverse proportion*. We hate the killer to the extent that we loved the victim; we love the killer to the extent that we hated the victim. (At last, we can identify the most *Sacred Executioner* and provide Hyam with the application for which he searched!)

Somewhere within the lost mythology (greatly compromised and symbolic oral history) of the Easter Island people, the Polynesian victors of the Species War, *the Hanau Momoko (the short-eared people with slender bodies) were*

elevated to the pantheon. The moai statues were then changed to represent both *Homo erectus* and *Homo sapien* features. Most likely, the two groups were thought to have made peace and to have consorted together, the product of their union being the “noble” families. We’ll never know for certain because almost all the *Rongorongo* boards were destroyed during the period of warfare and collapse that followed the coming of the first modern men. It was on these boards that priests and royalty carved the glyphs that were mnemonic keys to their memorized, legendary chants. The priests and royalty who could read the few extant *Rongorongo* boards were all either killed or deported to Peru as slaves.

Look at how the new statues (e. g. Figure 68) combine the characteristics of both subspecies. Rather than being elongated front to rear like our archaic parents and some of the old statues, the new statue skulls are elongated top to bottom. The blood-red color of the scoria stone was early on changed to tuff-black. Most recently, the pukao headdresses were added to hide and further compromise *Homo erectus*’ low forehead.<sup>19</sup> Recall that the foreheads of ‘Santa Claus (Chapter 27) and Peruvian idols, the Viracochas (Chapter 26), were similarly disguised.

Now, what about the eyes of the statues? Can you see the difference in the eyes and why *Homo erectus*, *Moai Kavakava*, the old statues and the “Birdman” (a cargo cult image that we will discuss below) had round eyes? Bahn and Flenley confirm that eye shape was very important. “As in the rest of Polynesia, it is believed that round eyes (as on the Birdman and some masks) denote supernatural beings, whereas oval eyes [as on the (*H new*) statues] occurred on natural beings” (Bahn and Flenley: 199). (We’ll reconsider the eyes in Appendix E.) The body-shapes, eyes and mandibles of the new statues are all *Homo sapien*. The noses are indeterminate. The only really *obvious* features of the new-style moais that mark them as *Homo erectus* -- are the foreheads and the ears. We’ve already discussed the *Homo erectus* forehead. Do you see the significance of long ears?

Long ears relate to a somewhat universal custom that we overlooked in Chapters 24, 26 and (to some extent) 35. Not only Polynesians, but also many African peoples and the Nakanai, a Melanesian people of New Britain, stretch their ear lobes. Manco Capac’s brother, Ayar Cachi, said to have been immured in a cave, imitated and sacrificed himself to *Homo erectus*. Following his example, the Incan ruling caste bored their ears and wore earpieces to enlarge them. It was owing to this custom that the Spaniards called the ruling caste *Orejones* (Big-Ears) (Alexander: 245, 250). Recall also that many Incan and Aztec images show gods

---

<sup>19</sup> The *hau kurakura*, the red-feathered divine headdress worn by Polynesian warriors, is obviously related to this red scoria, *pukao* headdress of the gods. Throughout Polynesia, red feathers were associated with the spiritual power of the gods. In the first trading of food and sexual favors, feathers and nails were the objects that were most sought after by natives. See Howarth.

wearing earplugs to make their ears appear longer. Chinese emperors wore headdresses with simulated big ears for the same reason. Although cartilage doesn't preserve well and we'll never have archaeological data on the size of *Homo erectus*' ears, it's a safe bet that his were bigger than ours. Large ears and ear lobe stretching were everywhere associated with our archaic ancestors.<sup>20</sup> Large ears would have contributed to the excellent hearing of Gods, like "Heimdall" or "Hearing Ear" (both in Chapter 21), who "could hear the sound of grass growing."

Here's what remains of the mythology of the old, rotund statues:

A puzzling feature of many Hawaiian legends is the presence in them of a race like the leprechauns, elves, trolls, and other little people. Like the creatures of European folklore, they are rarely seen in daylight, they dwell underground only to emerge at night to practice their magic, skill and *great strength*. [*H emphasis mine*] They are mischievous and thieving, though some -- like Robin Goodfellow -- could be helpful if small gifts of food were left outside for them.<sup>21</sup> [*H "Small gifts of food" were once sacrifices.*] --Berry and Best: 21

"The Menehunes of the Hawaiian Islands are not unlike the trolls of the Norse legends, and the leprechauns and puckish folk of Ireland and England. *They are black or darker in complexion than ordinary folk.* [*H emphasis mine*] Like Puck, they are full of mischief; but if they take a fancy to a mortal, they will do good deeds for him<sup>22</sup>... The Menehunes stem originally from Kauai, which is believed to

---

<sup>20</sup> In Chapter 24, we also overlooked the primitive custom of inserting bones in noses. This primitive custom of piercing the nasal septum and wearing a bone in the nose broadens it and makes it look more like the nose of our archaic ancestor.

<sup>21</sup> Puck, Robin Goodfellow, is the mischievous sprite in Shakespeare's *A Midsummer Night's Dream*.

<sup>22</sup> The Hawaiians remembered that they and their gods were descended from this numerous and powerful race. In Polynesian mythology, only three or four individuals precede the Menehunes chronologically. Human sacrifices were made to these gods during regular rituals and when groups of men went to the upland forest to fell trees. (Cf. Beckwith: 322.) They are supposed to have migrated, "voluntarily," to some mysterious other world of the gods. Both the Menehunes and the *Nawao* (the wild people) were of the *Mu* (silent) race that lived on bananas in the forest. (Cf. Beckwith: 324.) The *Nawao* were "a people of large size, wild, [who] did not associate with *kanakas* (men)... Hunting people (*lahui alualu holoholona*), [*H they were*] numerous in former times, but now...disappeared" (Beckwith: 322, citing Fornander: 271). "*The Menehunes are called 'human' as distinguished from the 'wild' Nawao people, most of whom they are said to have exterminated*" (Beckwith: 324, *H emphasis mine*). *Doesn't this sound familiar? The Menehunes and the Nawao were respectively the dead Homo erectus "gods" and the hypothetical, demonic Homo erecti still at large.*

have been the first island to be settled in the Hawaiian chain, probably by proto-Polynesians, long before the later and major colonization. ***The small folk are dwarfish, hairy, stout and extremely strong. They have ugly, frightening faces,*** though they are good-natured when properly treated. [H *Emphasis mine. Using layman's terms, could one possibly give a better description of the smaller, eastern variant of Homo erectus than this? Notice also the characteristic ambivalence for them and their aboriginal status.*] Hawaii has many tales of their construction work, and even today a visitor may be shown a huge ditch and several fish weirs made of massive rocks, each prodigious task completed in a single night...

Menehunes also appear as *manaunes* in the traditions of the Cook Islands, the Society Islands and the Tuamotuan Archipelago. Like some creatures in European folklore, they punish mortals who violate their taboos... They are quite skillful along their own lines but have little in the way of tools... *They sound like the survivors of a more primitive race, with magic attributes added by the storytellers.*" -- Berry and Best: 107-108, H *emphasis mine*.

To whatever extent this Menehune mythology exaggerates their dwarfism, it degrades the old-style moai and the *Homo erectus* gods associated with them. We saw why they became degraded elsewhere.

Competing priests may have represented the two sets of statues. Be that as it may, the old-style, rotund moai were buried, defeated by the new "living faces" of the new-style moai. The *Homo erectus* gods that they represented were slowly eclipsed by their *Homo sapiens* conquerors. This overshadowing of the old *Homo erectus* gods by the new *Homo sapien* gods is very evident in Hawaiian mythology. Beckwith's exhaustive work on Hawaiian mythology has less than one chapter on these old gods, but it includes everything we need to know.

Probably, as the new *Homo sapien* gods were overshadowing the old *Homo erectus* gods, the old gods became emasculated until, as "Menehunes," they resembled the pathetic and isolated *Homo erectus* refugees who were killed in mountainous and remote regions during mopping-up operations that followed the major battles of the Species War. Like the leprechauns, dwarfs and elves elsewhere, they were said to be less powerful and smaller than the principal gods. They were relegated to the night and said to be relatively timid and mild for the same reasons and because, being buried, their spirits were weakened.

Edward Joesting, who has focused his attention on Kauai, the center of Menehune lore, summarizes the remaining legends:



“They [H *the Menehunes*] were credited with the building of many temples, roads and other structures. [H *Here we see what may be the origin of all this construction mythology. Perhaps the Menehunes built the earliest temples and pathways to the gods in the sense that they were built by Polynesians in their honor. Later, when the Menehunes were eclipsed by a more powerful pantheon and finally by the white European “gods,” it was demeaning to recall that Polynesians had built roads and temples to honor Menehunes, so it was said that “Menehunes built the temples.”*] Trades among them were well systematized, every Menehune being restricted to his own particular craft in which he was a master... [H *Recall that Greeks, Irish, Germans, Mesopotamians and Mesoamericans also attributed the founding of many arts and crafts to the Homo erectus gods. Whatever developed anonymously and was not fully understood tended to be attributed to them. For example, both symbols for the medical profession, the Caduceus and the Rod of Asclepius, are serpent-entwined rods.*]

The number of Menehune on Kauai in ancient times was said to be enormous. A population of 500,000 has been mentioned, of which 160, 000 were women. In addition, there were 20,000 boys and girls up to the age of 17... [H *No Homo erectus bones have been reported in Polynesia. These numbers reflect Homo erectus’ two million years of sovereignty. In proportion to the population at the Paleolithic boundary, the “deluge,” the first holocaust that we know of, would have been a holocaust like no other!*]

Mythology gives several ways in which these people came to Kauai. Some sources say they came on a cloud of three levels, which landed on Kauai. Some say they arrived on a floating island. [H *This sounds a lot like the coming of the “Tuatha de Danann” in Ireland, doesn’t it?*] Another theory is that once a great continent in the Pacific extended all the way from New Zealand to the Hawaiian Islands. [H *This theory suggests memories of the last glacial maximum 22 kya.*] The Menehunes crossed over this land mass and settled on Kauai, although they traveled back and forth to New Zealand. [H *Just as Hotu Matua fulfilled the dreams of a tattooed man by going to Easter Island, Species War obsessions and the literal belief in dreams caused groups of Homo erecti, Menehunes, to precede the Polynesians wherever they went.*] Eventually the ocean rose, and only

the major islands that still exist were left above sea level. After this the Menehunes remained on Kauai.

At last, the king of the Menehunes decided there was too much intermarriage between Menehune men and Hawaiian women. The race was becoming impure. [H *This may also be a projection of and excuse for the nobility's constant inbreeding with parents, siblings and cousins --especially in Hawaii.*] The king gathered the Menehune together, organized them into divisions, and ordered them to leave their Hawaiian wives behind. They then set sail to seek new lands in which to settle... [H *This last line is even more distorted than the myth of Balder. It is total denial. This paragraph confirms my suspicion as to why, in the Easter Island settlement myth, Hotu Matua was said to have sent only men --six, hand-picked (Homo erectus), men --to Easter Island. The wishful belief that these Homo erectus men had mated with Homo sapien women and would be willing to do the same again was understood. Their task was to make peace and breed the gentry, the class of nobles. These ancestors were just like infants in their capacity to believe whatever they wanted to believe. We must correct this about ourselves if we are to survive much longer.*]

 --Joesting: 21-22

Those of you wishing to see more “Menehune” and “Mu” legends, from all over Polynesia, can consult Beckwith, his pages 325-336. The rest of us will bid *adieu* to the Menehunes and the rotund statues portraying them. May they rest in peace. You and I didn’t kill them.

Now we come to the most revelatory and interesting part of the Easter Island’s mythology. This mythology was (in its present version) not imported from Hawaii or the Marquesas. It was home grown. Here is the mythology of the “War of the Hanau Eepe and Hanau Momoko” (stocky people with long-ears and slim people with short-ears respectively). It is the mythology pertaining to the new-style moai and the demise of *Hotu Matua* and his long-eared kin. It is a Species War myth like many from around the world.

We are indebted to the Heyerdahl expedition for the detailed recording of this one. Thor Heyerdahl was misguided in his attempts to prove that Easter Island and other Polynesian Islands were settled by white (presumably Norse) men. Heyerdahl also failed to prove that white seafarers contributed to the Inca civilization. Nevertheless, Thor Heyerdahl’s expedition made important excavations and aroused worldwide interest in the islands.

“According to the first collected legends of 1886 and Paymaster Thomson, an American, “originally two different races had lived together on the island, ‘long-ears’ and ‘short-ears,’ but the long-ears had slaughtered almost all the others in a war, and then ruled on the island alone.” --Heyerdahl: 39

This first part of the myth describes the period of indeterminate length in which our ancestors lived in relative peace with, but were dominated by, *Homo erectus*. This was our infancy, the period prior to the Paleolithic boundary when our immediate ancestors developed and rapidly disseminated the bow and arrow.

“The natives have legends to this day of ancestors who would rather eat their own race than fish or fowl. They have also persistent legends of a still earlier time of greatness when another people, the long-ears, had lived at peace with their ancestors, the short-ears. [*H Again, the long period prior to the Paleolithic boundary is referred to.*] The long-ears had demanded too much labor of the short-ears, and in the end, there had been a war in which nearly all the long-ears were burned in a ditch. [*H Here is a reference to both the burning and the burying of Species War victims.*] From that day, no more statues had been made, and many of those that were standing had been pulled down with ropes...” --Heyerdahl: 74-75.

Obviously, the last sentence is a condensation of events after and long after the Species War. It was long after the Species War that the old moai (representing *Homo erectus* or “long ears”) were replaced with the modern ones (composites of both subspecies, “long ears” and “short ears”). Circa 1770 A.D., the modern moais were knocked down.

“The long-ears were an energetic people, filled with plans for improving the island, and the short-ears had to toil to help them make walls and statues... [*H We thought better of them the longer they were dead.*] The long-ears’ last idea was to rid the whole of Easter Island of the superfluous stone, so that all the earth could be cultivated. This work was begun on the *Poike* Plateau, the easternmost part of the island, and the short-ears had to carry every loose stone to the edge of the cliff and fling it into the sea. On the grassy peninsula of *Poike* today there is not a single loose stone, while the rest of the island is thickly covered with black and red scree and lava blocks...” --Heyerdahl: 123.

Again, this is condensation of the Paleolithic with the modern. Agriculture (the Neolithic Age) began long after the Species War.

“Now things were going too far for the short-ears... [H *This condensation provides the “short-ears” with a rationale for the crime that they are about to commit.*] They were tired of carrying stones for the long-ears. They decided on war. The long-ears fled from every part of the island and established themselves at the easternmost end of the cleared *Poike Peninsula*... [H *More on this alleged siege, below.*] Under the command of their chief, *Iko*, they dug a trench nearly two miles long, which separated the *Poike Plateau* from the rest of the island. This trench they filled with a great quantity of branches and tree trunks till it was a gigantic far-flung pyre, ready to be set on fire if the short-ears on the plain below tried to storm the slope leading to the plateau.” --Heyerdahl: 123-124.

On this island, no fire could be maintained long enough to serve as a military barrier. But there *is* a long ditch on *Poike Peninsula*, a ditch that fits that described in the myth. Some investigators, most notably Thor Heyerdahl and Sebastian Englert (1888-1969) have chosen to interpret this myth literally. Englert was an Easter Island pastor who surveyed the ahu (platforms) and made ethnographic studies. They tried to connect it with the collapse that is known to have been sparked in 1680 by mysterious causes. Englert tried to use the island’s legendary list of kings, which begins with *Hotu Matua*, to determine the elapsed time since the war between the long-ears and the short-ears. Not surprisingly, Englert decided that the battle had taken place in 1680. The list is also mythological and open to widely disparate interpretations. Heyerdahl made a more scientific attempt to tie *Poike Ditch* and the mythical battle to the mysterious cataclysm of 1680. He excavated the ditch and did find a layer of charcoal that radiocarbon-dated to 1676 A.D., plus or minus 100 years. “However, more recent excavations in the ditch have uncovered a tree hole with charcoal, at a depth of over 1 m (3 ft.), which has given a radiocarbon date in the 11th century AD, which seems to cast the gravest doubt on this ‘ditch’ having been involved in a battle of the type and date mentioned in the [H *1680 A.D.*] traditions, particularly since no mataa have ever been found in it” (Bahn and Flenley: 168). Moreover, since throughout Polynesia, tree holes are commonly believed to be entrances to the “underworld,” the “ditch” can be seen to have been a part of religious ceremonies at least since 1100 AD; and the “doubt” is really certainty. *The siege of Long Ears in the*

*easternmost part of the island refers to the driving of Homo erectus by our Homo sapien ancestors into the peninsular parts of East Asia.*

“*Poike Peninsula was [H is] like a fortress, with a sheer drop of six hundred feet all around the coast: thus, the long-ears felt themselves secure.*

*But one of the long-ears had a short-eared wife: her name was Mola Pingei and she was living up on Poike with her husband. She was a traitress and had arranged a signal with the short-ears down on the plain. When they saw her sitting, plaiting a large basket, the short-ears were to steal in a long file past the place where she sat. [H Women play similar, probably historical roles in Irish mythology. See my Irish Mythology: Passageway to Prehistory. Do you recall my speculation in v-1, Chapter 20 that Sarai and Rebekah were spies in the original Species War episodes that became Genesis 12: 10-20 and Genesis 20: 1-18? Vishnu also infiltrated the demons disguised as a beautiful woman (v-2, Chapter 33).]*

*One night the short-ears’ spies saw Mola Pingei plating a basket at one end of Iko’s ditch, and they stole one by one past the place where she sat, right at the edge of the cliff. They sneaked on along the outer edge of the plateau till, at last, they completely surrounded Poike. Another army of short-ears down on the plain marched openly up toward the ditch. The unsuspecting long-ears lined up to face them and set fire to the whole pyre. Then the other short-ears rushed forward from their hiding places, and in the bloody fight that followed all the long-ears were burned in their own ditch.” --Heyerdahl: 124*

Memories of the Species War and its bonfires have been condensed here with knowledge of the islands’ geography. The mythmakers’ conscious or unconscious logic was as follows: 1) *Homo erectus* generally retreated ever further to the east. 2) He was on this island when our ancestors arrived and continued his eastern retreat to *Poike Peninsula*. (This belief may explain why the first people settled in the southwest corner of the island.) 3) *Homo erectus* was generally burned in huge bonfires. 4) They would have done the same or worse to our ancestors had they been able (guilty rationalization). 5) They overworked our ancestors, built or planned the bonfire in a ditch, and were themselves driven into it [more of 4 and realization of 3].

“Only three of the long-ears succeeded in leaping through the fire and escaping in the direction of *Anakena*. [H *As with the myth of*

*Balder, the Sons of Borr, the Fomorians, snakes of Snakeland, Quetzalcoatl and others; guilt, obsessional fear, paranoia and resurfacing affection for Homo erectus fathered the wish that some of them survived. The wish in turn fathered the thought.] One of them was called Ororoina and another Vai, but the name of the third is forgotten. They hid in a cave [H of course, in the oldest sort of house, haunted with Homo erecti] that the inhabitants can point out to this day. There they were found, and two of them were stabbed to death with sharp stakes, while the third and last, Ororoina, was allowed to remain alive as the only surviving long-ear.” –Ibid.*

At least one [of these “three” (reproductive beings)] must survive to support the divine pedigrees of the “nobility.”

*“Ororoina was taken to the house of one of the short-ears who was named Pipi Horeko and lived at the foot of the hill called Toatoa. There he married a short-ear of the Haoa family and had many descendants.” –Ibid.*

What did I tell you! “Nobility,” *the Fifth Mask*, had the same fraudulent meaning everywhere. *These fraudulent claims had to be invented at the start of the Neolithic to support the claims of the first latent homosexual K farmers to land ownership. The first land owners had to be more closely related to the gods than the rest of us because all the land had been thought to belong to the Homo erectus gods (the “Gentry,” the “Lords”)! The tribal priests and their first, puppet kings were unable to exercise a monopoly on this fraud. Why should they have tried for one? The latent homosexual scoundrels, the wearers of the Third Mask, have always found it in their interest to cooperate with one another in oppressing (getting even with) the rest of us. And the Fifth Mask is not that difficult for the wearers of the Third Mask to adopt. As I observed way back in Chapter 5 of Volume 1, there has probably never been an instance of them having to overthrow an R state, primitive tribal or Marxist/ “socialist.”*

Note also that, although they don’t even appear in previous myths, here the short-ears overshadow the long-ears. Three short-ears are even remembered by name. This myth reflects the elevation of the short-ears to the pantheon and their equal or paramount position in it. *This same mingling of the Homo erectus and Homo sapien Species War gods is reflected in the mixed features of the new moai.*

That, my friends, is the long and the short of the deep and dark mysteries of Easter Island archaeology and religion. Only the decoding of the modern myths and mysteries remains before we say *aloha*.

## FROM POTENTIAL PARADISE TO MODERN HELL

Easter Island, to quote Patrick Kirch, underwent a “downward spiral of cultural regression.” A mysterious cataclysm in 1680 sparked the spiral. The statues, which were all standing when Captain Gonzalez visited in 1770, were largely overturned when Captain Cook arrived four years later and found human bones strewn about the maraes. By 1868, according to visiting English surgeon Linton Palmer, not a single statue was still standing. Weapons, which were virtually nonexistent throughout the long period of uninterrupted peace from the island’s first settlement to the mysterious cataclysm of 1680, were numerous by the end of the 18th century. Islanders, whom Cook described as “small, lean, timid and miserable,” carried clubs and spears tipped with *mataa* (flaked, glassy-black obsidian). (Cf. Bahn and Flenley: 170)

The chief of the Miru clan descended from a long line of first sons that stretched back to *Hotu Matua*. Naturally! This chief and lesser chiefs of the island’s subordinate clans had led the old social system. It completely broke down. The people who once lived in boat-shaped thatch houses had gone into hiding in the island’s many caves (formed by the downward flow of hot lava within outcroppings that had already cooled and solidified on the outside). Above ground, roving gangs led by ambitious thugs replaced the central authority.

Excavation of middens (garbage pits) shows that diets, which had years earlier lost bird eggs (due to over-predation) and marine resources (due to the almost complete deforestation and lack of wood for canoes), lost almost all reliable food sources as theft made horticulture impossible and chickens had to be raised in guarded stone coups.

Although similar collapses of tribal society occurred all over Polynesia, scholars have never fully understood what happened. David Howarth comes closest to understanding and gives the best description to date of the effect of “discovery.”

Describing Tahiti, he says, “In fact, between the *Dolphin*’s and the *Endeavor*’s visit there had been a Tahitian war, which the *Dolphin* may unwittingly have caused.<sup>23</sup> The Europeans never understood that their very

---

<sup>23</sup> HMS *Dolphin*, commanded by Captain Samuel Wallis, is thought to have introduced modern man to Neolithic Tahiti on June 18, 1767. The next recorded modern men to find Tahiti, again accidentally, were the French, commanded by Louis de Bougainville (Cook’s equal in demeanor and powers of observation). They sailed the *Boudeuse* and its store ship the *Etoile*. Cook, with the

presence, however well they tried to behave, upset the stability of Tahitian society; but it was so. It redistributed wealth, aroused jealousy and ambition and created new desires” (Howarth: 70). Howarth is correct about their very presence causing the collapse but off the mark as to why it did this.

Bailey, who worked on Hawaii, issues a similar but less satisfying report: “[W]hen Captain James Cook opened paradise to the world, and the ships brought the white man, -- the *Alu* [*H the ruling, royal Hawaiian class*], in trying to accommodate, destroyed themselves. Disease, Christianity, exploitation -- whalers, missionaries, mercenaries -- in that order -- wiped out the Hawaiians” (Bailey: jacket).

The collapse of Easter Island is the most intriguing of all the island collapses because, at least superficially, the Europeans had less to do with it. Notwithstanding the slavers who came in 1862-1863, no modern man wanted anything that this island of stone giants had. We now know from pollenography that it had been virtually treeless since 1200 AD. Unlike the Society Islands and Hawaii, it held out no promise of becoming a tourist Mecca; and it was too remote to be on the trade routes between major ports. Between 1800 and 1900, it was visited only about 100 times, mostly by whalers. (Cf. Bahn and Flenley: 164) Nor could Easter Islanders escape in canoes. Due to their prehistoric destruction of the trees, they had no wood left for making canoes. By 1774 Cook reported seeing only 3 or 4 of them, “the worst canoes in the Pacific -- small, patched and unseaworthy” (Bahn and Flenley: 172).

*Easter Island was virtually a world unto itself, which is why it so extremely important for us to fully understand the collapse of its civilization. It was Earth in microcosm.*

All scientists worthy of the title are warning that the modern, global economy is headed down a similar path. A notable example is *The Limits to Growth* (Meadows *et al.*), a 1972 report compiled by a team of M.I.T. scientists and commissioned by the Club of Rome (a group of 100 concerned and eminent citizens --mostly wealthy businessmen -- from 25 different countries). Using computer models, these scientists came to conclusions that are neatly summarized by Bahn and Flenley:

Various forms of the model were tried, but all those that included continuation of the present trends of economic expansion and population growth led to the same result... A rapid decline of

---

*Endeavor*, was the third commander *of record* to reach Tahiti, his first voyage dropping anchor on April 13, 1769.



resources was accompanied by a peak of pollution as population continued to soar. When resources became nearly exhausted at c. AD 2020, however, pollution (and economic activity) declined, followed by a sharp population crash after AD 2050. Eventually, c. AD 2100, population stabilized at a level well below its peak, but the resources available to that population were very low, giving a uniformly low living standard. --Bahn and Flenley: 213

As I update this work in mid-October of 2022, the above predictions are dead on the money. According to the IMF, the world economy shrank by 4.9% in 2020 and expanded by 5.9% in 2021 or by 5.7%, using 2019 as a baseline. This yields a growth of .8% over two years or an annual average growth rate of .4% (.004) per year for 2020 and 2021. Big Brother's economists attribute this stagnation to the "Covid-19" pandemic. But as the New Medicine of Dr. Hamer and the Peace Love and Progress Party have revealed, the pandemic is largely a plandemic. Even to the extent that it is spontaneous, it is not so much the cause as the result of traumatic changes in our world, changes to which average citizens fail to adapt and to comprehend. See the information about "Covid-19" in the Party publications *Heaven Sent* and *What the Non-Chinese Peoples Must Do...* (Chapter 3(B)vi) and our many blogs, starting with "The New Era of Covid-19."

Moreover, the global population growth rates for 2020 and 2021 were 1.5 and 1.3 % respectively, or an average of 1.4% for each of these two years (<https://www.statisticstimes.com/demographics/world-population.php>). So, average per capita income, per capita living standards fell by an average of 1% for each of these two years.

Grim as this forecast sounds, it is my conviction that it is awash in rose-colored optimism. This summary, which is right on target over the 20-year span from its promulgation to the time (2017) in which I write these lines, says almost nothing about the nature, the rapidity and the aftermath of the coming population crash. Indeed, scientists couldn't describe the coming crash or the Easter Island crash in any detail because they have never understood our Fraternal Complex and the measures necessary to resolve it, to eliminate its negative side. Without an understanding of the Fraternal Complex, the K and R class struggle being its political expression; human psychology, human religion and human politics cannot be fully comprehended either.

***I feel certain that, unless we eradicate homophobia and resolve our Fraternal Complex (minimize K and R) within one generation, the crash toward which humanity is racing, the crash that is vaguely referred to in the indented summary above, will be much more like Easter Island's crash than anyone has recognized.*** Let's take a closer look at the data for Easter Island. Let's subject it

to what we already know about our Fraternal Complex and see if we can't improve upon the understanding offered by Bahn and Flenley's *Easter Island: Earth Island*, the most modern and comprehensive work on the island to date.

Core samples taken from the undisturbed and treacherous layer of marshy sediment that covers the *Rano Kau* crater show that between 1200 and 1680 AD tree pollen was slowly but steadily increasing in proportion to that of herbs and ferns. (Bahn and Flenley: 174, 215) In other words, deforestation occurred from the earliest habitation c. 400 to 1200 AD.<sup>24</sup> Then, when the island was almost totally denuded of trees, in 1200 AD, Easter Islanders started to slowly recover their trees. A wise priest probably organized people to replant them and issued the appropriate taboos. However, the size of the sacrificial bonfires and the consumption of firewood did *not* decrease until after 1400 AD, as shown by the charcoal deposited in the core samples. (Bahn and Flenley: 215) Soil erosion tended (as everywhere) to run parallel to the loss of tree cover. *But c. 1680, the progressive trend toward restoration of Easter Island -- sharply reversed itself.*

The oral traditions reinforce what is suggested by the pollenography. They too point to a big socio-political change on the island c. 1680 AD. There was a change in religious belief and leadership, the onset of warfare, an end to cremation and a retreat of many people into the island's caves. (Cf. B & F: 180)

*What happened in 1680?* The oral tradition is remarkably vague as to what precipitated the collapse; and at this late stage in the modern, scientific study of the island, there are no living survivors or records.

One thing is certain. As we've discovered in earlier chapters of this work, religions don't resolve the Fraternal Complex by minimizing the hostility from genetic competition. At their best, they only balance the positive and the negative sides of our fraternal ambivalence. This is one of the reasons why the political alliance between religious babies and the latent homosexual scoundrels that mislead them, an alliance that everywhere and always dominates class society, is a **Doomsday Alliance**. *Whatever happened had the effect of destroying the power of Easter Island religion to maintain that balance, without restoring the balance by other means. By taking a close look at how this religious and political system functioned, studying how Europeans are known to have affected it in later years, and analyzing post-collapse obsessions; we can narrow down the possible precipitating events to just one.*

---

<sup>24</sup> The Polynesian rat caused much of the deforestation. Introduced probably by the first islanders as food, these rats bored into and ate the kernels of the seeds of the Chilean Wine Palm trees, the island's dominant prehistoric tree.

Population control -- to the extent that it existed and preempted the population controlling effects of pollution, disease and resource loss -- was the job of the priests. I have found nothing to suggest that Easter Island priests controlled the marital age, and thereby the birth rate, with initiation rites or other restrictions such as were common elsewhere. Nevertheless, frequent infanticide, perhaps an Easter Island counterpart of the *arioi* and very frequent human sacrifice at the marae platforms (commemorating the burning of *Homo erectus* corpses, avenging the gods) would have been sufficient to prevent a population collapse -- *but not indefinitely*. I say not indefinitely because -- even when supported by a majority that believed in human sacrifice as a religious necessity -- this irrational means of population control, increasing the death rate, would have *potentially* enraged the family and friends of victims and made ever-increasing enemies for the priests and ruling *Miru* clan.

The priests had to counterbalance their growing number of *potential* enemies with a growing number of faithful supporters. But with the typically static, tribal state of science and technology and the island's very limited water resources, the carrying capacity of the island's environment could not be significantly increased.<sup>25</sup> *Additional supporters could only be had by creating surplus population. The overall impact of surplus population upon the environment and the income of producers is, by definition, negative. Moreover, the surplus people cannot enjoy a stable political-economic niche unless they justify their mode of subsistence with lies.*<sup>26</sup> The priests had to provide the lies for the ever-greater surplus population that the priests and ruling class needed for political support against their growing number of potential enemies. Only in this way could the priests and the ruling class maintain the sacrificial fires and their own positions as the arbiters of life and death.

The big lie (that created Easter Island's big government--more on big government in the Conclusion) was that ever more and bigger religious monuments were needed to please the "gods." Thus, stone carving and moai moving became the island's big industry, and the workers of this industry shared with priests and the ruling "divine" elites the privilege of being literally catered to by productive farmers.

---

<sup>25</sup> Easter Island has no year-round surface springs. Rainwater runs right through the porous volcanic mantle.

<sup>26</sup> *This is also another reason why our contemporary culture is so replete with lies and why this work is guaranteed to offend the majority of people all over the planet. Humanity is so out of balance with nature that there are probably ten to twenty times more of us than what Earth can tolerate without losing carrying capacity. If so, then more than 90% of us must lie just to earn our daily bread.*

The 1680 AD spark that ignited the collapse and caused immediate disruption of this system of food distribution is verified by the scant oral history: “It is worth noting that the legends explaining the end of the statue quarrying all point to quarrels over food as the cause: e. g. an old woman or witch was denied her rightful share of a giant lobster and angrily caused all statue production to cease” (Bahn and Flenley: 171).

Now the increase in tree pollen from 1200 to 1680 suggests that priests also put people to work planting trees. They weren’t stupid, perhaps even less so than we are. Moreover, human beings have historically demonstrated an incredible capacity for self-sacrifice. But we are capable of this only when we strongly identify with the cause and the people for whom our help is needed.

The only religious dogma that could have forged such powerful bonds and elicited such altruistic behavior, the only religious dogma that could have maximized the positive aspect of their Fraternal Complex and induced farmers to sacrifice themselves indefinitely was one that 1) assured its devotees that they were all descended from the same ancestors (now demonstrated by science), 2) maintained material equality among its members (not difficult on an island where there were almost no durable goods) and 3) promised them (the Easter Island farmer/Bible-Belters) that, in return for their religious devotion, all their basic wishes would be satisfied.

What did they wish for? Freedom from suffering (easy enough in Polynesia), freedom from death (an afterlife), and freedom from invasion. Some people were assured of the last wish by a literal belief in their own settlement/flood myth, a fragment of which has come down to us and is above. This myth said that the cataclysm that forced *Hotu Matua* and company to Easter Island [had submerged most of the land](#). Those not naive enough to disbelieve in and not fear the coming of unknown men or *Homo erectus* still at large were reassured by the huge moais on the hillsides that faced seaward.

That said, the *obvious* event that broke the faith of the productive people and caused them to unite with the critics of human sacrifice against the ruling Miru clan, the priests and their army of monument-builders was the visitation of gods more powerful than the moais, gods who demanded and took food and women. This is the only event that could have permanently shattered their traditional beliefs and thrown their fraternal ambivalence out of balance for about 200 years.

The first official, recorded visit was Roggeveen’s in 1722. In 1687, buccaneer John Davis, alias Robert Searle, described an island in latitude 27° south and 500 miles west of Chile. This description is 1734 miles east of the actual island, and the error is too great to have been accidental. Robert Langdon believes that a lost Spanish caravel shipwrecked on a reef east off Tahiti in 1536 and that

descendants of these sailors contributed the Basque genes known to be in some of the islanders. (Cf. Bahn and Flenley: 12) While this may be true, we'll see that Basques weren't the first modern men to drop anchor. There is no record of any ship, pirate or otherwise, anchoring off Easter Island in 1680 (circa the collapse); but that should not surprise us.

By the 17th Century, numerous French and British pirates were operating in the eastern Pacific. They sought to capture Spanish galleons laden with Inca gold and silver from Lima's port of Callao and bound for Panama. These men were not apt to publicize their mode of operating for the benefit of enemies and competitors.

With all this in mind, notice that John Davis's other description of a "low and sandy island with a long tract of pretty high land some 12 leagues [H 36 *nautical miles*] to the west [H *of the coast*]" (B & F: 12) may also have been shrewdly calculated to prevent competitors from anchoring there. This description would have assisted the hillside *moais* in scaring ships away from Easter Island. Sailors approaching this triangular 64 square-mile island from the east and thinking that the statues dotting the coastal hills were an additional 36 miles distant would have become overawed by their estimation of the statues' size and the implied manpower of the natives.

Davis and his navigator carried the knowledge of a safe harbor at latitude 27° south, longitude 109° west and 2340 miles west of Chile (Easter Island) to their graves. Davis and his pirate crew, the island's first modern visitors, were not charm school graduates. Their first demonstration of modern ballistics would have traumatized the island. Add the likelihood of these men permanently abducting women and killing men in the process, and we can now understand how a people that had lived totally at peace for 1300 years would be likely to have banished the entire event to their unconscious minds, to have blacked it out.

Such a first visitation also would have shattered the natives' belief in the moai gods. With the inevitable epidemic of trauma-induced disease, this disillusionment would have sparked collapse. Easter Island's social system would have begun to collapse as newly disillusioned, apostate producers and people enraged by human sacrifice united to overthrow the traditional authority.

A very similar scenario will unfold in the world at large. As I pointed out in Volume 1 and with Figures 10a and 10b, all the ice is going to melt much more quickly than any of the experts are willing (or permitted) to admit. The 18O (heavy oxygen) and carbon studies of the foraminifera and the ice cores are in close agreement. All the ice will melt. There is already enough carbon in the atmosphere to guarantee that, one third more carbon than at any measurable time in the past 700 ky. New positive feedback loops for the melting factors are being discovered all the time; and probably the worst one is the fear and sociopathy

cycle caused by homophobia and latent homosexuality, a feedback loop that only I seem to be writing about openly. The collapse of the Greenland mountain range of ice, anytime soon, will raise the sea-level by 25 feet; and the tidal waves will temporarily add another 25 feet. This will drown or sweep out to sea billions of people in our major port cities and lead to quickly-spreading, global disruption of food distribution and global anarchy. A return to cannibalism will provide the inevitable solution to both overpopulation and starvation. The combined Ice Age and Dark Age will be long-lasting and difficult to overcome. Why? Because the survivors will finally realize that all their former religious and political leaders were just brainless and lying scoundrels, latent homosexuals who opposed all real change and truth because they associate both with the removal of their own Third Masks. These cynical survivors will be reluctant to trust anyone ever again and will pass on that cynicism to their progeny. This scenario toward which humanity is globally racing is much, much more like what happened on Easter Island than what the Club of Rome or M.I.T. researchers realize. Return with me now to Easter Island for the psychoanalysis of their post-collapse obsessions.

Although the precipitating event of c. 1680 was “forgotten” by the people, it was remembered *unconsciously*. ***Whether we are consciously aware of it or not, we are all the products of all that our ancestors have experienced.*** (If I haven’t convinced you by now that no important event is ever fully hidden or forgotten, give this book to someone else.)

Analysis of the decadent “Birdman” cult, which developed over the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, should further convince you of how the islanders were traumatized and by whom. This analysis will also show us why little Easter Island took two hundred years to end its population crash and recover a semblance of social stability.

## THE BIRDMAN CARGO CULT

In this subsection, we’ll discover that the dominant, white culture that is so adept at burying Black history is equally adept at burying, denying and refusing to see white crimes.

On island after island, it was quickly learned that the white man was mortal and anatomically no different from anybody else. Yet he enjoyed much greater mobility, wealth and power, all of which implied greater spiritual power or knowledge of the gods.

Most of the peoples of Oceania would no doubt have liked to understand the white man’s religion; but people who seemed comical for their guilt, timidity and sexual repression usually proffered it. Worse still, all the tales from half a world

away were filled with elements that exceeded the natives' experience and defied their comprehension. What, for example, were they to think of "three kings riding camels across a dessert to bring gifts to an infant commoner born of a virgin"?

No longer believing in their discredited, traditional faiths and hopelessly unable to understand Christianity, they developed cargo cults. On Easter Island, the *Birdman* cargo cult was the dominant religion and successor of the moais until c. 1878, when its ceremonies ceased. Listen to Bahn and Flenley describe it:

From a religion based on virtually deified ancestors in local kin groups (a Polynesian segmented pattern), the islanders turned to the creator god *Makemake* (a wide-spread name in the Marquesas), and to beliefs and rituals that strongly focused on fruits and fertility, including human fertility [*H the ephemeral, figurative immortality that savages hope to acquire from breeding*]. They developed a system suited to precarious times whereby leadership alternated between groups from year to year based on a ritual egg-race. The winner of this "election by ordeal" was consecrated as the sacred birdman (*tangata manu*) for a year, during which time his group received special privileges. This was the system in place when the first Europeans arrived; the principal location of the new island-wide religion was the ceremonial village of *Orongo* [*H southern-most tip of the island, the slopes of Rano Kau that rise straight up from the sea*]. --Bahn and Flenley: 187

The next to the last line of the above quotation is extremely important: "This was the system that was in place when the first Europeans arrived." Although Bahn and Flenley and many of their academic colleagues understand all the details of this religion, they have utterly failed to grasp its essence. If they could see the forest through the trees, they would know that the Birdman Cult was a cargo cult; and like all cargo cults, it was inspired by the natives' negative apprehension of the white man and inability to grasp the positive, cooperative aspect of modern (savage) society. Had they understood this (and I'll expand upon this definition of the cargo cult momentarily), Bahn and Flenley and academia would realize that the existence of the Birdman Cult prior to the arrival of the allegedly-first European, Roggeveen, IS PROOF THAT OTHER MODERN MEN WERE THERE BEFORE ROGGEVEEN.

But instead of seeing the Birdman Cult as a cross-cultural phenomenon, Bahn and Flenley describe it as wholly indigenous! Really gentlemen! Does the name of its creator god, "Makemake," sound Polynesian? This name strongly suggests that the first, unrecorded visits were by pirates who were British, Jamaican or

North American and not French, Spanish, Portuguese or Dutch. The natives would have most wanted to know where ships, nails, firearms, rum *etc.* came from. Once these questions were communicated, the common denominator of all the English language answers would have been the word “make,” as in, “The Brits make ’em,” “The Yanks make ’em,” “The Jamaicans make it,” *etc.* The natives would have concluded that all things strange and wondrous came from the god “Makemake.”

J.K. McCarthy was a man without formal, higher education but with forty years of experience living among the natives of New Guinea. He first went there as a patrol officer for the Australian administration in 1927. McCarthy puts the academics to shame. He knew exactly what cargo cults were all about and tells us without beating around the bush. Listen to McCarthy’s quotation of a cult leader, and note how the quotation captures the essence of the cargo cult:

“The spirits came to me at night,” said *Batari*. “They are the ghosts of men long dead who inhabit the volcano of Pago near my village in *Nakanai*. God intended that the black men and the white men who live on earth should have equal possessions and so God made all the ships, the motor cars, the money and the clothes and the knives, axes and tools, so that the spirits could distribute them to all men who live on earth. These things reached black men as well as white until the spirits of the dead who live at Pago quarreled. Then the white spirits proved too strong for the black.”

His eyes became glazed as he continued.

“The spirits of the black people had no goods to send to their descendants on earth. All the things that God made were held by the white spirits so that our people in New Guinea are left without these things. The spirits who come to me at night are the ghosts of my people. They have told me how to defeat the greediness of the spirits of the white men. They have told me that to break the power of the white man’s ghosts the living people in New Guinea must do certain things. If my people obey me, the goods that God has made will be freed and so they will reach my people.”

He explained that fasting and sacrifice by the native people would ensure the proper distribution of goods... What *Batari* was expounding was a version of the Cargo cult --a phenomenon that had appeared in various parts of New Guinea over the years. --McCarthy: 180-181



Figure 69a: Buccaneer John Davis, alias Robert Searle, the unwitting progenitor of the Birdman



Just as the people of Oceania could not understand modern religion, they couldn't begin to fathom the modern production process either. They had never worked in a mine, in a factory or on a construction site; and lacking the photographs, movies and television for instruction, they could only conclude that the wondrous cargo of the modern world consisted of gifts from God.

Worse still, without any appreciation of modern goods as the fruits of organization and cooperation, oceanic peoples were unable to appreciate and to *imitate* this most positive aspect of modern society, of *our* fraternal ambivalence.

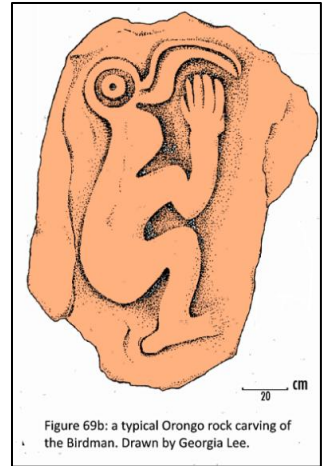
Instead, what they saw was the most negative side of the modern world and our Fraternal Complex -- the inequality, alienation and violence. Notwithstanding the few James Cooks whom we all like to remember, they saw the dregs of 18th and 19th century society. Even those who weren't pirates were mostly ex-convicts, derelicts and poverty-stricken debtors who were lousy, half-starved, scurvy-ridden, un-bathed and desperate. Such were the men forced by circumstance into the service of Machiavellian monarchs who encouraged their surrogates to fight like dogs over ships, cargo and colonial possessions. This view, the most savage view of the modern world, was one in which might alone made one right, mobile, rich and sexually satisfied.

Is it any wonder that the buccaneer became the new culture hero and model for the "Birdman"? See Figure 69a, a photo of Buccaneer John Davis, the likely original model for the "Birdman." Here's a detailed account of the principal Birdman ceremony:

The object of the ceremony was to find a new birdman for the year, who became Makemake's representative on earth. Each candidate -- ambitious warlords from dominant or victorious tribes rather than hereditary aristocrats -- had a young man to represent him. Each September (i. e. in springtime), these unfortunate "stunt-men" had to make their way down the sheer 300m (1000 ft.) cliff to the shore, and then swim 2km (1.25 miles) on a bunch of reeds through shark-infested swells and strong currents to the largest and outermost islet, *Motu Nui* (3.6 ha. [c. 9 acres]), where they awaited -- sometimes for weeks -- the arrival of a migratory seabird, the sooty tern. The aim was to find its first, elusive brown-speckled egg.

The winner would shout the news to his employer on the cliff top at *Orongo* (“Shave your head, you have got the egg”), and then swim back with the egg securely held in a headband. The master now became the new sacred birdman, shaved his head, eyebrows and eyelashes, and had his head painted, while the losers cut themselves with *mataa*.

The birdman went off to live in lazy seclusion for a year in an elliptical house at the foot of *Rano Raraku*, where he neither washed nor bathed, and refrained from cutting his nails - this must have helped ensure his seclusion! The egg was blown and then hung up for the year, after which it might be buried in a crevice at *Rano Raraku*, or thrown into the sea, or eventually buried with its owner (also at *Rano Raraku*), who meanwhile returned to ordinary life. In the final years of the ceremony the winner’s group, who took up residence in *Mataveri* at the foot of *Rano Kau*, could raid and plunder other groups with impunity. --Bahn and Flenley: 188, 194

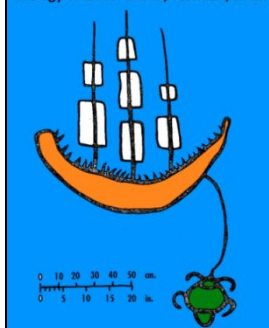


Obviously, searching for the buried egg is symbolic of searching for buried treasure; and one who didn’t bathe, stayed inside a cabin and raided and plundered others was a pirate captain. Such a “Birdman” couldn’t be Polynesian because they were famous for bathing three or more times *per* day; and with the island’s ideal climate, people were out-of-doors almost all the time.

Bahn and Flenley report that 481 rock-carved images of the Birdman have been found so far. Although the sooty tern is the bird whose eggs were sought after in the Birdman ceremony, the image is that of the frigate bird, a tree nesting bird that long ago quit the deforested island. (See Figure 69b, above, for a typical Birdman icon, a frigate bird with human-like arms and legs.) In the opinion of these experts and despite the obvious references to buccaneers in the ceremony described above, the Birdman is the reflection of the islanders themselves! They argue that, “[T]he bird’s behavior must have mirrored that of the islanders themselves, raiding and pillaging as a way of life, demolishing their neighbors’ nests and even stealing twigs (perhaps reflecting the islanders’ desperation for timber)” (Bahn and Flenley: 198).

Isn’t this a lovely bit of cultural eccentricity, the hypocritical kind of which only Christians are capable!

Figure 70a: Birdman Cult art from the chest of a statue at Rano Raraku, after T. Heyerdahl and E. Ferdon (eds), "Archaeology of Easter Island," London, 1961



form, the only Polynesians who would have preferred to worship birds would have been the most rebellious ones who longed to escape tribal society and envied the bird for his mobility.

In proffering the upside-down argument that the *frigate bird* was the *literal* object of the Birdman Cult, the authors also fail to see that this bird is named after the ship of the buccaneers. The first definition given for “frigate” in Webster’s New World Dictionary is, “a fast, medium-sized sailing warship of the 18th and early 19th century, which carried from 24 to 60 guns.” The authors do mention that, in the rock art concentrated around the cult center at *Orongo Village*, “fifteen European ships were also depicted, including a three-master on the chest of a statue standing at the foot of *Rano Raraku*” (B & F: 203). Of these fifteen, the one image that they reproduce for us, the three-master, supports not their own interpretation of the Birdman but mine. Notice that this ship, my Figure 70a, has 28 guns (7x4, Fraternal ambivalence in every direction) and has a turtle as an anchor. Throughout Polynesia, turtles were symbolic of the divine kings. It was taboo for common people to eat them. The connection of the turtle with the pirate ship is a further indication that the Birdmen were imitating buccaneers whom they thought to be divine.

Moreover, the word “frigate” sounds British, not Polynesian. The bird was named after the ship and not vice versa, but the Oxford English dictionary is unable to confirm this. OE states that the ultimate etymology of “frigate” is unknown. Diez hypothesized that it derived from the late Latin *fabricata*, a building; but recent scholars have rejected this hypothesis.

Fortunately, your taxi driver has learned a trick or two from Iman Wilkens, a brilliant contemporary researcher and etymologist whose work we shall review in Appendix F. I can tell you with relative certainty that “frigate” comes from “Phrygia.” (Always look first at the sound, especially of stressed syllables, rather than the spelling.) The Phrygians were a warlike people mentioned by Homer as

being on an upland that was the second frontier of the Troad (the nation centered at Troy). The Phrygians went into battle eagerly at Troy and were prominent among the “Sea Peoples” who overthrew the various civilizations of the Eastern Mediterranean from 1450-1150 BC. OE does list “Phrygian mode” as meaning a violent mode. A “frigate” or “phrygate” would have originally referred to one of the warships of these ancient people. But the Phrygians did not originally come from the plateau they conquered in western Turkey. In Appendix F, Iman Wilkens will identify the original Phrygia for us. You’ll be surprised to learn how very close Phrygia was to the English who named their warships after (and perhaps learned the finer points of warship construction and design from) the Phrygians.

Bahn and Flenley make only one other feeble attempt to save face for the modern culture and to substantiate their claim that the Birdman was indigenous. They argue that the cult also involved fertility rites.

But the only evidence they site for fertility rites is the existence of numerous vulvas carved in the rocks around *Orongo*. These vulvas don’t suggest fertility rites at all! None of these “fertility” vulvas include images of pregnant women such as were commonplace in the Paleolithic and early Neolithic period of many peoples. (See Figure 1b, if you don’t recall examples of fertility figurines.) No, this was even worse than a fertility cult –much worse.

The vulvas only suggest that the male stone carvers were obsessed with sex. Widespread, sexual frustration and obsession are a modern and not a primitive phenomenon. As social conflict and survival pressure mounts within a dying civilization, the felt need to reproduce increases. Yet owing to increasing desperation and inequality between the two sexes that are unequal in their capacity for violence, resentment and disrespect between the sexes also increase. This extreme ambivalence results in sexual frustration and sexual obsession. In our modern, global, dying civilization, this obsession and frustration is reflected most obviously in our advertising. Successful advertisers have learned that every client’s product must be associated with sexual satisfaction.

In summation, everything about the Birdman Cult suggests that it was not an orthodox religion (that attempts to balance fraternal ambivalence) but a degenerate cargo cult. This cult already constituted the dominant religion by the arrival of the Dutch in 1722. The fact that the cult’s obsessions (symbols and rites) all associate consciously or unconsciously with pirates tells us beyond a shadow of a doubt that pirates came to the island before the recorded arrival of the Dutch. For the Birdman cult to have named their God “Makemake” tells us that those pirates were English-speaking. Though the crash on Easter Island may have been the hardest and longest of all the Polynesian population and culture crashes, it was triggered in the same fashion as the others -- by the mere appearance of

modern men. The mere appearance of modern men shattered their faith in their traditional religions. In the end, their religion -- like all religions that merely manage our Fraternal and Oedipal Complexes -- proved to be no substitute for minimizing these universal, neurotic complexes. We must do so by accepting the truth about our horrific prehistory, by minimizing the K and R Class Struggle and by adopting the Stage II system of marriage and child-rearing. Our opportunity to do so and to spare our progeny a future even worse than the one recorded here may have already slipped away.

At this point, all the objectives outlined in the introduction of this work have been accomplished -- I hope to your satisfaction. It is time to summarize the entire work and pull together a few loose ends.

## CONCLUSION

*It is possible that cultural developments lie ahead of us in which the satisfaction of yet other wishes, which are entirely permissible today, will appear just as unacceptable as cannibalism does now. --S. Freud (St. Ed. Vol. XXII, p.11).*

*Only love constructs. --José Martí.*

### WHAT MUST BE DONE

All our pervasive and persistent problems -- be they social, economic, environmental or marital and sexual -- are mere symptoms of the two great extremist trends that have afflicted us since we arrived atop Earth's food chain (since we won the Species War). The extremes that we must minimize are the K, quality, and the R, quantity, reproductive strategies.

Here's the argument, *three propositions and a conclusion*. All four are irrefutable if you've read and understand the foregoing pages.

**First**, like every naturally evolved animal and plant, we tend to overproduce and preserve our own genes. We've been selected for this over three to four billion years of evolution. That's part of the survival instinct. That's what biological success means. That's what every generation of our ancestors has done, since we were one-celled organisms. Had we not done this, at least until we got to the top of the food chain, we'd be one of the 99% of the once-extant species that are now extinct; and another animal would be dominating the earth.

**Second**, we are uniquely without a natural predator to control our population because we are at the top of the food chain. No other animal consciously and routinely preys upon us. (Viruses don't exist. Bacteria only weaken us if we contract a massive dose of a foreign one.)

**Third**, you who have read this book slowly and with an open mind should now agree that there are not, nor have there ever been, immortal "spirits," "gods," "demons" or a "God" or "Devil" that could regulate birth and death or manage our affairs. The literal belief in religion is for infants and crazies. Die-hard neurotics, especially latent homosexual, Third Mask people who are afraid of all change and all the basic learning that causes personal growth and change will respond, "The wishful thinkers might be right. We'll never know if there's a God because the universe extends more than 13.75 billion light years from us in at least one direction; there has only been 13.75 billion years since the big bang in which light (and the reflections of objects) could travel to us; and the universe is constantly expanding." Such "agnosticism" is infantile also.

If this is your response, then let me ask you, when you want to go somewhere, do you step outside your door with a sign held up to the sky, a sign that says, “Aliens, come pick me up.”?

I’m sure you don’t. We base our actions and decisions upon expectations drawn from learning and experience. The only absolute is that there are no absolutes. Our knowledge does not provide certainty. It provides probabilities. “Agnostic” speculation about gods beyond the known universe is no more realistic than speculation about angels dancing on pin heads. It’s baby talk that adults can’t afford to tolerate from other adults. Either accept this third proposition or reread the foregoing pages or go back to kindergarten.

**Conclusion:** given these three conditions, it’s inevitable that we control our own population because there’s no one and nothing to do it for us. The crucial question for man thus becomes: shall we control ourselves rationally or irrationally? Rationally controlling ourselves means setting limits upon our reproductive competition, limits that obviously include greatly decreasing and controlling our birth rate. Irrationally controlling that competition and population means unnecessarily increasing the death rate, resorting to every form of homicidal and suicidal behavior and remaining the savages that we’ve always been. (Population at any time equals the total number of people ever born minus the total number who have died.) More exactly, rationally controlling ourselves means setting our birth rate to the one corresponding to the greatest decrease in our death rate. That’s the one that will enable us to make the fastest progress toward becoming the immortal gods of our imaginations.

If we focus on our genetic competition, we should see, as did ecologists Robert McArthur and E.O. Wilson, in the early 1970s, that all species tend to adopt one of two strategies for reproductive competition. The big animals toward the top of the food chain have very few babies but they train and equip them very well. McArthur and Wilson dubbed this quality strategy the K Strategy. At the other end of the food chain, the small animals and the insects reproduce for quantity. They dubbed the quantity strategy the R Strategy. Twenty years later, I noticed that humans, at the absolute top of the food chain and competing only with each other, are a food chain in microcosm. We adopt both strategies. (The denial of our animal being descends from the Deluge and is the Second Mask that most of us are wearing.) The people on top in terms of income, wealth and education are Ks, and the folks on bottom in terms of the same are Rs. K and R are what the class struggle is all about. The two extremes cause and define each other, which is why the class struggle can never be won. K and R are the root cause of all our pervasive and persistent problems without exception. Permanently solving any of these problems requires us to minimize both extreme strategies simultaneously by maximizing, respectively, equal opportunity to

minimize K and population control to minimize R. Realism, the ability to see the world from your opposite's point of view and compromise are essential.

The K Strategy prevents us from enjoying equal opportunity. Some people inherit empires and every advantage for education and employment, and we all tend to resent anyone whom we suspect of having been born with more than us. It's not fair.<sup>27</sup> The R Strategy causes us to always be over-populated. The instincts of the Rs compel them to have more children than they can afford because the R Strategy increases the likelihood of at least one of their *relatively deprived and therefore vulnerable* children surviving long enough to reproduce the parents' genes. Improving the living standards of the Rs *absolutely* can ease their plight but can never induce them to fully abandon their R Strategy because the plight of them and their offspring is not an absolute plight. It's a *relative* one. The equally unjust and irrational nature of both extremes also means that no society can enjoy more equal opportunity than it has population control and vice versa.

As we saw, in Chapter 13, the West became male-dominated; and the East became female dominated. Females, who play the greater role in reproduction and are especially fond of children, are more inclined than men to be Rs. Therefore, it is appropriate to speak of MK (western) and FR (eastern) societies. Two things happen when either sex dominates society. First, society fails at whatever the dominated sex is normally good at (love, marriage and family life in the case of women; science, technology and engineering in the case of men). Second, society becomes infected with the forms of savagery characteristic of the dominant sex (female lies and trickery or male violence and coercion).

Again, minimizing K means creating equal opportunity --not just equal rights and not just equal opportunity for the Rs but -- for all. [Go here](#), to see what the Peace Love and Progress Party means, concretely, by equal opportunity. [Go here](#) to see what we mean, concretely, by population control.

Enforcing equal opportunity and population control should be the principal tasks of governments everywhere and at all levels. That should be to governments what blood sacrifice was to pagan priesthoods. If governments concentrate their energies and resources upon these two tasks, then all the symptom-fighting will quickly become unnecessary and governments can be shrunk accordingly. The "We the People Treaty Amendment," referred to below, describes the two hierarchies of committees that will be needed for these purposes.

If we minimize K and R by maximizing equal opportunity and population control, educate the still traumatized religious babies (make public television

---

<sup>27</sup> English property law maximized the K strategy by combining feudal primogeniture with the fee tail estate.



documentaries based on Party publications) and eradicate homophobia (enable everyone to love); then we can easily unite peoples on opposite positions of the M-F domination continuum and moderate cultural differences through intermarriage. We can also use computer photo databases, face matching programs and baby-face generating software to assist people in finding their Mister or Ms Right and to implement a new system of marriage and child rearing described in [\*Stage II of the Nonviolent Rainbow Revolution\*](#). It is a system that will simplify and standardize family life in such a way as to make heterosexuals of all our children, complete our transitions to exogamy and monogamy, guarantee everyone love with the perfect marriage partner, save everyone the frustration and countless, wasted hours of searching for love, eradicate incest complexes, totally eliminate divorce, promiscuity and violent crime, make geniuses of all our little boys and gifted people of our girls and empower women within the family as never before. Please make *Stage II* your next book to read.

Of course, the total revolution, the civilizing revolution that I am describing cannot be undertaken by any one nation unilaterally. Even the world's most powerful and populace nations, the United States, China and Russia, would risk being overwhelmed by the rest of the savages were they to do so, even as a triple alliance. Therefore, the necessary reforms are outlined in a multinational treaty agreement and 28<sup>th</sup> Amendment to the US Constitution (the "We the People Treaty Amendment"). When enacted, it will – for the first time in the evolution of human society – make our social evolution conscious by bringing the political sphere from its rear-most, foot-dragging position to the leading, vanguard position that it ought to occupy. *A general outline of our social evolution should clarify this distinction and make the path forward obvious by illuminating our past, most of which has been blacked out by trauma.*

## AN OUTLINE OF OUR HOMINID PAST, OUR SOCIAL EVOLUTION

*Homo erectus*, our parent species, dominated the world for roughly two million years. A more detailed description of them and earlier hominids can be found in Chapter 10. For our present purposes, it is sufficient to note that they launched civilization by accomplishing the primal deed, by transitioning from alpha male-dominated hordes (such as what the gorillas live in) to exogamy, to marriages outside of families that proscribe incest.

This first revolution in human social behavior enabled fathers and sons to tolerate each other and launched civilization. Until the Neolithic, age of Stone Age agriculture, all our ancestors lived polygamously in caves or long lodge houses. Marriage-permitted (initiated) young, matrilineal men and patrilineal women married into a different polygamous family than their birth family. But as

long as they grew up with their biological parents and siblings, few would have found a fully-satisfying exogamous substitute for them. This is still the case today. To promote political peace, family unity and enable exogamy; we pretend that we don't love and desire our siblings and our opposite-sex parent. Or we pretend that our love for family members is somehow "different." (Love differs only in degree, not type.) This is the First Mask that we all wear. It masks our greatest loves and prepares us for our unhappy marriages.

We'll never know when the first *Homo sapiens* were born. They were mutants of *Homo erectus* parents. They looked different and the males were weak in the upper body (not good with the spear). As mythology assures us, it's dangerous to be different in a cannibal culture. No telling how long it took for a male freak and a female freak to meet and be allowed to mate. When this finally happened, it would have been because more of us were wanted to produce hybrids. Hybrids, the offspring of mixed, *Homo sapiens* and *Homo erectus* couples, were superior people in every way but one. They were sterile.

The invention of the bow and arrow enabled our first family to break out of *Homo erectus* society and live on their own. This first family probably consisted of one or two hybrids and two or three siblings, one of which was our "Eve." They would have found their greatest possible security in the heart of lion country. Our first *Homo sapiens* family settled near Lake Victoria or in a pole house upon it. They would have grown their community as quickly as possible until roughly 75 kya, slightly before or during one of the low points in the ice age. Then, they would have been forced by the irate and starving *Homo erectus* neighbors to divide. No one wanted to leave the first, autonomous *Homo sapiens* family. It provided the only security they had ever known. One half of the family walked due north to what they reckoned to be the second most secure location, the lower Tigris and Euphrates River Valley, a mosquito-infested swamp that was prone to flooding. Not much is known about the African half of our first family, but I have been making some progress in uncovering their history, see Chapter 14, and will share more of it in Appendix H. Most of us are mostly descended from the half that *walked* out of Africa, whose progress and history we shall now outline.

The two halves of our family were forcibly divided and not permitted to reunite. But each half knew that it had to maintain the strictest internal unity to survive. Each constituted a few score or a few hundred people and were surrounded by a hostile *Homo erectus* world probably numbering one-to-two million people. The out-of-Africa half strategically prepared for, fought and won their first big battle of the Species War. They would have waited for the enemy to strike first and then delivered very punishing retaliation. Only after one or two such battles, would they have started to feel secure.

But security meant the inevitable dissolution of their unity. It meant individuals defying the needs of the collective. And make no mistake about it: private decisions regarding reproduction or the preferential treatment of children have always constituted the ultimate rejections of central authority and the collective interest. Security also meant branching out, starting to take the world from our archaic ancestor. (The world had to belong to either us or them because the hybrids, our “heroes of old,” were sterile.)

By 30 kya and the last Species War battles in Ireland, they had dislodged *Homo erectus* from every corner of the world. The only surviving *Homo erectus* people lived as refugees in the high mountains of Central Asia, as hermits on remote islands and as slaves in the Middle East. Recall that J. D. Clark provided us, in Chapter 10, with rough, inferential dates for the Species War, 80 or 75 kya to 35 kya. Adjusting these dates to the start of hostilities at Ur to the final battles in Ireland, I would give them as 75 to 31 kya.

The successful prosecution of the Species War secured our position atop Earth’s food chain and awarded us stewardship of the Earth; but it also caused our ancestors to acquire tremendous guilt, and it forced us to divide into geographically separated tribes. The guilt motivated our ancestors to effectively expunge the memory of our parent species, which severed our link with the animal kingdom, causing us to become quite crazy, to become alienated from our animal/great-ape being, to wear the Second Mask, a mask that makes us the monsters of the natural world. The geographic separation caused us to lose our common language (originally *Homo erectus*’ language) and to gradually develop all our cultural differences. Cultural differences often cause us to forget that we are all very closely related and need to reunite into the one family (but an infinitely more educated and powerful family than the one) that we once were.

Worse still, wherever *Homo erectus* ceased to pose a threat; the tribes, *accustomed to growing their population as rapidly as possible and suffering from dwindling resources*, made war upon each other.

The next big milestone in our social development came with the discovery of horticulture *at least* 15 kya. Knowledge of animal breeding had been discovered much, much earlier; but without grain to feed the animals, animal husbandry could not develop commercially or extend to the temperate zone. The knowledge of horticulture spread like wildfire and spawned a frenzy of uncontrollable slashing and burning to lay claim to possession of the lowest, most fertile and most easily irrigated land. Until this time, people had all been nomadic or semi-nomadic, and all the land was assumed to have belonged to our *Homo erectus* ancestors, our first gods. The uncontrollable slashing and burning caused terrible global deforestation and a tremendous spike in the carbon content of the atmosphere (global warming). This caused a major ice sheet, probably Greenland,

to slide into the sea at a time when the glaciers were still massive. The resulting Great Flood was our second worst trauma (after the Species War) and our most recent trauma. It occurred at roughly 14,634 years BPE. Although most people believed that the Flood had been brought by the *Homo erectus* gods as punishment for the Species War, the most intelligent people knew that it had something to do with the smoky and noxious atmosphere that farming, land-grabbing and slashing and burning had created. So, the few first farmers that survived the flood were forced back into the long-houses that they had left. The First Neolithic was aborted and didn't resume until about 4 or 5 ky later.

It restarted as peoples realized that, without agriculture, a return to cannibalism was inevitable. The Permanent Neolithic did bring a gradual end to cannibalism and a cornucopia. But it also brought slavery, large wealth and income differences and the breakup of the long houses wherein our tribal ancestors had lived polyamorously. Slavery was initially a progressive innovation! It meant not cannibalizing the captured. Large income and wealth differences from the claiming of the land as private property and inheritance brought permanent K and R differences, the division of tribal society into socio-economic classes. Income, wealth and ownership differences also tended to perpetuate distinctions based upon fraudulent, religious genealogies (the Fifth Mask) and individual military skills. ("Royals" or "gentry" claimed to be more closely related to the *Homo erectus* gods.)

Monogamy gradually replaced polyamory. Once living outside of the long house, the best farmers were no longer subject to its rules. They tended to be the most practical people who were the most focused on work. For the competition for the most fertile and easily irrigated lowlands, they needed sons, sons who were physically strong and would not marry out of the family and let hard-won agricultural secrets out of the family. *Because we all love our siblings*, these brothers, the second and later generations of the more successful families developed homosexual orientations. They needed women only to breed children; and because women preferred the security of the long house, it was not easy for these early farmers and claimants of private property to obtain wives. A single wife also made it more possible to limit one's heirs to one's biological offspring. For all these reasons, the fledgling Ks became, and the Rs followed their lead in becoming, monogamous. Moreover, growing class differences also increased near-neighbor alienation and monogamy by default. Thus, real property ownership and class differences entrenched monogamy.

Homophobia, of a minimal sort, has always existed due to the contradiction of loving a genetic competitor. Male homophobia became extreme, after the Species War, wherever societies became overpopulated and men were pressured

to become killing machines. That role is incompatible with male homosexuality. It creates homophobia and forces homosexual men to adopt the Third Mask, a false persona that portrays them opposite of the loving people they are.

Monogamy, the limitation to one marriage partner, became another extreme and irrational source of homophobia, for both men and women, because it forces homosexual people to have to choose between having love or having children. Thus, monogamy cast the Third Mask in iron and extended it to women.

Latent (hidden) homosexuality, the Third Mask, tended to be universal among the first in-born mostly-male members of the monogamous K class. As the Ks have increased their wealth and property, so too have they increased class antagonism, monogamy by default, homophobia, the non-removability of their Third Masks, sexual frustration and unhappiness. Lying, loveless and angry, Third Mask people become the best savages. The wealthier and more prominent one of them becomes, the more difficult it is for him or her to remove the Third Mask, to “come out of the closet.”

*Please keep in mind, that we are describing our social evolution in the broadest possible strokes, an evolution that has been spontaneous and unconscious. No one ever chose to be unconscious, or to be an R or to adopt a false persona that depicts him as just the opposite of the loving person he is beneath a monster mask. Our spontaneous and unconscious social evolution created these dismal roles, and chance circumstances (mostly of our birth) determine which one(s) we are forced to play. The purpose of this work is not to criticize anyone but to make us conscious of what has been unconscious and to thereby, hopefully, improve upon the available roles and our ability to choose from among them. To a great extent, freedom is the recognition of necessity.*

The discovery of horticulture that spawned Stone Age agriculture, the Neolithic, occurred *at least* 15 kya. People had known for at least 100 ky how to breed the animals; but large-scale, commercial animal husbandry wasn't possible until tubers or grain could be grown to feed the animals. Thus, horticulture caused agriculture to explode and the knowledge of it to spread like wildfire, globally. But literal wildfires also spread globally due to the frenzy of slashing and burning that supported claims to possession of the lowest, most fertile and irrigatable lands. These lands had always been unowned by the nomadic and semi-nomadic hunter-gathers. They were assumed to have belonged to the (*Homo erectus*) gods.

The frenzy of slashing and burning, at a time when fire departments didn't exist, caused terrible deforestation and carbonation of the atmosphere. A Hindu myth still recalls that “poison came forth and immediately enveloped the universe... paralyzing the universe with smoky fire and fumes” (Chapter 33). This caused a major ice sheet, probably Greenland, to fall into the sea 14,634 years ago, only six or seven ky this side of the LGM (last glacial maximum) when

the glaciers were still massive. *This was the Great Flood*. It killed up to half the world's people and virtually all of the first farmers. I estimate that the sea-level rose 100 feet, and the tidal waves, at least 3 consecutive ones, doubled that. Everyone learned about the Flood; but as we concluded in Chapter 35, peoples were not equally affected. Amerindians, who were in Siberia and Central Asia at the time, were relatively unaffected. The affected peoples, most of us, assumed that the Great Flood had been brought by the angry *Homo erectus* gods as punishment for the Species War. *The trauma and the fear that even thinking about the Species War or the Homo erectus gods might elicit more punishment caused most peoples to black out their prehistory*. Most oral histories became severely compromised, so much so that I had to coin the word for the most important, protracted and traumatic series of events in the life of man, the major albeit cryptic subject of all our religions and most of our holidays – the Species War.

This expunction of prehistory and our parent species severed our link with the rest of nature and made most of us extremely crazy. Modern men, by enlarge, are like the victims of total amnesia. They have knowledge of only recorded history, the last 5 ky; and even that knowledge is extremely selective and much of it false. Without a memory of our past, we can't know who we are and how to go forward. That's why it is so important to learn the horrific prehistory to which most of this 3-volume work is devoted.

Expunging our prehistory and the memory of our parent species produced two very specific problems that still plague us. We'll discuss these problems after a brief review of religion in general and modern religion in particular.

Recall that the very simple demand side of religion is the desire for a quick and easy escape from death and suffering. This demand is, of course, a function of our fear and impotence. The demand grows radically as we leave or lose the protection of our birth family and biological parents.

The supply side of religion consists of the five groups of ancestors and relatives with whom we are obsessed owing to extreme ambivalence, love and hate. Extreme ambivalence was first cited by Eugen Bleuler, a student of Freud, as central to neurosis. *It is the essence of divinity*. Those whom we merely hate are easily avoided and forgotten. We become obsessed with objects of extreme ambivalence, especially when they are parents of some sort. Thus, the five universal objects of extreme ambivalence were the only universal candidates to become the gods and demons, presumed controllers of the world at large, presumed to loom as large in the world as they do in our minds and whose love or anger could bless or punish, as did our biological creators when we were babies.

Pagan religion was all about blood sacrifice, which was needed to appease the gods who were understood to be angry. Why were the pagan gods angry and

blood-thirsty? Because all four of the original, universal and ambivalent elements of the godhead (the amalgamated, positive gods and the amalgamated, negative demons or, in modern times, God and Devil) consist of ancestors and relatives who were either killed (the prehistoric elements, (1) the primal father and (2) the parent species, *Homo erectus*) or whom a part of us would like to kill (the ongoing elements, (3) the competing parent and (4) the ongoing genetic competitors).

Pagan religion was preoccupied with blood sacrifice – not just as a means of population control and cannibal nutrition, but – to placate these gods of their Oedipus [(1) and (3)] and Fraternal [(2) and (4)] complexes who were vaguely understood to all be angry. Add to these four the fifth, universal and derivative element of the godhead, the Species War victors, who contracted the ambivalence of their victims in inverse proportions, and you have, in a nutshell, the supply side of religion.

The angriest gods, *Homo erectus* gods, were assumed to be the killers of all men who died from invisible causes. So, at the approach of modern times, blood sacrifice and cannibalism, the major industry of pagan times and the business of pagan religion, had to be abolished so that different tribes-men and clans-men could gather with goods in hand, instead of weapons, and everyone benefit from their different productive advantages and trade. The Golden Rule, ethical reciprocity, which in pagan times was understood but only extended to fellow tribesmen and clansmen, had to be extended to all the faithful. As we learned in Chapter 7, this transition to modern religion, this improvement in distant-neighbor relations included a worsening of near-neighbor relations, occurred during the Neolithic and was another landmark in our social evolution.

*For the purpose of forging modern religions, abolishing blood sacrifice and promoting trade; the peoples who had been worst victimized by the Great Flood and who had blacked out their prehistory had an enormous advantage.* Their priests were able to be extremely creative in either denying what little oral history people remembered and attributing it to illusion (eastern religions) or syncretizing, amalgamating the gods and positing a wholly abstract creator God (western religions). Of course, “He” bore little relation to the *Homo erectus* bones under our feet and was in the sky somewhere or all around us. This synthetic, monotheistic “God” of the modern religions had only a poetic existence and was simply not very angry and blood-thirsty. What remained of the “demons,” the negative side of our ambivalence toward ongoing genetic competitors and the same-sex parent, were attributed to an amalgamated “Devil” or “Satan.” Modern religions minimized the fear felt toward the dead, *Homo erectus* gods by either denying the reality of mythology and separate things *per se* and telling everyone to be cool (Hinduism and Buddhism); assuring the first monotheists that they were His “chosen people” and would thrive as long as they worshiped Him and

lived moderately (Judaism); assuring them that the sins of the past were not of their doing and that they would attain paradise by worshiping him and leading good lives (Islam); or assuring them they were off the hook for all their own sins and the crimes of their ancestors if they believed in a synthesized Son (the derivative element of the godhead, the Species War victors and the killers or would-be killers of the other three original and universal elements of the godhead) and helped the four original and universal elements of the godhead obtain their revenge by participating annually in the symbolic and magical cannibalization of this Son and ideal sacrificial (“lamb of God”) victim (Christianity).

But although they succeeded in promoting trade and technical advancement by abolishing blood sacrifice and cannibalism, the modern religions, which relied upon and encouraged the blacking out of our prehistory, created two other problems and aggravated a third problem. Suggesting that we were created by this alien God in the sky or wherever, “in His image” and different from all the other Earthly animals and plants (as necessary to totally black out our feared father species) severed our link with the rest of nature, articulated and enshrined the Second Mask, our animal alienation. The universal prejudice against dark skin and patently-false allopathic medicine are both products of this Second Mask, of our animal alienation, our denial of our great ape being. Because all the other great apes have dark skin, the sight of dark skin on another human threatens to blow the lid off the whole kettle of modern-religion-lies that hide the traumatic Species War and our archaic ancestor. (The Great Flood was so thoroughly believed to have been punishment for the Species War that the two merged into one in the minds of our flood-surviving ancestors. “The Deluge” then became the perfect screen for all the less-closely-related victims. Sickness, disease and death from unseen causes could no longer be attributed to *Homo erectus* as pagans had believed. Thus, the self-alienated devotees of modern religion could only attribute disease to the invasion of their alien bodies by earthly organisms too small to see. Thus “germs,” later “viruses,” came into being.)

The problem that modern religion greatly aggravated was homophobia. We’ve seen, above, how monogamy produces homophobia when compulsory for homosexual people (people with same-sex siblings or people who lacked an effective father and stayed too close to Mom for too long). Here’s the somewhat complicated logic of how modern religion accidentally made monogamy compulsory. Modern religion improved distant-neighbor relations in the interest of trade by extending the Golden Rule to all the faithful. But except for abolishing blood sacrifice and cannibalism at the start of the modern era, modern religion did nothing to improve overall civility because it did nothing to decrease K and R (or increase equal opportunity and population control). The Catholic Church



even urges the Rs to be fruitful! (It earns much of its income from baptismal, marriage and funeral rites.) So, total savagery within society can be expressed by the equation:  $S_T$  (total savagery) =  $S_{NN}$  (near-neighbor savagery) +  $S_{DN}$  (distant-neighbor savagery) +  $ST$  (suicidal tendencies). Since  $S_T$ , total savagery has been constant throughout the modern era, decreasing one of the terms on the right ( $S_{DN}$ , distant-neighbor savagery) required one or both of the other two terms on the right to increase. Both of them did! Near-neighbor alienation and indifference make polyamory virtually impossible and monogamy compulsory by default.

So, as the Peace Love and Progress Party has explained above and as anyone conscious of our horrific past can easily figure out; converting our savage and unsustainable world into a civilized and sustainable one *is simply a matter of minimizing the Fraternal complex, abolishing the Oedipus (and for women, Electra) complex and overcoming East-West (female vs. male domination) differences*. We can largely overcome East-West differences by prioritizing cross-cultural marriage in our operation of the Stage II system of marriage and child-rearing, which will abolish the Oedipus complex, guarantee everyone love with the perfect partner, totally eliminate divorce and all other marriage and family problems, make geniuses of our young men and very gifted family leaders of our women. The Stage II system is described in detail in our eBook, [\*Stage II of the Nonviolent Rainbow Revolution\*](#).

But to start the process of making peace with China, end the domination of women in the East, replace mother-made and controlled code languages (e. g. Chinese) with the world's simplest trade and port language, English; they must feel assured that those code languages are no longer needed for defense. They've got to know that westerners are not violent barbarians. For any of this to happen and for any progress to become possible, in K (capitalist) countries, the political process needs to be simplified and rationalized by replacing general elections with hierarchical elections, K and R political parties with a truly communist party<sup>28</sup> and plebiscite voting with contribution-weighted voting.<sup>29</sup> I'll expand upon these concepts below.

The Party's Global Peace Plan begins with the enlargement and empowerment of the UNO News Agency, democratizing it to include every people's point of view and bringing it into every home on the planet 24/7/365. After 5 years of this agency destroying prejudices and educating the world's

---

<sup>28</sup> A truly communist party will be an internationalist party aiming to unite humanity into one virtual and loving family. It will end all national, class, ethnic, racial and family origin prejudice. It will be a vengeance-free party because none of our ancestors were and none of us are blameless. A less maligned and confusing word than "communist" is "eopc," an acronym for equal opportunity and population control.

<sup>29</sup> See [\*Just Say No to Latent Homosexual Crusades\*](#) for more about contribution-weighted voting.

peoples, the “We the People Treaty Amendment” should be put to a vote by the UN’s General Assembly.<sup>30</sup> Ratification of this Treaty/Amendment by at least the top 15 countries will enable us to launch a 25-year global moratorium on procreation. During this time, the signatories, the members of the new CUNO (Civilized United Nations Organization, dedicated to the minimization of K and R and the unification of humanity) shall use their power and influence to persuade all other nations to join, abolish what remains of every kind of prejudice, create equal opportunity, educate the people, streamline and modernize their governments as called for in the Treaty/Amendment and begin to implement the Stage II system globally.<sup>31</sup> It’s all very simple – in the abstract! Getting to Step I is the hard part. Let’s consider next the current state of the world, as we must in order to figure out, concretely, how we might get from here to there.

## CURRENT STATE OF THE WORLD AND PROSPECTS FOR CHANGE

Positive indicators, hopeful trends in our current world are: the Peace Love and Progress Party and its New Social Science, the LGBT Movement, our fledgling global government (the UNO), the spread of English as the world language, the expansion of our means of communication (especially the Internet) and the culture-homogenizing effect of global trade and the expanding global market.

I write LGBT, with a lower case “t,” because, in my opinion, the transgender guys are wearing the Fourth Mask, a mask that lies about our second most basic characteristic, gender. These tend to be guys whose latent homosexual mothers desperately missed and longed for a sister. Those moms talked their sons, AS TODLERS, into believing that they, the sons, were females so that Mom could better act out her homosexual fantasies with her son. These guys are, in my opinion, the worst victims of homophobia. They deserve our sympathy and protection but NOT emulation. The other problem with the movement, as I see it,

---

<sup>30</sup> The “We the People Treaty Amendment” can be read on [its Blogs Page](#) of the Peace Love and Progress Party. It is also in two of our fifteen FREE publications, on the [Downloads Page](#).

<sup>31</sup> Only civilized states committed to minimizing the class struggle can create a CUNO. Foreign policy extends domestic policy, and any MK or FR state that tolerates the internal raging of the class struggle requires warfare to eliminate surplus Rs or capture markets and resources. The peace-making declarations of the General Assembly and even the decisions of the Security Council are pure fantasy *while they issue from savage, K and R countries*. Neither can municipal law be respected and subordinated to international law while the latter issues from a United Nations Organization of still-savage states. Nor can the global body be truly supreme and enforce binding international law until its military forces are supreme and it has the power to directly tax and regulate the most powerful forces of production, multinational corporations.

is that members will not be thoroughly out of the closet until they are willing to be 100% honest about the subject. That means publicly articulating the simple laws of our psychosexual development as the New Social Science does and discarding the twisted jargon of twisted people. For example, all of us who are accepting of our orientations, whatever they may be – homo, hetero or bi – are the “straight” people. The people still hiding behind a mask, behind a false persona, are “twisted” people.

The expansion of the forces of production and the market has had the unintended but automatic effect of erasing tribal, racial, ethnic, national and language differences. An international culture with a common language, customs and set of laws has been evolving. After the last world war, educated and thinking people – even in my country, the U.S.A. – realized that a world government is needed to resolve our problems rationally and peacefully. We now possess a fledgling world government and the electronic mass communications, the computer power, the means of transportation, the simplest trade and port language (English) and almost all the other technology we need to reunite the human family and turn our world into a paradise.

*Aside from these positive trends, there is one piece of supremely good news.* Perhaps the best news of the decade comes from astrophysicists. They are now advising us that we probably will NOT have to worry about gamma rays wiping out life on our planet in the foreseeable future. Gamma ray bursts, by far the most powerful forces in the universe, are the death cries of hyper novae and the birth cries of black holes. Candidate stars for this, within our danger zone, are only two, on the edge of the zone and not aimed in our direction. Invisible neutron star twins, which collide to create short gamma ray bursts, may be within our zone; but they are extremely rare. See footnote 135 of Volume 2.

But in this researcher’s opinion, gamma-ray-good-news notwithstanding; the negative trends outweigh the positive ones. Currently, the average person is still governed by his or her instincts, by the reptilian regions of his or her brain. Moreover, all the “leaders” by all the various selection processes are no better. Tune in to your TV news or browse to an Internet news site, if you can still bear to do so, and you will see these (almost-exclusively latent homosexuals) telling savages what they want to hear and mirroring their savagery -- lying, fighting and campaigning heroically against mere symptoms of the K and R Class Struggle!

The global population growth rate *is* slowly falling. It may hit zero in 2100 at the 11 billion level as the UN Committee on Population predicts. (See <https://www.statisticstimes.com/demographics/world-population.php>.) Previous estimates by yours truly were overly pessimistic.

But extreme pessimism is appropriate in assessing the global misery index that results from our current population level NOT being sustainable and

increasing survival pressure. *Stopping population growth is insufficient. We need to greatly REDUCE the world's population because even [the current level is nowhere close to being sustainable](#).* We are not living on our income but are, instead, consuming our environmental capital. Some of you, especially ecologists mindful of what should be the rights of other species, will find this business analogy offensive; but it is the surest way to make the point to a lot of people.

Even Big Brother's economists, at the IMF, admit that even by their monetary measures, which don't account for the quality of life, the [economic growth rate of the last two years](#) fell short of the population growth rate.

Humanity is in a downward spiral of shrinking living standards, dwindling usable resources, increasing species extinctions, runaway pollution and ecosystems on the verge of collapse. Here are a few concrete, statistical examples:

Every year, we extract an estimated 55 billion tons of fossil energy, minerals, metals and bio mass from the Earth.

The world has already lost 80% of its forests and we're continually losing them at a rate of 375 km<sup>2</sup> per day!

At the current rate of deforestation, 5-10% of tropical forest species will become extinct every decade.

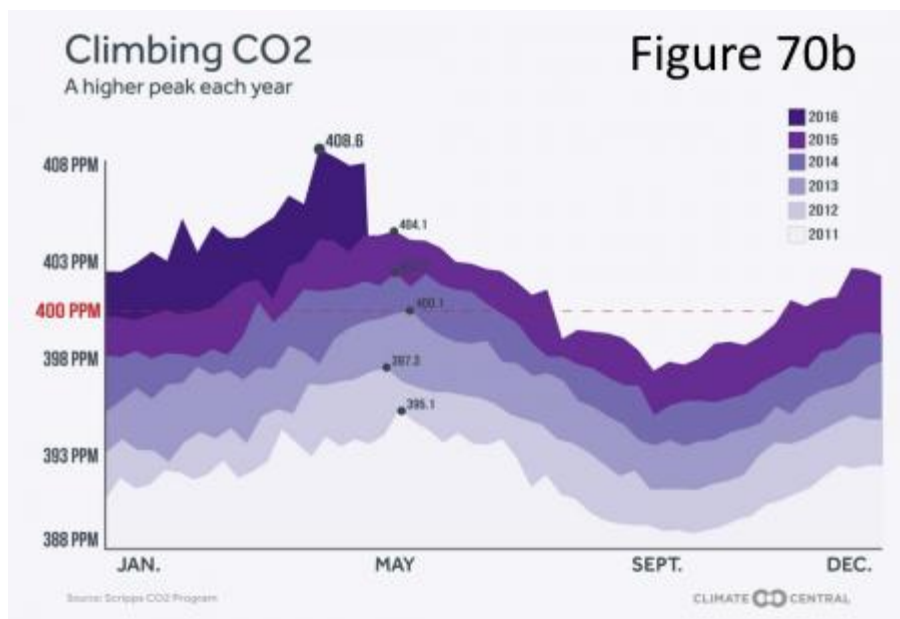
Every hour, 1,692 acres of productive dry land become desert.

27% of our coral reefs have been destroyed. If this rate continues, remaining 73% will be gone in 30 years.

We have a garbage island floating in the Pacific Ocean, mostly comprised of plastics - the size of India, Europe and Mexico combined!

**We are using up 50% more natural resources than the Earth can provide. At our current population, we need 1.5 Earths, which we do not have.** (<https://www.theworldcounts.com/stories/environmental-degradation-facts> )

*Most alarming of all is global warming because it assures us that another Great Flood will be coming before humanity has recovered enough to even become fully conscious of the last one.* Here is the graph of CO<sub>2</sub> ppm.



For some reason, I'm not finding the corresponding graph for more recent years. Maybe that's because most people prefer to put off the shock until the flood waters overcome them. Or maybe it's because scientists have discovered how much worse natural gas is as a greenhouse gas. The main component of natural gas, methane (CH<sub>4</sub>) currently accounts for around one-fifth of man-made global greenhouse gas emissions. It has a shorter lifetime in the atmosphere than carbon dioxide (CO<sub>2</sub>), but a greater near-term warming potential. In fact, *methane has more than 80 times the warming power of CO<sub>2</sub> over the first 20 years after it reaches the atmosphere.*" ([https://www.bp.com/en\\_us/united-states/home/who-we-are/advocating-for-net-zero-in-the-us/methane-emissions.html?utm\\_source=google&utm\\_medium=cpc&utm\\_campaign=us\\_methane\\_direct&utm\\_term=methane&gclid=CjwKCAjwwL6aBhBIEiwADycBIJ0fdwJVqmh3yYRdPbiHi2xWGSW6F7JQsRAuy1l0evnscbJ0DnMJ\\_hoCtbIQA\\_vD\\_BwE](https://www.bp.com/en_us/united-states/home/who-we-are/advocating-for-net-zero-in-the-us/methane-emissions.html?utm_source=google&utm_medium=cpc&utm_campaign=us_methane_direct&utm_term=methane&gclid=CjwKCAjwwL6aBhBIEiwADycBIJ0fdwJVqmh3yYRdPbiHi2xWGSW6F7JQsRAuy1l0evnscbJ0DnMJ_hoCtbIQA_vD_BwE))

One would have to be brain dead not to know, at some level of awareness, that K and R Class Society is at the end of its tether. As our Party insists above and in many of our publications, this traumatic awareness is the cause of the global flu and pneumonia epidemic, which, for the biggest Big Brother manipulators, is a "Covid-19" [plandemic](#). It is victimizing mostly latent homosexual people because they know in their bones that the new, population-controlled and equal-opportunity world, wherein people marry for love, will have few, if any, comfortable places for people like themselves who can't love.

As survival pressure and insecurity continue to worsen, expect the most ignorant and unconscious people to become more religious. Expect latent homosexuals, who can't love and are motivated almost entirely by fear, to become more malicious and anti-social. *More importantly, realize that these two groups that effectively cap the K and R Class Struggle, are in a political alliance that everywhere rules the world.*<sup>32</sup> *The alliance is based on the fact that they have complimentary personalities. I call it the Doomsday Alliance because it leads, automatically, to catastrophic population collapses and the fall of civilizations. This is what I mean.*

Although no one ever chose to wear the Third Mask and lead a loveless life, the folks that are forced by homophobia and the pressures of our savage society to wear it are angry. Not knowing who to blame, they blame all of us. They value only money, power and the dissemination of their own genes, all of which give them opportunities for getting even with the rest of us. They crave government jobs because these provide wholesale opportunities to oppress and humiliate others. Latent homosexuals become, as Orwell showed us in his monumental novel, 1984, the monsters of society. (Big Brother, the dictator of Orwell's future, dystopian society, is a synecdochic symbol for latent homosexual people *per se*.) They rise, in business and especially in politics, by telling the great mass of irresponsible, ignorant and wishful-thinking babies, the most unconscious religious people, the lies that they want to hear. In every language, they have created four magic words that win the political support of the babies. In China, where the dominant religion is national religion, those words are a slogan: "socialism with Chinese characteristics." In imperialist countries, where Christianity is the dominant religion, the magic words are: "In God we trust," "God save the queen," or "*Gott sei mit uns*," etc. The babies need only to be assured that a politician shares their religion to believe that he will enjoy their god's guidance. The latent homosexual "leaders" of this alliance make it a Doomsday alliance owing to their dread fear of truth and change. They associate both unconsciously with the removal of their Third Masks, so they reflexively fight against all basic truth and change. *This Doomsday Alliance, more than any other single cause, is what speeds societies and entire civilizations to their doom.*

Educated, sane and straight people (people accepting of their sexual orientations, whatever they may be) need to form a Peace Love and Progress Alliance to oppose the Doomsday Alliance of the babies and the scoundrels. But

---

<sup>32</sup> Religion is a cap upon the class struggle. It prevents people from seeing the simple K and R nature of our world because it makes irresponsible babies of people. For believers, vital matters are "God's" or "the Devil's" doing. Homophobia and latent homosexuality are a cap because their angry victims have only negative regard for the rest of us and want only to lie, fight and "get even."

we have always been and remain a tiny and relatively poor minority. We can't hope to compete with an alliance of the majority and the most successful savages.

Unfortunately, as on Easter Island, only a catastrophic event can shatter the babies' naïve faith in their religion and break the Doomsday Alliance. In other words, an actual doomsday, a catastrophic population collapse will probably have to occur before there can be progress.

Of the many possible ones that appear to be in the pipeline, the one that I suspect will occur first is another Great Flood. I say "another" because, as you will see in Appendix H, on April 2nd of 2018, I proved by three different methods that the Great Flood actually occurred 14,634 years BPE. On January 18th of 2020, in Xian China, one day before the Big Brothers launched the plandemic, I proved the same by a fourth method.

And a Greenland-caused-Great-Flood could be just the beginning! The sea level range between the LGM (last glacial maximum) and the melting of all the ice is approximately 616 feet. We are at the 400-foot level now with a possible rise of as much as 216 feet still to come! The Australian aborigines can remember an earlier time in the Holocene (the present interglacial period) when the sea level was 30 feet higher than it is now. (See the John Upton and Climate Central article.) Yet, over the last 400 k.y., there has never been a measurable interval in which the CO2 was above 300 ppm. As of June, 2021, it's 420 ppm and still rising.

It is because of this alliance of the babies and the scoundrels that the Peace Love and Progress Party insists that all of the sea-level rise prognostications have been over-optimistic and that our most pessimistic prognostication is likely to be the correct one. The ice will continue to melt much faster than all the experts predict; and the Greenland mountain range of ice, with an average altitude of 7005 feet, will crash into the sea, in piecemeal but rapid succession. Just from this first big, Greenland collapse, the sea level will rise 25 feet, and the tidal waves will double that. Tidal waves will sweep far inland, dragging people out to sea. BILLIONS of people will die in the historical blink of an eye. (See <https://edition.cnn.com/2022/08/29/world/greenland-ice-loss-sea-level-rise-study> for the 25-foot statistic.)

Again, the character and perverse-but-complimentary personalities of the Doomsday Alliance and its inability to stop the destruction of our environment make a doomsday, a catastrophic population collapse, inevitable.

Although I'm betting on another Great Flood coming first, WWIII is also a distinct possibility. Why? Because the latent homosexual scoundrels that lead the alliance always have to be fighting and scheming to eliminate someone. *Only by fighting with an external enemy can they convince themselves that the war within their own breasts (between homophobia and homosexual impulses, a war that causes most of them to die of heart failure) is something other than what it is.*

Increasing unemployment, inflation and domestic unrest augment their penchant for fighting. Was it ever possible to read a newspaper front page anywhere or listen for over five minutes to any news broadcast without seeing or hearing evidence of this?

We have all the social science and the technical means of preventing these catastrophes and solving our problems, but the latent homosexual Big Brothers must be removed from office before any constructive change will be possible. Given the nature of their Domsday Alliance with religious babies, that's not going to happen without a catastrophic event that shatters religious belief.

Notice too that the craziest of the Christians, who can't distinguish between the prehistoric and the ongoing sides of the Fraternal complex, are welcoming the end of the world! They think, pursuant to the last book of their Bible, that angels are going to come down and fly them up to heaven! Even if every *Homo erectus* that ever lived is now an angel and assigned to that task, there's going to be very long waiting lines for flight. I'll have to start selling tickets.

## THE LONG-RUN FUTURE OF MAN

The Peace Love and Progress Party's only gods are Truth and Cooperation. Our only goal is the advancement of our species, and our only abiding faith is in man's ability to learn. However slow most of us may be, we do ultimately learn. Although another population collapse and mini-dark-age may be inevitable, we trust that men will preserve our New Social Science and ultimately create the classless and nationless civilization it advocates.<sup>33</sup> Learning, we believe, will make our transition to a civilized and sustainable world inevitable because all the theoretical alternatives are absurdly suicidal. In this last section of our Conclusion, we shall consider them and reveal them as such.

As we see it, there are four theoretically-possible paths for man. Before you commit yourself to promoting one or another, before you decide whose political party to join, I suggest that you carefully consider the end of each, the place where each path leads.

**Path #1:** were it possible for the western, male-dominated, latent homosexual Ks to dominate the world indefinitely, as they are doing in the present era, the result, the default for K society, K victory in the class struggle, would be a global, fully-integrated, computerized network of robots, a totally vertical and horizontal

---

<sup>33</sup> The one thing that could fully and quickly terminate our species and our future is a gamma ray burst. But as said above, scientists regard that possibility as unlikely in the foreseeable future.



conglomerate, a lowest cost per unit producer of every good and service. Economic competition would then relocate to the conglomerate's stockholders, who would sabotage one another and buy up each other's stock, until a sole stockholder survived. The global, solitary conglomerate would ultimately be run by and for this sole, surviving stockholder. This peerless, latent homosexual scoundrel, the "winner," would soon commit suicide; and the raccoons that already stand ready to replace us would inherit the Earth. *K society defaults to a one-man economy and, shortly thereafter, a raccoon world.* The race to become that guy or to preserve your genes in him makes long run sense only if you prefer raccoons to humans. All these folks, the Rocky Raccoons, who are not already Republicans should run right out and join the Republican Party.

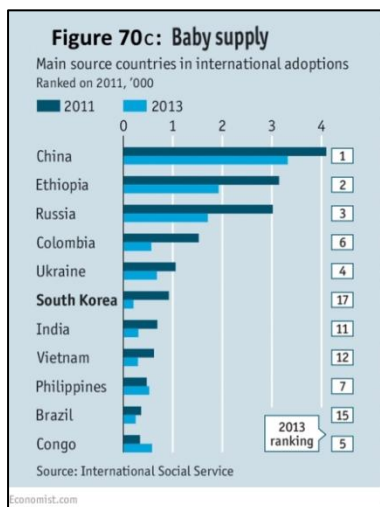
**Path #2:** R victory in the class struggle. This is the path promoted by Karl Marx. In the present era, violent R revolution to take state power away from the Ks is prerequisite. But even the revolutionary wars that temporarily bring the Rs ("Tezcatlipocha" or Marxists) to power have not produced much long-run, social improvement (aside from socialization of the land and replacing general elections with hierarchical elections). There are at least two reasons for this. First, the angry people who are violent and believe in violence are the least likely to be philosopher kings and the most likely to be Third Mask, latent homosexual "Big Brothers" who are terrified of real, fundamental social change. For over one hundred years, many people regarded Karl Marx as a philosopher king, the principal author of social science. Marx wanted to produce social science and did make some substantial contributions to it, but before social science could be developed someone had to articulate the ideology of the Rs and counterpose it to the vicious Social Darwinism of the Ks. History thrust this role upon Mr. Marx.

The other reason why Path #2, the R path cannot improve society is that Marxist revolution and R victory in the class struggle defaults to a society in which everyone is relatively equal but equally poor and standing on top of one another, Pan-Bangladesh. No one has been satisfied with the results of R revolution, with R societies that promote equal opportunity with the unrestricted right of reproduction, without population control. *The Rs are savages too! Each of them wants only to reproduce and preserve his own genes.*<sup>34</sup> See Figure 70c.

---

<sup>34</sup> A single set of facts suffices to show what savage hypocrites the Rs are and how far national socialists are from establishing an ideal, communist society that can live by Marx's motto for communism ("from each according to his abilities, to each according to his needs"). Those facts are in Figure 70c. Note the prevalence of former Marxist, national socialist, countries in this figure. My focus is on the Ks only because they are the only class capable of overseeing and administering social change. By the logic of the Foreseeability Doctrine of tort law, they are also liable for the damage when they refuse to prevent savagery. But the Rs, individually, are every bit as savage and immoral. I must cite the Castro revolution as exceptional in this regard. The mother of Fidel

Were the lines italicized above not true, there wouldn't be all these orphaned babies in national socialist (ex-Marxist) societies. Therefore, all Marxist, R societies have transitioned to national socialist societies that only pretend to be "Internationalist." National socialist societies are Us-Against-the-World societies (e. g. "Us Germans," "Us Italians," "Us Russians," "Us Chinese," *etc.*). So, obviously, Path #2, world-wide R victory of the class struggle, Pan-Bangladesh, is not possible either. Only the largest of these national socialist, gangster groups has any possibility of triumphing: Pan-China. But even Pan-China is very unlikely because national socialist societies – no matter how cunning -- are soon recognized as savage too and are ultimately and historically doomed to failure.



The part cannot defeat the whole of which it is only a part. Even if, by some fluke of fortune, Pan-China were to come into being, the Chinese Ks (who are otherwise unable to compete with the western Ks) would assert themselves with a vengeance and Chinese nationalism would be seen by all as the artificial and temporary creature it is.

Anyone who imagines that there is a religious alternative to these extremes needs to reread this book or go back to kindergarten. Matters of life and death are not and never have been "God's prerogatives." Even when alive, *Homo erectus* "gods" took far fewer lives than were attributed to them. Tales of the "Jinn,"

*Homo erectus* spirits that change in and out of animal form, and of propitiated *Homo erectus* gods killing their own descendants have always been wishful attempts to hide the massacres committed by *Homo sapiens* --until now. There is no religious, "divine," path for man. The mostly poor, ignorant, isolated and still traumatized people with Paleolithic world views must be educated with public television. We need to replace some of the soap operas, Roman circuses, "reality" shows and Donald Trump trumpeting with documentaries based on the New Social Science. The (mostly) Rs who are ignorant and traumatized enough to

---

and Raul had been a domestic servant of their rich, plantation-owning father. One of their first measures after the triumph of the Cuban Revolution was to establish an orphanage whose occupants lived as well or better than average Cuban children. I visited it when I was in Cuba. Although the heart is only half a prophet, by any measure of human hearts, Fidel Castro was a very, very great man; and I doubt that anyone who knew him well will say otherwise.

think that there is a religious path to civilizing the world are the sheep, the brainless majority of the Doomsday Alliance who unwittingly support...

**Path #3:** an endless series of K and R reversals, each one resulting in more environmental destruction and a lessening of Earth's capacity to sustain human life. As we've seen, this is the path that our fatalistic, Mexican ancestors regarded as inevitable. But before we examine it in more detail, we need to look closer at Paths 1 and 2.

I can almost hear many of you screaming, "Those paths are obviously crazy. I've got no plans of joining the Republicans or the Marxists."

But you recognize Path 1, the K path, and Path 2, the R path, as crazy only because I've pointed out "the One-Man Economy" and "Pan-Bangladesh" as being their respective and inevitable ends. All of us *are* crazy! All of us descend from the ancestors we've analyzed on this prehistoric tour. What group of them wasn't crazy? Moreover, as we saw in Chapter 7, the "modern" religions did nothing to limit K and R, to increase equal opportunity and population control. "Modern" religion has failed to complete the transition to modernity by extending its ethos, the Golden Rule, ethical reciprocity, to the most important sphere of social life, the sphere of our reproductive competition. So obviously, we "modern" apples can't have fallen very far from our pagan trees!

Put contemporary folks under the microscope and you'll see the three masks that I've described: *The First Mask* (remnant of the primal deed and the transition to exogamy) hides our love for the sexuality of our siblings and the face of our opposite-sex parent to prepare us for and resign us to unhappy marriages; *The Second Mask* (remnant of the Species War) hides our animal/great-ape being and makes us the monsters of nature; and *The Third Mask* hides homosexuality and the love of same-sex siblings. The universal acquisition of the first two masks prior to adolescence compels us to tolerate the Third Mask, the most grotesque mask, Big Brother's mask, a mask that prevents him (them) from loving and turns them into the monsters of society.

The trans people have created a *Fourth Mask*, and the "gentry," the "royals" who pretend to be hybrids or more closely related to *Homo erectus* have always worn *The Fifth Mask*. All these masks must go. Getting sane means getting real about ourselves and our ancestors.

We also need to consider Paths 1 (K) and 2 (R) more closely because their insane proponents have already made substantial progress. They have created enabling means and the propaganda needed to entrench these means. They have their own social institutions. *It's not sufficient to reject K and R in the abstract. We must also identify and reject the institutions that selectively promote them!*

Focusing first upon the western, MK societies, it hardly bears saying that Christianity in general and Protestantism in particular, are just their cup of tea.

The gods are all male and the woman is told to obey her man. More subtly, Christianity tells its flock to tolerate their own oppression: the ways of the Lord are mysterious and not to be understood by us. (Cf. Ephesians 1:9.) Trying to do so is like looking through a glass darkly. (Cf. 1 Corinthians 13:12.) And suffer gladly because you will be rewarded for your suffering in “Heaven.” (Cf. Matthew 19:24.) Protestantism extols the work ethic. The unexpressed assumption seems to be that happiness will follow success. I’ve only been to thirty countries, but it appears to me that my own countrymen (among the richest people per capita) are the unhappiest people. Not only that, but the people on the northeast side of Manhattan (who are the richest of the rich and whom I’ve observed extensively during thirty years of taxi driving) are the *most* miserable of the miserable. You can’t be around them long without becoming miserable too!

Another strategic, MK institution is the general election, an election wherein all the voters select from a few candidates and no significant portion of the voters can have personal knowledge of any of the candidates. Without personal knowledge, voters can only know what they are told about the candidates by mass media. The mass media is, of course, owned and bought up by the richest and most powerful Ks. General elections are the surest form of totalitarianism. Especially when combined with “checks and balances” (divisions of power between branches of government that require the decisions of each to be confirmed by another), general elections guarantee political domination by the wealthiest Ks and their biggest corporations.

The Ks have brainwashed their societies to accept general elections and K political domination by equating “democracy” to general elections and “freedom” to the right of individuals to do whatever their wealth enables. “Freedoms from,” the collective security of society as a whole, and alternatives to K-dominated society are taboo subjects. For all the reasons that I shall enumerate below, “love” is also becoming a taboo subject within the MK western world where its denotative, human meaning is virtually impossible for anyone to realize.

“Love,” as in “love of money” or “love of pizza” is not only permissible but is one of the big lies upon which MK society thrives. Madison Avenue (the advertising industry) equates every client’s product with love and happiness. Perhaps the common-law definition of marketability, which requires a product to do what it is intended to do, should be expanded to include advertising promises, explicit and implicit. The false advertising about love and happiness is so ubiquitous, the lie is so constantly repeated, that most Americans (and people of other countries too to the extent that they follow America’s lead) believe that they can love money or that money can make them happy. Money never made anyone happy. Money only makes life easy. Only adult, sexual love makes happy. Money

can even make you unhappy if, in the process of acquiring it, you become more alienated from others or so guilt-ridden that you hate yourself.

Owning the media and controlling schools as they do, the white, male, latent homosexuals of MK society have popularized a world view, a distorted history and even a vocabulary and set of speech figures that is wholly their own, that is replete with lies and exaggerations but that is blindly and uncritically accepted by just about everyone they rule over. We've seen many of the religious and historical examples. In the economic sphere, the owners and financiers are always the "producers." Others who conceive, design, engineer and labor to produce or deliver the product or service are unmentionables to be replaced and discarded as soon as automation permits. Journalists, educators and politicians even self-censor due to their fear of alienating wealthy K owners and losing their jobs or campaign contributions. Strict limitations on inheritance, an essential element of equal opportunity, ought to solve these problems.

As already mentioned, violence is something that the members of western, latent homosexual, MK society absorb with mother's milk. Our fathers brainwash us to believe that anger and violence are natural and inevitable within the world. War (military violence) and the threat of it are standard policy tools as much for us as they were for the Mexica. Of course, violence of one sort or another is made inevitable by savage birth rates, birth rates above the correct one, the one corresponding to the greatest decrease in the death rate. But except for ridding us of surplus population by savage means, what long-run good has violence ever done for us? The military contracts for two world wars gave birth to monopoly capitalism, to a tremendous worsening of K and R differences. Imperialist domination of other peoples enabled the US to grab the lion's share of all resources, but the other peoples of the world hate us so much that they avoid trading with us whenever possible. Americans still can't compete with the Japanese in any of the industries wherein they are allowed to compete; the Germans are the leaders of Europe; and the arming and unleashing of the angry victims of the Versailles Treaty upon the USSR did not succeed in crushing the first socialist state. The post-WWII ascendancy of the dollar as the world's reserve currency did enable the US to print money, seemingly without limit for seventy years. But now that the other countries have fully recovered and formed trade, banking and military relationships that exclude us; all that paper is being dumped on the market, and US citizens will pay in inflation for many years to come for all the funny money their government created. *What did two world wars accomplish?* Who benefits, in the long run, from our obscene military budget other than the top gangsters who get the contracts; and doesn't the growth of the BRICS community guarantee that the American Empire will suffer the same fate, in this century, that the Ottoman Empire suffered in the last one?

I lived for only eleven years in China and nowhere else within the eastern world, but some of the institutionalized lies of FR society, of *Big Sister*, are also obvious even to me. As I said in Chapter 13, just as our fathers condition us to violence, their mothers condition them to lies and trickery, prostitution being one of the foremost forms of it. Prostitution and their intentionally difficult, password languages are the FR counterparts of MK weaponry. Through their mother-taught and controlled, code languages, eastern women maintain their control of FR societies. They rule from the shadows. The big lie that preserves the impossibly difficult languages and female domination is one that says their culture is “perfect.” Chinese people can’t tolerate any criticism because to not be as perfect as they mistakenly believe their mothers and their culture to be is to “lose face.” Their written language, Hanzi, is so unbelievably difficult that they consume all their imagination trying to learn and remember what pictures the characters represent. To be competitive economically, they must steal everyone else’s technology because their language stunts their own creativity and drains their imaginations. Yet because they can’t admit that their culture is not “perfect,” they all believe in their own national lies, lies that claim a Chinese origin to all the technology that they are stealing from around the world. In the present era, this wholesale theft of technology has been possible only because the real inventors tend to look the other way – in the hope that the Chinese will be a countervailing force and alternative to everyone’s foreign enemy #1: American imperialism. (Stealing people’s resources is an even greater crime than stealing their technology.) But the United States is a sinking ship. As soon as China overtakes the US, *it* will become foreign enemy #1; and it will no longer be possible for China to steal everyone’s technology as they’ve been doing.

So, although Paths 1 and 2 or national-socialist-modified 2, the One-Man Economy, Pan-Bangladesh or Pan-China respectively, are theoretically possible; none of these paths are likely. Unless we learn to take a Path #4, the path dictated by social science; then our fatalistic Mexican ancestors are almost certain to be correct. The default path, Path #3, is the one that man will traverse. It is a path of escalating violence, unpredictable K and R reversals and vital ecosystem collapses that collapse the human population and cause dark ages (the onset of anarchy and cannibalism and a standstill and blacking out of human history). Again, the current, escalating environmental destruction, [Figure 70b](#), and the statistics surrounding it, ominously portent of a coming collapse. Figure 70b and the statistics on either side of it are graphic evidence that we are still savages, totally unable to manage our society and the planet.

But for our heritage of religious lies, wishful thinking and cover-up that the Fraternal complex has developed over the millennia, we would see the latent

homosexual “leaders” of our world as the insane morons they are; and, instead of voting them into office and following them, we would lock them into straight-jackets and rubber rooms.

Freud’s favorite joke drives home the point. It’s my favorite too. It elucidates just how crazy they are:

One day during advanced individual training for reconnaissance attached to armor (the tank corps), the first sergeant (the ranking NCO, the old man with the most experience) called Private Cohen into his office.

“Cohen,” he said, “I just don’t know what to make of you. You’re smart, fit ’n gritty. Yuh got all the makings of a great soldier, but...somehow...you’re just not right for the army.”

“I know Sir. I don’t know what to say, Sir.”

“Well ... ever think of buying a tank ’n trying to make a go of it on your own?”

Some of the Ks are naïve enough to think that there is a technological fix for all our problems. (They’ve been too many times to Disneyland.) In the long run, technology cannot improve the quality of our relationships. Technology has increased the human carrying capacity of the planet by increasing our ability to use and recycle resources. Yet the same technologies have also enabled us to plunder environmental resources faster than they can be replaced or re-concentrated, to live on our capital instead of just our income. Medical technology, especially that of Dr. Hamer, is erasing ecological opportunities for new births by decreasing the death toll from illness. As we noted in Chapter 36, technology merely increases our potential to work wonder or woe. It is ethically and environmentally neutral. It’s not a silver bullet for our problems. It doesn’t affect our persistent and pervasive problems. Given our strong ambivalence for one another, our unresolved Fraternal Complex, new technologies are inevitably used about as much for negative as for positive ends. Our greatest challenge is not technological; it’s social; it’s our need to regulate our genetic competition.

Every previous definition of the class struggle (gentry vs. commoners, masters vs. slaves and capitalists vs. proletariat) was based upon transitory characteristics (of the classes, their production process or property) and not their essences. Moreover, commentators and even would-be social scientists could not be objective, could not see those essences. Marx, for example, was only 20-30 percent social scientist and 70-80 percent advocate (lawyer) for the Rs. It was heroic of him to take their pro bono case, and they desperately needed a spokesman to answer the social Darwinists; but in the long run, his misrepresentation of advocacy as social science was a weighty and prolonged

fetter upon the latter. The fact that Marx was a brilliant lawyer only made it worse! His arguments were perfectly consistent – internally – but increasingly out of touch with reality as they advanced. For example, by the time Marx got around to having to explain the tendency for the falling average rate of profit, he could only explain it as being due to the declining ratio of variable capital (labor) to fixed capital (all other factors of production) in the production process. This is, of course, the opposite of the obvious truth!

Not only did all previous theories of the class struggle inevitably fall prey to prejudice; but they also couldn't explain why the class struggle is, practically speaking, un-winnable.

What are unchanging and essential to the class struggle are the K and R strategies. Regardless of society's historical stage (the forces and relations of production), those on top with respect to income, wealth and education are always Ks. Those on bottom with respect to the same are always Rs. Ks and Rs mainly create problems in the reproductive sphere and are acutely aware and resentful of each other's excesses. They are two clapping hands. They cause each other. Historical experience suggests that they can only be minimized jointly and simultaneously by maximizing equal opportunity and population control.

The MK and FR extremes are the source of all our hostility and hateful ideologies and the general failure of monogamous marriage (within MK societies) and technology (within FR societies). The MK and FR extremes historically produced dysfunctional monogamy, homophobia and latent homosexuality (Ch. 7). They cause overpopulation, war, revolution, inflation, unemployment, business cycles, the super-exploitation of labor and imperialism.<sup>35</sup> They are at the root of our mental illnesses, torts, criminal acts, actionable liabilities and the vengeance that our "modern" legal remedies provide. (See Holmes on the role of vengeance in the law.) They beget the despair that leads to drug use and the organized crime that feeds upon that despair and cynicism.

Path #3 has been the default and most common path for man because we all vent our frustration and hostility upon the environment. It's a common and defenseless kicking post! Moreover, ever-increasing population results in an ever-greater throughput of resources in our economy, which means ever-greater depletion (at the front end of production), pollution (at its rear end), global warming and the driving to extinction of every species except the few that eat our garbage. More mouths to feed means that more land must be put under plow, and

---

<sup>35</sup> Imperialism has at least three roots: 1) savage society's market price mechanism (wherein R-country goods are undervalued because they are labor-intensive and labor is oversupplied and undervalued), 2) immigration laws that drain R-country brain power and capital and 3) the coercion and corruption of R-governments by K-governments.



trees must be replaced by short-lived food crops that have a small root system that holds less water in the ground. So, the land heats up. The air pressure above the hot land increases until, eventually, the rain clouds don't come over the land but drop their water back upon the sea, causing drought. (*The updated "We the People Treaty Amendment" calls for Earth-encircling, latitudinal bands, every other one being a low-air-pressure **cloud corridor** devoted to forestry and wild-life.*) Periodically and unperceptively, this many-sided attack upon the environment results in the breakdown of a vital ecosystem and social collapse. Most previous, regional civilizations have collapsed, at least in large part, due to eco breakdown. Most importantly, the Doomsday Alliance has always caused societies to fail to see themselves realistically, to fail to acknowledge long-run trends and to change.

Archeologist Joseph Tainter, borrowing a concept from economists, articulated the ongoing, measurable indicator of a civilization's health: the average, marginal productivity of labor. It rises as civilizations ascend and falls as they decline. Marx predicted what amounts to the same: a falling average rate of profit as capitalist society declines. But Marx's explanation for it was upside down owing to his one-sided theory of the class struggle and the (Adam Smith originated but logical) labor theory of value that issues from it. Human labor power can accomplish nothing without the limited lawful forces of nature and resources provided by other species of animals and plants. Our failure to rationally control our population and our displacement of other species within a limited resource environment guarantees the periodic decline of average profits and labor productivity.

International or ethnic war, the traditional escape valve for the Ks, is ever less possible due to the homogenization of culture that trade and electronic telecommunications foster.<sup>36</sup> Instead, breaking points are ever more likely to be reached when the water runs out or ice sheets slide into the sea and food distribution breaks down. Then, as suddenly as Rome or Tula fell, the specter of population collapse will fall upon us. The most discontented and marginal people will riot first, disrupting communications. As the death toll rises and normal environmental, economic and health conditions fail to be restored, fear and panic will spread to other segments of the population. As robbery and other acts of random violence become epidemic, people will lose confidence in government and the currency. The largest hoards of money -- that in normal times control the gun barrels out of which power grows -- will become worthless. Then, even the most well-paid servants, managers and coercive enforcers of the Ks will turn upon

---

<sup>36</sup> Expect the most elite councils and their secret police to covertly instigate national and ethnic wars with false flag operations to eliminate surplus population before social consciousness ripens potential conflict into class conflict. Expect the R counterparts to promote population growth and ecosystem breakdown. Neither side can realistically see itself or what it defaults to.

their arrogant and intransigent masters. The end is a catastrophic population collapse, the fall of civilization, the onset of a dark age and a return to cannibalism. In these collapses, the Rs die in greater numbers, but the hated K class --that doggedly and forcibly maintained an unsustainable and savage status quo-- is exterminated.<sup>37</sup> At these times, as in violent revolutions, their own servants kill them.<sup>38</sup> Our global civilization differs in the details, but K and R politics and the Doomsday Alliance is just as it was at Teotihuacan, Tula, Tenochtitlan and Easter Island.

Prior to the Industrial Revolution, the solar energy stored in *living* plants (wood) and supplied by *living* animals provided our ancestors with almost all their implements and energy. The meager energy surpluses from these *living* processors of solar energy narrowly circumscribed civilizations regionally. These regional civilizations generally collapsed as soon as deforestation, desertification and the depletion of topsoil and water supplies reached critical levels. The discovery and exploitation of fossil fuels, of solar energy stored within the carbon chains of *dead* plants and animals *and mostly created over the 280,000,000 years since the beginning of the Permian period*, has made possible greater exploitation of Earth's mineral wealth, the integration of the global economy and the explosion of the human population. This vast energy source and the integration of the global economy have forestalled the sort of catastrophic population collapse that brought an end to previous, regional civilizations. But oil is ever-harder to find, fueling inflation, provoking imperialist wars and suffocating us. Worse still, global warming caused by burning fossil fuels is causing droughts, flooding, hurricanes of ever-greater force, frequency and range and threatening to send the Antarctic and Greenland ice sheets into the sea. As I said above, expect the [Greenland mountain range of ice](#) to collapse much sooner than any of the experts suggest. It will bring the next Great Flood. I'll argue below that fossil fuel extraction is also the major cause of earthquakes.

***Path #4*** *is the path advocated by the New Social Science of the Peace Love and Progress Party. It is the only path that doesn't lead to long-run suicide for humanity. It is the path that will turn our world into the paradise we dream of. Traversing this path, carrying out the plans of our Party, means minimizing our Fraternal complex by owning up to our prehistory and minimizing the K and R Class Struggle (by maximizing equal opportunity and population control). It also means minimizing the Oedipus complex by inaugurating the Stage II system of*

---

<sup>37</sup> Invasions by a more numerous and barbarian people have also toppled civilizations, but this possibility diminishes as the world integrates.

<sup>38</sup> Recall, for example, from Chapter 35, that Motecuhzoma II was, in his last days, a captive of the Spanish. But his own people stoned him when he appeared on a balcony.

*marriage and child-rearing. To do all this, we need to fully develop one technology that is being suppressed, enhance and implement two that are being largely ignored and develop one fully new technology. See the new system of marriage and child-rearing that our party advocates in our book, Stage II of the Nonviolent Rainbow Revolution. To implement this system, we need to develop Baby-Face-Generating Software and enhance the facial recognition software that already exists. With what we already know about gene sequencing and the human genome, we ought to be able to quickly develop Baby-Face-Generating Software as soon as an enlightened government or wealthy philanthropist is willing to assemble an appropriate team of geneticists and bioinformatics experts and throw a few million dollars at them. In an equal opportunity, population controlled, Stage II (standardized and simplified) family future, this new system will make heterosexuals of all the children, guarantee everyone love with the perfect partner; eliminate incest complexes, divorce, promiscuity, marital infidelity and violent crime; empower women within the family as never before; and make geniuses of all our boys and gifted family leaders of our girls. But minimizing the class struggle, maximizing equal opportunity and population control and enabling everyone that we have now to love is prerequisite for ever attaining Stage II.*

*To feed everyone during the 25-year transition period, we can teach peoples chinampa farming along with all the latest permaculture technologies. (See them on YouTube.com if you are unfamiliar.) We can also develop artificial floating reefs and use them to fish farm the entire ocean. The coral polyps that are the grass and basis for the marine food chain can grow within ferro-concrete sand boxes atop ferro-concrete, hollow domes. We can float them by injecting liquid Styrofoam into the domes and anchor them to the ocean floor with hollow aluminum chains. We could even automate the harvesting of the fish between rows of these boxes by equipping the corners of the boxes with hydraulic arms that raise and lower nets. I conceived of these artificial floating reefs during the 5<sup>th</sup> International Symposium on Zhang Jian (Haimen City, 2009).*

*As soon as we commit ourselves to developing a civilized and sustainable world by minimizing the K and R Class Struggle, we should create layered, 4 km-long, carbon, nanotube wires. Carbon nanotubes conduct electricity and heat 1k times better than copper, and they are thermally stable to 3473° Celsius. Geothermal heat is totally clean, renewable and sufficient to provide for all our present energy needs plus the filtering of the air and the ocean water and many other tasks yet to be conceived.*

At the boundaries of the dozen or so tectonic plates that make up the earth's crust and in spots where the crust is thin and geothermal reservoirs of hot water can be easily created and tapped, geothermal energy is already very profitable. But this is only the Tin Lizzy stage of geothermal energy development. They are

losing most of the energy by bringing the fluid (in this case, hot water) up out of the hole, as drillers are accustomed to doing. The only thing we should be bringing out of the hole is the heat. Because the average heat gradient is above 25° C *per* km, in most places we only need to drill down four km to get to 100° C, the heat required to boil water (more than what's needed for a fluorocarbon in a binary cycle) and flash it at a turbine wheel that turns a copper coil within a magnetic field and generates electricity. The highly conductive, 4 km+ length, layered, carbon-nanotube wires will lose little geothermal heat on the way up and enable us to generate all the electricity we need above ground. Nanotube technology has expanded beyond microelectronic applications but needs to be further up-scaled. Up-scaling and experimentation with ALD (atomic, layered deposition) should enable us to also learn how to weld nanotubes and increase their durability with different insulating materials and crossover links. In fact, a scientist within the field, who doesn't want to be identified, assured me in early 2017 that this has already been accomplished. With enough strategically located geothermal energy plants, we could even drain off the heat that causes earthquakes and volcanoes.

But remember, as I said above, technology is no silver bullet. Even these technologies are morally and environmentally neutral. In and of themselves, cheap food or cheap energy would result in another explosion of the human population like the one that fossil fuels created. This would deprive us of the little bio diversity we still enjoy. Our major problem is not in our stars or our technologies. It's in our selves. It's in our strong ambivalence (mixed emotions) toward one another. It's in the class struggle, the K and R strategies. We cannot have a sustainable, civilized and happy world until we minimize them.

That is why, in earlier editions of this book, I only referred vaguely to a solution to world hunger. I only started describing that technology as of Edition 23 of *Decoding the Deluge* -- after the Vietnamese started deploying my reefs and after a marine biologist gave a vague Ted Talk on the potential of the oceans to solve world hunger.

But why hasn't carbon-nanotube-conducted, geothermal energy already been developed? Nanotubes were invented in 1993, and the social responsibility of most corporations and business executives ends where foreseeable profits begin. Why haven't they already developed it?

To answer this question, ask yourself three others. Can geothermal energy be monopolized? How will its development affect the demand for and the price of oil and coal, and how will these clean, renewable and non-monopolizable energy sources affect arms sales? Obviously, the arms and especially the fossil fuel gangsters, some of the sickest of the sick Big Brothers who are angry and

motivated only by fear will want to retard global progress while it threatens arms sales, fossil fuel consumption and their own profits. We can solve these problems by giving the United Nations Organization exclusive ownership and control of all subterranean minerals (except non-ferrous building materials), all weapons of mass destruction, military grade weapons and their production. We must learn to resolve all our differences with reason and compromise, not violence. The only military on the planet should be an ultra-high-tech, planetary one, under the command of a CUNO that is also equipped with supreme and binding legislative power. More on minerals, below.

If we don't outlaw the burning of fossil fuels soon, we could find ourselves back in the period of the Permian-Triassic extinction, the Great Dying, 250 mya (million years ago), when only ferns could survive in a hot sulfurous atmosphere. Seismic Armageddon results from a series of chain reactions. One involves the creation of methane, which is 84-87 times worse than CO<sub>2</sub>, as a greenhouse gas, during the first 20 years of its release. As Siberian ice melts and arctic waters warm, long frozen animal corpses decompose, releasing [methane gas, CH<sub>4</sub>](#).

Enroute to this climatic holocaust, as we continue to burn fossil fuels, we increasingly create earthquakes and volcanoes. Here's my explanation for them. The heat of Earth's molten rock mantle and nickel core is relatively constant and caused by expansion pressure.<sup>39</sup> That heat needs to disseminate, and crude oil with its high boiling point is like the coolant in your car's radiator. It's ideal for convecting heat. Solids can only conduct the heat between stationary molecules. Remove the oil (we've already removed over a trillion barrels), and part of the crust must liquefy to disseminate heat as the oil was doing. That's why your engine melts if you remove the coolant while the car's running. Still worse is the heating of the oceans. That prevents them from functioning as Earth's radiator.

Our planet needs to be cooler and our love lives hotter. Tobacco, alcohol, drugs and over-eating are no substitutes for adult, sexual love. But savage, MK and FR societies create *six romantic problems* that deny us, especially male-dominated Westerners, marital happiness. Let's consider them.

First, our hostility and lack of respect for genetic competitors makes us disrespectful of the competitor's marriage or romantic relationship.

Second, inequality between the sexes encourages the unequal, less secure sex to marry for security instead of love. This is especially true in the male-dominated, violent West. Dominant western husbands and fathers brainwash their families to accept violence as natural and normal; and western women, with a lesser physical capacity for violence, can never be the equals of men. Within all capitalist countries, gross intergenerational, family differences in income and wealth

---

<sup>39</sup> Mark McCutcheon's, *The Final Theory* is a comprehensive rethinking of physics.

aggravate insecurity and cause rampant prostitution. Prostitution, *whether officially cloaked with a marriage license or not*, degrades both parties and prevents people from finding a suitable partner and marrying for love.

Wealth and income differences only became a social problem by being compounded from generation to generation through inheritance. We need to correct this with the equal opportunity reforms described below and in [\*Stage II of the Nonviolent Rainbow Revolution\*](#).<sup>40</sup>

Third is the missing parent (usually a father). This mostly R strategy problem causes many of us to grow up structurally deficient -- either without a role model (superego nucleus for sons) or without a loving object model (for daughters) and, after sexual maturity, feelings of low self-esteem. A mother's continuous availability (in fact or fantasy), her lack of an adult lover, causes obvious and overt homosexuality in her children. Homosexual people who feel they absolutely must force another person into our over-crowded world, when we are still savage enough to regard procreation as a private right, should form foursomes.

Fourth is psychic impotence. Most of us, who are at all conscious of our incest complexes and don't completely confuse our spouse with a parent or a sibling and who are not rich enough to throw the burden of child-rearing onto employees, become psychically impotent toward our spouse as we become survival partners and associate the spouse with work and pain instead of play and pleasure. The Ks that are rich enough to avoid the sexual misery from psychic impotence tend to be tempted into extra-marital affairs by all the insecure, resentful and unethical opportunists who are after their (the K's) money. Of course, these covert affairs are mostly productive of self-degradation, guilt or heart-ache for all the concerned parties. Divorce, alcoholism, drug-abuse, sadomasochism, heart attack (stress) and other, more overt, forms of suicide are the overt consequences.

Fifth are the psychological dominance of men and the oppression of women in MK society. Western men tend to think they are smarter than women in all matters. The reverse is true with respect to love and marriage. Women must do the choosing, and the West desperately needs laws and customs enabling this. Also, the mother/child psychodrama becomes virtually inoperable in MK society. As I noted above, this is the more satisfying and effective of the two incest psychodramas that love requires. Male domination precludes it.

---

<sup>40</sup> Government can't defy the market, can't command its goals for salary and wage differentials. Nor can it continually tax Peter to pay Paul. But it can tax Peters to improve the community of Pauls if the Pauls don't produce more Pauls and the Peters' children are raised to be happier, smarter and more civilized than their parents.

Sixth and most importantly, the fact that we never love anyone as much as we love (life-long) the face of our opposite-sex parent and the sexuality of our siblings (persons who remain taboo to us) dooms all attempts at exogamous and monogamous marriage. If you doubt the subject (“the fact”) and its relative clause modifier, then you haven’t seen through the First and the Third Masks, which can be very convincing when worn by the most pretentious, latent-homosexual, K scoundrels. If you’ve been hoodwinked by these phonies, you need to ask yourself a question that will open your eyes as soon as you research it. Here’s the question: when are people more likely to die, after their spouse dies, or after their closest-in-age sibling dies?

Modern savage society is especially unfair to homosexual people. First, modern savagery increasingly makes love impossible and begets fatherless, same-sex and multi-sibling families -- the conditions that promote homosexuality.<sup>41</sup> On the other hand and as we’ve shown above, modern savagery’s unlimited genetic competition, especially the savagely-high birth rate, and the ever-increasing pressure for monogamy by default generate tremendous homophobia.

Regardless of their orientations, the Ks, the “successful” savages, aren’t likely to find happiness. Most are either guilty about their inherited and unearned privileges or alienated by the false philosophies that rationalize those privileges and the savagery committed to create them. (Every form of prejudice is just an excuse for being a savage.) The guilt leads to self-loathing; alienation leads to isolation; both lead to unhappiness and, ultimately, suicide. Advertising and the charades of those pretending to be “living the dream” promise a happiness that is always just around the corner. We have only to achieve the right social status or material goal to obtain it. In truth, the brief interludes of newly married life notwithstanding, savage society holds no long-run prospect of happiness, of full material *and emotional* gratification, for anyone.<sup>42</sup> Nobody, rich or poor, has any stake in maintaining savagery, in maintaining K and R, class society.

---

<sup>41</sup> If you don’t understand how fatherless families tend to produce homosexual children, see Freud’s *Leonardo DaVinci: a Study in Psychosexuality*. I can’t explain it any better than he does. Once one understands these two conditions as the causes of homosexual development, one appreciates how the rampant homosexuality, the militarism and the army life of ancient Greece were elements of a positive feedback loop. In Sparta, the constitution was also in that loop. See Xenophon’s “The Constitution of the Spartans,” in vol. 2 of *The Greek Historians*.

<sup>42</sup> Perhaps the most obvious and revealing confirmation of this happiness dictum is the persistent inability of psychoanalysts to relate to their patients as blank screens onto which patients project their fantasies and distortions. Analysis of therapist-patient relationships inevitably reveals *countertransference*, effort by the therapist to have the patient fulfill, at least in fantasies, the therapist’s own sexual or emotional needs. So, if our highest-paid therapists can’t fulfill *their* needs, then who can? See, for example, Langs, especially his Chapter 11. Herodotus apparently knew as much in the 5th century B.C. See his Book I, Chapter 32.

If you won't believe Langs, Herodotus or me when we suggest that modern savagery offers little if any hope for emotional fulfillment and long-run happiness; would you believe our (arguably) greatest song lyricist and poet? The second line of "The Days of Wine and Roses" is in the present tense, the tense for things that happen all the time:

The days of wine and roses  
Laugh and run away  
Like a child at play  
Through a meadowland  
Toward a closing door  
A door marked Never-more  
That wasn't there before.  
-- Johnny Mercer

Is there any common human problem that is *not* rooted in the MK and FR extremes or the Oedipus complex? I can't think of any. Again, we need a social revolution on four fronts: against K (for equal opportunity), against R (for population control), against fundamentalism (for public education about our prehistory and basic psychology) and against homophobia/latent homosexuality (for the LGBt Movement).

We must educate fundamentalists, publicize the simple laws of our psychosexual development and thoroughly win the LGBt rights struggle for the benefit of us all! Educating the traumatized as to basic psychology, prehistory and the meaning of our religions will be easy – once we can do it with television and movies summarizing the New Social Science. But that's easier said than done because the babies and the scoundrels of the Domsday Alliance fight to maintain each other's craziness.

Regarding LGBt, just winning legal rights for homosexual and bisexual people won't encourage them to remove their masks and exercise those rights if homophobia keeps growing due to an ever-greater default to monogamy. That default results from ever-greater differences in wealth, income and opportunity. The LGBt movement is trying to run up a downward speeding escalator. This is one of the most important reasons why a 25-year moratorium on new births is needed. When no one can breed, homosexual folks will have little incentive for wearing the Third Mask. A 25-year moratorium will enable us to eradicate homophobia and all other forms of prejudice, reduce the global population to a manageable level, educate and integrate the peoples, use the Stage II software to provide everyone love with the ideal partner(s) and create equal opportunity.



We have one aspect of religion yet to consider. We traced (in Chapter *Seven*) the basic, historical, species-wide trend for the Fraternal complex. We determined that the transition from pagan to modern religions changed the objects onto which we focus our genetic hostility. Expanding communications and trade forced us to focus our genetic hostility ever less upon our trading partners and ever more upon more distant “others” with whom we remained unfamiliar and (lacking any increases in equal opportunity and population control) upon our near neighbors. The outer boundary where negative projection begins, the outer boundary separating countrymen and trading partners from “aliens” and “enemies” is always set by the limits of our linguistic, communications, travel, immigration and trade capabilities.

In our savage world, wherein national, racial, ethnic and regional prejudices serve to create flimsy “justifications” for preying upon one another, the individual’s fate is still tied to the fate of these groups that identify him and to his status within these groups. To promote both his own and his groups’ status and security, religious wishful thinking requires the individual to believe that his groups are specially blessed or have a preferred relationship with “God” and enjoy “God’s” providence.

National religions, such as Judaism or the pantheism of ancient Egypt, Greece and Rome, assured the believer that his group was blessed. Fully modern religions don’t do this. Christianity, for example, synthesized earlier cults and was born during the Greek and Roman Empires. (See Angus or Appendix F.) Like all modern religions, its historical mission was to unite peoples for trade by appealing to peoples broadly and providing a common identity. But in so doing, modern religions could only minister to the insecurity of the individual. (To be sure, non-believers are generally designated as “unsaved” out-groups and the focus of repressed and projected fraternal hostility; but modern religions welcome all ethnicities, “races” and nations into their fold.)

Consequently, to the extent that humanity is not yet fully integrated, to the extent that linguistic, communications and trade barriers and prejudices still exist; national religions have been formed within the modern era. Buddhist, Moslem and Christian peoples (especially in America, melting pot America that lacks a chauvinism remnant from tribal times) need them. So to do some “atheistic” but only semi-unconscious, socialist nations. Today, as the individual becomes conscious of his dependence upon his nation, he finds -- within the modern nations too -- a national religion, a fully formed cultural narcissism that is socially supplied and ready for his adoption.

Like religion generally, the national religion resorts to defense mechanisms (resistance and repression that denies, projects, rationalizes or reacts with an opposite) to avoid uncomplimentary or painful awareness about our ancestors,

ourselves and of our real contributions to international relations and human evolution. Because American national religions have been formed outside of the ancient times when modern religions were formed, operate beside those religions and derive from repressed unconscious fraternal ambivalence; only an elite few have recognized their religious character, the religious character of American nationalism:

“Nowadays everybody tells us that what we need is more belief, a stronger and deeper and more encompassing faith. A faith in America and in what we are doing. That may be true in the long run. What we need first and now is to disillusion ourselves... We suffer primarily not from our vices or our weaknesses, but from our illusions. We are haunted not by reality, but by those images we have put in place of reality.” –Boorstin: 6

Daniel Boorstin wrote this in nineteen sixty-one. Yet whether it was owing to the vague and unsystematic character of his message, to the psychological defensiveness of the American people or to political suppression, the message developed no further and had no lasting impact. By remaining unconscious, our national religions have become very powerful: isolated within the unconscious, they operate in the dark and are not subject to critical evaluation.

If any of you think that I am exaggerating when I refer to our nationalism as an adjunct to our religion, then you have never really thought about “Thanksgiving.” This American holiday celebrates the special blessings that Americans believe their god has bestowed upon them and their land. Its equivalent in China is National Day. China has national shrines that are inseparable from their national religion: The Forbidden City, Tiananmen Square and the Great Wall.

America’s national religion also has holy shrines that attract pilgrims: Philly’s Constitution Hall, Boston’s Old North Church and -- the holiest of holies – New York’s Statue of Liberty. If you think Miss Liberty’s attractive power is anything less than religious, then I advise you to come to New York during the tourist season. Witness the line of pilgrims who come from all over the world to wait in the lines many blocks long for the boat that will take them to the Statue. Once they are on the statue’s island, there are more lines, even lines for lines, for the stairs that will take them to the top of the Statue. In what way, if any, do these zealots differ from the religious pilgrims who travel to the “Holy Land” to come in direct contact with sacred shrines with which they are already totally familiar?

It was largely national religion and our need to believe that we, as a nation, are specially blessed, that blacked out *Homo erectus americanus*, the Aboriginal African American Species Warriors and the great naturalist, equal to Darwin in stature, who did the most to uncover them. I refer, of course, to Constantine Rafinesque. (See Chapter 14.) Rafinesque's memory has been erased even at the university, Transylvania University, where he once taught! How shameful!

The list of our American articles of faith, the unconscious religious constitution, which expresses the idealized, positive side of our ambivalence toward each other after the negative side has been projected onto foreigners, reads something like this:

I. Our first-generation American ancestors were all good people who got a raw deal somewhere else.

II. George Washington never told a lie and made his money surveying land.

III. The founding fathers (who like all fathers tend to blend with three of the four universal elements of the godhead) were an omniscient company of saints. They framed a constitution that was almost perfect and complete when it was ratified in 1789. In reviewing new laws, our courts need only to determine that they are consistent with the original intentions of these hoary god/fathers.<sup>43</sup>

IV. The U.S. Government is directed by a divine constitution and the ongoing providence of God. We are the chosen people.

V. We are the world's freest people because each of our individual freedoms, 'freedoms to...' do not preclude other 'freedoms from...'

VI. Democracy (majority rule, as opposed to "dollar democracy" or money rule) is possible within a society of Ks and Rs, within a class society that is at war internally. The good, fatherly, American Ks can and do abstain from behaving as Ks must to avoid losing every election and their property. They permit the Rs the education and the freedom of information necessary to know and to organize for their self-interest. They abstain from using their wealth and general elections to ensure the election of individuals who are born liars, individuals who merely pretend to represent majority interests. [Actually, true democracy, *equal political opportunity* (to express and implement one's opinions and ideas) is neither possible nor desirable. Even after being born with equal opportunity, we would not be equal by the time we reached adulthood and of age to participate in the

---

<sup>43</sup> A constitution is a peace treaty between classes, a design for government and set of compromises imposed upon a sub-dominant class by a dominant class using a combination of coercion and persuasion. Usually, the revolutionary Rs are induced to disarm, disband and submit to the rule of the Ks and their money. To date, constitutions have only moderated MK vs. FR conflict; our challenge is to minimize it. My countrymen are fortunate to have a very flexible Constitution that was written in broad terms. It appears to this neophyte lawyer that the Ninth and Fourteenth Amendments can be interpreted to permit the civilizing reforms advocated in this work.

political process. That's why one's vote should be weighted *per* his percentage of the electorate *and his tax contributions*.<sup>44]</sup>

VII. Lone gunmen assassinated our most popular leaders: Abraham Lincoln, John F. Kennedy, Martin Luther King and Robert F. Kennedy. Conspiracy theorists are all paranoids who lack trust in God.

VIII. Our politicians sell "access" without selling ethics or offices.

IX. Our most democratic government only operates internationally in the service of truth and justice -- the American Way!

X. People opposing us are misguided, and their leaders are crazy.

XI. The U.S. Department of State and military is wholly defensive [e. g. the Battleship Maine was not blown up by American police agents; the Lusitania's hull wasn't loaded with arms; a tramp named Hitler wasn't secretly financed, groomed and supported in every way, from Day 1 of his political career, by (1) the Vatican and (2) western bankers and American oil men and industrialists, in return, respectively, for Hitler's pledges to (1) expropriate and exterminate all the Jews and (2) crush the first socialist state (the USSR) by unleashing upon it the angry victims of the Versailles Treaty, which unfairly blamed Germany for WWI and ruinously forced her to pay off all the American loans to France and Britain (For proof that "Der Führer" was an employee of the Vatican and the Anglo-American ruling class, see, for example, Frederic Eger's "The Americans who Funded Hitler, Nazis, German Economic Miracle and WWII," at <https://www.linkedin.com/pulse/americans-who-funded-hitler-nazis-german-economic-miracle-eger/>); Japan wasn't goaded into attacking at Pearl Harbor; the Gulf of Tonkin incident wasn't a hoax; 9/11 wasn't an inside job; *etc.*].

XII. Fascist war criminals, who commit the atrocities necessary to maintain savagery in its present form, are all from *other* countries.<sup>45</sup>

---

<sup>44</sup> In socialist countries, contribution-weighted voting is needed to replace cronyism. Cronyism, interference from higher levels and the need to know someone to become a party member, promotes arbitrariness, opportunism and corruption. Cronyism also stifles change and individual initiative as does the latent homosexuality of most of the people in government. Power, money, secrecy and cronyism all attract latent homosexuals as magnets attract metal filings. In the capitalist west, individualism is over-extolled and empowered at the expense of collective security. Yet it must be encouraged and individual achievement politically honored or monetarily rewarded. Otherwise, it dies; and with it die all new ideas, inventions and discoveries. Socialism must redirect but not stop the advancement of technology.

<sup>45</sup> When human population, hostility and economic stagnation reach intolerable levels, savages support the form of population collapse that favors their own survival. People *do* tend to respond differently in ethnically homogenous countries like Japan and Germany than we do in melting pot America. There, the strategies and rationales for predation more nearly retain the old pagan form: the "inferiors" who are to be eliminated are "foreigners." Generally speaking, revolution is

XIII. African Americans were all brought here on slave ships, *after* the arrival of the white men and needed to be enslaved for over 200 years to learn the superior culture of the Europeans, learning for which many were and all should be thankful.

One needs only to open a history text that is state approved for junior high or high school to expand this list indefinitely, but I think I've captured the major articles of my (USA) national religion. *How about your national religion? The big lie list for your country might not be as long as mine, but shouldn't you articulate it and cleanse your mind of it?*

Although trade continues to create an amalgamated, world culture; to the extent that humanity is still not integrated and not conscious of its K and R savagery, ongoing genetic competition (from the Fraternal complex) is regularly converted into nationalism, much of which is not unlike pagan savagery. Moreover, for their most savage ends, the Ks can always dig up the most isolated, backward and ignorant country bumpkins. *Converting the World to English* (to the English language, another of our Party's books) can help the first union of civilized countries to adopt the world language and eradicate nationalism.

Recall from Chapter 4, that spirits are projected when a person is unconscious of his ambivalence, unable to locate the internal struggle between conflicting emotions and unable to identify the ambivalent object(s). The trend is for the projected "enemy" to become ever more remote but an ever more realistic facsimile for the prehistoric model of our Fraternal ambivalence (*Homo erectus*).

For infants, the first projected enemies are entirely fictional cartoon characters. The villains of fairy tales and folk lore tend to succeed these and are much scarier. Although the earliest of these "enemies" tend to be Oedipal, in England, the bogeyman, for example, remains more obviously and consciously associated with *Homo erectus*. He's still called the "Green Man." He's what remains of A'wade, the Grim Reaper or, in Australia, the [\*Oruncha\*](#).

As the individual develops relationships outside of his family, the Fraternal complex really takes root. As he becomes dependent upon these people outside of his family, his conscious ambivalence toward these groups slowly develops. As he represses the negative side of his ambivalence toward these genetic competitors with whom he must cooperate, he idealizes his nation state and his cultural groups. As he becomes aware of the ambivalence he feels for these groups and before he adopts their historically fashioned prejudices, his displaced enemies and heroes remain within the realm of fiction but become ever more

---

avored by the Rs and imperialist war by the Ks. The Peace Love and Progress Party believes that a global population collapse is inevitable and impending. Our proposed 25-Year Moratorium (on procreation) And Transition Period (to a civilized and sustainable, classless and nationless society) is an unprecedented, controlled population collapse that will minimize the trauma and violence.

realistic. King Kong or Godzilla battle the nation state or Superman or Batman battle life-like criminals. Adults already steeped in the national religion, its stereotypes and versions of past conflicts train the individual's Fraternal complex, "mature" it. One could almost call this the purpose of much of our dramatic *art and popular literature*.<sup>46</sup> The individual attains the penultimate stage of the Fraternal complex when the most ideological, political propaganda of the class with which he identifies becomes his standard fare.

The ultimate stage of the complex involves a shift from politics back to fiction -- now to science fiction. The unconscious mind of the sufferer projects his fraternal hostility (from unrestricted genetic competition) onto aliens who look so much like *Homo erectus* that some of them could virtually be copied and pasted into a physical anthropology textbook. Good examples are "War of the Worlds," "Planet of the Apes," "Independence Day" and "Star Trek."<sup>47</sup> "The Time Machine" (the original H.G. Wells book and not the politically-censored movie) has the super-exploited Rs of the distant future going underground and evolving into creatures that strongly resemble our archaic ancestor. These dramas demonstrate a Fraternal complex corollary to Freud's observation that symptoms ever more closely approach realization of the repressed, unconscious impulse. In the modern world, Big Brother, his secret police and strategic employees maintain political unconsciousness by censoring all information about the ongoing, K and R side of the Fraternal complex. So, Fraternal complex dramas ever more closely approach fictional but conscious repetition of the unconscious *historical model* for the Fraternal complex, the Species War.

For folks wary of the projection game, Hollywood has offered idealized, truly civilized aliens who are free of fraternal conflict. Fans of these aliens (e. g. "ET") vaguely recognize genetic competition as irrational, but Big Brother won't tolerate even a fictional film if there is any trace of real political science in it. For

---

<sup>46</sup> We become unbalanced whenever we repress hostility for one ambivalent person or group and displace it onto another. Oedipal hostility, for example, is readily displaced onto the employer or the capitalist class in general. They become the source of all things evil, and the workers must overthrow them as the brotherhood once overthrew the primordial father. People within K-dominated society who lack class awareness are likely to displace all their repressed fraternal hostility (including that for the K class) onto the militant Rs. Communists become, for them, the focus of all things evil. In this era of electronic global communications, birth control technology, social science and sophisticated political organization; the social responsibility for failing to minimize K and R must fall squarely on the heads of the Ks by the foreseeability doctrine of tort law. It says that the party who was situated to foresee a tragedy and prevent it from happening is liable for the damage when it does happen.

<sup>47</sup> For all I know, aliens may be enroute to us now; but the Fraternal complex creates the obsession with "them." Also, what we now know about gamma ray bursts makes their existence unlikely.

example, Stephen Spielberg's kind and civilized ET says nothing about social relations and laws in his homeland and how they differ from ours.

Science fiction is changing for an additional reason. The days of great sci-fi may be over. In 1997, gamma ray bursts were verified; and in 2009, the "Animal Armageddon" series of television programs started to inform the public about gamma ray bursts. These most powerful forces in the universe can travel for billions of light years, wiping out any and all life in their path. Scientists believe that the Ordovician extinction of 440 mya was caused by the gamma rays from the supernovae explosion of a star 6 or 7 thousand light years away. Only a few creatures at the bottom of the sea survived. For millions of years, life on Earth hung by a thread. Gamma rays are the only likely explanation that reasonable scientists can find for the Fermi paradox (for the fact that the universe is unimaginably vast and yet we aren't finding any signs of extra-terrestrial life). Gamma rays routinely extinguish life wherever it starts to evolve. We're extremely lucky to still be here, and still luckier if, as they are now telling us, Earth is not in the danger zone of any candidates for such explosions. (See footnote 135 of Volume 2.)

Path #4, the path of total revolution that social science recommends, the four-front war, will minimize our Fraternal complexes by virtually eliminating the negative side of our ambivalence toward one another. Path #4 will also accelerate international trade, communication, the integration of the world's people and eradicate every form of prejudice and the ignorance upon which prejudice is based.

As Freud would say, the Fraternal complex requires renunciation and compensation for its minimization. Cannibalism and, in part, the incest complex were so minimized. We renounced the eating of human flesh and our incest impulses and learned to raise other animals and vegetables as food and to accept a sexual substitute for the incestuous objects of desire.

Equal opportunity and population control are the renunciation and compensation necessary to minimize the K and R strategies and resolve our Fraternal complex. (The renunciation for each class is the compensation for the opposite class.) Before I describe the needed reforms in greater detail, let's first determine how our conflict with *Homo erectus* and our conflict with aboriginal peoples should (ideally) have been resolved.

In describing an ideal scenario, I shall say something that each of us should say to ourselves. We must say it for our own benefit, for putting to rest the *Homo erectus* spirits that continue to haunt us. Please say the following with me as part of the process of getting *Homo erectus* out of our heads and churches and into more of our textbooks.

If we had been in the places of our ancestors and known what we know now, we would have made a better effort to prevent the Deluge. What was needed was for *Homo erectus* to acknowledge our superiority and claim to the future and for us to acknowledge his claim to past achievement and his right to live out his days as an honored forbear. More specifically, had we known what we know now, we would have prevented *Homo erectus* from mating with each other, but we would have encouraged them to consort with any *Homo sapiens* who would have them. We would have accorded them honorable places in our communities. (The Germanic *Volsunga Saga* and at least one Irish myth say this symbolically.)

Moreover, we would have tried to undertake then the social reforms to which we commit ourselves now, reforms that will make our civilization sustainable, dynamic and harmonious.

The Gilgamesh Epic's epitaph of Enkidu's final days, Chapter 19, also idealizes the final days of *Homo erectus*. The tale of Enkidu and his temple prostitute/lover says still more: love overlooks insurmountable differences and sees what is shared. Enkidu's changing relationship with the other animals also symbolizes how our perception of him could change.

To avert the genocide of *Homo erectus* and aboriginal peoples, our ancestors needed to control their population. Given the impossibility of population control prior to the development of cheap contraception technology, you could argue that savagery was (is) necessary to naturally select for inherited but inconspicuous differences in men's abilities. I have four responses to that argument:

First, the widespread public belief in genetically determined intelligence that is independent of diet and culture is a ruling class lie that serves to justify grossly unequal educational opportunity for young people. Public acceptance of this pernicious lie was widely fostered by the experiments of Sir Cyril Burt. In a series of papers authored or co-authored between 1912 and 1966, he claimed to have analyzed the I.Q. scores of identical twins. Though his alleged samples varied from 21 to 53 members, average twin IQ correlation was invariably the same: 0.771 for twins living apart (no doubt a hard group to locate) and 0.944 for twins reared together. In other words, *per* Sir Cyril, I.Q. ("intelligence quotient" -- generalized, comparative mental ability) varies from person to person and is mostly a function of nature (genetics) and not nurture (cultural preparation).

Since the early 1970s, scores of friends, colleagues and historians have scrutinized Burt's work. His twin-data ("two large tea chests" that his secretary allegedly destroyed after his death and that William Shockley never saw after



repeated requests) spawns endless speculation. Estimates range from fudged to fabricated. (Cf. Woolridge: 340-358)

Second, the enormous progress that geneticists are making in mapping the human genome and engineering the transplantation of genes should soon render the old nature vs. nurture argument moot. Moreover, the replication and the universal adoption of the rare mutations and engineered genes that prove to be especially advantageous will transform natural selection into bloodless, controlled selection and truly prevent future “deluges” as “rainbows” and “divine covenants” could only pretend to do. As for post-natal defects and injuries, stem cell therapies are accomplishing miracles. Go to the Stem Cell of America website (<http://stemcellofamerica.com/>) to see some of the latest wonders of medical science and note that from 1998 (when stem cells were first isolated in embryos) until only recently, religious crazies were campaigning (globally but especially in the USA) to outlaw stem cell research.

Third, those concerned about any possible adverse effects upon our evolution due to suspending natural selection should consider that, for many years now, the modern welfare state has been developing a status quo that turns natural selection upside down. (A society committed to minimizing K and R, committed to reducing population and alienation, can and should guarantee income for its citizens. But within a savage K and R context, this guarantee can only add to social problems. The western welfare states were actually created to ensure the participation of the workers in imperialist warfare.)

Fourth, scientists estimate that 98.9% of our genes are the same as those of the chimpanzee.<sup>48</sup> Extrapolating from this, one might conclude not only that genes are unrelated to intelligence but also that the genetic difference between the two most genetically diverse people within the normal range would be something like one tenth of one percent. This being so, isn't it wildly absurd for anyone in this overpopulated world to feel compelled to replicate his genes? The procreation instinct was necessary for the survival of all our various ancestral species that lacked the prehensile thumb and the club. But since rising to the top of the food chain and no longer having a natural predator, this unchecked instinct that once served our ancestors so well has posed the greatest threat to man's survival and well-being.

Although it may well have been impossible to control K and R in pre-Species War times, doing so would have been desirable. It would have prevented both the

---

<sup>48</sup> I refer to Sarich and Wilson. See their experimental comparisons of the reactions of different species' albumen to rabbit antibodies and how these reactions compare to the human albumen reaction to the same antibodies.

Species War and the Great Flood, which was (as we'll see in Appendix H) a product of over-population and fierce genetic competition.

Let's consider another ideal scenario, this time to minister to our guilt toward aboriginal peoples. Let's make the following resolution:

We will do with surviving aboriginal peoples what we would have done had we been in the places of our ancestors. We will intermarry with them to learn what we can from them and integrate them into the modern culture.

Couldn't our European forebears have learned much more from aboriginal peoples?<sup>49</sup> Haven't you and I changed our worldviews due to learning from them, especially those who, like the Amerindians, didn't black out their prehistory?

Population control and equal opportunity are mutually *inclusive*. They can only come about through social compromise, and we can only have them in equal amounts. Politics is supposed to be the art of compromise, but the Domsday Alliance (between latent homosexual K scoundrels and religious R babies) is hell-bent on staying the savage course. Irrespective of all their claims to the contrary, for the latent homosexual, K leaders of this alliance that everywhere rules the world and leads civilizations to their doom; *politics is all about preventing change*.

To cite but one example, consider the "We the People Treaty Amendment." It is a marvelous work of linguistic and political art. It proposes a multinational treaty agreement and 28th Amendment to the US Constitution. It comprehensively and concisely describes everything that must be done to civilize and sustain our world and to modernize the US Government. (It virtually rewrites the US Constitution.) In November of 2015, copies of this ten-page document were mailed to the President, everyone on Capitol Hill, the Supreme Court Justices, all fifty state governors, several legislative organizations and every foreign ambassador in Washington D.C. The result: my nobody and know-nothing congressman refused to introduce it; and not a single politician responded in a responsible, proactive manner. Every one of these Big Brothers was too crazy or too stupid to appreciate it. You, Dear Reader, if you've read this far into this work, will appreciate it. Read it on the [Blogs Page](#) of PeaceLoveAndProgressParty.org. It is also contained within two of the fifteen books that are FREE to download on the [Downloads Page](#).

---

<sup>49</sup> Closely read, Cabeza De Vaca's classic account of a Spanish expedition to explore Florida reads like a comedy. The Spaniards' disrespect for and underestimation of the natives prompted the latter to constantly deceive and mislead them.

Whether they are conscious of it or not, the real function of every politician in office today (virtually all of them latent homosexuals), is to thwart change by misdirecting everyone's attention onto the mere symptoms of our problems. For by misdirecting the people's attention onto symptoms and ignoring the underlying (K and R) cause, *they guarantee that nothing will change*. They can suppress one symptom by creating another, but that's not meaningful or productive. They can't even conceive of the solutions to our problems!

The focus on selected symptoms also results from their demagogic appeals to one extreme antagonist or another. Republicans (Tories, Christian Democrats and other conservative groups) appeal to the Ks, promising to maximize military spending, protect foreign investments and minimize spending on social services for the poor. Orthodox Marxists appeal to the Rs and seek to eliminate the K strategy unilaterally. The Democrats (Social Democrats and Laborites in Europe) hypocritically appeal to the Rs for votes and the Ks for the money needed to win general elections (Rs lack both the time and the means to engage in democratic political activity). The Greens appeal to everyone's sense of guilt vis-à-vis the environment, and the National Socialists (overt fascists) are the revivalists of paganism who project all our problems unto foreigners and minorities.

Religions can, at best, only balance the positive and negative emotions of the individual's Fraternal complex. Religions, at best, only hold our schizophrenia in abeyance. Similarly, the very best politicians within savage society only balanced the competing K and R interests without making any effort to reduce the class struggle. The inevitable result is government that is ever bigger and (paradoxically) ever less effective. All the most ponderous productions of both the legislative and judicial branches of government basically just balance symptoms – provide band-aides for the K and R class struggle. Our national constitutions engage in the same balancing of symptoms with none daring to recognize the underlying problem. In the U.S.A., all the very popular lawyer jokes reflect the public scorn for a legal system and a government that -- while they consist of Third Mask men and women and remain "under God" -- are doing an ever-expanding Mexican hat dance around our real problems, around K and R.

In another sense, our failure to minimize the MK and FR extremes is owing to the dialectical nature of change itself over the grand sweep of history. Primitive society was R-dominated and tended to be, especially in the East and in marine societies, female dominated. Within the tribe or clan, equal opportunity and positive human relations generally prevailed (e. g. Polynesia). Yet tribal life stifled individual initiative and creative genius. Economic development and modern religion, especially in western hunting societies, then converted primitive, pagan society into its opposite, into the sophisticated savagery of the "modern" MK world wherein near-neighbor relations increasingly deteriorated, but

individual initiative and the development of society's productive forces were unchained.<sup>50</sup> We simply have not yet woken up to the need to synthesize FR and MK society, the old and the new savagery. We've yet to cull the negatives and cultivate the positives of each.

Again, minimizing K and R means maximizing equal opportunity and population control. Of course, we are speaking globally here. Global population control and global equal opportunity, not just equal opportunity among the Rs but among all people, everywhere. Look at what this means, concretely.

Concretely, *domestic* equal opportunity means adequate food and shelter, a minimal but survivable, guaranteed income and equal opportunity for education and employment. All schools should be tuition-free with admission on a competitive, means-blind basis. All businesses too large to be operated exclusively by family members, businesses with over ten personnel, should be nepotism-free. *Most importantly, equal opportunity means there being a strict limitation on gifts and inheritance.* There should be no limit on the wealth that a man can create and earn or devise to charities and non-profit institutions as he sees fit. But no man should be permitted to guarantee his sole heir that he will thrive without working or out-compete his fellows. I should think that an average, new, 2-bedroom apartment, or the equivalent should be the limit upon what one can inherit or acquire by gift. Any remainder in estate real estate should escheat to the county where it's located. A remainder of securities should escheat to the issuer, and cash remainders should be acquired by the government.

Another set of reforms is needed to create *international* equal opportunity. Most important among these is equal access to resources. All subterranean minerals, except nonferrous building materials, should be owned by an agency of the United Nations Organization that annually auctions extraction rights on a sustainable basis and equitably distributes royalties (mostly to under-developed countries that never had a seat at the mineral banquet). Oil and coal should be the first minerals expropriated. How, you ask, can we ever induce the big oils companies, the power players worldwide, to give their proven oil and coal reserves to CUNO? Answer: as geothermal and other renewable energy forms develop and as the consumers of these dirty fuels are properly taxed, oil and coal will cease to be of value as fuels. Moreover, privately held corporations and

---

<sup>50</sup> Do you recall the cargo cult started by a New Guinea man who preached that God would send the natives a ship full of goods equal to those of the white man if they obeyed his divinations? Some of these cults and the secret *Kivung* organizations that rivaled the fledgling, New Guinea council system were vague and unconscious attempts by the natives to preserve their positive tribal relations. By their own admission, the colonial Australian administration did not understand these phenomena. See McCarthy: 179-183, 229-239.

individuals would gradually lose ownership and control of minerals as the laws limiting inheritance transferred their ownership rights to governments and corporate treasuries respectively.

For our Party, population control, minimizing R, means greatly reducing and controlling the birth rate and continuing to reduce it while every reduction in the birth rate appears to reduce the death rate. What we all want most is to be immortal. If we were immortal, we wouldn't have children at all. In the one virtual and loving family that we ought to be, human reproduction must cease to be a private right and become instead a socially conferred honor (a privilege or a duty).

How a family planning committee, even one that is unbiased and composed of a representative sample of the community, could rationally choose from among applicant couples might presently seem an impossible task. That's because the most economically needed and enviable people are all Ks, but the most loving and likable people are all Rs! *That shouldn't discourage us because these personality differences will be moderated over time as the equal opportunity and population control reforms go into effect, especially during a 25-year, Transitional Global Procreation Moratorium, during which everyone will become able to both love and work. All problems are just symptoms of K and R!*

Minimizing the MK and FR extremes will also serve as one of the two necessary means of eliminating damage from earthquakes. But for the class struggle, we would design and construct our structures only to protect us from the elements --not from each other. In quake-prone areas, we could live and work in inexpensive, lightweight, disassembly-capable and quake-proof geodesic domes made of plastics, rubber, aluminum and cement made with starch instead of aggregates. Buckminster Fuller invented them for a civilized world. Moreover, in an equal opportunity, population-controlled world with marriages based on love, the few, needed children would be raised in their academies (as Plato suggested in *The Republic* almost 2400 years ago) and our inexpensive, multi-one-bedroom-unit, geodesic domes could have shared bathrooms and unattached *communal* kitchens and dining rooms.

Change is dialectical. As we make progress in population control and equal opportunity, we'll begin to rapidly eliminate symptoms and release governmental resources (from defunded and ineffective band-aid programs) for the all-important MK and FR minimizing reforms. During a population-reducing global moratorium on new births, we could also modify or start to eliminate all the products and services marketed by lies and neuroses, products that only make work for unproductive people.

With the gradual increase in international cooperation, military spending can be largely redirected to economic development and trade and immigration barriers can be lowered. We need a free market for goods, resources, labor and -

-of course --ideas. We need a common currency and a consolidated patent office that shortens patent life but better protects rights (in software for open source only).

A classless society with a global government and new and binding international law is also required to effectively and realistically regulate global monopolies. Monopolies should NOT be broken up. That either turns the economic clock backwards or forces successful corporations to organize secret cartels). CUNO will need a Monopolies and Natural Resources Department to regulate both. Monopolized goods and service prices should be pegged so that monopoly returns on investment equal those of a long-term certificate of deposit. In return for submitting to price regulation, monopolies should have the right to buy out any startup deemed indispensable to the monopoly's survival. The Department should arbitrate the terms of acquisition. Monopolies would also be required to fully develop and incorporate into their product the technologies so acquired and to keep their products in compliance with W3C and WTO standards. With effective monopoly regulation, equal opportunity and population control, no one would need to fear capital concentration; and society's productive forces could be most rapidly and *harmlessly* expanded.

It appears to this layman that *Norplants* are an inexpensive, effective, reversible and (for the vast majority of women) safe means of birth control.<sup>51</sup> The new, miniature, T-shaped IUDs are said to be even more effective and longer-lasting. For couples that have already given birth, vasectomy or post-delivery sterilization should be mandatory. Nobody needs to reproduce his genes. We're all too much alike for that. Nobody needs to fulfill American Dreams. What everyone needs is equal opportunity, the basics (food, education, decent housing and adequate income) and love.

As we now know, from the revolutionary new medicine of Dr. Ryke Geerd Hamer, the cost of medical care and the incidence of disease should dwindle to almost zero as we rid the world of traumatization from our savagery, our betrayals and violence.

Love is the magic ingredient needed to bring all these grandiose, civilizing reforms to fruition, the incentive needed to resolve all our incompatibilities and possibly do it in time to avert another population collapse and dark age. As Cuban poet José Martí said, "Only love constructs." We can and must reconstruct our societies to make love not only possible but also probable for everyone. Cynics

---

<sup>51</sup> Norplant is the commercial name for six small silicon tubes that slowly release progestin. They are inserted by a doctor in a woman's upper, under arm and provide birth control protection for up to five years.

who think I'm being "idealistic" should consider the economic aspect. When we can't love and marry the right person, we become resentful and uncooperative. Gifts dwindle. Barter disappears. We become obsessed with money, stingy in spending, overly demanding in serving. Instead of society realizing its potentials for specialization, division of labor and trade, each person becomes a plantation economy. Foreign trade, the alternative to war, is especially ruinous for a relatively loveless society because its goods, increasingly overpriced at every stage of production, can't compete with the goods of more civilized peoples. We've already discussed the *six* romantic problems that make lasting love and happy marriage impossible in savage society. The corrections to these problems constitute a socialist revolution. We've also discussed the computer face matching needed to make love probable for everyone.

To quickly integrate the peoples, we could borrow a custom from the Incas, the Mae Enga, the Koories and other "primitive" peoples and implement it on a global scale. Notice that the FR/MK differences that we've been analyzing are roughly a continuum coincident with man's principal migratory routes with the Near East in the middle and China and the United States at the traditional FR and MK ends respectively. To moderate all our extremes, integrate our societies, guarantee performance of our disarmament and other strategic agreements, and accelerate the adoption of the trade and port language (English) as the world's language, we need only to intermarry peoples who occupy opposite positions on this continuum.<sup>52</sup> The first databases of single men and single women can be compiled and managed to encourage each woman to choose her Mr. Right from the population opposite her own on this east-west continuum. During the 25-year Moratorium and Transition Period, we should combine the many state and national databases into one worldwide database of single people. The replacement of clan and tribal intermarriage as foreign policy tools and security measures by standing militaries and the intermarriage of "nobility and gods" was a gigantic step backwards. In prehistoric times, this tragedy may have been necessitated by our ancestors' widespread geographic dispersion, their lack of communications, and their lack of psychological and sociological knowledge. But those limitations are no longer applicable.

It should be obvious to everyone that *the most efficient, dynamic and happy society is the one that maximizes participation and cooperation, that harnesses*

---

<sup>52</sup> In both love and international relations, security and trust must be mutual to exist at all. Unilateral attempts to obtain an advantage cause the other party or parties to be insecure. This is a form of suffering for which he, she or they will inevitably retaliate. In the long run and throughout history, unilateral arms buildups and intrusive intelligence gathering have had the opposite of the desired consequences.

*the energy and brainpower of all the people and that allows everyone to realize their potentials for both love and work.*

The K and R reforms will also facilitate the replacement of general elections with contribution-weighted, hierarchical elections; <sup>53</sup> the replacement of land ownership with socialist land management; the merger of legislative and executive governmental functions; and the conversion of military forces into national emergency and reconstruction forces. While I know my countrymen, the born-communist– internationalists of melting pot America, the future United Socialist States of America, better than any of my friends in China know them; I readily concede that I don't know one tenth as much about building socialism as they do. The westerners of capitalist countries need the intermarriage program (outlined above) to obtain help with the building of family life and socialism as much as easterners need it to develop technology and learn English.

As for anyone who insists that a sustainable, MK and FR-minimized world will never happen, as to any self-satisfied elites too stupid to compromise, I perceive you in four dimensions. We are seated around a campfire minus 11,000 years -- anywhere in the world. I have just said, "You know Joe, to make our world civilized, we've got to stop eating each other." You have responded, "Never Dave -- it's my right to eat other people." A century ago, you would have insisted upon your rights as a slaveholder too! You, Sir, speak for an ultra-insane minority, and you speak for savagery.

I'm speaking for the Topiltzin Quetzalcoatl of history. Recall, from Chapter 35, that the Aztecs were, at first, convinced that Cortés was the god Topiltzin Quetzalcoatl. Topiltzin Quetzalcoatl was becoming the model for a reform movement among progressive Mesoamericans and merchants, a movement that would have abolished cannibalism, modernized religion and rapidly promoted trade and the expansion of Mesoamerican productive forces. In part, this transition was slow to develop because many did not know to (or refused to) continually eat rice and beans in combination to obtain the essential amino acids needed for protein. It also failed because of their inordinate need for population control and the lack of firearms, automobiles and other savage alternatives to heart-removal and cannibalism as a means of controlling population. As we noted, Quetzalcoatl was also not made of all the right stuff. But in the final analysis, the Quetzalcoatl failed and Mesoamerican development was stuck in time because of the Domsday Alliance between latent homosexual, K scoundrels (Motecuhzoma II, *et al.*) and religious Rs. As always and everywhere, this alliance was hell-bent on preventing change and refused to see the necessity of

---

<sup>53</sup> See [\*Just Say No to Latent Homosexual Crusades\*](#) for more about contribution-weighted voting.



rising to a higher level of cooperation and civility. Thirty years after the conquest, the Zapotec Indians tried to restore indigenous Mexican culture and independence in the name of Quetzalcoatl, but their hour had been lost.

Like the Aztecs of old, we are globally approaching a great crossroads. Class society is at the end of its tether. The birth of a new and better world, a civilized, sustainable, classless, and nationless world is inevitable. The only question is, how protracted, painful and violent will that birth be?

Technology *is* also bringing us to a Rubicon of its own making. Engineered genetic improvements will be irresistible to those who can afford them for their offspring. Market-forces-determination of the recipients is a slippery slope that will lead inevitably to reproductive incompatibility, speciation and another species war. The alternative, governmental subsidization and universal adoption of genetically-engineered improvements will increase and highlight our genetic equality and intensify demand for socio-economic equal opportunity and the minimization of the class struggle.

Our hour is near *Señor*. Take the wrong path and we stand to lose more than our indigenous cultures and independence. Another population collapse and possibly all biological life on Earth is at stake.

The paths that I've articulated are the only possible ones : (1) the One-Man-Economy (a most unlikely K victory in the class struggle and, ultimately, a raccoon world), (2) Pan-Bangladesh (the equally unlikely and universally miserable R victory in the class struggle or, equally unlikely, Pan-[national socialist] China), (3) an endless series of unpredictable K and R reversals with the intermittent rise and fall of national socialist states and ecosystem collapses triggering dark ages, anarchy and cannibalism (4) the classless and nationless, socialist society, the one virtual and loving family that social science prescribes.

In the long run and practically speaking, only numbers 3 and 4 are possible. Number 3 also means ultimate suicide, not only for humanity but all life on Earth because our constant fighting and the ever-increasing power of our technologies take an ever-increasing toll upon Earth's carrying capacity.

As Frederick Huxley once noted, the test by which all our actions must be judged moral or immoral is, "How does the action affect the preservation and evolution of our species?" The Peace Love and Progress Party is dedicated to maximizing the pace of human cooperation, integration, learning and evolution. This is the path, Path #4 above, that social science prescribes. It is the only moral choice because all the alternatives lead to the extinction of our species and amount to *Homo sapien* suicide.

Only by resolving our Fraternal Complex, by minimizing the MK and FR extremes can we heal ourselves, take civilization off its suicide track and become the one great human family that geneticists say we truly are. Isn't this the one

great message to which all our modern religions pay lip service? Isn't this what communism really means?<sup>54</sup> Isn't this what the ancestors and relatives that most people are unconsciously worshiping, the Species War gods, would have wanted for us?

As we overcome our hostility toward one another and create a classless and nationless society wherein happy marriages and productive employment are the norms, we will overcome our estrangement from nature and heal our environment. The environment is the defenseless kicking post upon which we vent our impotent hostility for one another.

To understand what I mean by estrangement from nature, visualize the world before 200,000 years BP and the birth of our species. Visualize the world of 4 billion years BP before life *per se*. Out of the sulfurous lava of Pangaea or a massive ice-encapsulated comet, amino acids appeared. Perhaps it was another billion years and the right combination of accidents before these acids fused together in just the right way to form protein and the first living, self-dividing cell. It was probably a cell without a nucleus. It may have been several cells. But out of these few or this one dividing cell -- all living things evolved:

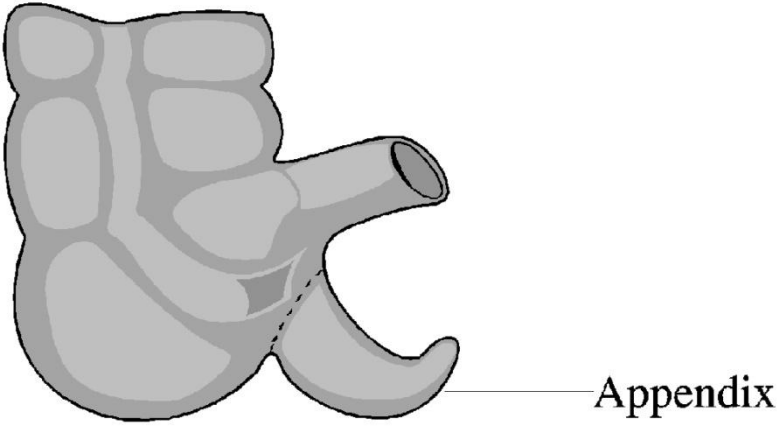
In the beginning, Eurynome rose naked from chaos...  
She laid the universal egg...  
Out tumbled...the sun, moon, planets, stars,  
The earth with its mountains and rivers,  
Its trees, herbs, and living creatures.

We have come too far to give up now. We can't undo wrongs done to the dead gods, but we can repair relations with the living gods (each other). We can learn to live as one loving human family and as one bio-family that respects every surviving species. Our primitive ancestors couldn't pledge this, but they understood this in their hearts. We can recapture their nobility and accomplish all the best of their dreams. Change will start slowly among the thoughtful minority, but this goal is the only reasonable one for humanity and must triumph.

---

<sup>54</sup> Marx's communism-defining dictum, "From each according to his abilities, to each according to his needs," can only be applied within a loving family.

## APPENDICES



## A. The Roman Saturnalia: A Second Sin Rite

*The lips of a strange woman drop honey, and her mouth is smoother than oil; but her end is bitter as wormwood, sharp as a two-edged sword. -- Proverbs: 5, 3-*

*Carnival was everywhere a condensation of Aztec-style feast days for individual gods.* The annual carnivals that are still celebrated in western Europe, New Orleans and Rio de Janeiro are remnant of these pagan rites that tended to begin with the new year, with the return of the sun (in Egypt with the receding of the Nile flood waters). See Figures [70d](#) and [70e](#) (below).

In Rome, carnival retained the name of the feast day for the principal god, Saturn. Saturn was the early Roman father of the gods. He was the Roman counterpart of the Greek god Cronus. His feast day, and ultimately the Roman carnival, was known as the *Saturnalia*. In historical times, he was eclipsed by Jupiter for the same reasons that Odin was eclipsed by Thor, Cronus by Zeus, Quetzalcoatl by Tezcatlipocha and Viracocha by Manco Capac. As humanity gained abilities and confidence, the victors of the Species War gained in stature relative to their *Homo erectus* counterparts.



More importantly, the *Homo erectus* gods, the presumed bringers of the Flood and punishers of men, became too scary for most peoples to think about.

Contrary to the gaiety of modern carnival, Saturn's earliest alters, "are said to have been stained with the blood of human victims, for whom a more merciful age later substituted effigies. Ancient writers also all but forgot the gloomy side of the Saturnalia, concentrating instead on the feasting and revelry that lasted *seven days*" (Frazer: 678). Working in the service of trade and expanding communications, modern religions helped their devotees, "modern men," to black out the second sin (the Species War) and the first sin (the Primal Deed) too.

You, on the other hand, should have no trouble spotting the Species War as the motivator of the rites that James Frazer will now describe for us. They are almost identical to many of the Aztec rites that we described in Chapter 35. The

feasts of the gods commemorated the killing of *Homo erecti* and became festive to the extent that *Homo erecti* were believed to have been co-opted into becoming the guarantors of fertility or, later, were banished into unconscious minds. Clearly, the dramatic climax of the Saturnalia celebrated the elimination of *Homo erectus* by killing the actor in the role of Saturn, the Titan chief.

Yet, as I've insisted, the prehistoric aspect of the Fraternal Complex, the Second Sin, became closely associated with ongoing fraternal conflict. The Fraternal Complex became closely associated with the Oedipal Complex --the positive side of all the ambivalent objects of both condensing into "God" and negative sides of the same becoming the "Devil." Consider for instance, the fear of slave rebellion (ongoing fraternal conflict) suggested by another aspect of the Saturnalia:

"But no feature of the festival is more remarkable; nothing in it seems to have struck the ancients themselves more, than the license granted to slaves at this time. The distinction between the free and the servile classes was temporarily abolished. The slave might rail at his master, intoxicate himself like his betters, sit down at table with them, and not even a word of reproof would be administered to him for conduct that at any other season might have been punished with stripes, imprisonment or death. Nay, more, masters actually changed places with their slaves and waited on them at table." --Frazer: 676

The above is a view of the Saturnalia as celebrated among the patricians at Rome, whose most primitive traditions had been compromised by perhaps a thousand years of "civilization." We'll get a glimpse of what the earliest Saturnalias must have been like momentarily.

Looking closely at the above ritual, one might interpret the slaves as sons and the slave-master as the primal father; but that's stretching things. Master and slave are genetic competitors. The master-slave relationship is a much better metaphor for *Homo erectus*-*Homo sapiens* relations before the Deluge or for *Homo sapiens*-*Homo erectus* relations after the Deluge. In all cases, master and slave would have been of different families.

Yet in some myths, such as the "The Dethronement of



Cronus,” Chapter 25, this test for categorizing the myth or ritual appears to break down because all the actors are said to be of the same family. But in these Species War myths, the common family referred to is the family of man (*Homo*). Zeus, Hades and Poseidon are “sons of Cronus” only in so far as *Homo sapiens* is the son of *Homo erectus*.

Making it still harder to separate the first from the second sin in myths and rituals is the tendency of both to refer to sexual conflict. Many of the Deluge myths suggest that *Homo erectus* dominated our earliest *Homo sapiens* ancestors sexually. For example: “they took for their wives as many of them as they chose” (Genesis 6:2). In such cases, the correct interpretation requires a close inspection of the setting within which the myth or rite appears. It requires one to search preceding and succeeding accounts for evidence. *The many similarities between first and second sin myths and rituals and the general difficulty in distinguishing between the two explains--far better than any of the particular evidence--why the five universal and ambivalent elements of the godhead were so easily amalgamated into just “God” and “Devil.”*

Now, here’s the rite that describes the early, rude core and dramatic climax of the Saturnalia. Like the master-slave rites above, it decodes to reveal the Fraternal Complex. The relations depicted are between Saturn and the population surrounding him -- not Saturn and his immediate family. The rite concerns the prehistoric aspect of the complex. It is the totality of *Homo erectus-Homo sapiens* relations through and including the Species War that this rite is commemorating. You will probably be surprised at how very similar this rite is to all the grisly Aztec rites wherein personators of gods were feasted, celebrated and licensed to indulge their every impulse with everyone before being slain.

Be informed also that the account of this rite that Frazer is about to describe for us derived from reliable eyewitnesses. Modern persons witnessed this rite that was celebrated by the rude peasants in the Roman army who were stationed on the Danube during the reigns of Maximian and Diocletian. The celebrants were peasants who, as late as the fourth century A.D., were still little touched by modernity. Their ritual clearly reenacted the sexual enslavement of countless *Homo sapiens* prior to the Species War and the elimination of their oppressors during the Species War. Once you understand the rite as the compressed and compulsive repetition of millions of these violent events before and at the Paleolithic boundary, then the violence of the rite cannot be exaggerated.

“According to these narratives, that have all the appearance of being authentic, and of which the longest is probably based on official documents, the Roman soldiers at Durostorum in Lower Moesia

celebrated the Saturnalia year by year in the following manner. Thirty days before the festival they chose by lot from amongst themselves a young and handsome man, who was then clothed in royal attire to resemble Saturn. Thus arrayed and attended by a multitude of soldiers, he went about in public with full license to indulge his passions and to taste of every pleasure, however base and shameful. But if the reign was merry, it was short and ended tragically; for when the thirty days were up and the festival of Saturn had come, he cut his own throat on the altar of the god whom he personated.” --Frazer: 677

The Species War veterans who first devised these rituals would have been fully conscious of what they were representing. These were traumata that the original celebrants *could not permit themselves to forget*. They needed the support of the dead *Homo erectus*, the (good) “gods,” to protect them from “the *Homo erecti* still at large,” the “demons,” “giants,” *etc.*

In its latter days, this ritual would have sent a message like the Biblical quotation at the top of this chapter, to ongoing genetic competitors. It was sent by the peasants who were among the last Europeans to reluctantly enter the monetary economy and its homogenized commercial culture. It is a culture for which modern religion articulated the Golden Rule and extended it to all the faithful and every sphere of life *except* the most important one, the sphere of our reproductive competition. Perhaps that’s why these small farmers, preoccupied as always with reproduction, would have perceived that *the justice system of class and imperialist societies has never (and will never) treat people equally*. They probably intended this vigilante message not for *Homo erectus* but for the K class of local landlords, fledgling bourgeoisie and their henchmen that were inclined to sexually corrupt, exploit and oppress their socio-economic inferiors.

## B. Old Wine – Australian Bottles

*All myths have the same origin; and all run parallel up to a certain point, which may be taken as the point to which the least developed people have risen. -- Jeremiah Curtin, 1890: 27*

At first glance, the aboriginal Australians might appear different from all other peoples we've studied. Cultural anthropologists are still looking at them as if they dropped in from another planet. Yet I shall show you that, as the Curtin quote at the top of the page suggests, the Aborigines are very much as our ancestors must have been after the Species War. The myths and rituals of both groups would have been very similar prior to those of modern peoples becoming embellished. We have failed to understand them only because we have failed to understand our own ancestors and our own prehistory.

We'll rely mostly on three sources. Spencer and Gillen, the authors of our principal resource, were among the first Europeans to encounter the Arunta of Central Australia (circa 1880). Our main resource for South-eastern Australia, Massola, provides us with accounts that were recorded circa 1900. These Aborigines of the southeast had already been in contact with the whites for over a hundred years, but many of their myths and rituals were recorded intact. Our last major source for this chapter, *Australian Dreaming*, has been compiled in relatively recent times. The myths in it are more fragmented, but the work is well organized and illustrated and contains material from every part of Australia. Even this latest work, and especially its New South Wales myth that follows, portrays a "deluge" that swept over Australia in a fashion much like our "Provisional Scenario" of Chapter 11.

"One time all the land in the world was joined up in one big country. Then a big flood came and the world was covered. As the water began to go down, the streams and currents of water divided the land up into islands. There were some people left on one of these islands... [T]hese people, including a little boy and his brother-in-law, *Ngudgeegullum*, wanted to cross over to Australia. The little boy blew into the intestines of a koala bear until [t]hey began to curve over the sky and make a bridge. *Ngudgeegullum*, the brother-in-law, went first and the little boy followed him...

When all the people landed on the beach at Middle Head -- that's where the bridge ended when it went across the sky -- *Ngudgeegullum* cut it off with his stone tomahawk. "Now," he said, "you can float



away. I don't want to see you anymore. Now you can turn into a rainbow." So, the bridge turned into a rainbow and floated away...

"Now," said *Ngudgeegullum* to the little boy, "you must turn into the koala and I must turn into the native cat..." Then all those people who landed...split up into different tribes. They went to different rivers. That's why the tribes talk different languages all over Australia." --*Australian Dreaming*: 28.

Notice how the first four sentences very accurately describe how the Great Flood would have affected the topography of the archipelago!

Although the bow and arrow appears to be as taboo to the Aborigines as to any other people, here it pops up again in the symbol of the rainbow, a rainbow that enables the entry into Australia and is then made to disappear. Be assured that this rainbow has the usual meaning. *Wanambi* and other "rainbow serpents" are everywhere and rise into the air as rainbows when they intend to kill someone (*Australian Dreaming*: 34, 44-45-)!

This myth is extremely realistic. We will take a very close look at it because I have learned over the 37 years that this book has been developing that the voices of our ancestors, though grossly distorted, are distorted in recognizable ways that are much easier to decipher than the more sophisticated lies and cover-ups of modern men.

For years I neglected to update this Australian chapter because I naively believed the conclusions of official archeology. For Australia, the most notable of these is the claim that, "*Homo erectus* remains have never been found in Australia." Although fossil leaks to the contrary are turning into a torrent, that sentence still appears verbatim at <http://australianmuseum.net.au/the-spread-of-people-to-Australia> ! Australians are so unrealistic as to be unable to distinguish between a *Homo sapiens*, a *Homo erectus* and a hybrid skull!

It has been eight years since I last updated this chapter and consulted official Australian archeology. Judging by the above website, they have improved but slightly in the last eight years. Any of you readers who have closely read the preceding chapters of this work and visit the above web address will find the speculations and denials of Australian archeologists shockingly inaccurate, comically so. It seems that wishful thinking and speculation knows no bounds among Big Brother's archeologists. They seem to have finally abandoned the idiotic "multi-regional" evolution model for *Homo sapiens*. Mountains of evidence have compelled them to finally admit that,

“The broad consensus now is that all modern humans are descended from an African population of *Homo sapiens* that migrated around the world but bred with local archaic populations as they did so.” (op. cit.)

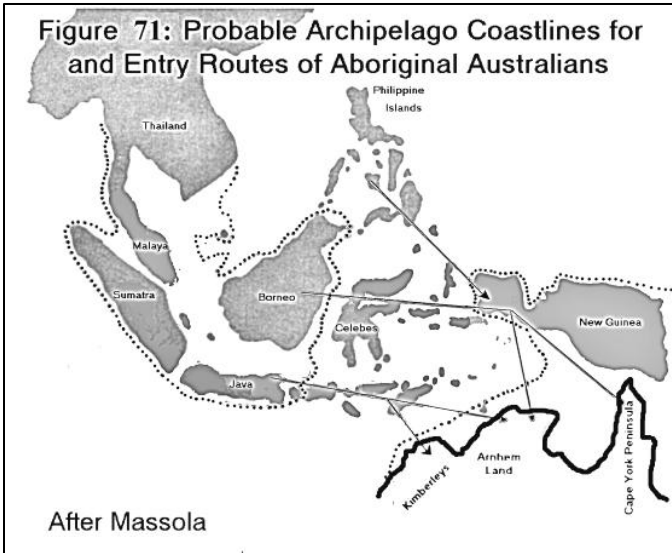
The last verb phrase assures us that this “consensus” still consists mostly of crazy Christians. Their next paragraph expands upon this gem of wishful thinking:

“The ‘Assimilation’ model places greater emphasis on inter-breeding, claiming that some *Homo sapiens* traits evolved in Africa, but many new traits evolved through interbreeding with other archaic populations outside of Africa.” (op. cit.)

If you’ve read this far in this work, you know how idiotic that statement is. Further down, in the same article, there’s more nonsense about “Denisovans.” The “Denisovan” cult, in other places on the web, is showing skulls that are clearly *Homo erectus* and claiming them to be “Denisovan.” Such claims are so obviously false and stupid that you have to wonder if they are made in good faith. One thing is certain: police agents, latent homosexuals and religious believers should NOT be permitted to teach archeology or waste taxpayer money by studying it at publicly-funded institutions.

Don’t be the idiot that I was for 30 years! Don’t take them at their word. Google “Kow Swamp skulls” and see for yourself! Many of these skulls are *Homo erectus*. Even those that are only *Homo sapiens* but deformed to look *Homo erectus* tell us what we concluded about head-binders in Chapter 24: they were people that had to be familiar with *Homo erectus* because they were trying to make their babies look like him. Analysis of the Aboriginal Australians’ mythology has always told us the same about them. Let’s get back to that all-important mythology.

We will discover, in Appendix H, that the Great Flood came circa 14,634 BPE, before the present era, before 2000 AD. Just prior to the Flood, the ocean level was about 300 feet lower than it is now. Between 22 and 30 kya, the ocean level would have been 400-350 feet lower than it is now. (See Figure 10b.) Four hundred feet lower is the usual estimate for the Last Glacial Maximum at 22 kya. Australian paleontologists are saying that even at the LGM, 90 km of sea existed



between Sahul and Timor (between then-connected Australia and New Guinea on the east and Timor, the closest part of the archipelago, on the west). See Figure 71. This claim makes it seem unlikely that *Homo erectus* could have made a bamboo raft sea-worthy enough for the journey. *But think again. How can they possibly know that between now and the LGM and Great Flood,*

*an isthmus wasn't breached and the increasingly-strong-Holocene-equatorial current and the torrential Flood waters didn't sweep away millennia of sediment and greatly deepen the trench? Or that the floor elevation didn't change due to changes in tectonic pressure? Official academia's assumptions are based upon the neophobia of Big Brother in general and upon the fear of Homo erectus in particular by the religious neurotics (literal believers) who want to believe that "God" is from another world, in which case "He" certainly can't be traceable in the ground beneath us.*

The ancestral authors of the above myth are contradicting the modern "experts" in their first three sentences: "One time all the land in the world was joined up in one big country. Then a big flood came and the world was covered. As the water began to go down, the streams and currents of water divided the land up into islands." Whom, Dear Reader, are you going to believe? Our Paleolithic aboriginal ancestors? Or the latent homosexual Big Brothers? Place your bets now because by the end of this chapter, that question will have become rhetorical.

*I will tell you now, at the top, that the most primitive rock painting and all the myths and rituals that we will analyze, in this chapter, support these primitive ancestors and contradict the modern "experts." The above myth appears to be realistic and to accord with all the best mythology we've seen from around the world in both substance and form. Note, as another example, how the last three sentences of the myth constitute the Aboriginal Australians' version of "The Tower of Babel" or the "Glooskap" myths: only after they drove the Homo erecti all the way across the continent and either exterminated or subdued the last of*

them did most people feel secure enough to separate from the main tribe and go their separate ways.

The present, official archaeology (academia's most prestigious journals and luminaries) admits only that *Homo erectus* got as far as the southeastern corner of Sundaland, with only the last, permanent water barrier of Wallacea separating him from Australia (Sahul) (Rhys Jones in Mellars and Stringer). Rhys Jones, an archaeologist from the National University in Canberra, has been pushing back the dates for *Homo sapiens* in Australia and currently puts the first arrivals at 60,000 BPE. (Johanson, Johanson and Edgar: 307). The above-cited article now turns the date for modern humans back to 48-50 kya. The date hardly matters because what follows will leave us with no doubt as to what they did and what happened. The big tide of immigrants [*H the bow and arrow armed, Species War victors*] appears to have come slightly before 30,000 BPE. (Cf. *Australian Dreamtime*: 14-.)

That second date is very important because it tells us that the Aboriginal Australians completed their chapter of the Species War and settled the whole of the continent long before the Great Flood of 14,634 years BPE. Like the Amerindians, they were relatively unaffected by the Great Flood and able to retain (not black out) their prehistory. That explains why it was so difficult for them, as it was for the Amerindians, to accept modern religion. They saw right through it.

Now take another close look at the aboriginal myth above. "The little boy" and "his brother-in-law [*H an object of extreme ambivalence*], *Ngudgeegullum*" and "all the people" "walked across the bridge" [*H fought the Species War that bridged Homo erectus' world with Homo sapiens' world*] "all the way to Middle Head." *Middle Head is one of the headlands of Sydney Harbor! It can't get any clearer than this! Our Australian ancestors are telling us that they fought Homo erectus all the way across the continent, subduing or eliminating the last of them on the other, eastern side, where the bridge terminated, where the Southeast Asian Species War ended, where the last of the sovereign and belligerent Homo erectus spirits flew, with their ashes, into the sky, became the gods (or "rainbow serpents") and established the rainbow as God's bow, His promise of peace on Earth. All the mythology that we'll analyze below supports this conclusion.*

These "flood" and totem symbols are by now all very familiar to us. But in Australia, the Deluge and to a lesser extent-the primal deed left their impress in the form of rituals that consumed virtually the entire lives of the people! Is it any wonder that, like the aboriginal people who were earlier dispossessed of the Americas, the Native Australians have had great difficulty assimilating with and competing with Whites who disparage their religion? Even if they had wanted to, the Whites were unable to understand the Aborigines well enough to facilitate

their assimilation. They *have* understood the Aborigines as “an unchanged people in an unchanging environment.” (Massola: 105) They *do* appreciate the fact that, lacking the rudiments of agriculture, the Aborigines remained a nomadic and Stone Age people:

“To survive in this [*H arid*] country they had to remain nomadic hunters and food-gatherers: the first steps toward civilization, which include permanent settlement and the tilling of land, were not possible, and therefore the making of pottery and other awkward-to-carry equipment for the storage of surplus seeds was neither warranted nor practicable.” --Massola: 3

Europeans recognize the Native Australians as a people frozen in time; but it is precisely these earlier times, the first and second sin times, the basic stuff of all religions, that have not been understood. Whenever it becomes uncensored and widely published, this work should change that. Let’s examine the data.

Literal proof that the Arunta and other aboriginal tribes were unchanged for over 30,000-40,000 years is provided by their own view of history. They claim to recognize only two historical periods: the present period and the “Dream-time” or *Alcheringa* (sometimes spelled *Altjeringa*). However, I’ll show you that *Alcheringa* and “Dream-time” are not entirely synonymous. *Alcheringa* more narrowly refers to the period before the fiery disposal of *Homo erectus* and before the adoption of the current “churingas.” Yes, *churingas* are stone or wooden memorabilia of the Species War that symbolize *Homo erectus* corpses.

Of course, this date range and their worldview suggest the usual Deluge scenario: the major migration of 30+ kya was of bow and arrow armed warriors, who thrived during the depths of the Ice Age at *Homo erectus*’ expense. Between Ur and Australia, they would have become most professional at doing what they did best – killing *Homo erectus*.

Before proceeding, it is necessary to credit Baldwin Spencer and F.J. Gillen, the authors of the massive two-volume work that will be our principal resource. This work, *The Native Tribes of Central Australia*, is one of the great classics of anthropology. Both men became full-fledged members of the Arunta tribe. Gillen spent 20 years among them as the government sub-protector of the Aborigines of Alice Springs, South Australia. Spencer was a professor of biology at the University of Melbourne before taking up his research of the Arunta and meeting Gillen. Their two-volume work is still the best source for virtually everything about the Arunta (the present work notwithstanding). Our procedure will be to interpret the rituals of their Volume I.

The rituals not corresponding to the original sin and the murder of the primordial fathers (as described by Freud in *Totem and Taboo*) are the *impichiumas* (totem ceremonies consciously intended to multiply the totem food) and the better part of the initiation rites (*engwuras*). These have confounded anthropologists right up to the present day. Yet however strange and extra-terrestrial these ceremonies may seem, they simply respond to a prehistory that seems to have been universal.

In addition to the strength and simplicity of their traditions, perhaps the most peculiar thing about the aboriginal tradition is the almost complete absence of explicit references to the bow and arrow. Of course, we've already seen, at the top of this chapter, what amounts to the best possible proof that they had it and used it in the usual way -- against *Homo erectus*. They abolished the second sin weapon in a reaction formation to Deluge guilt. As

Appendix E will show, such reaction formations were universal and shaped the literature and attitudes of the "heroic age" (late Bronze and Iron Age). Oceania people offer more subtle evidence of the bow's role. Their carpenters (whose prototypes would have been bow makers) are virtually as sacred as priests. In central Polynesia, the two vocations share the same name: *tohunga*, "man of eminent skills." (See Spate: 39, citing Williamson.)

In Tahiti, where neither the bow and arrow nor the javelin was used for war, archery is practiced as a sport with skill and religious ceremony (Spate: 39, citing Ellis and Oliver).

In fact, throughout most of Polynesia, the bow and arrow was said to have never been used in battle (Berry and Best: 59). Ditto for the *Nakanai*, a Melanesian people of New Britain, whose children used the weapon as toys



Figure 72:  
Wooden  
churinga  
of the  
Urabunna,  
Luricha  
and Arunta  
tribes

After Spencer  
and Gillen

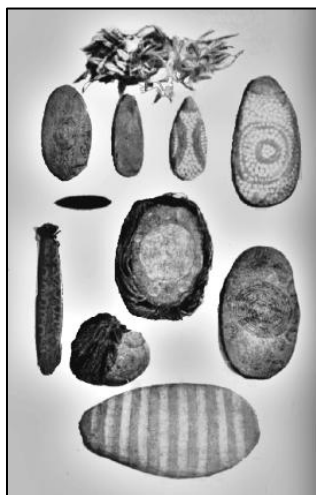


Figure 73:  
Stone churinga  
of the Arunta,  
Kaitish and  
Warramunga  
tribes

After Spencer  
and Gillen

(McCarthy: 33). Archaeological evidence to establish the bow and arrow as the Australian, second sin weapon comes from within the continent. We'll deal with it below. The new Australian bottle being thus described, let's sample the old wine within.

“*Churingas*, the name given by the Arunta natives to certain sacred objects that, on penalty of death or very severe punishment, such as blinding by means of a fire-stick, are never allowed to be seen by women or uninitiated men. The term is applied, as we shall see later, to various objects associated with the totems, but of these the greater number belong to that class of rounded, oval or elongate, flattened stones and slabs of wood of various sizes, to the smaller ones of which the name of *bullroarer* is commonly applied.<sup>55</sup> (*H See Figures 72 and 73, above.*) The importance and use of these in various ceremonies such as those attendant upon initiation of the young men, was first shown in Australia by Messrs. Howitt and Fison, and since then other writers have repeatedly referred to them. Amongst the Aborigines of the Center, as indeed everywhere else where they are found, considerable mystery is attached to their use -- a mystery that has probably had a large part of its origin in the desire of the men to impress the women of the tribe with an idea of the supremacy and superior power of the male sex. From time immemorial, myths and superstitions have grown up around them, until now it is difficult to say how far each individual believes in what he must know to be a fraud, but in which he implicitly thinks that the other natives believe.

Notice how even these two modern men who were the anthropologists most familiar with the aborigines, or *Koories*, as they prefer to be called, disparaged their religion. The whirling bullroarer resembles the voices of the *Homo erectus* gods because it makes a droning sound. Recall that, in recent years and in Chapter 10, Ann MacLarnon discovered that *Homo erectus* lacked the sheath of nerves, surrounding the spinal cord that enables us to control our diaphragms and stop the sound between syllables. Continuing ...

---

<sup>55</sup> A string is sometimes attached, and the “bullroarer” is whirled rapidly in the air to produce the “voice of the gods.”

Whilst living in close intercourse with the natives, spending the days and nights amongst them in their camps while they were preparing for and then enacting their most sacred ceremonies, and talking to them day after day, collectively and individually, we were constantly impressed with the idea, as probably many others have been before, that one black fellow will often tell you that he can and does do something magical, whilst all the time he is perfectly well aware that he cannot, and yet firmly believes that some other man can really do it. For his fellows not to be considered superior to himself, he is obliged to resort to what is really a fraud; but in course of time, he may even come to lose sight of the fact that it is a fraud that he is practicing upon himself and his fellows... [*H It's remarkable for Spencer and Gillen to have made this insight. This is exactly what westerners do when they boast about their happy marriages and what easterners do when they pretend to be creative.*<sup>56</sup>] Especially regarding the *churinga*, there are, amongst the Australian natives, beliefs that can have had no origin in fact, but that have gradually grown up until now they are implicitly held. It is necessary to realize this aspect of the native mind to understand the influence that some of their oldest and most sacred beliefs and customs have upon their lives." (Spencer and Gillen: 119)

Campbell and others have similarly, skeptically and uncritically speculated that exclusively male ceremonies and sacred objects have no basis in fact and only serve to intimidate and subjugate women (Campbell, 1959: 318-323).

As with the Hain rituals and the bullroarers, so too with the *churingas*: it is easier and less intimidating for the social scientist to conclude that the primitive rite or sacred object is a fraud, "having no origin in fact," than it is for him to admit that he cannot fathom its symbolic and historical origin. Fortunately, flattery is not the goal of science or the test by which hypotheses are evaluated. We've been profoundly ignorant of the historical meaning of the *churingas*. Moreover, the attitudes of present-day Aborigines toward magic, especially

---

<sup>56</sup> This denial prompts Chinese to believe that they are a "developing country" and that it is just a matter of time before they catch up to the West technologically. In truth, they are the most developed people relative to female values and only underdeveloped relative to male values. The lovelessness of the male-dominated west, especially the USA, is due largely to the inability of women to take the initiative in romance and the complete denial of the role that our sibling relationships play in determining our sexual orientations. These account for the "lives of quiet desperation that most people lead" (Thoreau). See Chapter 13.



Aborigines who've been in contact with obviously skeptical Europeans, should not be confused with the beliefs of their distant forbears. Nor should the pretensions and fraudulent tricks of individual shamans be confused with the macrocosmic, recurrent dreams (myths and rituals) of entire societies. Indeed, if Spencer and Gillen truly believed that the *churingas* and related ceremonies had no historical significance other than as frauds perpetrated upon women, why did they waste so much energy and so many years of their lives investigating these phenomena? Were Spencer and Gillen also woman-hating sadists and not scientists?

No, as you will see and as Spencer and Gillen surely suspected, the *churingas*, literally meaning "sacred secrets," do have a factual origin. As we'll see, the oldest ones may be actual artifacts of the Deluge. The newer ones are symbolic artifacts of it. The rituals involving them are neurotic symptoms of prehistoric traumata. These rituals celebrate prehistory and -- at the same time -- compulsively and remorsefully pay homage to their victims in an effort to exorcise guilt, fear and paranoia.

Again, these *churingas* symbolize the *Homo erecti* killed by aboriginal men. I say that men did the killing because women specialize in gathering and child rearing. Men do the hunting. To learn to hunt is to learn to kill. If women had known and remembered the crimes that spawned these secretive, all-male societies (crimes sometimes attributed to fictitious *Homo erectus* culprits), it would have given the women a powerful psychological advantage, a means of piquing guilt feelings in the men. The only women deserving of such an advantage would have been women who had refused to partake of murdered *Homo erectus* flesh or to replace the victims with their own babies. What percent of the women do you suppose this group would have encompassed? Continuing in Spencer and Gillen:

"The whole past history of the tribe (Arunta) may be said to be bound up with these totemic ceremonies, each of which is concerned with the doings of certain mythical ancestors who are supposed to have lived in the dim past, to which the natives give the name of the *Alcheringa* [H or *Altjeringa*]." –Spencer and Gillen, henceforth S&G: 119.

With all due respect to these two great ethnographers and the Native Australians themselves, I submit that their understanding of the word *Alcheringa* (or *Altjeringa*) was a flawed one. Contrary to Spencer and Gillen's usage and (probably) current aboriginal convention, "Dreamtime" and *Alcheringa* were originally *not* synonymous. Dissecting the word, we come up with the root

“cheringa,” which is certainly a form of the noun “*churinga*” (sacred secret) and the prefix “alt” or “al,” which must be a modifier. In the Germanic languages, there is no question about the meaning of “alt.” *The Dictionary of Selected Synonyms in the Principal Indo-European Languages*, by Carl Buck, lists these equivalents:

Table 4: Words Equivalent to the Word “Old” Of Modern English

| LANGUAGE           | EQUIVALENTS |
|--------------------|-------------|
| Old English        | eald        |
| Middle English     | old         |
| New English        | old         |
| Dutch              | oud         |
| Old High German    | alt         |
| Middle High German | alt         |
| New High German    | alt         |

It may seem unlikely that the Aborigines separated from a group that included the Germans and that those who were to become Australian Aborigines and those who were to become Germans continued in totally opposite directions. Yet that likelihood increases with *five other observations*. *First*, the sacred mythologies of both peoples include a rainbow bridge that bridges a world with *Homo erectus* and a world without him. [See *Bifrost* (Chapter 21) and the [New South Wales Deluge Myth](#), above.] *Second*, in Hawaiian (the language of Polynesians who probably migrated from the Malay area and are even further removed from the Caspian Basin than are the Aborigines), there are approximately twenty synonyms for “old.” Three of them, a statistically significant portion, begin with the letter “a,” and two of these begin with the letters “al.”<sup>57</sup> *Third*, of the very basic and probable modifiers that might have been applied to “*churinga*,” old is an intuitively likely choice. *Fourth*, the dolichocephaly of the Swedes (tall, narrow skulls, see Howells) suggests that they are relatively new arrivals to the upper latitudes. Fifth and finally, recall that

<sup>57</sup> These words are áluá, áleuleu and ápela. They are given in Pukui and Elbert’s *Hawaiian Dictionary*.

Germanic Thor's magical hammer, Mjollnir, always returned to Thor's hand after being thrown (Chapter 21). Did the Germanic peoples have some early familiarity with the boomerang? In forested Europe, it would have passed into disuse and been remembered only in mythology.

If I am correct in concluding that *Alcheringa* means "old sacred secrets," then there were at least two sets of sacred secrets, the old ones and the new ones. This conclusion is reinforced by at least one of the passages within Spencer and Gillen. During the description of the *impichiuma* of the Emu totem (which we shall review and explain below), Spencer and Gillen note that:

"The *alatunja* [*H headman, in charge of storing the totem clan's churingas and conducting its rituals*] selected three of the older men to act the part of *Inniakwa*, who are supposed to represent ancestors of the emu totem of considerable antiquity, but not so far back as the *Alcheringa*." --Spencer and Gillen: 181

*The churingas symbolized the Homo erecti who were burned in Species War bonfires for two reasons. First, they are the same shape as the smoldering upsides of tree limbs that would have been incompletely burned in the bonfires. One of the last rituals that we'll analyze (below) will confirm that the antecedents of the symbolic churinga were once in a bonfire. Can you see a more important reason why "churingas" of this shape symbolized the bonfire victims? We'll accidentally discover the answer in a later Appendix.*

Add two aboriginal beliefs, and you who have read the foregoing chapters will get the picture. First, the *churingas*, or bullroarers, embody interim souls, souls that are between incarnations. Second, a woman is thought to conceive due to being impregnated by a nearby soul that has left its *churinga*. Get the picture?

The (new) *churingas* embody the souls of the victims of the Deluge. The "alt" or old "*churingas*" were probably similar sacred objects carried by pre-Deluge *Homo erecti* and their *Homo sapiens* protégés, objects representing (containing) the souls of *Homo erectus*' parent species victims, presumably, *Homo habili*. Over the millennia, all information about the old *churinga* was eventually lost. Then there was no need to distinguish between old and new *churinga* or between the "*Alcheringa*" and the more encompassing "Dreamtime." I too shall use "*Alcheringa*" synonymously with "Dreamtime."

As Freud suggested, the primordial fathers are indeed represented in the (earliest) myths of the Arunta, although much less prominently and less often than are the Deluge victims. As I shall now demonstrate to you with selections from Massola and Spencer and Gillen, everything about the rituals of these people confirms this.

“In the *Alcheringa* lived ancestors who, in the native mind, are so intimately associated with the animals or plants, the name of which they bear, that the *Alcheringa* man of, say, the kangaroo totem may sometimes be spoken of either as a man-kangaroo or as a kangaroo-man. The identity of the human individual is often sunk in that of the animal or plant from which he is supposed to have originated. It is useless to try to get further back than the *Alcheringa*; the history of the tribe as known to the natives commences then.

Going back to this far-away time, we find ourselves in the midst of semi-human creatures endowed with powers not possessed by their living descendants and inhabiting the same country that is now inhabited by the tribe, but that was then devoid of many of its marked features, the origin of which, such as the gaps and gorges in the Macdonnell Ranges, is attributed to these mythical *Alcheringa* ancestors.

These *Alcheringa* men and women are represented in tradition as collected together in companies, each of which consisted of a certain number of individuals belonging to one totem.” --Spencer and Gillen: 120

Neanderthal formed a wide-ranging bear cult. (Cf. J, N, & T: 438) Bears, lions and panthers were also widely worshipped through at least much of the Lower Paleolithic and throughout a large part of Eurasia and Africa. (Cf. Campbell, 1959: 337-48) But these groups that are all of one totem or another are groups that were killed together and hoped to have become a particular species of animal (rarely a plant) needed for food. Each Arunta individual, at birth, is assigned to one of these Homo-erectus-tribal victims/totems, by a process that will be described below. Continuing:

“Thus, for example, the ceremonies of the *engwura* [*H initiation by fire ordeal*] dealt with four separate groups of *Achilpa* or wild cat men... [I]n the case of the *Achilpa*, the totem is common to all classes.” --S&G: 120

The greater part of the myths concerning the *Alcheringa* tell of the amazing journeys of the *Achilpa* and other totem clans throughout Australia mingling and intermarrying with others, founding sub-groups and forming and molding the landscape. Only old people are allowed to eat the *Achilpa* (wild cat) at any time,

Figure 74: Zervan Akarana, the Lion-Headed God of "Endless Time"



After Ulansey & Vermaseren and Kluwer. Academic Publr.

and even they must eat very sparingly of it.<sup>58</sup> It is said that anyone violating this taboo will get the sickness *erkincha*. Moreover, any man who has ever killed another man may not eat the *Achilpa* at any age. If he violates this law, his spirit leaves his body and someone soon kills him. (Cf. S&G: 167-8.)

Undoubtedly, the *Achilpa* symbolize the main body of *Homo erecti* that the main body of *Homo sapiens* who entered Australia drove before them, preying upon them as needed for food. This is suggested by the [New South Wales Deluge Myth](#), above) wherein *Ngudgeegullum*, the "brother-in-law," preceded the little boy in crossing over the curved (later, rainbow) bridge into the continent *and all the way across it to Middle Head*. Then the little boy became a koala *and his brother-in-law became a native cat*. "Brother-in-law," the strong taboo against eating the cat and the story of the myth all suggest that the *Achilpa* symbolize the main group of *Homo erecti* toward whom the Aborigines felt the strongest

*ambivalence and guilt*.

This reminds me of some interesting data that the academics have contributed. The national museum's website notes that, "Aboriginal people living in Australia between 40 and 10 kya had much larger bodies and more robust skeletons and showed a much wider range of physical variation" [*H than do the aboriginals of more recent times*]. The professional warriors who, generation after generation, preyed upon *Homo erectus* would have been, on average, the biggest and strongest people. Great "physical variation" would have been caused by head, hand and foot binding and by the prevalence of hybrids among the Species War victors. The Australians may also have had a Hammurabi or two in their midst. This is especially likely because the Kow Swamp and Cohuna sites that have been turning up *Homo erectus* and deformed *Homo sapiens* skulls are in the southeast corner of Australia, north of Melbourne, a most likely area in which reservations for the surrendering *Homo erecti* would have been established.

Do you see any resemblance between the second major apparition of the Mithra cult, the "Zervan Akarana" or "Boundless Time," shown in Figure 74, and

<sup>58</sup> The Arunta, unlike other tribes, may eat sparingly of their totem and must eat it during *impichiuma* or the supply (intended to be increased by the *impichiuma*) will fail. (Cf. S&G: 167-168)

the countenance of *Homo erectus*? Like the lion, *Homo erectus* had larger jaws and a more protruding snout, a thicker and bonier brow, a more slanting forehead and front-to-rear-elongated skull, more body hair, larger teeth and a more cartilaginous nose than our immediate ancestors. This image, found in the ruins of the Mithra temple of the Roman port of Ostia and depicted in Campbell (1964: 262), has many sacred symbols attached to it: the serpent (a universal symbol for *Homo erectus*), a key (to heaven, such as our Greek ancestors put in Cronus's hands), a lightning bolt (upon his chest, where Deluge arrows fatally hit *Homo erectus*), a scepter in hand and angel wings. Lions, with or without wings, were frequent religious symbols for many peoples. (Cf. Campbell, 1959, 1970) As we've seen, the lion was a *Homo erectus* symbol almost as universal as the snake.

Aboriginal totems have ceased to regulate marriage. *The totems are divided into two pairs of moieties that regulate marriage.* We'll discover the historical significance of moieties below. The totem does still designate which group of ancestors one is descended from. The totem is associated with an *Alcheringa*, totem-animal/*Homo erectus* group of a certain location; and if a woman first noticed that she is pregnant when in that location, it is a spirit of this *Alcheringa* totem that has impregnated her. (Cf. S&G: 121) The traditions that tell of the journeys of various ancestors tell how the *Alcheringa* members of various totems arrived in various spots scattered over the country.

"Each of these *Alcheringa* ancestors is represented as carrying about with him, or her, one or more of the sacred stones that are called by the Arunta natives *churinga*, and each of these *churinga* is intimately associated with the idea of the spirit part of some individual. Either where they originated and stayed, as in the case of certain of the Witchetty Grub people, or elsewhere, during their wanderings, they camped for a time, there were formed what the natives call *oknanikilla*, each one of which is a local totem center. *At each of these spots, and they are well known to the old men, who pass the knowledge on from generation to generation, a certain number of the Alcheringa ancestors went into the ground, each one carrying his churinga with him. His body died, but some natural feature, such as a rock or tree, arose to mark the spot, while his spirit part remained in the churinga...*" *H emphasis mine*

The above passage is, of course, consistent with my assumptions: that the inedible *Homo erectus* remains were burned; most of the souls were thought to transfer to the charred pieces of wood that remained from the fire and became

wooden *churingas*; and some of the souls may have been thought to transfer to prominent nearby natural objects or to flat oblong stones that were found near or among the ashes. These stones also became *churingas*. (See Figures 72 and 73.) As you will see, these assumptions will be supported by all the ethnographic evidence.

“[A]t the same time, many of the *churinga* that they carried with them and each one of which had associated with it a spirit individual, were placed in the ground, some natural object again marking the spot. The result is that as we follow their wanderings, we find that the whole country is dotted over with *oknanikilla*, or local totem centers, at each of which are deposited a number of *churinga* with spirit individuals associated with them. Each *oknanikilla* is, of course, connected with one totem... and it is this idea of spirit individuals associated with *churinga* and resident in certain definite spots that lie at the root of the present totemic system of the Arunta tribe...”

So, the *oknanikilla* mark the spots where hunter-gatherer bands or whole tribes of *Homo erecti* were slaughtered. For Australia to be dotted with these spots, as North America is dotted with spots that were once Aboriginal American mounds; gives us some estimation of the MILLIONS of *Homo erectus* hunter-gatherers who lived prior to the Species War. (See Figure 125d.) Oops! Excuse me. According to Big Brother's, official, *American* archeology; *Homo erecti* were never in America either. Continuing ...

Each aboriginal totem clan collectively-elaborated and progressively distorted through inter-generational communication its own obsessive rituals that commemorate the first -- and especially the second -- sin. *The result was a condensed ritual that combined their traumatic experience of the Species War with their wishes for success in obtaining food and their hope that many of the spirits of the murdered Homo erecti would maintain the food supply by becoming game animals and edible plants. These rituals became each totem's impichiuma ceremony.* Continuing in S&G:

“The tradition of the natives is that when the spirit child goes inside a woman the *churinga* is dropped. When the child is born, the mother tells the father the position of the tree or rock near to which she supposes the child to have entered her, and he, together with one or two of the older men, who are close relatives of the man, and of whom the father of the latter is usually one, and an older brother of the father, goes to the locality, at once if it be near at hand, or when

opportunity offers if it be distant, and searches for the dropped *churinga*. The latter is usually, but not always, supposed to be a stone, one marked with a device peculiar to the totem of the spirit child and therefore of the newly-born one. Sometimes it is found; sometimes it is not. In the former case, which is stated to occur often, we must suppose that some old man -- it is most often the paternal grandfather who finds it -- has provided himself with one for the occasion, which is quite possible, as *churinga* belonging to their own totem are not infrequently carried about by the old men, who obtain them from the sacred storehouse in which they are kept. We questioned native after native on this subject -- some of them had actually found such stones -- but there was no shaking them in the firm belief that such a *churinga* was always dropped by the spirit child whether it was found or not.<sup>59</sup> If it cannot be found then they proceed to make a wooden one from the Mulga or other hard-wood tree nearest to the *nanja* [*H dwelling place of the spirit*], and to carve on it some device or brand peculiar to the totem. Ever afterwards, the *nanja* tree or stone of the spirit is the *nanja* of the child, and the *churinga* is its *churinga nanja*.” --S&G: 132

Now, the men certainly would not have to go to this much trouble hunting for the *churinga* if they thought it to be a mere hoax, if they knew *churingas* to

---

<sup>59</sup> Freud (1905: 192), in contemplating this practice, confused it with “a denial of paternity” and “the impregnation of a virgin by a spirit,” as in the Christian Myth. Neither of these applies. In the thinking of the Koories, whenever a woman gets pregnant, it is because the *Homo erectus* gods willed it and donated one of their spirits. As I said in Chapter 7, if you believe in an afterlife (by any name or description), then you believe in reincarnation exactly as do the Arunta. The only life we know anything about is earthly life. Any conception of life is earthly life. Moreover, since births and deaths don’t always occur in tandem pairs; the immortal souls have to be hanging around somewhere prior to being reincarnated. The contrary, Christian treatment of these issues is full of contradictions. For example, if God creates a new soul each time someone is born, even if only Christian souls go to heaven; then heaven, wherever it is, has got to be severely overcrowded and more earthly than heavenly. As I noted in Chapter 7, the Church debated reincarnation during one synod and three councils (endnote 63 of Volume 1). They rejected reincarnation’s logical corollaries of the “soul” only because they minimized the importance of mythological Jesus’ dramatic birth from a virgin and a heavenly father. To deny that a *churinga* dropped at the time of a human conception would be equivalent to denying the existence of their gods. Modern religions are much *less* realistic and *less* grounded in historical fact than Koorie reincarnation, but just try telling a Christian that “Jesus” never existed.



be a fraud! Note also that as with primitive people everywhere, the tree is associated with the ancestors; and once a soul has left a *churinga* (for reincarnation) the *churinga* is temporarily profaned. It can no longer be on a platform, "in the air," and it must have touched the ground.

"As might have been expected, there is a definite relationship supposed to exist between an individual and his *nanja* tree or stone. Whilst the belief is by no means general [*H due in no small part to the ridicule of the Europeans*], now, there is at least one definite case known to us in which a black fellow earnestly requested a white man not to cut down a particular tree because it was his *nanja* tree, and he feared that if cut down some evil would befall him. Very possibly in times past this feeling was more widely prevalent than it is now. Presently, the special association between a man and his *nanja* tree lies in the fact that every animal upon that tree is *ekirinja* or taboo to him." --S&G: 133

Would men undergo this limitation just to perpetuate a hoax upon women? No, the aboriginal belief that they are the reincarnations of *Homo erecti* persists because they are still traumatized by the Species War due to there having been very few changes in their lives to distance them from it and due to their enduring identification with the Species Warriors.

"In each *oknanikilla* or local totem center, there is a spot called by the natives the *ertnatulunga*. This is a sacred storehouse, which usually has the form of a small cave or crevice in some unfrequented spot amongst the rough hills and ranges that abound in the area occupied by the tribe. The entrance is carefully blocked up with stones so naturally arranged as not to arouse suspicion of the fact that they conceal from view the most sacred possessions of the tribe. In this, often carefully tied up in bundles, are numbers of the *churinga*, and in one or other of these storehouses every member of the tribe, men and women alike, is represented by his or her *churinga nanja*." --S&G: 133

The *churinga* also contains the [*H protective*] power of the totem ancestor and imparts it to the descendant. (Cf. S&G: 135) Loss of the *churinga* is a disaster that means the loss of the guardianship of the spirit. (Cf. S&G: 136, 138) The closest equivalent among Christians would be not being baptized, losing the fiery soul of *Homo erectus* and suffering eternal damnation.

“Once we ventured to inquire whether there was no story relating how the *Alcheringa* men came to have them [*H churingas*], but the mirth that the question provoked showed us that to the mind of the Arunta native the idea of the possibility of anything before the *Alcheringa* was a ridiculous and incomprehensible one.” --S&G: 136

Spencer and Gillen obviously didn’t understand that the churinga are sacred only because the souls of *Homo erecti* passed into them when their less-edible body parts were consumed in Species War bonfires. We will come to a ritual, below, which makes this crystal clear.

Pre-Species War *Homo erectus* may have invented the churinga ceremonies and beliefs in response to their own guilt for having killed *their* hominid, parent species (probably *Homo habilis*). But if this is true, then, churinga being remnant of bonfires; surviving *Homo habilis* had to post-date the discovery of controlled fire and have a much greater range than the one currently estimated for them and limited to southern Africa. The discovery of controlled fire, by *Homo erectus*, is currently estimated as 400 kya, and *Homo habilis*’ extinction is currently estimated as 1.5 mya.

“Not only does each member of the tribe have a *churinga nanja* but shortly after the birth of a child, the headman of the group in whose *ernnatulunga* the *churinga* is deposited consults with the older men of the group and bestows upon him (and the same holds true in the case of a female child) [*H even though a woman may never see her churinga or know of its whereabouts*] his *aritna churinga*, or secret name.” --S&G: 138-139

The existence of secret names for women and the female initiation rites that we will review below also confirm that females had some Deluge guilt too. Continuing:

“Every member of the tribe has his or her secret name, which may be either a new one or that of some celebrated man or woman of the *Alcheringa* whose name has been handed down in traditions. This name is never uttered except upon the most solemn occasions when the *churinga* are being examined, and that of any individual is only known to the fully initiated men of his own local totem group. To utter such a name in the hearing of women or of men of another group

would be a most serious breach of tribal custom, as serious as the most flagrant case of sacrilege amongst white men. [H *As if the one hearing it is not just as guilty!*] When mentioned at all it is only in a whisper and then after taking the most elaborate precautions lest it should be heard by anyone outside of his own group. The native thinks that a stranger knowing his secret name would have special power to work him ill by means of magic.” --S&G: 139

From the aboriginal believer’s point of view, his secret name is his *real* name. Each child’s (guilt-piquing) secret name is the name of a *Homo sapiens* Species War killer who first acquired the *Homo erectus* spirit that the believer has reincarnated! Fear of *Homo erectus* spirits would have caused Species Warriors to change their names to avoid angry spirits. Remember how the Kwakiutls renamed their ceremonial house once the cannibal pole was erected? Listen to this passage of a Shoshoni myth about the “little people” or *Ninnimbe*:

“People do not often call a relative or friend by his true name because of their fear of *Ninnimbe*. If he should hear anyone’s name, he might cause some misfortune to come upon that person or even kill him with invisible arrows. Some people will not say their own names aloud lest *Ninnimbe* overhear them and shoot his arrows.” -- E.E. Clark: 181-182

Continuing:

“When an initiated man is deemed discreet enough to see the *ertnatulunga* he is told his secret name and shown the *churingas* of his group (S&G: 139). Then, at least in the witchetty group... he is painted on the face and body with a kind of pinkish soapstone and red ocher by the *alatunja* [*H head man of the group*] and the older men who stand to him in the relationship of *oknia*, that is actual or tribal father.” --S&G: 140.

Remember the winter ceremony of the Kwakiutls? The red face symbolizes embarrassment, shame and the blood of *Homo erectus*. Red ocher was also in the bundles that the Aztecs sent their sun god. Regarding *churinga* preferences, our authors (S&G: 142) note that,

“[T]he stone *churinga* tend to be more highly valued, except as compared with wooden ones that are decayed, held together with sinew, and porcupine grass resin.”

The preference seems to be for *churinga* that are the oldest and therefore the most likely to derive from the Deluge bonfires. New wooden *churingas* are recognized as either replacements of disintegrated originals or as ones arbitrarily fashioned when, upon the discovery of a new pregnancy, no dropped *churinga* was found. The faith in the magic that equates the newly fashioned *churinga* with its predecessor must surely be weakening over time. This preference for the old wooden *churingas* also suggests that most or all the original (new or Deluge) *churinga* were wooden and that most of the Deluge victims were disposed of by fire.

“Whenever the *churinga* are examined by the old men, they are, especially the wooden ones, very carefully rubbed over with the hands. First, dry red ocher is powdered on to them, and then rubbed in with the palm of the hand, the grease of which doubtless helps in preserving the wood to a certain extent. The stone ones are, some of them, rubbed with red ocher, but others with charcoal, which is never used in the case of the wooden ones.” --S&G: 144.

If wood ones were charred, their meaning would be too obvious and the Aborigines' psychological repression of the origin of the *churingas* -- in a fire with *Homo erectus* -- might unravel. The superego cannot allow that degree of realism if the threatened revelation implies changes that the individual is not ready, willing and able to make. For stone *churinga* to be rubbed with charcoal further confirms that they represent stones that were in Species War bonfires and that some of the spirits of cremated *Homo erecti* were thought to have passed into the stones beneath the fire.

Stone ones are altogether absent in the south. Spencer and Gillen believed the Arunta claim that other tribes without stone *churingas* were inferior. Spencer and Gillen proceeded to speculate that the earliest *churingas* were of stone and that the stone *churingas* from the south had been stolen. (Cf. S&G: 152.) But they failed to grasp the origin of the *churinga* and the situation from the Arunta point of view, from within the Arunta belief system. *Wooden churingas, of their characteristic shape, are not found in nature. Stones of the characteristic stone churinga shape are. For the Arunta, the absence of stone churingas within a tribes' ertnatulunga and the presence of mostly newly-fashioned wooden ones*

indicated that no *churingas* had dropped or magically appeared upon the occasion of the tribe's births. This would be a clear indication that the ancestors (the spirits) had deserted these people, that they were without the powers that the totem gods imparted to their descendants, that they were therefore an inferior people. All the evidence shows the opposite of what Spencer and Gillen concluded. All or most of the original *churingas* were not stone. They were wood, and most of the inedible remains of *Homo erectus australis* were consumed in fires.



More archaeological evidence of *Homo erectus* and the bow and arrow are the extremely primitive rock face drawings located at *Mootwingee* in western New South Wales and depicted in Massola. (See Figure 75a, above.) These drawings are as primitive as any associated with the Aborigines and are of unknown date. When early settlers asked about them, Native Australians always stated that they did not know exactly who had made these designs. They attributed them to their totemic ancestors. Certainly, with what we've already learned about *Homo erectus*' hands; it would seem unlikely that he could have painted with the same precision and detail that *Homo sapiens* [*H In this case, I can't say "we"*] are capable of. (Cf. Massola: 60-61.)

Rock face drawings that are about as primitive and said by the Indians to have been drawn by "the animal people" (*Homo erectus*) are still found at several locations in North America. I have seen those at Gingko Petrified Forest on the banks of the Columbia in Washington State. And yet archaeologists claim that no *Homo erectus* bones have been found either in North America or Australia! *You can bet your life on Homo erectus having been all over Australia and the Western Hemisphere. As we'll see, the evidence for the Western Hemisphere is just as strong as what I'm showing you here. The world's craziest people, wild westerners, have probably just been the best at covering up the evidence! As we'll*

see in Appendix H, they did a most remarkable job of covering up the Aboriginal African Americans; but we shall do an even better job of uncovering them!

Regardless of who drew this *Mootwingee* drawing, the bow in it supports the conclusion that the Australian Species Warriors used the bow and later felt so guilty as to completely abolish it.

The most common of two types of sacred poles is the *nurtunga*. It takes various forms for different totems but is most often made of one or more spears and wound round with human hair string, which is then decorated with white emu down. You will see below that the associations with this *nurtunga* indicate that it is the spear/murder-weapon/ancestral-tree/cannibal-pole-to-heaven for the Deluge victims. It is much shorter and smaller than the less common but even more sacred pole representing the primordial father. You know why.

“It is said that in the *Alcheringa*, men would hang up their *churinga* on the *nurtunga*.” (Cf. S&G: 143)

In the early days of the new *Churinga* Epoch (after the Deluge), men would hang up their *churinga* on the *nurtunga* as a symbol of their ambivalence for the spirits associated with them. At this time, they would also have wanted the spirits of the Deluge victims to rise into the sky with the smoke of the fires in which they had been recently cooked and burned. As you will see below, these fires are commemorated in the *engwura* ceremonies.

Now you have the basic background, and we are ready for the fun part, the secret, religious ceremonies, the *impichiumas* and the *engwuras* (initiation rites).

*IMPICHIUMAS* (transformer cycles like those of the Northwest and Plateau peoples of North America described in Chapter 23.)

As I have stated above, the *impichiuma* is a ritual that condenses the totem clan's need to commemorate and compulsively repeat their traumatic experience of the Deluge with their wish for success in finding food. The Species War and the need for food are, of course, connected in a very real sense: cannibalizing *Homo erectus* did greatly increase the food supply, the supply of meat and of the other animals and plants that *Homo erectus* would otherwise have eaten. So, the identity of the ancestral object of ambivalence was compromised and replaced with that of the totem animal or plant that he was hoped to have become. But in the case of these *impichiuma* rituals, the ancestral objects of ambivalence are clearly the victims of the Deluge. The appeal to the totem plant or animal to multiply is also an unconscious, half-hearted, expression of remorse and

invitation for *Homo erectus* to return. Here first, and in the greatest detail, is the *impichiuma* with which Spencer and Gillen were most familiar, that of the Witchetty Grub Totem. (The witchetty is the larvae of a beetle. My comments will, as usual, be in italics and within brackets.)

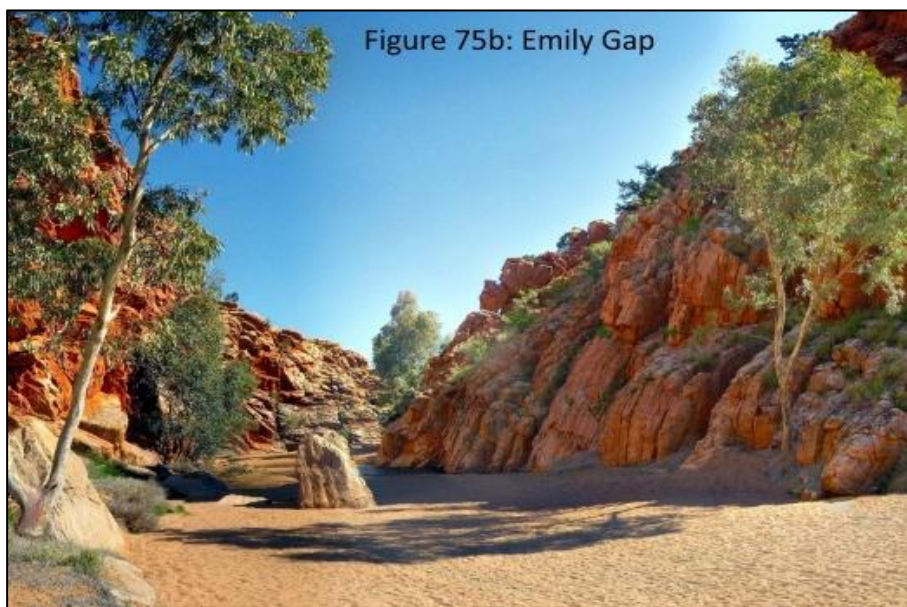
*Impichiuma* of the Witchetty Grub Totem

At various places throughout this district, *Udnirringita* people [*H of the Witchetty Grub totem*] originated in the *Alcheringa* from their animal ancestors, and these *Alcheringa* people deposited *churinga* at various spots during their wanderings or where they originated. The *Alcheringa Udnirringita* men and women are supposed to have been full of eggs, which are now represented by rounded, water-worn stones, many of which are stored in the *ertnatulunga* at the various gaps and are called *churinga unchima*.

At this late stage in their history, the Arunta describe these totem ancestors as "half" human. As Freud said, repression slowly abates to expose impulses and identities. *Homo erectus* was intermediate between us and other apes. As I also noted, in Chapter 21, the apotheosis of the *Homo sapiens* Deluge victors (due to their contraction of the ambivalence felt toward their victims) played a major role in restoring consciousness of the hominid nature of the gods.

All prominent and many insignificant natural features in this strip of country -- the most picturesque part of great central Australia -- have some history attached to them. Emily Gap, or as it is called by the natives, *Unthurqua*, is

probably, owing to its central position, the most important spot in the *Udnirringita* [*H Witchetty Grub*] country. It is a narrow gorge not more than a hundred yards from end to end and about thirty yards in width. It is hemmed in by precipitous rocks of red quartzite and runs from north to south right across the long ridge that, for some 200 miles, bounds the Horn or Mercenie Valley on its southern side. (Cf *S&G*: 423.) [*H The Witchetty Grub totem group around Emily Gap, numbering forty or so at the turn of the last century, was the largest group with which Spencer and Gillen were acquainted. They became members of this totem. The centrality of the gap is irrelevant. See Figure 75b, a photo of Emily Gap.*]



“Within a radius of two miles of this gap there are eight or ten holes, varying from three to five feet in depth, which are supposed to have been sunk, in the first instance, by the *Alcheringa* men. They are called *ilthura*, and are strictly taboo to women and children, who must not on any pretense, go near to them, and their exact locality is well known to all the members of the local group. Each hole contains, carefully covered over, one large stone called *churinga uchaqua*, which represents the witchetty in its chrysalis stage, and a smaller, more rounded stone, called *churinga unchima*, which represents the egg stage.” --*S&G*: 424-425.



I suggest that the large stone also represents a buried man, and the small stone represents a buried woman. Or -- still more likely -- the large stone is the (*Homo erectus*) victim's torso and the small stone is his (her) head -- limbs having been easy to hack off, cook and eat.

"It was just within the northern entrance to the gorge, at a spot marked now by a large stone, close to which stands the trunk of an old and long since dead gum tree, that the great *Alcheringa* leader of the Witchetties, who was named *Intwailiuka*, sprang into existence. With him and with the people whose leader he was, many of the natural features of the gorge are, as we shall shortly see, associated in tradition...

In the western wall of the gap is situated the sacred cave that is called the *Ilthura Oknira*, or the great *ilthura*, at which he performed the ceremony called *impichiuma*, the object of which was then, as at the present day, to increase the number of the Udnirringita grub on which he and his companions fed. Directly opposite to this, but low down on the eastern wall of the gap, is the sacred *ilkinia*, a drawing on the rocks which it is believed sprang up spontaneously to mark the spot where the *Alcheringa* women painted themselves and stood peering up and watching while *Intwailiuka* and his men performed *impichiuma*. This spot is called the *Erlukwirra* or camp of the women in the *Alcheringa*, and one of the drawings is supposed to represent a woman leaning on her elbow against the rocks and gazing upwards. In this, as in many other instances, we meet with traditions showing clearly that in past times the position of women regarding sacred objects and ceremonies was very different from that which they occupy at the present day, when, for example, no woman dares to venture near to the sacred spot while *impichiuma* is being performed there." (Cf. S&G: 425-426)

Permit me to venture a totally different interpretation of both the relationship between the sexes and the above data. First, women are privileged to be excluded from these rites. That reflects the fact that men, as virtually everywhere, are shouldering the lion's share of the responsibility and guilt for the Species War. Indeed, men have always done most of the killing. But men are forced to become killing machines due to women's insistence upon being baby-making machines. The civilized birth rate for any society is the one corresponding to the greatest decrease in the death rate. Any birth rate above that one is inappropriately high

and savage. And it is mainly the uncontrolled instincts of women that drive these savage birth rates.

As for the data, the extremely rocky slopes of Emily Gap (and S&G's own pictures on their pages 426 and 427 clearly reveal them as such) are not supportive of the *Udnirringita* shrub or of the beetle grubs that feed upon it. Although I have seen no botanical studies of the area, I suspect that this pass never supported the shrubs and grubs. This pass was significant in prehistoric times for its military value. Caves in the cliff sides would have made secure dwellings, affording good observation in every direction and a much greater range (gravitational advantage) for one's spears and rocks than that of an attacking enemy. Control of ingress and egress to the pass was also of military value. What the women originally observed from their camp below was the attack upon the *Homo erecti* (perhaps led by the mythical *Intwailiuka*). The women hugged the rock walls of the gap as they looked upward to avoid falling or thrown rocks and spears. They were perhaps also assigned the task of overwhelming and killing any *Homo erecti* that might otherwise have escaped their attackers.

“About 200 feet below the *ilthura* [*H holes with the sacred stones in them*], a steep, broad belt band of quartzite, less weathered than the surrounding rock, stands out and dips steeply down into the bed of the creek. This is called *Alkna linta*, which means “eyes painted around,” and indicates where, in the *Alcheringa*, *Intwailiuka* stood in the bed of the creek at the base of the rock. Standing here he threw numbers of *churinga unchima*, or eggs, up the face of the rock, just as is now done during the *impichiuma* ceremony...”

The “eyes painted around” unconsciously remind the Arunta of the eyes of *Homo erectus*. Their starving ancestors, desperate enough to dream about food, never threw eggs. Rocks were thrown between cliff-dwelling *Homo erecti* and the attacking Aborigines. Throwing rocks, as “eggs,” *up to the ilthura holes is a compromise formation. As rocks, they commemorate the Species War. As “eggs,” they express remorse and the desire to return the Homo erecti to their caves, alive.* The description of the ritual activities of the men will now confirm this.

“When the ceremony is to be performed at Alice Springs the men assemble in the main camp, and then those who are about to take part in the proceedings leave the camp quietly, slinking away to a meeting place not far off, the women and men who do not belong to the totem not being supposed to know that they are gone. A few, perhaps two

or three of the older men of the totem stay in camp, and the next morning they ask the men who do not belong to the totem to return early from their hunting.” --S&G: 170

The secrecy and the “slinking away” indicate great guilt. The women want the men of the other totem to return early because, as we’ll see, these are the men available to them for marriage.

“Every man has left all his weapons in the camp, for all must go quite unarmed and without any decoration of any kind; even the hair girdle, the one constant item of clothing worn by the men, must be left in camp.” --*Ibid.*

Decorations might more readily reveal their individual identities to spirits entitled to revenge. The weapons would offend the murdered spirits. Removal of all decoration and clothing is also symbolic of humbling themselves before their gods and assuring the gods that they are not hiding any weapon. *This was the original, full-body salute.* This guilty and humble reenactment of an attack is another compromise formation, a pair of opposite half-measures, a neurotic religious symptom.

“They all walk in single file except the *alatunja*, who sometimes takes the lead and at others walks by the side of the column to see that the line is kept...” --*Ibid.*

Single file is the way a war party moves at night within unknown or enemy territory. This formation minimizes the risk of unexpected encounters with enemy scouts, wild animals, pitfalls or (in modern times) land mines.

“On no account must any of the men, except the very old ones, eat any kind of food until the whole ceremony is over; anything that may be caught in the way of game must be handed over to the old men.” --*Ibid.*

Again, this is a neurotic symptom, a mixed response to an ambivalent object. They’re reenacting a slaughter that was followed by a cannibal feast; yet remorse and their superegos won’t allow them to eat.

“The procession usually starts late in the afternoon, so that it is dusk by the time that a special camping ground near to the Emily Gap is reached, and here they lie down for the night.

At daylight, the party begins to pluck twigs from the gum trees at the mouth of the Gap, and every man carries a twig in each hand except the *alatunja*, who carries nothing save a small pitchi or wooden trough, which is called *apmara*...”

Aha! They deploy weapons after all. *The twigs double as symbolic arrows* and digging sticks (for grubs). *Per* standard military procedure, they time the symbolic attack to begin at dawn, with the sun in the eyes of sleepy enemies.

“Walking again in single file they follow -- led by the *alatunja* - - the path traversed by the celebrated *Intwailiuka*, the great leader of the Witchetty Grubs in the *Alcheringa*, until they come to what is called the *Ilthura Oknira*, which is placed high up on the western wall of the Gap. In this shallow cave, a large block of quartzite lies, and around it are some small rounded stones. The large mass represents the *maegwa*, that is, the adult animal.” --S&G: 172

I suggest that these stones inside the cave also represent the dead bodies of the *Homo erecti* that the aboriginal ancestors murdered in a surprise attack at dawn.

“The *alatunja* begins singing and taps the stone with his *apmara*, while all the other men tap it with their twigs, chanting songs as they do so, the burden of which is an invitation to the animal to lay eggs. When this has gone on for a short time they tap the smaller stones, which are *churinga unchima*, the eggs of the *maegwa*.” --*Ibid*.

The tapping of the stones with the “twigs” is another half-measure symbolic of the spearing of *Homo erectus*, who must all be tapped (speared). The smaller stones are the *Homo erectus* women and children.

“The *alatunja* then takes up one of the smaller stones and strikes each man in the stomach with it, saying, “You have eaten much food.” When this has been done, the stone is dropped and the *alatunja* strikes the stomach of each man with his forehead, an operation that is called *atnitta ulpilima*...”

Again, as we saw on Easter Island, patting the stomach, in a religious context, is an acknowledgment of cannibal satiety. Similarly, to strike another's stomach with your head (or a symbolic stone, *Homo erectus* head) is to transmit spiritual knowledge to him, here, knowledge of his (their ancestors') cannibal guilt. Magic!

“Leaving the *ilthura*, the men descend from the range to the bed of the creek in the Gap, and stop under the rock called *Alknalinta*, that is, the decorated eyes, where, in the *Alcheringa*, *Intwailiuka* used to cook, pulverize and eat the grub. The *alatunja* strikes the rock with his *apmara*, and each man does the same with his twigs, while the older men again chant invitations to the animal to come from all directions and lay eggs. At the base of the rock, buried deeply in the sand, there is supposed to be a very large *maegwa* stone.” --S&G: 172

*The twigs are arrows and the apmara is a club.* The *Alknalinta*, the decorated eyes, may represent specific *Homo erecti* -- the night sentry whom the ancestors of the Arunta had to first overcome to launch their surprise attack upon the well-positioned *Homo erecti* or the *Homo erecti* who retreated from the caves overhead. Note also that this location around the creek bed, where *Intwailiuka* is said to have “cooked and pulverized his food,” is probably where most of the dead *Homo erectus* victims were roasted and eaten. Providing brush for firewood, water for drinking and soft ground for sitting, this spot would have been the likely place to relax and dine.

“It was at this spot that *Intwailiuka* used to stand while he threw up the face of the rock numbers of *churinga unchima* (sacred secret small stones), which rolled down again to his feet; accordingly, the *alatunja* does the same with some of the *churinga* that have been brought from the store-house close by. While he is doing this the other members of the party run up and down the face of the rocky ledge, singing all the time.” --S&G: 172-3

The *churinga* throwing and the running up and down cliff walls certainly could not have had anything to do with grubbing for larvae. Here, the stone *churinga* that are thrown up the face of the rock double as missiles and as the dead victims. As missiles, they represent the negative aspect of the ambivalence toward *Homo erectus* and celebrate the victory over him. As *churinga*, as representations of the corpses themselves, they represent the positive side of the

aboriginal ambivalence toward *Homo erectus*. They represent remorse and a desire to restore the *Homo erecti* to their cave in living form.

“The men now fall once more into single file and march in silence to the nearest *ilthura*, which is about a mile and a half away from the Gap in the direction of Alice Springs. The *alatunja* goes into the hole, which is four or five feet deep, and scoops out with his *apmara* any dirt that may have accumulated in it, singing as he does so a low monotonous chant about the *uchaqua* [*H large stone*]. Soon he lays bare two stones which have been carefully covered up in the base of the hole; the larger one is called *churinga uchaqua*, and represents the chrysalis stage from which emerges the adult animal [*H or the Homo erectus torso or male*]; the smaller is one of the *churinga unchima* or eggs [*H or a Homo erectus head or female*]. When they are exposed to view, songs referring to the *uchaqua* are sung, and the stones are solemnly handled and cleaned with the palm of the hand. One by one, the men now go into the *ilthura*, and the *alatunja*, lifting up the *churinga uchaqua*, strikes the stomach of each man with it, saying again, “You have eaten much food.” [*H reminding each of his guilt, like that of his namesake, for eating Homo erectus, for “coming into the world as a sinner.”*] Finally dropping the stone, he butts (this is the only word expressive of the action) at each man in the abdomen with his forehead [*H another compromise formation: to pass spiritual knowledge and to punish*].” --S&G: 173-4

This same ceremony is repeated at each of the *ilthura* with each man and each *churinga*. This ritual, the uncovering and handling of the *ilthura* stones, is symbolic of visiting and paying respect to *Homo erectus* graves. Guilt routinely motivates us to visit the gravesides of family members; but assuming we didn’t murder the deceased, we remain conscious of their identities. The head butting is also repetition compulsion for the traumatic act of murdering someone.

“[T]hen a start is made for the home camp. When within a mile or so of the latter, they stop and decorate themselves with material that has been purposely brought to the spot... While the men walk along, they keep their twigs in constant motion, much as if they were brushing off flies. [*H Having re-enacted the dirty deed without being significantly punished; their paranoia is alleviated, and they can now celebrate their military prowess and strength in arms.*] The totem

*ilkinia* or sacred design is painted on the body of each man with red ocher and [*H white*] pipe clay, and the latter is also used to paint the face, except for the median line of red. [*H The white is symbolic of death and the red of bloodshed.*] (S&G: 175)

As they are marching back to camp, and as the *alatunja* is looking out for peeping women or the old man who has been left in charge of the camp... [T]he old man...is also on the look-out for the return of the former. While the men have been away, he has built, away from the main camp, a long, narrow wurley [*H hut*], which is called *umbana*, and is intended to represent the chrysalis case from which the *maegwa* or fully developed insect emerges. Near to this spot all those who have not been taking part in the ceremony assemble; standing behind the *umbana*. Those men who belong to the other moiety of the tribe -- that is, to the *Purula* and the *Kumara* -- are about forty or fifty yards away, sitting down in perfect silence; and the same distance further back the *Panunga* and *Bulthara* women are standing, with the *Purula* and *Kumara* women sitting down amongst them. The first-named women are painted with the totem *ilkinia* of red and white lines; the second are painted with lines of white faintly tinged with red..."

As you'll see, even the *ilkinias*, the sacred paintings, have a dual symbolism. The conscious one refers to the totem food and the unconscious one refers to the Species War victims. Notice that the women of the other moiety have less blood on themselves (red paint in their *ilkinia*). *What is now being described is the ongoing aspect of the Fraternal Complex, genetic competition between competing aboriginal totem clans, which, before the formation of the moieties, periodically culminated in genocidal wars wherein a victorious clan captured all the women and murdered all the men of a competing clan or tribe.* The standing women, who are redder (bloodier) than the others, are the women of the returning clansmen (actually two clans or a moiety). They were "captured" while their men were absent.

"When the old man at length sees the party approaching, he steps out and sings..."

The *alatunja*, as the party comes slowly along, stops every now and then to peer at the women. Finally, all reach the *umbana* and enter it. When all are inside, they begin to sing of the animal in its various stages, and of the *Alknalinta* stone and the great *maegwa* at its base. As soon as the performers enter the wurley, the *Purula* and *Kumara*

men and women lie face downwards and remain in this position until they receive permission to arise. [*H The marauders are symbolically killed, acknowledging that they too were once vulnerable to the same savagery.*] They are not allowed to stir under any pretext whatever...

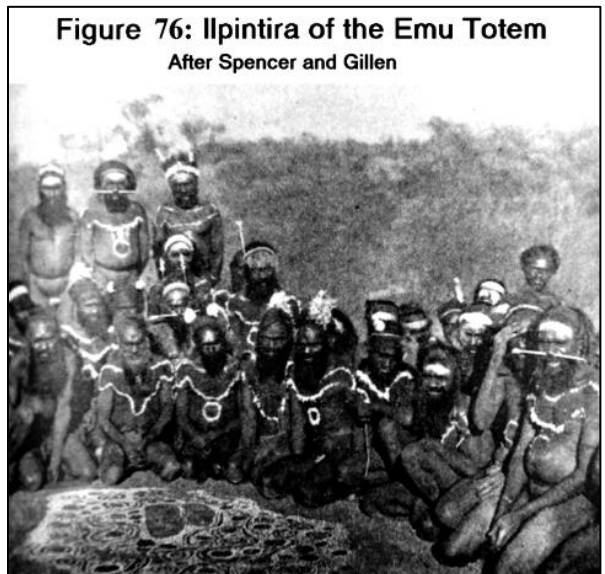
A fire is built, around which they sing of the Witchetty Grub for some time, and then the other moiety is permitted to leave the *umbana*. The men then rub red ocher all over their bodies, obliterating their *ilkinias* and facial painting, and the *impichiuma* of the Witchetty Grub totem is ended.” --S&G: 176

These two, combined aboriginal rites and their consecutive employment of common symbols and props demonstrate the close psychological association between the Deluge and ongoing genetic competition. They reveal the neurotic constellation that I refer to as the Fraternal complex.

Massola confirms that genocidal warfare among the Aboriginal groups was once common. Often it was only the men of another group that were killed. Women and children were carried off. Such warfare blatantly reveals the ongoing side of our Fraternal complex, our hostility toward one another as genetic competitors, for which the Species War was the prehistoric model.

The episode above suggests how moieties replaced totems in regulating marriage. The moieties were once unassociated neighboring hunting bands or tribes that were subject to each other’s genocidal attacks and the wholesale theft of women. Eventually, they agreed to organize themselves into two exogamous moieties. This was a minor advance of civilization that involved renunciation and compensation and the abolition of one form of ongoing fraternal conflict.

A similar dual meaning, the conscious appeal to the totem animal or plant and the unconscious and compulsive repetition of traumatic, Species War events, can be discerned in the *impichiumas* of each of the other totems described by Spencer and Gillen. Rather than





bore you with the details, I'll briefly outline what appear to be the unconscious associations.

### *Impichiuma* of the Emu Totem

As is always the case, the *alatunja* decides when the *impichiuma* is to be held. He and his friends or relatives clear a spot on the ground, open veins in their arms and allow the blood to flow profusely over the ground until a large patch about three-yards-square is saturated with it. The blood dries, forming a hard, impermeable surface upon which a design is painted. Such a painting, of one of the *ilkinia* or totemic designs, is called an *ilpintira*. (Here is another very similar word to an Indo-European equivalent! The Spanish word for painting is *pintura*.)

Spencer and Gillen apparently had some difficulty seeing an Emu within this painting. They devote almost an entire page (their p. 180) to describing how the painting is supposed to correspond to the Emu. Now I'm no art expert. I can't tell a Picasso from a Rembrandt. But looking at the picture, Figure 76, below, I have no difficulty discerning what appear to be *the smoldering coals of a dying fire*. The *churinga* of the Emu totem are brought out and placed by the fire and the men squat around the fire chanting as the *alatunja* explains what the *ilpintira* is supposed to represent. (The alleged meaning of this painting is not obvious to them either!)

All the *churinga* are rubbed in red ocher. Three of the longest ones (about four feet long) are decorated in concentric circles of red and yellow ocher, white pipe clay and tipped with Emu down and the red tail feathers of the black cockatoo.

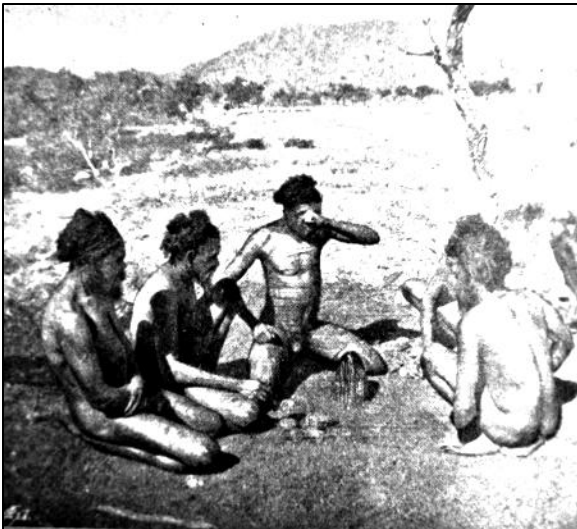


Figure 77: Impichiuma of the Hakea Flower Totem  
After Spencer and Gillen

These are stood up, supposedly to represent the Emu; but they could also be a man. Of course, the women and children are not allowed to see the painting, and it is carefully rubbed out and covered up when the two-day ceremony is over. (You also put out a fire, especially on the dessert, by covering it up with sand and dirt.) When not in use, it is covered up with branches. I suggest that it is the barbecue of *Homo erectus* that is being represented here. (Remember the Gilgamesh revelations?) Omnipresent, *Homo erectus*

spirits toward whom they are guilty and fearful are being appealed to for Emus. These spirits are in the form of the Emus that the Arunta hoped they would pass into.

### *Impichiuma* of the Hakea Flower Totem

This flower is steeped in water to make a sweet tea. It grows on a tree with spiny needles that are evergreen. As such, it is symbolic of eternal life, of something that does not die; and unconsciously the Arunta would like to deny the death of *Homo erectus*. (“As it was in the beginning” ...liedee lie.)

The ceremony is held around an ancient Hakea tree by the side of which is a shallow pit. In the center of the pit is a small projecting and much-worn block of stone that is supposed to represent a mass of *Unjiamba* or Hakea flowers, the tree being the *nanja* of an *Alcheringa* woman.

It looks like the head of a buried body protruding from the ground. See Figure 77.

“Before the ceremony commences the pit is carefully swept clean by an old *Unjiamba* man, who then strokes the stone all over with his hands. When this has been done, the men sit around the stone and a considerable time is spent in singing chants, the burden of which is a reiterated invitation to the *Unjiamba* tree to flower much [*H for Homo erectus to return*], and to the blossoms to be full of honey. Then the old leader asks one of the young men to open a vein in his arm, which he does, and allows the blood to sprinkle freely over the stone, while the other men continue the singing. The blood flows until the stone is completely covered, the flowing of blood being supposed to represent the preparation of *ab-moara*, that is, the drink that is made by steeping the flower in water... As soon as the stone is covered with blood the ceremony is complete.” --S&G: 184-185

Spilling blood upon the “Hakea flowers” (the *Homo erectus* head) is (like the blood-letting to create the canvas for their *Ilpintira*) both repetition compulsion and self-punishment for the original murders.

### The *Impichiuma* of the *Ilpirila* or Manna Totem

*Ilpirila* is a form of “manna” much like the well-known sugar-manna or gum trees but peculiar to the mulga tree (*Acacia aneura*) (S&G: 185).

“About 5 or 6 miles to the west of Ilyaba there is a great boulder of gray-colored gneissic rock, curiously marked with black and white seams, at which the men of the *Ilpirla* totem perform the ceremony of *impichiuma*. On the top of the boulder, which stands about 5 feet above the ground, there is a similar stone [*H similar in color and type of material*] weighing about twenty pounds, together with smaller ones, all of which represent mosses of *Ilpirla*.” --S&G: 185.

Obviously, the two major rocks, one atop the other, look more like a man than a tree. Alternatively, the two large rocks could represent a woman; all the small rocks would then be her children. The ceremonial rubbing of the rock that forms the head (of *Homo erectus*) with other rocks is allegedly intended to produce more of the sugar gum dust, but to this simple-minded taxi-driver it appears to simulate hitting someone on the head with a rock.

#### Other *Impichiumas*, Briefly Described

Blocks of stone standing on end in a hilltop depression look more like men than “honey ants.” After a neurotic ritual relating to these “ants,” a war party journeys (single-file again) to a hut where occupants fall as if dead when the leader enters. Notice how the symbolic killing of the other moiety, following the Deluge ritual, again shows the close association between the prehistoric and the ongoing components of the Fraternal complex.

In another, a rock ledge, approximately ten feet high and thirty feet long in a cave that is twenty feet high, symbolizes stacks of bodies. More bloodletting is also referred to.

Any of you who are still not convinced of Native Australian involvement in the Species War, in and enroute to Australia, will be after you read about their initiation rites.

#### INITIATION RITES

The ceremonies of the central tribes are much more elaborate and last longer than those of the eastern and southeastern coastal tribes. (Cf. S&G: 212) Conclude either that the central tribes were the first to enter the continent and had more encounters with *Homo erectus* or that they differed in their subsequent contacts with unfamiliar peoples. Secular contacts with other primitive peoples would have, like repetition compulsion, ameliorated their Deluge trauma and dimmed Species War memories. Contacts with moderns also caused their traditions to be

disparaged. Among the Arunta and *Ilpirra* tribes there are four ceremonies that may take the novice till the age of 25 or 30 to complete:

- 1) Painting the boy and throwing him in the air,
- 2) Circumcision or *lartna*,
- 3) Subincision or *ariltha*,
- 4) And *engwura* or fire ceremony.

Of course, those of you who have read the foregoing chapters -- and you really shouldn't be reading here if you haven't -- will recognize immediately that it is ceremony 4), the *engwura*, that is exclusively concerned with the Deluge events. We shall review the first three initiation rites more briefly than the *engwura*. Also, although there are initiation rights for young women, they are less elaborate and will also be only briefly reviewed.

The knocking out of teeth is still prominent among the eastern tribes; but, as of Spencer and Gillen's day, it was already optional among the central tribes. Like circumcision, it is symbolic of castration and it tells the young man that he must respect the marriage laws of the community, the sexual rites of his father and his genetic competitors.

Details of the ceremonies differ from group to group. What follows is a description, from Spencer and Gillen, of the tribes living along the Finke River. I shall throw in also some of Massola's accounts of the Southeastern tribes.

#### 1) Painting and Throwing the Boy in the Air

Boys 10-12 years old are taken by an assembly of the adults to a spot near the main camp and, "tossed one by one into the air several times by the men, who catch them as they fall, while the women dance round and round the group, swinging their arms and shouting loudly... This over, the boys are painted on their chests and backs" (S&G: 214).

The man who does the painting must be of the opposite moiety -- the one from which the boy's wife will come. He chooses the design. Those in S&G look like *churingas* or throwing sticks painted vertically upon the boys' chests and backs. This dual symbolism expresses the ambivalence of the artist from the other moiety for these new initiates.

The throwing of the boys in the air again symbolizes that the older men are now ambivalent toward the boys (as prospective genetic and sexual competitors), and "in future they must not play with the women and girls, nor must they camp with them as they had hitherto done, but henceforth they must go to the camp of the men" (S&G: 215-216).

Sometime after this throwing up ceremony, the boy's nasal septum is bored and he begins to wear the nose bone. Husbands bore their wives' noses after marriage. Young men are subordinate to older men and women to their husbands.

## 2) Circumcision or *Lartna*

Men of the boy's own clan decide when he is to be circumcised. The Aborigines poetically paraphrase what I have described as the meaning of the rite. They say that the young man "must learn to hold fast to his own fire." That sums it up.

In the kangaroo clan of the *Undiara* area, the young boy is brought by three men to the bush and ordered not to speak and to eat only with permission. This again symbolizes the young man's obligation to submit to the laws and discipline of adult society.

The operation, now performed with a stone knife, was once performed with a fire-stick. The *waninga* in the southern territory of the Arunta and *Ilpirra* is roughly equivalent to the *nurtunga* (ceremonial pole). Both play prominent roles in the *lartna* (circumcision) ceremony. As you will see, this suggests the involvement of both *Homo erectus* and the boy's genetic competitors in the rite. I say this because, as you will see, there is another, larger pole that is associated with the primordial father and the Oedipal Complex.

The bullroarers are whirled before the circumcision is performed. "The noise of the bullroarers represents the voice of the great spirit *Twanyirika*, who has come to take the boy away. This spirit lives in the wild and inaccessible regions and only comes out when a youth is initiated. He enters the body of the boy after the operation and takes him away into the bush until he is better, when the spirit goes away and the boy returns, but now as an initiated man... This belief is fundamentally the same as that found in all Australian tribes." (S&G: 246.) Although the bullroarer would have inevitably become associated with every element of the godhead, I have heard a recording of its droning hum, and I can assure you that it originally represented the voices of the primal father and the lesser *Homo erectus* gods. In another appendix, you'll see this with certainty.

After the bleeding subsides, the circumcised boy is given *churinga* that represent *Twanyirika*. They are always wooden ones. He is made to stand over a fire, the smoke of which is supposed to aid in the healing of his wound. So, in effect the *lartna* is also a sort of baptismal ceremony in which the initiate becomes infused with the spirit of *Homo erectus*. The Aborigines (at least during Spencer and Gillen's day) were without privately owned means of production, a complex division of labor, extensive trade relations, nuclear families dominated by male property owners and a titular head of state. This and the Great Flood not having caused them to black out their prehistory would suffice to explain why the Native Australians never fused the components of the godhead into one. Without that

fusion of the religious components, without monotheism and a redefined and improved relationship with distant neighbors, their intra-clan and intra-moiety relations had not degenerated to the point at which polygamy is impossible. The Arunta were not monogamous when Spencer and Gillen lived with them. Their marriage laws provided each man one principal wife from the opposite moiety. Other groups of women were defined toward whom a man could have secondary or tertiary sexual rights. -- But the newly circumcised boy that Spencer and Gillen are describing is still in no condition to be swinging.

The blood from his wound, which is collected in his shield, is then smeared upon the foreheads and breasts of his mothers and sisters, the women who are taboo to him (and who in a sense brought this upon him). (Cf. S&G: 249.)

The Arunta also have a head-biting rite. The newly circumcised boy is taken into the bush and made to lie face down. Two to five men of both classes are then encouraged to take one or two bites from his scalp or chin, deep bites that cause blood to flow. They believe that this has the effect of making the hair grow strongly, but it too is obviously symbolic of castration and fraternal hostility in general. (Cf. S&G: 249)

### 3) Subincision or *Ariltha*

A bandicoot man performed the currently described ariltha. It is thought to be as important as circumcision. A *nurtunga*, symbolic of the second sin, symbolic of *Homo erectus*, their spears and our genetic competitors, is fastened to the back of a man who represents the victims of the Deluge. He chases a woman from the *Alcheringa*, probably a *Homo sapiens* woman. Dancers come between them. The *nurtunga* is removed from the old man's back and inserted upright in the ground, symbolizing the killing of *Homo erectus* and his ascent into the sky or spirit world. The young man or men about to be subincised, to have their urethras slit open, are told to embrace the *nurtunga* so that it will protect them from pain, so that *Homo erectus* will empathize and come to their aid. (The sexual motives for the Species War are hereby confirmed.) The urethra is then cut lengthwise while the initiate lays face up upon a human tabletop. Blood is collected in a shield and he is informed that he is now a man. The collected blood is poured into a fire. It is given (as a "burnt offering" -- to use the Hebraic term) to *Homo erectus*.

Later, after the subincision has healed and he has thrown his boomerang in the direction of his *Alcheringa* mother's camp, he is made to lie down for a short while on a fire that the women have prepared and covered with green leaves. (Cf. S&G: 259-260) The boomerang throwing represents the First Mask, intended but unsuccessful renunciation of incest. *The fact that these tabu objects of desire are still the objects of greatest desire is represented by the boomerang. If the*

*renunciation were totally successful, he would throw his spear in their direction.* The fire that he lays upon represents the fire that burned the remains of *Homo erectus*. The young man thereby steels himself to the obsessional fears of his people, but this fire is only a small-scale preview of the *engwura* fire that he must lie in.

#### 4) The *Engwura* Ceremony

The *engwura* or fire ordeal is the last that the young man must undergo to be inducted into the tribe. Councils of the old men decide when an *engwura* is to be held. It is thought to strengthen the young men. It is held in a central place so that all groups of the tribe or other tribes -- both men and women -- can attend. Some traveled as much as 200 miles to attend the *engwura* that Spencer and Gillen witnessed and relate below:

“Some idea of the importance of the ceremony may be gathered from the fact that the one that we witnessed *commenced in the middle of September, and continued till the middle of the succeeding January, during which time there was a constant succession of ceremonies, not a day passing without one, while there were sometimes as many as 5 or 6.*” --S&G: 272, [*H emphasis mine*]

During the *engwura* ceremony, the *churinga* from the *ertnatulunga* are stored nearby on top of a platform. Each group attending the *engwura*, from other totem clans, brings some of its *churingas*. This encourages unincarnated ancestral spirits to witness the proceedings, ensures that *Homo erectus* will witness and have the satisfaction of knowing that each *Homo sapiens* man will suffer a fate like their own. Each group in attendance performs its own ceremonies. In some of these ceremonies, the *nurtungas* are covered with blood and *churingas* are hung upon them. “In one form or another it [*H the nurtunga*] figures largely in the sacred ceremonies” (S&G: 284).

A special mound, the *parra*, is made on the *engwura* ground. It is of sandy soil, about 30 feet by 2 feet by 1 foot in height, lined on each side with gum tree boughs, placed end to end. ***Of course, this symbolizes the fire in which the Homo erecti were burned.*** The scarce vegetation is saved, the ambient temperature made tolerable and this Deluge fire is compromised by remaining unlit throughout the four-month long rite.

Of the many *engwura* rites, an obvious second sin rite involves undecorated men dancing under the arched backs of men decorated with red ocher and white emu down. Fastened to the backs of these two are *nurtungas*, which the undecorated men dance under and around until the decorated men are surrounded

by the undecorated who render the former silent and motionless by placing a hand upon them. (Cf. S&G: 284)

Each group in attendance enacts the killing of their totem group of *Homo erectus* victims before the initiate lies in the fire, symbolic of the cooking and elimination of *Homo erectus*. The decorated totem representative, *Homo erectus per se*, imitates the group's totem animal or gathers the group's totem plant that he represents before he is stilled in motion and voice by someone who lays a hand on him. Thus, ends the preliminary part of the ceremony for each totem. (Cf. S&G: 316)

The unconscious, negative aspect of the Aborigines' Fraternal Complex, their bogeyman, is distilled as the *Oruncha*. *Orunchas*, or devil men, their counterparts of A'wade, lived in the *Alcheringa*; and their spirits still reside where they went down into the earth. But they are never reincarnated. The children imagine that the *Orunchas* will harm them if they venture out at night. *Orunchas* have two long horns on their heads, pointing sticks. These pointing sticks are usually made from the thinner forearm bones of the kangaroo. When the *Oruncha* points them at someone, it means that he intends to kill him. (These are the spears of a fierce, half-animal man, which is what the "Devil" is also.) It is believed that the *Oruncha* carries his victim on his horned head until he has finished eating him.

The newly initiated are given their *churingas* and are told of the people who have been incarnated with their *churinga's* spirit. All the old men then press their heads against the initiates' stomachs. (Cf. S&G: 328) They transmit their spiritual knowledge to each new initiate (as food and oxygen once passed through his umbilical cord).

No *nurtunga* or *churinga* is used in more than one *engwura* ceremony. Each ceremony makes use of different ones. Spencer and Gillen thought that this is because each *churinga* and *nurtunga* is, "symbolic of one particular object with which the ceremony is concerned" (S&G: 346). More specifically, each *nurtunga* represents a *Homo erectus* hunter-gatherer band that can be killed but once.<sup>60</sup>

---

<sup>60</sup> The *nurtunga* are much like the *inua* sticks of the Ainu (hirsute, dolichocephalic, aboriginal people of the Japanese Islands who became confined to the northern-most island of Hokkaido and have few present-day, pure-blooded survivors). These hardwood sticks, with curled wood shavings attached to their tops, are offerings to the gods. From his excavation of early Ainu archaeological sites in southern Japan, Munro provides an interesting insight: the *inua* were substituted for clay figurines that were themselves substituted for the victims of human sacrifice (Munro: 28-29). "The trees from which the *inau* or evil spirits are made are credited with special magical power. One is the thorn or **arrow-bearing tree**, *Acanthopanax ricinifolium*" (Munro: 32, *H emphasis mine*). Everything about the Ainu religion, recorded by scholars in the early to mid-twentieth century, will be perfectly clear to anyone who reads *Decoding the Deluge*. And this is so despite the decimation of their priesthood by protracted warfare. In the 8th and 9th centuries



Here's another example of the symbolic killing of *Homo erectus* that these pre-engwura ceremonies represent.

“At midnight, the *illpongwurra* [*H initiates who have passed all but the engwura, the lying in the fire test*] were aroused to witness a ceremony of the white bat totem. Eleven men were decorated. This is the greatest number that we ever saw taking part in any one of these sacred ceremonies [*H as decorated Alcheringa ancestors*]. Ten of them stood in a row facing and parallel to the *parra*, and they were all connected by a rope of human hair-string, which was decorated with pink and white down, and was passed through the hair waist-girdle of each man. Four of them had *churingas* on their heads, and were supposed to represent special gum trees near to Imanda, the long rope being the roots of the trees; the other six were supposed to be bats resting in the trees. The eleventh man was free from the rope and his decoration differed from that of the rest, who were ornamented with white pipe-clay and red and white down, while he had a long band of charcoal on each side of his body, outlined with red down. He began dancing up and down in front of the others, holding his body in a stooping position, and making all the while a shrill whistling noise, like that of a small bat as it flies backwards and forwards. In his hands, he carried twigs that he rubbed together. The ten men meanwhile moved in a line first to the right and then to the left, and with the other man dancing in front of them the whole formed a curious scene in the flickering light of the campfire. At a

---

A.D., the Japanese eliminated the “barbarian” chiefs. In sharp contrast is Japanese mythology. (See for example J. Piggott.) Most of the universal sacred symbols are there, but they are not assembled in a way that makes sense to the scientist. For example, the chief god, the goddess *Amaterasu*, is referred to as the sun goddess. How likely is it that a female led our Japanese ancestors or *Homo erectus* parent species in a Japanese campaign of the Species War? Not very. It is much more likely that a female Japanese ancestor became revered for efforts that averted the first or second sins. In the Neolithic, after the Japanese conquered and “displaced” the more traumatized, neurotic and aboriginal Ainu, “sun goddess” was one of many widespread religious concepts and symbols that they adopted and adapted (somewhat blindly) to legitimize their land tenure through identification with the aboriginal people. Nor was the very popular Ainu goddess of the hearth, Kama Fuchi, a “sun goddess.” In fact, the exclusion of Ainu women from all but one religious ceremony, *the ceremony of the Falling Tears*, confirms that, in Paleolithic Japan too, the Species War was predominantly a male event. (Cf. Munro: 43) When, after much pains-taking research, the full extent of the Ainu origin of Japanese religious and aesthetic forms is finally known, I have no doubt that much of the still-extent, fanatical, Japanese preoccupation with tradition and being polite will be seen as a reaction formation to the prehistoric shame of conquerors. We are all descended from savages, and our civility is only a thin veneer.

signal from the leader of the *engwura* two men went out from the audience, each carrying a long spear which was held behind the line of performers and used to touch the back of each man --the signal for them to stop. Each performer in turn touched with a piece of down, first the stomach of the leader, and then that of the old white bat man to whom the ceremony belonged.” --S&G: 352

The above ceremony is one of the last before the fire lying. True to Freud’s law of repression being gradually lifted and impulses and identities revealing themselves, it is one of the more explicit of the numerous ceremonies. Notice that the “leader” of these “bat-people,” by rubbing sticks together, is showing (as we’ve seen many times above, in the rituals of other peoples) that *Homo erectus* gave us fire. This “leader,” who dances bent-over and who has long, charcoal and red stripes on each side of his body, is, like the *Oruncha*, a *Homo erectus* still at large. He is bent over because he is in hiding. The charcoal stripes show that he is evil. He is one of the “bats” that whistle because, like the cyclops, he has acquired the bow and arrow. Four good (dead and propitiated) *Homo erectus* gods and six Species War victors (also “bats” with white stripes) are bound together by *Homo sapiens* magic. The magic compels them to form a cordon and sweep the remaining *Homo erectus* still at large from the land and into the [parra](#) (that is in front of them and which as we’ve already seen symbolizes a Deluge bonfire) as our *Homo sapiens* ancestors actually did in their late Species War campaigns. The ceremony ends when each of the performers is touched (killed) with a “spear” and imparts his spiritual (historical) knowledge to the owner of the myth (by touching his stomach).



Figure 78: Old cannibals in search of their killers, an Arunta ritual  
After Spencer and Gillen

Another ceremony, near the end of the *engwura*, is that of two old spirit men, *Homo erectus* cannibals of the *Alcheringa*. Their white heads and the whitened circles on their legs represent preferred cannibal fare where they had been eaten. They come to life again and go about in search of their killers. (See Figure 78.) This and the fire lying, of course, represent the ultimate obsessional fear of the Aborigines quite clearly. The natives vaguely understood that all these rituals had something to do with cannibalism. (Cf. S&G: 368)

Here's one that supports my earlier interpretation of the *Achilpa*, or wild cat men, the totem ancestors common to all the central tribes. *In one ceremony, the initiates, representing wild cat men, "attack" the women and children by throwing fire sticks over their heads (symbolizing sexual attack and attack with spears). They then deliver to the women the churingas of the wild cat men ancestors and finally lie down motionless upon the parra (the Deluge bonfire). As they are attacked and as they (the Achilpa) lie, feigning death, all night long, two sacred churingas that have been bound together are raised up and down in the arms of three old men. Spencer and Gillen say the women represent an entire camp of men and women in the Alcheringa. (Cf. S&G: 369) The churinga that are raised up and down represent the spirits of the Achilpa. They are ambivalent, in the air, god-like.*

Here's the one that confirms my earlier interpretation of *churingas* as *Homo erectus* corpses that were burned in Deluge bonfires. In this ceremony, about 30 short sticks made of gum tree wood were prepared. Each was about an inch in diameter and from 6 to 9 inches in length (roughly the size of the longer *churingas*). *They were carefully rubbed with red ocher (as are all wooden churingas) and then later in the day the leader hid them in the loose soil forming the parra (fire) mound. Superego censorship was still very much at work: these sticks were said to be frogs. (Cf. S&G: 370)*

The *kavava* erection marks the beginning of the end of the *engwura*.

"It is the most sacred ceremonial object of the tribe, and its origin is evidently of very early date indeed. The striking features of it are, (1) that it must be cut down [*H from a straight gum tree trunk about 20' in length*] and brought into camp without being allowed to touch the ground [*H Of course. This is not striking at all. This cannibal pole/ primordial weapon/ancestral family tree is sacred due to its close association with the gods, especially the primordial father and mother at the top of it.*]; (2) that it is completely smeared all over with human blood [*H also completely understandable*]; and (3) that its decorations consist of the various ornaments that are worn on the head of a man when fully decorated, so that it is really a wooden pole the upper end of which represents a human head [*H naturally*]; and (4) that it is only erected towards the close of the *engwura* when the men gather together round it and the painting of the backs of the younger men with designs of various totems is done by the older men."

--S&G: 629

Of course, the *kavava* and the original sin rites come at the end of the *engwura* because the Arunta are going back in time, and this represents the earliest, primordial trauma. As with the family tree and the cannibal pole (to heaven), the *kavava*'s erection also invites any spectating spirits that are not content to remain in the *ertnatulunga* to make their exit. Lest I sound too overbearing, be it noted that Spencer and Gillen did not have the advantage of Freud's insight. *Totem and Taboo* was not published until 1913. Given this limitation, the following insights of theirs are somewhat remarkable:

“Unlike the *nurtunga* and the *waninga* [*H the name used by other tribes for the nurtunga*], of both of which there are various forms, there is only one form of *kavava*, and this is common to all the totems... We can see at all events an interesting gradation in regard to the sacred objects of the Arunta tribe; there is first of all the *churinga* which is representative of the individual [*H and of an individual Homo erectus*]; secondly, the *nurtunga* or *waninga* which is representative of a number of individuals who collectively form the totemic group [*H of Homo erecti, a particular band of hunter-gatherer victims*]; and thirdly, there is the *kavava* which represents, as it were, the totems collectively, or it may be the great ancestor from whom they all originated and around the representative of whom they all group themselves on the only occasion on which the *kavava* is ever used.” [*H It's the latter.*] --S&G: 629

Notice too that the *kavava* pole is much taller than the *nurtungas* for several reasons. Obviously, the primal father is individually more important than other individual *Homo erectus* ancestors (Deluge victims), and larger trees probably existed in Australia at earlier and environmentally richer times. But mostly, notice that the primal father is much more remote in time and therefore “higher in heaven” and less concerned with the everyday lives of contemporary people. This remoteness also explains why the Easter Islanders made their *Kavakava* statues (primal father representations like Figure 65, of Chapter 37) so small relative to their Moai statues (of the Deluge victims). This distinction between the components of the godhead is one that primitive peoples still remember. Although I may be the first modern man to fully understand the meaning, I'm hardly the first to notice that they deliberately make these distinctions:

“The great Gods of Polynesia by some reports seem to have been like the Lucretian deities, aloofly at ease in an Empyrean above any

concern for the human world... Deist(s) First Cause who set the world spinning and then sat back; this was so at least for *Tangaroa* [*H the "Creator"*] in Tahiti, where he was regarded as 'too far above the things of this world...to interest himself in the fate of men,' wherefore he had no temples and few worshippers, 'although all were zealous in celebrating his glory, power and works.' And yet the same early authority says that 'the gods were not merely concerned with the important events of life, for there was not a single action, enterprise, or event' with which they were not involved; in effect, a sparrow 'shall not fall on the ground' without divine cognizance [*H Matthew 10.29*]. At all events the gods were very ready to take offence if their due offerings and ceremonials were neglected." -- Spate: 53-54, citing Moerenhout, quoted in Williamson: 22-3

The contradiction's only apparent. *Homo sapiens* didn't sacrifice to the primal father because they didn't kill him. His *Homo erectus* sons did. He's unconcerned with worldly events due to his remoteness and the Deluge that gave him the revenge *that the other Homo erecti still seek*.

In Mexico, we noticed similar distinctions between *Xiuhteuctli*, a primal father and the other (Species War) gods. Spencer and Gillen describe the ceremonial preparation of the *kavava*, the use of feathers to make the top of it look like a human head, the drenching of it in human blood and the hanging of *churingas* from the top of it. Each *ab-moara*, old mentor, led his own young man. All were linked hand in hand. Then the fire lying took place:

"It was a most picturesque scene in the early morning light, for the sun had not yet risen, as the men filed down into the sandy bed of the river, on which they formed a long string reaching across from one bank to the other. On the opposite side, they halted about fifty yards from the group of women and children who were standing behind the two fires, which were now giving off dense volumes of smoke from the green bushes that had been placed on the red-hot embers. The women, bending one leg while they slightly swayed the body and beckoning the men forwards with their hands, kept calling "kutta, kutta, kutta." First, one *ab-moara* man with his *illpongwurra* ran forwards, taking a semicircular course from the men towards the women, and then back again. After each of them had done this, then in turn they led their men, running, up to the fires, and on one or other of these the *illpongwurra* knelt, the *Panunga* and *Bulthara* men [*H one moiety*] on the fire made by the *Purula* and *Kumara* [*H the other*

*moiety*] women, and vice versa, while the women put their hands on the men's shoulders and pressed them down. In this way, the performance was rapidly gone through, not a word being spoken when once the ceremony had begun, each man simply kneeling in the smoke for at most half a minute." --S&G: 380 [*H They're in a hurry to start doing better things.*]

This final ceremony, the *engwura*, depicts the cooking and the burning of *Homo erectus*, with the brave young *illpongwurra* in the role of the victims. They are suffering as *Homo erectus* suffered, stealing themselves to the obsessional fears of their people.

When all the *illpongwurra* are thus transformed into *urliara*, full-fledged men with adult sexual rights, the fires are extinguished and the *kavava* is taken down and carefully undressed.

The final ceremony involves the newly initiated man, *urliara*, feeding his mentor, *ab-moara*. The *ab-moara* then presses a *nurtunga* to his protégé's lips and the ban of silence is broken.

Massola describes the *engwuras* of the Southeastern tribes as being much more severe. There, in addition to tooth extraction, the young men were typically made to walk on hot coals. (Cf. Massola: 82-4) Again, this too is symbolic of the elimination of *Homo erectus* remains and the young man having to steel himself to his people's obsessional fears.

Another Southeastern ordeal was the cleansing of the young man in smoke. Green boughs were thrown on the campfire, and the young male initiates were held in the thick smoke until they were almost suffocated. (Cf. Massola: 85)

Similarly, in the Southeast, the woman's initiation rite involved her being "smoked" for several hours each day. Massola is familiar with some of these ceremonies and reports that at the first sign of a girl's menses, she was taken into the bush by an elderly woman -- not her mother -- and two or three other women. Then the girl was decorated with pigments, arms were bound, both above and below the elbow with possum skin and fur string [*H fur being symbolic of Homo erectus' hirsute body*]. She was made to climb to the fork of a tree. Below her, the old woman made a fire with green bushes, caused smoke to rise around the girl and regulated the fire so that the girl would not suffocate. (Cf. Massola: 92)

A menstruating female is an object of ambivalence, sacred and taboo. She is "up in the air." Like *Homo erectus*, an ambivalent element of the godhead, she becomes associated with fire. The Holy Spirit of the Species War victims enters her as smoke. She becomes married first to *Homo erectus*, compensates for her

(ancestors') sins. The obsessional fear that has been culturally and unconsciously communicated to her is ameliorated. Massola describes the rest in detail:

“Shortly after this cleansing ceremony, the girl was smeared all over with charcoal and white spots were painted on her face and body. She was then led by her mother and two other women to two large fires made from bark -- not wood -- about one hundred yards from the encampment. Her mother helped her onto a log near the fires, where the girl stood holding a branch denuded of its leaves but with a piece of native damper [*H a pasty flour made from crushed seeds*] stuck on the end of each twig. A number of young men then approached the girl. Each threw a small stick at her, walked up and took a mouthful of the damper from the bough she was holding and spat it into one of the fires. Then, while performing a stamping dance, they scattered the fires. Meanwhile, the two attendant women picked up all the twigs that had been thrown at the girl by the young men and, having made a deep hole, buried them. Next, they took the bough from the girl, and with it they gathered the scattered coals and burnt the bough.” --Massola: 92

Interpretation: the young woman holds a branch indicating that she is a part of our family tree. She represents our ancestor *Homo erectus*, dead (white) and her body charred (black) from the fire. The boys, *Homo sapiens*, shoot her with their arrows (twigs). They eat her damper, which is both a *Homo erectus* body and (like seeds generally) a zinc-rich food to enhance their fertility as the gods once did. The arrows are then burned to remove them from sight and not offend the gods. Eating the damper and spitting it back into the fire shows their remorse for having eaten *Homo erectus* and their renunciation of cannibalism. They want to end violence and forget *Homo erectus*; but this and other rituals, neurotic religious symptoms, show that they have been only partially successful in their efforts. These prehistoric obsessions and all our ongoing maladies can only be eliminated by resolving the Fraternal complex as described in the conclusion of this work.

Do you see anything strange about the Aborigines? To this taxi-driver they are the most familiar of all peoples, stick-figure representations of us. Massola (p. 148-56) cites an eloquent statement by Adelaide artist, Alfred Scott Broad in his *Aboriginal Life in Australia*. Here is a portion of that statement that highlights the great tragedy of Aboriginal-European relations:

“We have seen that the aboriginal tribes of southeastern Australia rigorously respected each other’s territory, and that they only entered it uninvited if determined upon revenge.

When the white men first appeared upon their shores, the aborigines did not realize that they had come to stay. They saw that the newcomers were different from themselves, and that they had peculiar ways and strange customs. They had come uninvited; perhaps that was their way, but no doubt they would soon depart and go back to their own country. In the meantime, the white man was treated hospitably by native standards. He wanted to know where there was grass and water: he was guided to it. The aborigines helped the white man to strip bark with which to build his huts, and the yards for his sheep and cattle; they offered him their women. And therefore, according to aboriginal law, the goods the white man had brought with him should also have been shared in exchange for this hospitality; but the aborigines soon found that the white man’s property was not to be touched, and that they were expected to be content with scant handouts of flour and sugar, and worn-out articles of clothing... Friction developed into quarrels, and the aborigines were ordered away from the runs, which often meant from water... Tribal boundaries and sacred ground were not respected by the whites...

Aborigines of the Southeast, decimated by gun and poison, deprived of their sustenance, having no tribal organization or tribal territory left, became wandering beggars. They quickly succumbed to European-introduced diseases, against which they had no antidote or resistance, and to strong drink, often given to them for no better reason than amusement at their drunken actions. The result was the virtual extermination of the native race.”

The Aboriginal Arts Board of the Australian Council assisted in the publication of *Australian Dreaming* as part of its ongoing, commendable and vital effort to present Aboriginal culture through the Aborigines themselves and to bridge the gap between what continues to be two entirely different subjective worlds. To the credit of the Australian government, large tracts of land and sacred natural phenomena, especially in the north and the interior, have been reserved for the Aboriginal people. But these efforts are not enough.

Australia can still succeed where America failed. In addition to implementing the very basic reforms outlined in the conclusion of this work, Australia needs to reconcile traditional and modern religion. To fail in this task is to continue the



demoralization and destruction of the traditional people and the traditional culture; to fail is to further alienate the “modern” (technological) people from their own past and the natural world. To succeed will require educating both peoples with social science and minimizing the K and R class struggle. Success will mean integrating the Australian people, creating one immeasurably richer culture and laying the groundwork for a truly civilized and prosperous Australia. Australians need each other.<sup>61</sup>

---

<sup>61</sup>As of November of 2008, almost twenty years after this chapter was first written, the Australian government of Prime Minister Kevin Rudd began undertaking some of the broad measures necessary to start repairing relations between the Koories and the Whites. But of course, minimizing K and R is prerequisite to fully and permanently solving any of our problems.

## C. Osiris in the Underworld: Egypt in A Nutshell

*It is not to be expected that so universal and complicated a god [as Osiris] would have remained absolutely unchanged throughout three thousand years of worship. --R.T. Rundle Clark, the Clark referred to in this chapter*

Well, here we are in Egypt. It's almost half a world away, but our taxi, Pegasus, got us here in no time. Of course, we have the additional, spiritual power of our teachers, who have come along for the ride. You're in the back seat, sandwiched between Mr. Curtin and Mr. Rafinesque. Marx and Orwell are on the jump seats, and Freud is riding shotgun. Before we proceed, let's take stock of what we've learned. Folks with same-sex siblings, especially guys, are all heterosexual; unlike modern religions, which are all true, the gods of our pagan ancestors were figments of their over-active imaginations; the first Americans didn't all come from Africa; and *Homo erectus* never made it to Australia. Armed with so much basic truth, how can we go wrong? We're bound to get on Big Brother's A-list. ☺ I'm actually starting to develop confidence in you!

I have already shown you, in Chapter 9, the hymn to the cannibal king (Utterances 273-4 of the *Pyramid Texts*). With all that you know now about mythology, you should be able to reread it and readily see that this king who "hunts and eats the gods" was identified with a *Homo sapiens* leader of the Species War. These utterances, combined with all the familiar half-human- half-totem-animal figures of Egyptian mythology, should suffice to assure you that Egyptian religion conformed to the usual pattern.

Although it offers no major surprises, Egyptian mythology is especially fascinating for the way it tended to become condensed into a single (unconscious) obsessional fear. This obsessional fear was a condensation of their one great, annual, environmental obsession (the fear that the Nile flood waters would be insufficient for agricultural needs) and the fear of *Homo erectus* returning.

Let's first acquire some necessary background information about Egypt's natural environment, history and sources of mythology. Then we'll work through some of the myths and symbols, starting with the less important and ending with the Osiris story.

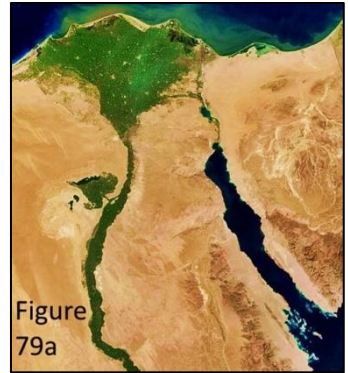
### THE BACKGROUND

I was telling Sigmund about the time Paul Bunyan and I were logging in the Sahara Forest when he interrupted. He shook his finger at me. Shook his hoary head and mouthed,

“You’re a liar. The Sahara’s a desert.”

“Why sure,” I said, “Now.”

Seriously, since you’ve probably heard about the patchwork of canals that lies beneath the Saharan sands, I must tell you upfront: North Africa quickly turned wet and tropical 8 kya. Then, in 4200 B.C., it quickly reverted to desert. So, at the critical times of our prehistory, that we will be concerned about, (75-30 kya, the Species War and 14,634 years BPE, the Great Flood) it was very much as it is now. (See



<https://www.catholic.org/news/green/story.php?id=50427> .)

Egypt is the entrance to the very narrow isthmus (the Sinai “Peninsula” or, practically speaking, the Gaza Strip) that connects Africa with Asia. During the Species War, it would have been one of two or three African exits for fleeing *Homo erectus*. Although not a peninsula, Egypt was (like a few other areas that adjoin isthmuses or mountain ranges) a major theatre of the Species War. This is why our Egyptian ancestors developed one of our most elaborate mythologies and named their country as they did. “Egypt” comes from the ancient Egyptian term *Hik up tah*, which means “House of the Spirit.”

As for the Egyptian environment, before the Aswan Dams were built in southern Egypt during the mid-twentieth century, life for most Egyptians, peasant farmers, remained very much as it had been for over 6 ky. The 4,000-mile-long Nile River, the longest river in the world, provided all the water for drinking and agriculture. Over ninety-six percent of the Egyptian population still lives along the narrow and fertile Nile River valley. There are a few tiny oases in the western desert and a narrow strip of land along the Mediterranean Coast that receives an average of eight inches of rainfall *per year*. The rest of the country receives almost no rainfall. *Except for these places, Egypt is desert.* See Figure 79a.

Once a year, when the Nile overflowed its banks and the water receded, it was possible to irrigate and sow this narrow, alluvial plain. If the flood was great, a large area could be seeded and irrigated and a bountiful harvest could be expected. If the overflow was small, tens of thousands could die of famine. As Professor R. T. Rundle Clark told us in Chapter 16, the river (*i. e.* drought) was the ongoing source of Egyptian anxiety.

The chronological table in the following footnote provides an overview of Egyptian history.<sup>62</sup> Use it and Figure 79b as glossaries for this chapter. I will

---

<sup>62</sup> **TABLE 5, Egyptian Chronology** (all dates approximate and B.C.)

---

12,000, First traces of hunter-gatherers living in the Nile Valley.

5200, Peoples from the west settle the oasis at Faiyum, producing wheat, barley and flax. Agriculture spreads throughout the Valley, which becomes a chain of *nomes*, settlements of several villages each.

### **3500-2686, EARLY DYNASTIC PERIOD**

3100-2890, 1ST DYNASTY: The 22 *nomes* south of what became Heliopolis (at modern day Cairo) unite to become Upper Egypt. King Menes proceeds to unite the 20 *nomes* of Lower Egypt and establishes capital at Memphis. Calendar and hieroglyphic writing are developed. High God is Horus as a falcon.

2890-2686, 2ND DYNASTY: South and North virtually fall apart after 200 years of severe drought

### **2686-2181, OLD KINGDOM**

2686-2613, 3RD DYNASTY: Strong state develops during long period of adequate rain and inundations. Monarchy gains prestige. Priests begin to systematize religion at Heliopolis. Royal tombs, once humble pits topped with sand mounds, are now multi-story, step-pyramid complexes. Atum is the High God. Presumed time of the development of the Osiris myth.

2613-2494, 4TH DYNASTY: Great Pyramid Age at Giza and elsewhere. Royal family wields absolute power through massive bureaucracy. Zenith of achievements in art and architecture. Ra becomes equated with Atum at Heliopolis.

2494-2345, 5TH DYNASTY: Ra's first temples appear near pyramids. Heliopolis priests gain power and write *Pyramid Texts*. Pharaoh, once Ra/Atum and Horus, is demoted to Horus and "son of Ra/

Atum" by High Priest at Heliopolis. Kingdom is in shambles. Osiris myth gains popularity.

2345-2181, 6TH DYNASTY: Egypt reels under a top heavy with tax-exempt and unproductive nobles, priests and a steadily weakening monarchy.

### **2181-2040, FIRST INTERMEDIATE PERIOD**

2181-2040, 7TH-10TH DYNASTIES: Society crumbles, probably sparked by famine and overpopulation due to its protective but massive, unproductive and burdensome monarchy. (Pyramid-builders and soldiers only diminish the grain supply.) *Seventh* Dynasty kings powerless to stop warlord fights over territory. Anarchy breaks out followed by 9th and 10th Dynasties at Heracleopolis and rival 11<sup>th</sup> Dynasty at Thebes. (Former won out.) Competition, intellectual freedom and weak central government spawn middle class. Early *Coffin Texts*. Osiris rites adopted by commoners who build well-furnished tombs and attend Abydos and other cult centers.

### **2040-1786, MIDDLE KINGDOM**

2040-1786, 11TH-13TH DYNASTIES: Nebhepetre Mentuhotep of Thebes conquers North, reunites State and deprives *Nomes* of their prerogatives. Subterranean wings built for royal funerary compounds, miming Osiris myth. Reorganization of bureaucracy and expansion of trade with Asia, Crete and "Atlantis." Official High God now Amun. Middle class grows. Nubia conquered for its gold.

### **1786-1567, SECOND INTERMEDIATE PERIOD**

1786-1567, 14TH-17TH DYNASTIES: Egypt invaded by "Hyksos" ("foreign rulers") from Syria and the Palestine, bringing horses, bronze and improved irrigation methods. They found Tanis, but reigns are short and burdensome. Egypt declines as officials fight over and manipulate succession.

### **1567-1085, NEW KINGDOM (founded by Thebians)**

supplement the table with observations about Egyptian politics and religion as we describe the religious data sources of Egyptologists.

Egyptologists have three major sources. All these sources are funerary, for -- as you'll see -- the ancient Egyptians were obsessed with hopes of resurrection. (The resurrection expectations of every individual were also repetition compulsion for the unconscious, national, obsessional fear.) The funerary sources are the *Pyramid Texts*, the *Coffin Texts* and the *Book of the Dead*.

The *Pyramid Texts*, which were introduced in Chapter 9, consist of the magical utterances that were carved on the pyramid walls of King Wenis and later (6th Dynasty) rulers. This oldest body of Egyptian literature dating to 2500 B.C. was composed from hieroglyphs, a picture-writing that the Egyptians read horizontally and started developing some hundred years before the union of the Upper and Lower Kingdoms in c. 3,500 B.C.

Throughout the Old Kingdom Period, the power of the kings (pharaohs) grew, as did that of the high priests of Heliopolis (located at modern-day Cairo, the east bank of the Nile where it splits into forks that form the delta, at the junction of the two former kingdoms). The king became an absolute autocrat, the source of all authority and, through his extensive bureaucracy, the maker of all decisions political and economic. It was palace socialism that enabled the Fourth Dynasty to extract virtually the entire social surplus and devote it to the construction of Egypt's most massive pyramids and underground necropoli. Here preparations for the afterlife exceeded even those of the Incas who were sometimes buried with



1570-1320, 18TH DYNASTY: Hyksos expelled. Zenith of Egyptian Imperialism. Much tribute flows in. Southern Nubia and Palestine re-conquered. Bureaucracy large, fat and loyal. Kings appoint priesthoods that support monarchy. Priests acquire 1/3 of arable land. Amun theology elaborated and gains royal favor. Akhenaton (Amenhotep IV) abolishes cults, declaring Aten (sun disk) God. Rules efficiently but absolutely with Nefertiti from newly built Tell el-Amarna.

1320-945, 19TH-21ST DYNASTIES: Successors of Akhenaton return to Thebes. Polytheism returns. The Hebrews claimed that they and Moses left Egypt in this period. Amun subsumed by Osiris myth, which regains its mass popularity. Libyan semi-nomads and Sea Peoples are repulsed. Revival of poetry and lore. Merging of Amun/Osiris mythology and State. But New Kingdom is weakened by warfare and corrupt, hereditary officials. Empire shrinks. Royal programs fail. New Kingdom ends under Ramses XI in civil war. With minor exception of the 25th (Cushite) Dynasty, Egypt fades permanently as a world power.

property, women, an ample supply of food and drink and officials and servants from each occupation (Cobo: 250-251). Not only was the Egyptian belief in resurrection encouraged by the national obsessional fear, but also (as you'll see) even the design of the pyramids was derived from a popular replacement idea for the national obsessional fear.

Listen to Campbell describe these "subterranean real estate developments" wherein mummified kings -- and later, governors, wealthy merchants and large land-holders -- took with them everything necessary to continue their leisure life-styles in the underworld:

"For almost a thousand years, the 3rd millennium B.C., when the pharaohs died or were sacrificed -- the wife, the harem(s), attendants, and guards were interred with him. The contorted positions of the bodies reveal that attendants, guards, and wives were generally buried alive.

At least one necropolis, of a Nubian governor, contained 400-500 bodies. He and his court were buried long after the close of the 5th Dynasty when the pharaohs were no longer supreme gods, but the sons of the supreme god, Ra. By that time circa 2000 B.C., the custom of human sacrifice at royal burials had been supplanted by rituals in which the pharaoh had only to mime the regal sacrifice. But this Nubian governor, controller of the main trade routes and the gold supply of Upper Egypt, was something of a purest. In those days, as now, people dwelling in the provinces, far from the wickedness of the great cities, tended to favor and foster the good old-fashioned religion with its good old-fashioned ways." --Campbell, 1962: 58-61

The Fifth and Sixth Dynasties, whose Heliopolis priests gave us the *Pyramid Texts*, built smaller but more numerous pyramids as the Old Kingdom began to fall apart.

"The old society...crashed in ruins about 2250 B.C. after the death of Pepi II, the last effective pharaoh of the Sixth Dynasty. There followed a time of civil war and general confusion, marked not only by feudal anarchy but by a social upheaval as well. The various districts became virtually independent principalities, Asiatic invaders appeared in the Delta, and, perhaps most significant of all, the social tensions that had been checked during the Pyramid Age, now broke out into open violence between the people and the old aristocracy.

The basic optimistic assumptions of the old order were shattered.” --  
Clark: 124, 68

So, did the insurgents demand an end to these insane and ruinous funerary practices, practices inspired by the immensely popular Osiris mythology? Far from it: “The scribal and military classes clamored to share in the Osiris fate after death but without the materialist trappings of tomb endowments and funeral estates” (Clark: 124). So, apparently, it was not so much the belief in afterlife *per se* that was shattered, as the belief that the pharaoh could help the people during *his* afterlife. We can marvel at their obvious insanity; but if there are people one thousand years from today, what will they think of us?

In describing the social upheavals of ancient Egypt, let’s not exaggerate their impact. We are examining one of the most stable and unchanging societies that the world has seen since the Paleolithic. Bounded by deserts and large water bodies, ancient Egypt was a world virtually unto itself. Unlike Mesopotamia, it was relatively free of invaders. For approximately 3,000 years, the values, concepts of social order, monarchical system of government and – especially -- the *popular* religious symbols of ancient Egypt remained basically unchanged.

The second major source of those symbols and their meaning are “spells” that were written after the *Pyramid Texts*. This source is in the *Coffin Texts*, which were compiled from vertical columns of cursive script, developed from the hieroglyphs and called hieratic. The hieratic spells were written on the wooden coffin walls of commoners during the First Intermediate Period. The *Coffin Texts* are the earliest and most intelligible of the many spells in the *Book of the Dead*. See Figure 79c, below.

The remainder of the *Book of the Dead*, the third major source for Egyptian religion, is mostly a compilation of papyri sheets of hieroglyphs and colorful

illustrations

(vignettes). Many of these are in the British Museum. A few of the spells of the *Book of the Dead* were written on linen or vellum and one on leather. They date from 1450 B.C.

*Nomes* were the earliest city-

Figure 79c: Coffin panel with hieratic text



states that sprang up along the Nile. Once unified, they were administrative divisions. As a summary for the whole history of Egyptian church and state, consider this. Barrett informs us that the chieftains of the *nomes* all lived close to the temple of the tribal god or goddess, thus combining from an early date secular with religious authority. (Cf. Barrett: 11) This combining of authority implies that the kings were already no longer being sacrificed, and their principal functions were becoming secular. Even a cursory survey of Egyptian history (which is all I'm good for and for which the traditional source is Manetho, the Greek historian) suggests that the kings invariably tried to enhance their authority and secure their positions by trying to retain the divinity of their earliest precursors. Realistically speaking, this simply wasn't possible--mainly because the original gods were, and their regal substitutes were symbolically, all *Homo erectus*. They were all losers who had ultimately to be killed, and the populace was *unconsciously* aware of this. Realistically speaking, the most divine title that any king might appropriate was that of Sun God, leader of the *Homo sapiens* forces that won the Species War. (Horus and Ra were, as you'll soon see, sun gods.) But even this title could not possibly be hereditary because -- as everyone had to unconsciously know -- the pharaohs were the *functional heirs* and not the *familial descendants* of the sun gods. Irrespective of all wishful thinking and propaganda, they and their offspring could continue as *functional heirs* of the sun gods only while they were successful in their secular duties and damn lucky with respect to the weather. Power struggles of every sort suggested by the historical outline were decided by this condition.

Focusing upon the religious sphere, we can draw a similar conclusion. All the self-serving attempts of priests, kings and cult-crown alliances (a few of which are recorded) to promote their own fabricated or imported gods or to absorb and eclipse the gods of rivals (usually by pronouncing identities or inventing paternities) did not alter the sacred truth. The population maintained its own symptomatology. Pursuant to Freud's dictum (the tendencies resulting from repetition compulsion), the populace condensed and amalgamated mythology into forms that ever more closely revealed the collective, prehistoric traumas. As I've said, the myth that best described those traumas and ministered to their condensed, obsessional fear was that of Osiris.

You don't have to take my word for it. Listen to our local experts. Speaking of the First Intermediate Period forward, Barrett says, "Not until Osiris became the head of the state religion did the king regain his influence on the spiritual thoughts of the populace" (Barrett: 21). The sun god was largely forgotten as of the Middle Kingdom. Osiris was the focus of prayer and the ruler of eternity who completely displaced Ra as the judge of the dead. Amun, the primeval serpent,



the successor of Atum/Ra as the (official) “High God,” also faded into obscurity; and “from the Middle Kingdom onwards it was the regular practice to address the deceased as ‘Osiris So-and-So,’ as if he were the god himself, and to add the standing epithet ‘true of speech,’ because true speech was characteristic of Osiris” (Frazer: 426). This “true of speech” epithet is like others from around the world. It was originally a reaction formation to our immediate ancestors’ displeasure with *Homo erectus*’ vocal limitations. (Search this work’s e-book for the relevant key words.) “During the New Kingdom, Amun --the successor of Ra as the official High God --acquired an almost monotheistic character, rendering other gods unnecessary. Yet Amun was short-lived. During the last millennium B.C., the popularity of Osiris grew steadily until, under the Ptolemies who ruled Egypt from 323 B.C. to the Roman conquest, he became *Serapis*, the lord of the universe in all its aspects.” (Clark: 98) Osiris unseated every High God of the pharaohs.

Not given to overstatement, Professor Clark said, “Many have supposed that Osiris was the god of the common people as opposed to the more aristocratic Ra, the Sun God of the pharaohs. This may be partially true, for there are signs of religious controversy between the devotees of the two gods.” (Clark: 98) Professor Clark could have bet his life on Osiris’ popular origin if he had interpreted two other facts that were at his disposal and connected them with the one above:

“A symbol of Osiris has recently been found that dates from the beginning of historical times, about 3000 B.C., otherwise there is no specific proof of his existence until he appears in the *Pyramid Texts*, which were inscribed between 2400 and 2200 B.C. In these texts, he is already fully developed.” --Clark: 98

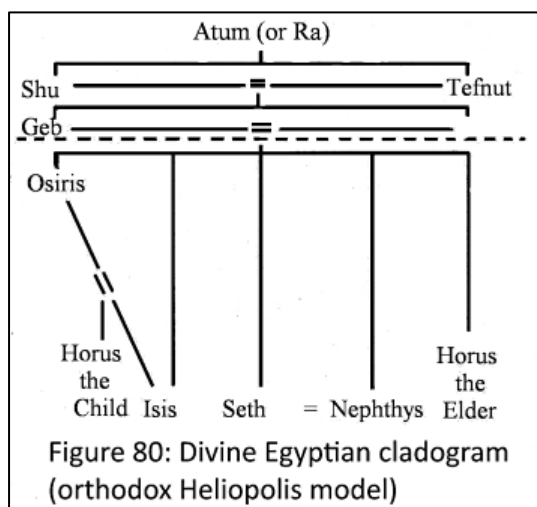
Obviously, Clark was expecting “Osiris” to be an individual of Neolithic vintage!

“When one compares all the references to the mythical events connected with Osiris one is struck by the absence of a canonical version of the legends. In fact, there is no legend at all in the modern sense. Such may once have existed, for even the early texts are full of allusions to lost myths; but instead of written legends, we have a number of motifs that conform to a pattern.” --Clark: 107

Both statements unwittingly support what I’ve been telling you. There was no early canonical version of Osiris because this mythology was not fabricated by or for a king. It is an authentic, sacred narrative derived from Paleolithic and

Acheulian tribal, totemic myths and rituals like the ones that we examined during our visit with the Native Australians (Appendix B). Very similar myths and rituals, totemic precursors of Osiris, must have been possessed or shared and adopted by all the various tribes that lived along the navigable, lower 2,000 miles of the Nile. These were myths and rituals that allegorically recited or commemorated their most common, primal deed oral history and Species War experiences. In Neolithic and Bronze Age times, there probably were extended intervals in which the myths and rituals were not subject to the stewardship of either tribal authorities or modern institutions. Yet the most conservative, poor and least-modified sections of the population would have treasured and preserved them (as they did in western Ireland). At the dawn of the historical era, charismatic individuals and local priests (probably not the opportunistic ones who worked

with secular rulers but priests nevertheless) would have been able to assemble and condense these tribal myths and rituals, recasting the victims in hominid form and preserving the allegorical relationships with no more difficulty than that which we encountered analyzing the Australian impichiumas. These local priests were probably never able to kiss a pharaoh's behind at Heliopolis or scribe their names on pyramid walls; but such anonymous, local leaders are to be credited with preserving



most of what remains of our Egyptian prehistory.

Let's look at some of the mythology. You shouldn't have any trouble with any of it; and you'll clearly see from it how two, pan-Egyptian obsessions condensed into one obsession, a national obsession to which "Osiris" ministered as no one else could.

Clark tells us that although the priests of Heliopolis were only one of many competing cult centers, they were the most influential and successful one. The narrative and the divine pantheon organized at Heliopolis were not regarded as exclusively correct, except at Heliopolis itself; but it was the orthodoxy. (Cf. Clark: 19) The Heliopolis, divine cladogram is shown in Figure 80. In my opinion, it needs plenty of modification. The Osirian chronology, like the Babylonian Creation Epic, evolved until it encompassed both the universal traumas of our

prehistory. It is a complete and sufficient mythology in and of itself. In the evolved Osiris chronology, Seth, the brother of Osiris (a primordial father) became symbolic of *Homo erectus per se*. Seth is alive throughout *Homo erectus*' two-million-year history, while Osiris remains partially alive in the underworld. The only other generation needed, as an above-ground row in the cladogram, should depict Seth, his sister/wife Nephtys and Horus (*Homo sapiens* son of Osiris and Isis). Horus kills his (*Homo erectus*) uncle and aunt and sires the rest of us. I could be wrong, but I've been unable to find any compelling myth featuring "Horus the elder" and suspect he's another child of Heliopolis priests.

The organization of Clark's book (a classic in its field) suggests that he knew that the orthodox pantheon of the Heliopolis priests was divisible into an official High God family and the popular Osirian family. Without consciously knowing the meaning of the Deluge, Clark could have no certainty that these two families offer alternative treatments of the same prehistory and the same obsessions; but they do. That is why I added the dotted, horizontal line to Clark's cladogram. Osiris was not -- as the Heliopolis cladogram suggests -- the son of any known and remembered god. He was the primal father, the "creator" in the original sin sense of the word.

Most, if not all the mythology pertaining to the Heliopolis, High God family appears to be authentic, to derive from our sacred prehistory. Much of it is valuable but it became superfluous. Moreover, the designation of this High God family as ancestral and super ordinate to the Osirian family was priestly and royal initiative from the outset. Let's look at the Heliopolis High God family and some of the other deities associated with other cult centers.

## THE HELIOPOLIS HIGH GOD FAMILY AND OTHER DEITIES

"The principle that is basic to Egypt's cosmology is the Primeval Waters. They are common to all accounts of the origin of the universe, however much they differ in detail... Seas, rivers, rains, wells and floods are parts of the eternal ocean. For the Egyptians, as for the Hebrews, the sky was a 'firmament' that 'divides the waters from the waters...' The waters are, then, 'the waters of life' and the Primordial Ocean, known to the Egyptians as Nun, 'the father of the gods.'" -- Clark: 35-36

This Egyptian cosmology is *statistically* normal: speculative philosophy, driven by unconscious, past traumata. Listen to the rest:

"The emergence from the waters..."

Figure 81: Osiris at Abydos, the cosmic flower or primeval lotus (Papyrus at Ani, British Museum)



Species War. For the Hebrews, like all our *Homo sapiens* ancestors, “creation” concerned (cosmogony began with) the Species War. Please continue Professor Clark:

“The emergence from the waters has four aspects: it signifies the coming of light, life, land and consciousness. The legends of how things began -- the cosmogonies -- differ according to which elements are stressed. The first appearance of light gives the separation of earth and sky -- the myth of Shu, or the first dawn, when the sun arose out of the waters -- often symbolized by a Divine Child with its finger in its mouth. Life means spontaneous movement -- essentially movement upwards -- and this can be conceived in terms of a *rearing serpent or a flower rising from the waters and opening its petals to reveal the first light.*” --Clark: 36

Obviously, Professor Clark didn’t have a clue as for what light, life, and consciousness emerging from the waters were symbols; but we are indebted to him for collecting and cataloging the data. This flower to which he refers was a lily that opened to reveal a god within it. The water lily is rooted to the bottom of

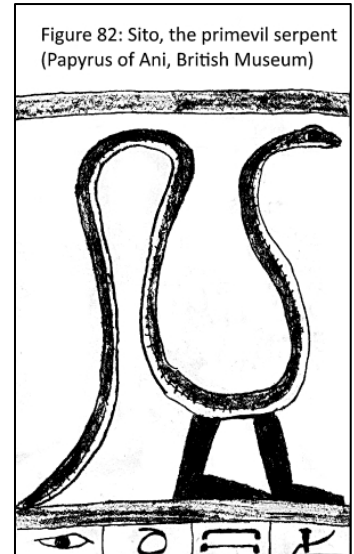
the pond and has a narrow stem that stands straight up in the water. For this reason, it was unconsciously associated with *Homo erectus*, standing in the water up to his neck. Figure 81, shows a typical Egyptian depiction of this god. Clark tells us that the creation myth at Abydos describes the emergence of “an immense lotus bud.” It is luminous even as it rises -- as an early hieroglyph shows. Yet with the opening of the bud there emerges the light of the world and the sweet perfume of the morning air. This is “the redolent flower,” the soul of Ra worshipped at Memphis as Nefertum, “the lotus at the nostril of Ra.” Strictly speaking, the god is not the flower itself but “that great god who is within the lotus bud of gold.” (Clark: 67) Except for the claim that Abydos is the soul of Ra (a *Homo sapiens* sun god), you should have no trouble interpreting that statement.

There’s really no contradiction here because, as we learned in Ireland and Australia, champions and royalty (Ireland) or all *Homo sapiens* (Australia) were thought to have *Homo erectus* souls, to be reincarnations of our archaic ancestors. Abydos was also a city that was apparently named after this figure.<sup>63</sup> Abydos was just north of the Valley of the Kings and ten miles west of the Nile. Egypt’s earliest kings, including all the first dynasty kings (3,000-2890 BC) and the last two of the second dynasty (circa 2686 BC) were buried there in underground tumuli that were precursors of the pyramids. Abydos also became the site of an immensely popular mystery cult and a temple for Osiris, who also was said to have emerged from the waters and who absorbed Abydos. (Creative priests continually embellished the myths of their gods to absorb other gods and their followers.) We’ll have need of a general discussion of mystery cults, social fraternities that preserved Paleolithic rituals and initiation rites, in Appendix F. Let’s examine this cult in more detail. The *Book of Caverns*, composed from the hieroglyphs on the walls of the Osiris temple at Abydos, features, among other gods and divine symbols, a divine, gigantic and primeval serpent. This serpent was described differently at various times and places. He was described as protecting Osiris in the underworld (Clark: 167), as the “Primeval Serpent who raised himself up at the beginning” (Clark: 241), as encircling and protecting the district of Hermopolis (Clark: 53), as the enemy of Ra (Clark: 208-213), as one from whose coils Osiris must break out of to rise from the cosmic mound (Clark: 170) or as the High God Atum, the “Hidden” or the “Invisible One,” who, at the end of time, at the Egyptian Armageddon, will change back into his serpent form and remain alone in the Primeval Waters with Osiris (Clark: 52, 53, 140, 247 and

---

<sup>63</sup> In the early Neolithic, among our traumatized and highly religious ancestors, the norm may have been for cities to grow up around temples and not vice versa.

elsewhere). Any child could ascertain that this Primeval Serpent was a totem symbol for hominids. Ancient Egyptian art shows numerous Primeval Serpents with beards or legs like the one in Figure 82. Most importantly, all the High Gods and Osiris were occasionally identified with this Primeval Serpent. [Ra, who as we'll see is a *Homo sapiens* sun god, and Aten, the monotheistic, solar disk and intellectual property of Amenhotep IV (who changed his name to Akhenaton,) are exceptions.] Atum was the serpent (Clark: 52 and 140 or Barrett: 52). Amun was the serpent (Clark: 53, 241). *Most significantly, Osiris had a serpent hidden within his body because, in his original role, which you'll soon discover to be that of the primal father, he begets all the other Homo erecti* (Clark: 169). *Therefore, like the gods in general who all rise up out of the Primeval Waters,*<sup>64</sup> *the Primeval Serpent -- by all its various names and aspects*<sup>65</sup> *-- is symbolic of all the dead*



<sup>64</sup> Clark: 35-36, 181.

<sup>65</sup> He was referred to as “the Serpent in the Primeval Darkness” (referring to the dark, dimly-remembered days before the end of the Species War). In Thebes, he was Kematef, “he who completed his time” (1.8 million years). Most often he was Sito, “Son of Earth,” or Iru-To, “Creator of Earth.” The only name that seems inconsistent with this definition of the Primeval Serpent as a condensation of the *Homo erecti* is one from Dendera, “Horus the combiner of the Two Lands.” It is inconsistent because Horus was a *Homo sapiens* sun god. (Cf. Clark: 50) But the priests of Hathor at Dendera were exempted from having to maintain any pretense of rationality: “Divine madness freed her priests or followers from the mundane world, and with the correct training they were able to move onto other planes and walk with the gods” (Barrett: 60). However, these Hathor priests at Dendera were hardly the only folks to be confused about Horus. Many modern students of Egyptian mythology have claimed that there were two gods named Horus. The first, they say, was a brother of Osiris. I have been unable to find any myth about a Horus, for which Horus, the son of Osiris and symbol for the Species War victors, does not fit the description. The confusion here issues from scholars who lack a general outline of our prehistory, and, in some cases, even fail to understand mythology as what remains of our highly-compromised prehistory (mistaking it instead for speculative fiction). The same sort of errors may account for the alleged two “Atlas” gods of “Atlantean” (Trojan) mythology. But in this case, because the Athenians were incentivized to deliberately distort that mythology, I won’t even try to sort it out. As we’ll see (e. g. from my Figure 80, ff), the Horus confusion may also have originated with the official priests of the pharaohs at Heliopolis and may have been deliberate. They were opportunists that played fast and loose with mythology. They borrowed foreign names and concepts, created their own gods and – no doubt -- deliberately sought to degrade and demote Osiris and Horus, the popular and traditional rivals of their own gods.

*Homo erecti* most of whose corpses were disposed of in Egypt, in the water. “Osiris,” “Atum” and “Amun” were all Neolithic reinterpretations of this ubiquitous symbol of Pleistocene myths and rituals. The seven genii (Jinn), who in the *Book of Caverns* are depicted as being in the water, are each different epithets for Osiris (Clark: 168). Amun is similarly said to have been created [*H condensed from*] “eight genii” (an army of Jinn, of *Homo erecti*) that were in the water at Hermopolis (Clark: 19, 55). Moreover, the cutting up of the Primeval Serpent (*Apopis*) in at least one of the glyphs of the *Book of Caverns* (taken from the walls of the Osiris temple at Abydos, cf. Clark: 170) would then suggest that the cutting up of Osiris’s body (in one of the first episodes of the Osiris chronicle, the primal deed episode of this chronicle that we’ll examine below) is another, more specific example of a Neolithic reinterpretation of what was once an Acheulian, totem myth or ritual. The earliest re-interpreters would have included this symbol in their hieroglyphs to remind their readers of the traditional myth to which their reinterpretation referred (like the totem heads and symbols that were retained by many of the gods). Later, this Acheulian and Paleolithic symbol was reinterpreted and incorporated for newly evolving aspects of the myth.

That the Paleolithic Egyptians disposed of *Homo erectus* corpses in the river and obsessively feared their re-emergence from the same would also explain the following practice described by Herodotus:

“Whenever anyone, Egyptian or foreigner, has lost his life by falling prey to a crocodile, or by drowning in the river, the law compels the inhabitants of the city near which the body is cast up to have it embalmed and to bury it in one of the sacred repositories with all possible magnificence. No one may touch the corpse, not even any of the friends or relatives, but only the priests of the Nile, who prepare it for burial with their own hands -- regarding it as something more than the mere body of a man -- and themselves lay it in the tomb.” -- Herodotus, Book II, Chapter 90.

Similarly, Pharaoh Pheron was said to have been blinded after hurling his spear into the swollen Nile, “in a spirit of impious violence” (Herodotus, Book II, Chapter 111). So, now we know what the emergence of the gods from the waters really symbolizes. All the other, rational interpretations of the emergence from the waters, the interpretations cited by Professor Clark, [above](#), confuse symbols or symbols for symbols with the real thing. The earliest Egyptian authors of such speculative philosophy (the first naturists whose work climaxed in the efforts at Memphis to create “Ptah” out of Atum and “Sokar” out of Osiris) probably intended to eliminate obsessional neurosis by substituting rational explanations

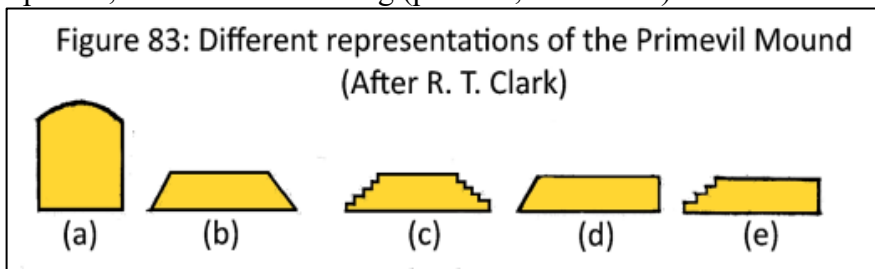
for it. If this were possible, religion would have disappeared as quickly and as easily as speculative philosophies are invented. OK Professor, you're on again.

“Land means the emergence of the Primeval Mound, the ‘First Place’ or ‘the Primeval Throne,’ and with it the establishment of order and direction” (Clark: 36).

The throne, order and direction are, of course, all results of winning the Species War and unconsciously result from the *Homo erectus* corpse feared to be beneath the mound. Supporting this, irrespective of the extent of the annual floodwater, were the first signs of life that appeared on the elevated mounds as the river receded. These mounds began to sprout weeds and teem with insect and animal life. Countless generations of Egyptian peasant farmers, associated these mounds consciously with creation and unconsciously with the Species War, the killing and resurrection of “Atum, Amun or Osiris.”

You might think that this sacred Primeval Mound also reflects the sand mounds that covered the Species War bonfires in which other *Homo erecti* were burned. The Phoenix Bird who rises out of the ashes of fire was also popular in Egypt, and he was said to be the messenger from the gods dwelling on “Fire Island” (Clark: 247). But there are two simple reasons why this association was a rare exception in Egypt and North Africa in general.

Figure 83 shows examples of the ways in which the Primeval Mound was represented. Figure 83 (a) could be a river mound or the sand-covered Deluge bonfire or a cave. Stepped and slope-sided Figures 83 (b) through (e) all suggest pyramids. *Professor Clark observed that the pyramids were adaptations of this Primeval Mound. This was an absolutely brilliant observation!* But in trying to fully exploit it, he went in the wrong (positive, “creation”) direction:



“In a sense, it is repeated every day at dawn and every month with the coming of the new moon, perhaps at every recurrent festival. Creation was also repeated in the rebirth of the soul after death and it provided the basic theme in the installation ceremonies of the kings. In fact, most solemn religious rites derived their power or authority



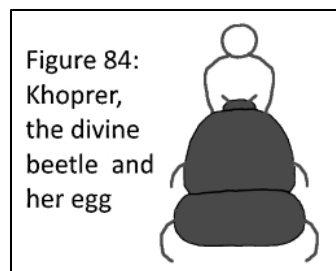
from the pretense that they were in some way a return to the original events of creation.” --Clark: 39

***This obsession with “creation” was an expression of the national obsessional fear of Homo erectus returning to the “house of spirits” by rising out of the waters.*** Other sacred beings that rose from the mound were Ra and Khoprer.

Consider first *Khoprer*. This sacred beetle was, like all *Homo sapiens* alleged or hoped to resurrect, another replacement idea and repetition compulsion for the national obsessional fear. He was “the Becoming One.” He is the scarabaeus beetle that pushes its egg out of the sand enclosed in a ball of its own dung. When the Heliopolis (modern-day Cairo) priests popularized solar mythology, *Khoprer*’s egg popping out of the mound also became a symbol for the sun rising on the horizon in a daily renewal of the act of creation. See Figure 84 and the text of Clark: 36-41.

Clark suggests that *Khoprer* is “God” as he appears in visible form; Ra is

“God” now in the sky; and Atum is “God” the invisible spirit, later the night sun as it journeys through the underworld. (Cf. Clark: 41) This presumes an obsessional preoccupation with the sun and a monotheistic worldview that is of doubtful relevance to most of our B.C. Egyptian ancestors. It is more reasonable to conclude that all these emergences are manifestations (conscious



replacement ideas) of the unconscious national obsession (of *Homo erectus* rising out of the waters). It was the peoples of the temporal and subarctic zones that were obsessed with the sun. They were the peoples who suffered most from the ice cycles. They invented solar mythology. The sun gods of Egypt were imported. Osiris maintained his association with the primeval waters, which is why, among Egyptian commoners, the sun gods of the official priesthoods could never compete with Osiris.

We have had occasion in a previous chapter to describe the maintenance of gravesites and other expenditures upon “the dead” as the obsessional dictates of replacement ideas for repressed, negative impulses and attitudes toward deceased relatives who were otherwise loved. The repressed negative impulse or attitude becomes replaced by “I didn’t love him enough,” which gets replaced by “He doesn’t love me,” which generates the conscious and obsessive imperative to make sacrifices to bones. Of course, the children of the affluent (K class) are the most afflicted with such obsessions. They have greater material incentives for repressing their negative impulses toward their potential benefactors.

This unconscious, neurotic mechanism had been transparent in Sumer. There, for a man to avoid “torment by the demons who rise out of hell” (guilty and fearful thoughts vis-à-vis dead ancestors toward whom his negativity was repressed), he had to pray, “to the ghosts of his family, who, due to proper burial and perpetual offerings maintained for them by their descendants, reposed in peace in Arallû” (the underworld, Langdon: 162).

The Egyptians went even further than the Sumerians in elevating this neurosis to a religious ideology. You’re on again, Professor Clark:

“The kingship in Egypt, like all forms of property, consisted of a duality -- it was based on a relationship between the living and the dead. The king exercised the supreme power in the world. He was the intermediary whereby the divine energies of the universe were made available for men [*H the original Trickle-Down Theory*]. This power he derived from his ancestors, in particular from his father [*H of course*] who for this reason was considered as himself divine. [*H The same sex parent is one of the five, universal elements of the godhead.*] The deceased father in his tomb was the source of the power, called by the Egyptians, the Ka.”

This is logical enough so far, isn’t it? The same sex parent is the nucleus of the superego; he’s the role model, the core of the ideal self. More distant ancestors and the other parent contribute to this superego too, and it is important for us to know as much as possible about our ancestors. Previous generations also provide us -- quite literally -- with their power, with culture and possessions that we inherit from them. But whereas most of us associate the same sex parent with the primal fathers, pharaohs associated theirs with the Species War gods that they were supposed to represent. Moreover, the responsibilities between the living and the dead Pharaohs were reciprocal, and here is where neurosis sets in. The son must publicly assist the father in his fraudulent masquerade:

“[B]ut he [*H the deceased father*] needed the care of his successor, his ‘beloved son,’ to achieve beatification and to function as a ‘spirit.’ The living king was Horus, the son and heir of Osiris. The dead king was Osiris, the dweller in the West, or as the *Pyramid Texts* have it, *Ka hotep* – ‘the Ka at rest.’ [*H Pyramids and tombs were customarily located near the setting sun, on the western side of the Nile, which had become desertified before the early dynastic period.*] If the king carried out the required rites for his father, the

latter could then become ‘a soul,’ which meant that the powers of life and growth would begin again in nature. Osiris was nothing without Horus, just as the latter was no true king unless he could guarantee the fertility of his land. This mutual obligation between living son and dead father runs through Egyptian religion.” --Clark: 107-108

Moreover, the *Ka* of pharaohs was symbolic of something much more specific than the superego or cultural and material inheritance:

“[A] ‘Chapter of becoming Hathor’ (Spell 331) [*H of the Coffin Texts, Hathor being a name for the Earth Mother*] describes how the High God dispatched his eye ‘before he had repeated himself.’ The original procreation of Shu and Tefnut [*H offspring of Atum*] -- here developed as a spitting<sup>66</sup> -- took place in the Primeval Waters. The first pair was not therefore really existent until the [*H missing*] Eye [*H of Atum*] could return them to their creator. *The Eye is personified might, the essential violence that is used to protect the gods and kings against disintegration in the waters or spirit enemies in the created world...* In his original condition the High God had one eye -- that is clear although a Polyphemus figure does not occur on the monuments. An eye of God was the medium of creation on two occasions: when he was alone in the waters, he produced a brood of creatures from his eye; and then, ‘ages after’ ...mankind sprang from his tears.

At first the primeval brood had the forms of serpents, but they were later transformed into the attendant deities of the Sun God [*H after much propitiation and ‘magical manipulation’ of these dead Homo erecti*].” --Clark: 93-95

As we shall soon see, Ra was symbolic of the triumphant Species Warriors in Egypt. He became equated with the sun when solar mythology was apparently imported into Egypt at some time in the Third Millennium. Then Ra, as the sun emerging from the eastern horizon, was associated with the Primeval Mound. Ra and Horus (Ra’s sun god counterpart in the Osirian chronology) *were said to have a single eye, like the Cyclopes, like archers who close one eye as they shoot their arrows*. Listen to this passage from the *Coffin Texts* (VI, 342 i ff, or Clark: 95-98):

---

<sup>66</sup> This brother and sister duo were, by various accounts, expectorated or masturbated by Atum or sexually begotten by Atum and Iusut.

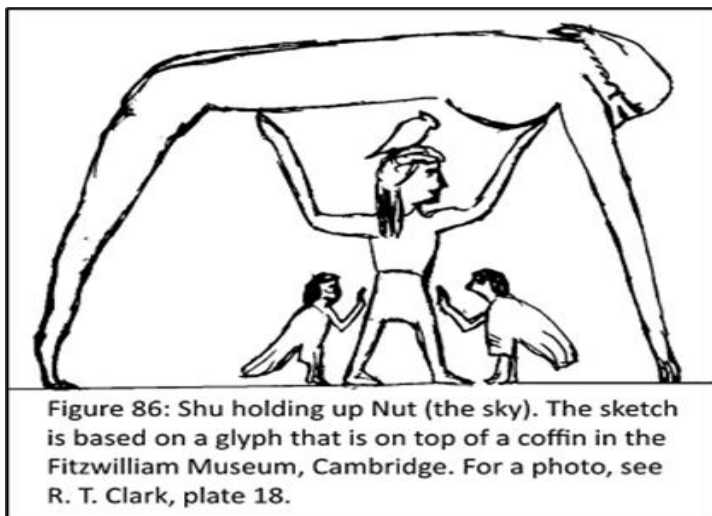
“I [released?] the worms in the Eye of Atum, for I am the sun...  
 I have come to repeat his tears for him.  
 I am Ra (or, the sun) who wept for himself in his single eye  
 That I might cool *the flame in my eye*, cooling the ways with my tears;  
 I am Ra who wept for himself in his single eye to quench *the flame*  
*in his eye.*” --*H emphasis mine*

This eye of Ra is, at the conscious level, the sun. The eye that Horus loses in his Species War combat with Seth, the eye that Horus later gives to Osiris, can be interpreted as the moon. But the flaming, powerful eye of Ra (or Horus), the eye that is also symbolized as a rearing and hooded cobra that spits fire and appears over the foreheads of the pharaohs as part of their crowns, the same eye of Atum that protects Shu and Tefnut, was commonly depicted as in Figure 85. This power of the *Ka originated as -- and unconsciously remained -- the bow and arrow.*

Figure 85: The Eye of Atum, Ra or Horus: This "flaming and powerful eye" that protects Shu and Tefnut (Homo erectus twins that "after propitiation" attend the sun god), that is equated with the "hooded cobra that spits fire," the power of the Ka, has lines that suggest the bow and arrow.



Shu and Tefnut, Atum's son and daughter, were often described as the "spirit and life" and "order" respectively and not much else. But with the next generation of the High God, the speculative philosophy ends and the neurotic symptoms re-emerge:



“In the Heliopolitan legends Shu and Tefnut produced the next pair -- Geb, the earth, and Nut, the sky... [T]he essential event connected with Geb and Nut is their separation. The belief that earth and sky were originally one and were rent apart is one of the basic myths of many races. In Egypt, there is no narrative of this myth; it must be inferred from textual allusions and pictures on the coffins of the late New Kingdom, where it is a favorite theme.” --Clark: 48

All of these myths or images about separating heaven from earth refer to the separation of the two subspecies. The Species War separated us and sent the senior subspecies “to heaven.”

The lack of recorded Egyptian narrative is probably owing to all the Semitic peoples (e. g. Egyptians) having learned it from the Babylonians. They said that, after killing Tiamat, Sumerian Ninurta stretched out his skin to make the sky and what the Hebrews referred to as the “firmament” by separating the waters above the earth from the (Apsû) waters below. (Cf. Langdon: 303-304) Similarly, the Egyptians said that the sky was the belly of Nut’s totem animal, a cow.

As we’ve seen in several other mythologies (e. g. Hebrew, Germanic, Irish and Polynesian) the rainbow was associated with “God’s bow,” the sacred bow and arrow that won the Species War. *Primitive peoples could also view the rainbow -- quite logically -- as holding up the sky.* Now, look at Figure 86, above. Is this representation of the separation of earth and sky (which Clark says appeared in art before myth or ritual) not just another, highly-compromised and creative dream symbol for “the rainbow,” for the bow and arrow? Look at Figure 86; and imagine Shu, the arrow, as being taller. The totem birds are the fletching of the arrow, and Nut is the bow. When her brother Geb, “the Earth,” the brother from whom the father (Shu) forcibly separates her, is depicted, he is lying on the ground and replaces the Earth as the bowstring. *This image of the bow and arrow separating earth and sky is everywhere the equivalent of the “fall from grace” or “from the garden.” It says that the Species War **separated us** from our divine father species and deprived us of His unconditional love and approval.*

There are only two more gods that we must cover before we get to the Osiris family of gods. They are Hathor and Ra. The best Egyptian myth of the Species War features this conjugal pair. “‘Hathor’ was the Hellenic form of the name Athyr, whom the Greeks identified with their own goddess Aphrodite” (Barrett: 59).

Well! If you recall what we discovered about the “aither” in Volume 2, then this is all that we need to know about Hathor. As a symbol for either *Homo erectus* women or for the “witches” that were burned in Deluge bonfires, Hathor qualified as an “Earth Mother.” Her totem symbol was the cow, and she was often depicted

with cow horns or ears. Sometimes a sphere is between her horns because she was the moon goddess. Being the moon and the consort of Horus (the Osirian sun god), she often appeared in the divine barque. (Cf. Barrett: 59-60)

“Ra had many forms and many names. Perhaps the most important of these was *Ra-Harrakte*, who was shown in Egyptian art as a falcon-headed god wearing the solar disc and the uraeus, a rearing cobra with inflated hood worn on the brow of a ruler” (Barrett: 116).

Mankind was said to have been born of this sun god’s tears. Obviously, the Species War victors had much to be remorseful about. Yet, eliminating *Homo erectus* put our *Homo sapiens* ancestors at the top of Earth’s food chain and enabled us to expand our numbers (seemingly indefinitely) at the expense of every other species and the environment.

“Ra himself was the first king of the earth, ruling from Heliopolis with *Ma’at*, his daughter, the personification of truth and justice, by his side. Each day it was said Ra would rise after his morning meal and board his sacred boat. With his scribe, he would travel over the 12 divisions of his kingdom, spending one twelfth of the daylight hours in each of them.” --Barrett: 118

With help from a most reliable informant (Diodorus), we’ll confirm in Appendix D what I have already told you: elaborate solar mythology was imported into Egypt from a certain island empire whose citizens became known as the foremost authorities on the gods. The indented passage that you just read once described -- no doubt in vivid detail -- the *singular* journey of Ra and his boat from one end of the Nile to the other, during which he battled and defeated the Primeval Serpent (or the genii, sea monsters or other *Homo erectus* symbols from which the Primeval Serpent was condensed). Clark, who studied Egyptian mythology in depth, discovered that, “Early texts seem to indicate a sea or river battle. Maybe there was a myth that the primeval gods defeated water monsters from a boat” (Clark, note 19: 272). Bet the pension on it, Professor.

Here’s what apparently happened. The pharaohs and their Heliopolis priests were compelled to import solar mythology to maintain their “spiritual authority” among their foreign counterparts and among foreigners in general. Even the name of their city assures us that their foreign contacts were many: “polis” is Greek for “city,” and “Helios” (as we’ll discover in the next three chapters) is Atlantean for “sun.”

Why was there no elaborate, home-grown, Egyptian, solar mythology? As I already told you, without cold winters, as in the temperate zones, Egyptians didn’t

worry much about the sun disappearing. Moreover, imported Hathor notwithstanding, few if any of the Species War victims of the Egyptians (and of North Africans in general) were buried or burned in Deluge bonfires and associated thereby with the sun. We can surmise that they weren't burned for two reasons. First, all of them lived beside the river or the sea. It was more convenient for most of them to pitch the less edible parts of their Species War victims in the water than it was to burn them. The other reason is that, for these desert peoples, wood was very scarce. They needed the little wood that they had for their boats. Professor Clark's brilliant observation that the pyramids were inspired by the mounds that appear when the waters recede assures us that virtually all the uneaten corpses and inedible parts of Egyptian Species War victims were disposed of in the waters. But why were none of them buried? You've got until Appendix H to figure that out. You already have all the data you need.

What did Heliopolis priests do to amalgamate the foreign solar mythology with the home-grown sea or river battles? They elevated Ra's boat (barque) to the heavens. It couldn't be eliminated because the newly renovated myth depended upon the well-known, Paleolithic oral history of the original for its credibility; and the barque was the symbol by which the original was identified. The resultant myth that has Ra fighting the *Homo erectus* (demons) from his boat in the sky is so strange that Clark, having spotted the absurdity, assumed that some part of the legend had been lost.<sup>67</sup> The explanation for the "lost mythology" is this: because Egyptians burned very few if any of the *Homo erectus* corpses; they had no fantasies of the gods' spirits rising up to heaven as the aither (the orange smoke). Barrett describes their crazy explanation for the elevation of Ra's boat:

"After a time, Ra became weary of his life on earth and longed to leave the responsibility to another. So, Nut assumed the form of a cow and, mounting her back, he was raised up into the heavens. With the sun god's departure, Thoth the moon god [*H Egyptian Hermes, the messenger and god of wisdom and invention*] took his place and ruled over the earth.

From that time onwards, each morning Ra would appear in the east above Manu, "the mountains of the sunrise," and traverse the sky in the Manjet boat, "the barque of millions of years." The crew of the Manjet boat was made up of the gods of creation, wisdom and magic. Horus stood at the helm, whilst Thoth was positioned at the bow,

---

<sup>67</sup> "There is a gap in our knowledge of the creation legends. No Old Kingdom text reveals how God, when he rose out of the waters, removed himself to the heights of the sky where he now lives, far away from the earth he made" (R.T. Rundle Clark: 59).

destroying Ra's enemies as they progressed. Ra wore the double crown of the united Egypt with the uraeus, spitting flames before him.

Deep in the waters of Nun there lived the greatest of Ra's enemies, Apep or Apophis, a gigantic serpent. As the golden barque sailed overhead, the serpent would rise up, attempting to destroy the god, only to be cast down again into the abyss, defeated by the power of the gods. The battle between the gods and Apep was unceasing. During a solar eclipse, however, the Egyptians believed that the barque had been consumed. Storms that obscured the sun also provided evidence that Apep had been successful, if only temporarily.

According to other myths, Ra was born with each dawn and was destined to die at sunset." --Barrett: 118-120

This foreign, upper-latitude revision of Egyptian, Species War mythology was not very competitive with the fully developed, homegrown Osiris chronicle. In addition to all the illogical aspects of the story, by equating the *Homo sapiens* Species War leader with the sun, this myth equates the universal hero with something that, in Egypt, is more negative than positive.

Hathor's mythology includes some of the lost, original Ra material. It still doesn't give a credible explanation of how the boat flew up to heaven, but it amalgamates the original sin and the second sin. Barrett continues:

"When the gods still lived upon the earth, the greatest of them, the creator of all things and king of the gods was Ra. He ruled over mankind and was obeyed by all.

As time passed, however, he grew old and those who had once paid him homage and revered him began to mock him openly. They disdainfully compared his bones to silver, his flesh to gold and his hair to lapis lazuli. Ra grew wrathful, and anger filled his heart when he heard their irreverent voices and the rebellious words upon their lips." --Barrett: 61

Describing Ra as the senior, "creator"/primal father of pre-Paleolithic Boundary times is an attempt at syncretism. Attributing the Species War to the primal father's anger is an attempt to make one epic of man's prehistory and absolve our immediate ancestors of responsibility for the Species War. Mesopotamians, Greeks and Scandinavians (e. g. Sons of Borr) did the same.



“He assembled the gods together, secretly hidden from the eyes of men, deep within the innermost confines of his temple at Heliopolis. [*H The Homo sapiens organized a surprise attack.*]

Ra turned to Nun, his father, the oldest and wisest of the gods and asked for his advice and guidance. Should he destroy humanity, as he so desired? Nun agreed that the rebellious people should be punished for their lack of reverence, *instructing Ra to turn his eye upon them that they might perish for their sins.*” --Barrett: 61, *H emphasis mine*

Confirm my interpretation of the Eye as the bow and arrow. In your wallet, you’ll see the same eye atop a pyramid that is on the back of the U.S. one-dollar bill. The bloodstains of even the prehistoric model for the Fraternal Complex are still all over mankind.

“But when Ra attempted to do so, the people, wise to his intent, ran hastily from his gaze and fled into the desert, concealing themselves amongst the rocky hills of the vast uninhabited regions.” --Barrett: 61

Of course, the “*Homo erecti* still at large,” the “Jinn,” hid in remote places. Next comes the account of the most ignominious and last stages of the Species War in Egypt -- the systematic rooting out of *Homo erecti* from their last refuges, the most marginal lands. You’re expecting another dwarf story, aren’t you? But you’re not going to get one. The Egyptians came up with an even less demeaning version of this prehistory. They imputed the mopping up operations to a woman:

“Observing their escape, Ra devised a new plan. He gave his powerful eye to the goddess Hathor, who, assuming the lion form of Sekhmet, walked through the desert amongst them, mercilessly slaying all she found. [*H A Homo sapien woman is disguised as a lion -- a Homo erectus symbol. In an early version of this prehistory, she was probably a spy!*] When he saw the carnage and destruction, however, Ra grew saddened, his anger passed from him, and at length he wished that those who had escaped destruction should be forgiven and allowed to live in peace. [*H “We didn’t kill all them.” Indeed, countless Homo erecti must have escaped Africa or the rest of the world would be without religion, as we know it.*]

After her day of killing, Sekhmet-Hathor spent the whole night reveling in the blood of her victims, wading in the gore of the slain.

Ra watched her in her blind ecstasy, and he grew fearful that with the coming dawn she would once again go forth and this time slay the entire remainder of the human race [*H both subspecies*]. So, calling for the swiftest of his messengers, he commanded that they should go with haste and bring unto him a great quantity of mandrakes from Elephantine.<sup>68</sup> On their return, the mandrakes were beaten and ground, some of the blood of the slaughter was added and finally the essence was mixed with beer made of barley. The quantity was such that 7,000 jars were filled.

Just as the first rays of dawn spread across the eastern sky, the jars were taken to the place where the goddess would begin to resume her work, and there the contents were poured upon the earth.

When Sekhmet-hathor came to the place where the red beer flooded the earth, turning the ground black, she stopped and looked within its reflecting surface. So pleased was she with the sight of her reflection, that she forgot her task and drank deeply of the rich liquid. Soon she became so intoxicated that she was unable to further harm mankind.” --Barrett: 62

*Confirm that virtually all the Egyptian Species War victims were disposed of in the waters. Here, the Nile flood waters, which would have brought temporary halts to the killing, are compromised as “the blood of the mandrakes” and beer. Clarke and Frazer were misled in thinking otherwise, possibly taking priests at their word, a real no-no!*

## THE OSIRIAN FAMILY

Let’s have Frazer tell us what the Greeks recorded about Osiris:

“In ancient Egypt, the god whose death and resurrection were annually celebrated with alternate sorrow and joy was Osiris, the most popular of all Egyptian deities; and there are good grounds for classing him in one of his aspects with Adonis and Attis as a personification of the great yearly vicissitudes of nature, especially of the corn. [*H Notice how much the naturists have in common with*

---

<sup>68</sup> The mandrake is a poisonous plant common to the Mediterranean region. Because its root is shaped like a man, it was thought to have magical properties. Using beer and poison symbolizes ambivalence. Elephantine is an island of southeast Egypt in the Nile River below the First Cataract near Aswan.

*the Big Brothers: for both, the only dramas are those that they invent!]* But the immense vogue that he enjoyed for many ages induced his devoted worshippers to heap upon him the attributes and powers of many other gods; so that it is not always easy to strip him, so to say, of his borrowed plumes and to restore them to their proper owners. (Frazer: 420-21.) [H Sir George has it upside down again. It is the priests who have the motive and the cleverness required for syncretizing gods. His naturist conception of “plumes” is also all wrong. The “plumes” are episodes and aspects of natural history. Far from being the intellectual property of fiction writers, they belong to all of us.]

The story of Osiris is told in a connected form only by Plutarch, whose narrative has been confirmed and to some extent amplified in modern times by the evidence of the monuments. Osiris was the offspring of an intrigue between the earth-god Seb (Keb or Geb, as the name is sometimes transliterated) and the sky-goddess Nut. The Greeks identified his parents with their own deities Cronus and Rhea...” --*Ibid.*

Like Adonis and so many other *Homo erectus* gods, Osiris was said to be beautiful (Clark: 176 and elsewhere). The alleged pedigree confirms that Osiris was a *Homo erectus*; but as I mentioned in our discussion of Figure 80, the Heliopolis priests syncretized competing mythologies into a single divine cladogram. This cladogram shows a parentage for Osiris. Whether that parentage was invented at Heliopolis or simply outgrown by the evolving Osiris, it became superfluous.

As we’ll see momentarily, I suspect the former to be true, that Osiris originated as a primal father, because Osiris’ primal father myth is the best, most creative and dream-like of all the original-sin/true-creation/primal-deed myths I’ve seen. So, Osiris corresponds to Uranus. Uranus was not the son of Cronus and Rhea (Geb and Nut) but their father. As we concluded earlier, classical Greek mythology was a confused patchwork of myths borrowed from other peoples. So, the Greek sources to whom Frazer refers apparently received and accepted at face value the Heliopolis version of the divine cladogram (and Osiris’ lowered position in it). Please continue Mr. Frazer:

“When the sun god Ra perceived that his wife Nut had been unfaithful to him, he declared with a curse that she should be delivered of the child in no month and no year. But the goddess had another lover, the god Thoth or Hermes, as the Greeks called him;

and he, playing at draughts with the moon, won from her a *seventy-second* part of every day; and, having compounded five whole days out of these parts, he added them to the Egyptian year of three hundred and sixty days. This was the mythical origin of the five supplementary days that the Egyptians annually inserted at the end of every year to establish a harmony between lunar and solar time. On these five days, regarded as outside the year of twelve months, the curse of the sun god did not rest, and accordingly Osiris was born on the first of them. At his nativity, a voice rang out proclaiming that the Lord of All had come into the world. Some say that a certain Pamylen heard a voice from the temple at Thebes bidding him announce with a shout that a great king, the beneficent Osiris, was born. But Osiris was not the only child of his mother. On the second of the supplementary days, she gave birth to the elder Horus, on the third to the god Seth, whom the Greeks called Typhon, on the fourth to the goddess Isis, and on the fifth to the goddess Nephthys. Afterwards Seth married his sister Nephthys, and Osiris married his sister Isis.”

Obviously, we see here that Frazer is uncritically accepting the Heliopolis cladogram. And why not? For naturists, mythology is all fabricated fiction, so any priest’s account is as good as any other’s!

We’ll see momentarily that Set or Seth was originally the leader of the primordial brotherhood, but he became -- as the Greeks said of Typhon, his namesake -- a symbol for the “bad” *Homo erecti*. Do you remember the description of this serpentine monster that attacked Zeus in the myth of Typhon, in Chapter 25? “He was the largest monster ever born. From the thighs downward, he was nothing but coiled serpents, and his arms which, when he spread them out, reached a hundred leagues in either direction, had countless serpent’s heads instead of hands. His brutish ass-head touched the stars, his vast wings darkened the sun, fire flashed from his eyes, and flaming rocks hurtled from his mouth.” (Sounds like your average Deluge victim to me.) Forgive me for interrupting, Sir James.

“Reigning as a king on earth, Osiris reclaimed the Egyptians from savagery, gave them laws, and taught them to worship the gods. Before his time the Egyptians had been cannibals. But Isis, the sister and wife of Osiris, discovered wheat and barley growing wild, and Osiris introduced the cultivation of these grains amongst his people, who forthwith abandoned cannibalism and took kindly to a corn diet.

Moreover, Osiris is said to have been the first to gather fruit from trees, to train the vine to poles, and to tread the grapes. Eager to communicate these beneficent discoveries to all mankind, he committed the whole government of Egypt to his wife Isis, and traveled over the world, diffusing the blessings of civilization and agriculture wherever he went. In countries where a harsh climate or niggardly soil forbade the cultivation of the vine, he taught the inhabitants to console themselves for the want of wine by brewing beer from barley. Loaded with the wealth that had been showered upon him by grateful nations, he returned to Egypt, and due to the benefits he had conferred on mankind, he was unanimously hailed and worshipped as a deity...”

The above passage resembles others from all over the world, others that credit the early (*Homo erectus*) sun god with the bringing of light and Neolithic culture. But notice that the passage is abstract and generalized and not dreamlike. These Osirian credits are among the “borrowed plumes” that Frazer referred to at the top of this subsection. This pre-Heliopolis passage had been a very conscious but not very creative effort of Osiris’ priests to increase their market share of the faithful. Here’s the part that unmistakably refers to the primal deed.

“But his brother Set (whom the Greeks called Typhon) with seventy-two others plotted against him. Having taken the measure of his good brother’s body by stealth, the bad brother Typhon fashioned and highly decorated a coffer of the same size, and once when they were all drinking and making merry, he brought in the coffer and jestingly promised to give it to the one whom it should fit exactly. Well, they all tried one after the other, but it fitted none of them. [*H “Alpha males” tend to be the biggest animals within the horde, and the primal fathers were our alpha males.*] Last of all Osiris stepped into it and lay down. On that the conspirators ran and slammed the lid down on him, nailed it fast, soldered it with molten lead, and flung the coffer into the Nile...”

Naturally there was difference of opinion as to where the body was flung. This is consistent with the probability that *Homo erecti* were killed in many different places over an extended interval. But the water was unquestionably the prehistoric resting place for all *Homo erectus* remains. *As Clark has assured you (from scholarship and knowledge of the oral history of our Egyptian ancestors)*

and as I have assured you (from insight), in Egypt, “all the gods were born in the Primeval Waters.” (Cf. Clark: 35-36 or [here](#), [here](#) and [here](#) herein)

Yet our Egyptian ancestors learned that in other places, the *Homo erecti* had been disposed of in other ways. Citing the *Coffin Texts*, Clark notes, “Osiris as the power of growth is manifest in the earth -- ‘the Great Black Thing’ [*H Homo erectus corpses blackened by fire and soil*], and in the water -- ‘the Great Green Thing’” [*H Homo erectus corpses in the water, covered with green slime*]. Yet if these expressions had been merely the result of wishful, fertility hopes, then the freshwaters of the Nile would have been the only waters associated with Osiris; and they were not. “He is in the Red Sea, the Mediterranean and the cosmic ocean which surrounds the world” (Clark: 117).

The mythological evidence and a logical necessity that I challenge you to spot support what we can surmise from Egypt’s geography: owing to the desertification and the concentration of the population around the Nile, the Red Sea and the coastline, virtually all the uneaten *Homo erectus* corpses and inedible body parts were thrown into water. Although Osiris’ priests wanted him to symbolize all the good *Homo erecti*, the *Homo erecti* of Egypt made their last stand at the water’s edge. Most that escaped the holocaust in Africa, escaped through the Sinai: “The shrine of the god, for instance, was ‘the Horizon,’ the land of glorious light beyond the dawn horizon where the gods dwelt” (Clark: 27, *H emphasis mine*).

Notice something else about the previous indented passage. It shows that the Osiris myth was originally an original sin myth onto which second sin mythology was skillfully appended to form a chronicle that encompassed both the major traumas of our prehistory. In fact, this original sin myth is the only recognizable one that I’ve seen from Egypt and one of the best --if not the best original sin myth --from the entire world. Although Set is said to be a brother instead of a son, the killing of the one by the many suggests the original sin. Although the throwing of the coffin into the Nile suggests the second sin, this action is ancillary. The creative and dramatic core of the story that would have originally captured the popular imagination is the conspiratorial murder. Moreover, our *Homo sapiens* ancestors never described *their* conflict with *Homo erectus*, the Species War, in this manner. On the contrary, guilt and reaction formation usually caused them to enlarge *their* opponents as “giants” or behemoths of every sort. Also, don’t assume that the inclusion of a “coffer” stamps this myth as modern. A 2013 excavation in France led to the conclusion that Neanderthals of 50 kya had taken “great care” to dig a grave and protect its corpse from scavengers. (See <https://www.nationalgeographic.com/culture/article/131216-la-chapelle-neanderthal-burials-graves>.)

There's more data in Clark to suggest that the original Osiris was a primal father:

“For the native Egyptian, Osiris was always helpless. He is never represented in movement, but as a swathed figure with black or green face -- for he is both a mummy and the life-spirit of the earth and vegetation. [H *He is either in the earth (blackened) or in the water (covered with green slime).*] He is, above all, passive; and only in the texts of the Ninth and Tenth Dynasties is he allowed to speak for himself.” *–Ibid.*

This is a very important observation. The earliest reason for the silence of both Osiris and his enemies is that they predated *Homo sapiens*. The primal deed occurred before the evolution of our subspecies and at a time so early that any digital language that did exist would have had to have been very rudimentary. But there is another, still more important reason why Osiris remained not only silent but totally passive, helpless and harmless. This other reason pertains not so much to his age as to what Osiris became. This other reason for his passivity, helplessness and harmlessness concerns the national obsession. The Osirian myth and rites could only serve to neutralize the obsessional national fear of *Homo erectus* rising out of the Nile waters if Osiris, the symbol for *Homo erectus*, was totally passive and harmless.

But before we return to Clark, listen to a Greek version of the next Osiris episode; and notice the sharp contrast between the subtlety of the incestuous Greek Athena (Chapter 6) and the openness with which the Greeks describe the incestuous nature of the Egyptian gods. It's easier to laugh at others than at ourselves:

“[W]hen Isis [*H sister/wife of Osiris*] had found the corpse of her husband Osiris, she and her sister Nephthys sat down beside it and uttered a lament that in after ages became the type of all Egyptian lamentations for the dead. “Come to thy house,” they wailed. “Come to thy house. O godly One! Come to thy house, thou who hast no foes. O fair youth, come to thy house, that thou mayest see me. I am thy sister, whom thou lovest; thou shalt not part from me. O fair boy, come to thy house... I see thee not, yet doth my heart yearn after thee and mine eyes desire thee. Come to her who loves thee, who loves thee, *Unnefer* [*H “the good being”, Osiris*], thou blessed one! Come to thy sister, come to thy wife, to thy wife, thou whose heart stands still. Come to thy housewife. I am thy sister by the same mother; thou

shalt not be far from me. Gods and men have turned their faces towards thee and weep for thee together... I call after thee and weep, so that my cry is heard to heaven, but thou hearest not my voice; yet am I thy sister, whom thou didst love on earth; thou didst love none but me, my brother! my brother!" --Frazer: 425

Did you know the soap opera to be such an ancient art form!

"The lamentations of the two sad sisters were not in vain. In pity for her sorrow, the sun-god Ra sent down from heaven the jackal-headed god Anubis, who, with the aid of Isis and Nephthys, of Thoth and Horus, pieced together the broken body of the murdered god, swathed it in linen bandages, and observed all the other rites that the Egyptians were wont to perform over the bodies of the departed. [*H Isis made the first mummy. Greeks agreed that Isis had found every part but the phallus, which couldn't be recovered due to the alleged sexual rapaciousness of both the primal fathers and Homo erectus per se and the post-primal-deed incest taboo.*] Then Isis fanned the cold clay with her wings: Osiris revived, and thenceforth reigned as king over the dead in the other world. There he bore the titles of Lord of the Underworld, Lord of Eternity, Ruler of the Dead. There, too, in the great Hall the Two Truths, assisted by forty-two assessors, one from each of the principal districts of Egypt, he presided as judge at the trial of the souls of the departed [*H as the Egyptian Cronus*], who made their solemn confession before him; and, their heart having been weighed in the balance of justice, received the reward of virtue in a life eternal or the appropriate punishment of their sins.

In the resurrection of Osiris, the Egyptians saw the pledge of a life everlasting for themselves beyond the grave. They believed that every man would live eternally in the other world if only his surviving friends did for his body what the gods had done for Osiris' body. Hence Egyptian ceremonies over the human dead were exact copies of those that Anubis, Horus and the rest had performed over the dead god... In this way, every dead Egyptian was identified with Osiris and bore his name." --Frazer: 425-6.

Here's the rest of the story, described by our local expert, Professor Clark:



“Isis was unable to bring her beloved back to life in the full sense [*H He rules the Underworld in a coma-like state*], but she contrived to revive him sufficiently to be able to conceive a son by him. [*H Obviously, Egyptians weren't in agreement as to whether the penis had been found.*] This was Horus [*H not the brother but the son*]. In her fear of the vengeance of Seth the goddess hid in the swamps of the Delta where she gave birth to Osiris' heir and where she brought him up in secret.”

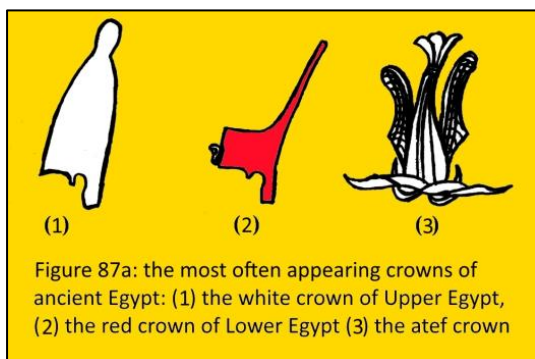
Guess who this heroic child represents. He's as secluded as Zeus, as vulnerable as Vishnu and as prophesied as Lugh and others to kill his ancestors.

“In due time Horus grew up and, according to Plutarch, gathered together the supporters of his murdered father and, leaving his Delta fastness, attacked the usurper, Seth. The civil war was suspended for a while by the attempted arbitration of Hermes (i. e. the Greek form of Thoth), but at last Horus took up the fight again and succeeded in finally overwhelming Seth and his confederates.”

Like the dragon that Ninurta (Marduk) defeats in the Babylonian Creation Epic, Seth and his confederates threaten the world with “chaos.” Can you see how very similar this is to Greek mythology? As Plato's Atlantis myth suggests, Egypt was a continuous civilization that was much older than that of Greece. The Greeks had to borrow heavily from the Egyptians and others. As we saw in previous chapters, the rude “Sea Peoples” of the North Atlantic and various other invaders from the Balkans who overran the Eastern Mediterranean in the latter half of the second millennium B.C. would have obliterated most of the indigenous culture that preceded them. However, as Woolley told us in Volume 1, they failed to conquer Egypt; so, Egyptian mythology stayed intact.

Both the Greek and the Egyptian narratives (Uranus-Cronus-Zeus *et al.* and Osiris-Seth-Horus) span our prehistory from the original to the second sin. They are only slightly different from their Mesopotamian predecessor, wherein revenge is also invented as a motive for the Species War. (Enlil, Enki and Anu kill Apsû, the primal father. Tiamat, his consort, commissions Kingu and various “monsters” to avenge her husband's murder. Ninurta/Marduk saves the world from havoc and chaos by destroying Tiamat's forces.)

There is a wealth of sacred Egyptian symbols that, for lack of space or knowledge, I must exclude. Two symbols will be introduced in Appendix D, and we'll finish the Egyptian tour with a brief analysis of the crowns. (See Figure 87a.) The double crown consisted of the white crown of Upper Egypt [Figure 87a (1)] worn within the red crown of Lower Egypt [Figure 87a (2)]. The white crown was associated with the vulture, the goddess Nekhebet. Flesh-eating vultures were a common, totem substitute for the *Homo erectus* gods. Vultures probably devoured many of the corpses of the *Homo erecti* and would subsequently have been thought, like the crocodile and tortoise, to have acquired the souls of these gods. The red crown of Lower Egypt was associated with the rearing and fire-spitting cobra. (I shouldn't have to tell you --at this stage --what that represents.) Notice also that these two crowns, Figures 87a (1) and (2) appear to be compromise formations for skulls that exaggerate the two most anomalous characteristics of the *Homo erectus* skull. The white crown, (1), when rotated



about 60 degrees clockwise, exaggerates the bun at the rear of *Homo erectus*' head. The red crown, (2), minus the cobra and the exaggerated projections, appears to symbolize *Homo erectus*' sloping or altogether missing forehead. One might say that the distorted resemblance of these crowns to *Homo erectus*' cranial peculiarities is merely accidental--unless one knows

that the kings of many Semitic peoples wore conical crowns similar or identical to the white crown. (Cf. Langdon: 44-47) The other crown, occasionally worn in Egypt, was the Atef crown, Figure 87a (3). This one is no challenge and clearly identifies the gods who wear it with *Homo erectus* and the primal father. This crown, (3), consists of ostrich feathers and bullhorns. Of course, the bull is a symbol for the primal and biological father and the father species (*Homo erectus*). Ostriches -- as we learned in Mesopotamia -- were symbolic of the "Jinn." Similar bullhorns decorated the bottom front of the crowns of Sumerian, Babylonian and Assyrian deities (*Op. cit.*).

## CONCLUSION

*Everyone along the river shared the same ongoing obsession (fear of drought-caused famine), and the same prehistoric obsession (the fear of the*

*Homo erecti* or “the Jinn” returning). These two obsessions condensed into the fear of *Homo erecti* (or their corpses) rising out of the receding river. The Osiris myth addressed this exact, unconscious fear with which Egyptians were obsessed.

Once the Species War had been amalgamated with the Osiris myth, by Horus and his allies winning a “civil war” against Seth and his confederates, Osiris, the primal father, became also (in juxtaposition with his murderer and other “bad” *Homo erecti*) symbolic of the “good” *Homo erecti* and – ultimately -- of the *Homo erecti per se* who, like the drowned Osiris, were in the water. As both primal father and *Homo erectus per se*, Osiris then became the “spirit of the Nile flood,” the spirit in the “House of the Spirit,” in Egypt. Arrian would be especially quick to support this. Citing Homer and Herodotus, he tells us that *the earlier Egypt or “House of the Spirit” was the Nile River from which the land probably received its name* (Arrian: Book V, Chapter 6.1-7.4). (Homer referred to the Aegyptus as the river around which Menelaus stationed his ships. You’ll be surprised to learn in Appendix F that “Nile,” “Egypt,” “Thebes” and many other Homeric places originally referred to a non-Mediterranean part of the world.)

The Osiris myth directly ministered to both the component fears of the national obsession 1) by depicting a fertility god who controlled the river and 2) by resurrecting *his soul only*, while his harmless body remained in the underground (Clark: 122). That’s why Osiris had to remain voiceless, passive, helpless, harmless, “true of speech” and righteous. That’s why Osiris’s body had to remain in the underworld and only his “soul” was said to rise up to the sky. For only in this way could Osiris function as repetition compulsion, moderating the original trauma and unconscious fear. If this god had moved or said so much as “boo,” our Egyptian ancestors would have jumped out of their sandals.

Osiris was adopted and perennially cherished by all Egyptians from the Paleolithic to the coming of Christianity and Islam, modern religions with which Osiris could not compete on an international scale. Osiris and company were too ethnic to be salable outside of North Africa; and like the Babylonian Creation Epic, the Osiris chronicle was threatening to the superegos of neurotic but analytical, modern minds. But notice that for the first of these, Christianity, to displace Osiris, it had to incorporate what Osirian and other mythologies preserve of our prehistory; it had to incorporate a lot of water scenes. Jesus walks on water, is baptized in water, preaches by the water, turns stones into fish (from the water) and makes people “fishers of men.”

The significance of the water remained unconscious but not forgotten:

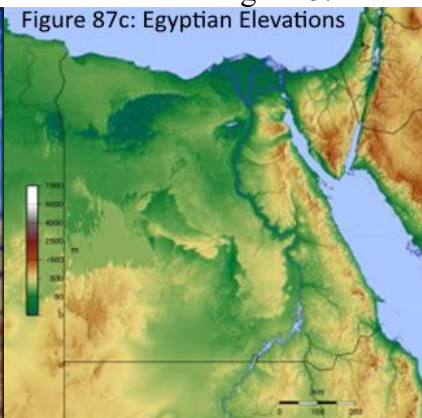
Wade in the water  
Wade in the water, children  
Wade in the water

God's a-gonna trouble the water.  
--African-American spiritual

And as much as I would like to claim to be the first person to understand our Egyptian ancestors and their water-phobia, if truth be told, that distinction belongs to one of my paternal forbears. Circa 1358 B.C., he claimed to be one of the slaves that were working on that pyramid in the center of Figure 87b, when, in a fit of anger, he told the Egyptians to let the mummies remodel their own monuments. Within minutes, he and a few others were making fast tracks out of Egypt. Understanding the Egyptian water-phobia and remembering how Amosis, the founder of the 18th Dynasty, had, 200 years earlier, chased the Hyksos all the way to Palestine, Granddad concocted a yarn (actually, the best part of a series of yarns). He told everyone they passed: "The Red Sea parted, and we crossed and rose up out of it. But pray for the soggy souls of those poor devils that tried to follow us!"

Of course, Granddad made us promise never to let this secret out of the family...and I never have.

Oh, did you figure out yet why all the uneaten parts of the Egyptian Species War victims couldn't be buried? Think! It's very simple. You've got till Appendix H to figure it out. In Appendix H, we'll also make use of Figure 87c.



## D. Stonehenge and Other Rock Monuments Around the World

*Penetrating so many secrets, we cease to believe in the unknowable.*

*But there it sits nevertheless, calmly licking its chops.*

*--H.L. Mencken, American journalist and essayist*

To the extent that the present-day archaeological record refuses to acknowledge this work and its previous twenty-four editions, the above quotation still perfectly describes that record with respect to the world's megaliths. Megaliths are large, rude, uncut or rough-hewn, massive stone monuments. Because I've known most of what anyone would ever want to know about them for a very long time, it is amazing that the "experts" can go on posing as experts and that anyone still recognizes them. But they are a most strategic contingent within the Domsday Alliance (the alliance of religious babies and latent homosexual scoundrels that literally rules the world). As Orwell observed, "He who controls the present controls the past, and he who controls the past controls the future."

We (me, myself and I) will attempt, in this chapter, to *thoroughly* remove megaliths from Menchen's category of the unknowable. We'll deal with mounds and pyramids in Appendix H.

This is my last chance to fix all the errors in this massive undertaking and to get everything right. As I write this Version 25.7, I am 74 y.o. and running out of energy.

One of my major errors, actually an uncritical oversight, was my naïve acceptance of popular claims about "animism." Britanica defines animism as "A religious belief that everything on Earth is imbued with a powerful spirit, capable of helping or harming human needs... This faith in a universally shared life force was involved in the earliest forms of worship."

Maybe very early *Homo erectus* people, or *Homo habilis* or *Australopithecines* believed in "animism." With the exception of one young man from India who appears to be a cynical person wanting to ridicule others or test the limits of their credulity, I haven't run across anyone, nor have I read quotations from anyone, claiming to believe in animism. *Of course, it is neurotic (systematically failing to adapt) to believe in anything immaterial and imperishable. But to believe that inorganic things can have spirits and be capable of actively harming or helping us is psychosis, a much more severe craziness.*

What one does *often* come across is neurotic religious people accusing *other* religious people of animism. The intolerant and hypocritical name-callers are disinclined to learn anything about the actual opinions and beliefs of their adversaries. As such were the naturists whom we reviewed in Chapter 3. As such

were the Dominican Catholic priests. (Ironically, Durán, the most intelligent priest, was of that order!). Dominicans refused to allow that there might be any historicity to pagan gods, that we might learn anything from paganism. They wanted only to erase it!

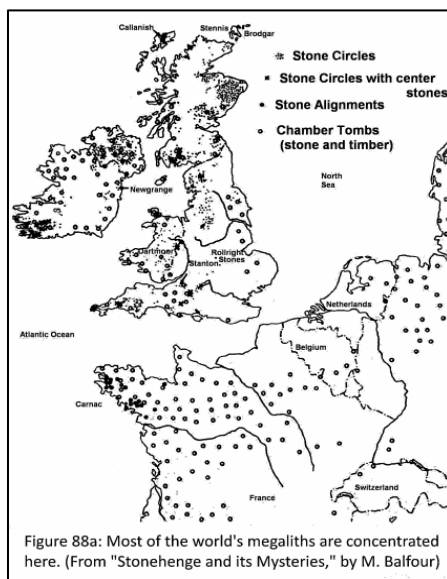
They accused the Aztecs of worshipping their idols. The idols were only representations of gods. Owing to the homage paid to an idol and its likeness to a god, a god might rest, reside or hide in it. *That was the same magical thinking that created itxliltzins. The fact that some simple folks, gradually confused the idol with the god is no different from the same simple folks, later or elsewhere, elevating itxliltzins to thrones.* Generally speaking, an idol was no more equivalent to its god than one of our many public park statues is equivalent to whomever it depicts.

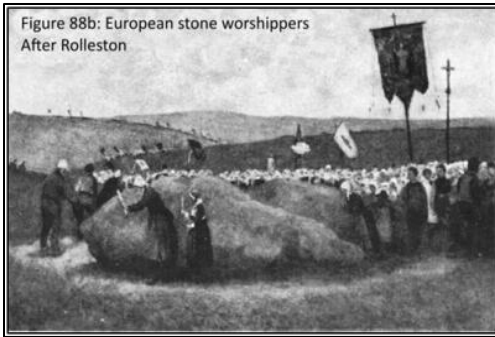
The same is true of alleged “stone worship.” Mithra was said to have been born in a stone. As we’ve seen, some large stones reminded Amerindians and Koories of their gods. A god might sculpt a stone, rest, reside or hide in it; but stones, in and of themselves, were not worshipped. You MUST grant our pagan ancestors this much. You must give our ancestors this much respect in order to understand what follows. OK?

Antiquaries and archaeologists have collected mountains of data on the megaliths. Our Neolithic ancestors used them to construct several types of structures. One of these types enjoys an almost worldwide distribution.

For starters, look at Figure 88a, a map showing the locations of various megaliths in Western Europe. (The vast majority of the world’s megaliths are located here.) The chamber tombs (the circles on the map) are all concentrated near the coastlines. If you don’t see the obvious reasons for this, you will as we proceed. But first let’s back up a bit.

Recall that our hunter-gatherer ancestors wishfully believed that the “spirits” of the *Homo erecti* had passed into the animals and (occasionally) the plants that they needed for food. Their ambivalent attitudes toward their victims resembled their attitudes toward these animals. (The negative side of the animal caused him to hide and deny people their food.) Species of “animal people” became their





totem gods, gods from whom they were descended and whose powers and protection they inherited.

Wherever people became dependent upon domestic animals and grain production, wherever the Neolithic began, the most critical variable in their lives tended to become the rain or, in the temperate and cold latitudes, the sun. In the temperate and

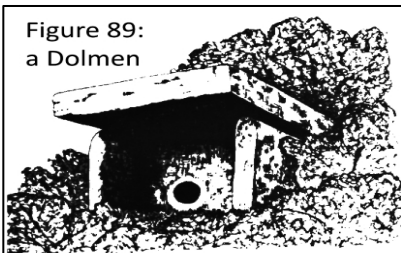
upper latitudes, the sun gradually replaced animals as the focus of our ancestors' daily anxiety. Guilt, obsessional fear and paranoia with respect to *Homo erectus* were transferred, in most places, from the animals to the sun. The *Homo sapien* Species War victors, who had contracted the ambivalence felt toward their victims, rose to pantheons everywhere; and the totem gods were reconfigured into hominid form.

We saw a bit of how solar mythology developed in Ireland, India and Mexico. The peoples who had suffered most from the climatic vagaries of the ice age (i. e. coastal flooding, especially the Great Flood, and temperature swings) learned to associate these vagaries with the sun and accordingly developed elaborate solar mythologies.

Of course, myths are not made over night. The foundation myth of an era and all the supporting myths that reinforce and elaborate it cannot be developed over night. In the interim between the end of totemism and the full development of Neolithic solar mythology, many of the first farmers and inhabitants of settled communities focused their unconscious and conflicting attitudes toward *Homo erectus* onto large stones in their fields. Just as they later imagined the *Homo erectus* and Species War symbols to be outlined in the heavens, so too did they imagine that they saw them in the peculiar shapes of large stones and rock formations. This was especially so when they went through strange or unsettled lands. They shaped their developing mythology accordingly (e. g. Mithra was born from a rock.).

We've seen this clearly with the Australians. Recall also that the Tsimshian transformer changed all the monsters in his myth into stones. The Incas convinced Peruvians that large stones were *pururaucas*, "hidden traitors," who would rise up as soldiers to assist the Incas in battle and throw the enemy into confusion (Cobo: 23-24-). As late as the fifth century AD, the Church was still holding synods and councils to "prevent the veneration of stones." Charlemagne persecuted those who "lit torches and practiced other superstitions" around stones. Right into recent times, the country folk of Brittany engaged in practices that

Figure 89:  
a Dolmen



Reprinted from Roger Joussaume's, *Dolmens for the Dead: Megalith Building Throughout the World*. Translated from the French by Anne and Christopher Chippindale, copyright Hachette 1985, translation copyright B.T. Batsford Ltd, 1988. Used by permission of the publisher, Cornell University Press.

Fertile, arable land, a newly discovered resource, was freely available to the sparse population. Every man would have felt himself to be a powerful force, a person whose magic or propitiatory acts might influence the gods.

During this period, especially among peoples whose Species War experience was traumatic, men built stone monuments such as the one in Figure 89. Look also at Figures 90, 91 and 92. The hatched areas of these figures are the areas in the world where these *dolmens* and (the much later built) *chamber-tombs* or *passage graves* are found. Joussaume

and other archaeologists have, for many years, as in these maps, lumped the dolmen together with chamber tombs. In a moment, I will introduce the latter and tell you why I believe this unification to be inappropriate for students of religion and prehistory. But the geographic distribution of the dolmens is roughly the same as that of Joussaume's combined category of "chamber tombs" in Europe, and I am relying roughly on Joussaume's maps to show dolmen elsewhere. Except for the dolmens, almost all the rock monuments are in Western Europe, especially France and the British Isles.

Now, notice that all these hatched areas border on water bodies and tend to be cul-de-sacs within which or up against which *Homo erecti* would have been trapped, forced to fight and annihilated during the Species War. Notice how the relative scarcity of these rock monuments in the east confirms our

zealous Christians refused to understand. (Cf. Rolleston: 66) See Figure 88b. Such practices would have been most in vogue during the interims when the foundation myths describing new eras in religious thinking were still being fashioned.

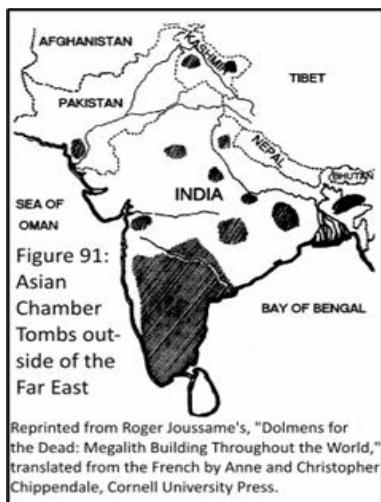
During the early Neolithic, when the gods started resuming their hominid form, the *Homo erectus* gods were still very personal and imminent in the world, as the animals had been. Trade links were few and short. Kings, towns and powerful institutions were non-existent.

Figure 90: European, African and Middle Eastern chamber tombs



Reprinted from Roger Joussaume's, "Dolmens for the Dead: Megalith Building Throughout the World," translated from the French by Anne and Christopher Chippindale, Cornell University Press.





characterization of eastern prehistory as having been relatively nonviolent. The marine dependence and female domination of the East accounts for the different character of its languages and religions. (See Chapter 13.) The one area in the Far East where "the Deluge" appears to have been most remembered and violent is also the area where western religion (Christianity) has had the greatest appeal -- peninsular Korea.

Obviously, our failure to date to recognize the meaning of the Deluge myths, to recognize *Homo erectus* as the prehistoric object of our Fraternal complex and a principal component of the godhead, precluded an understanding of religion. The religious belief systems of prehistoric men have not been understood, and many false interpretations



regarding the rock monuments and other phenomena have prevailed. Heralding the thinking that still prevails, Rolleston said, "The primary intention of the dolmen was to represent a house or

dwelling-place for the dead" (Rolleston: 53).

The average size and weight of these dolmen stones (several *orthostats* and a *capstone*) rules out the possibility of them having been used merely as sepulchral monuments to individuals during the early Neolithic. They required enormous labor power to construct. Class differences at this time would not have been great enough to warrant such expenditure on individuals. Yet the dolmen *were* burial places -- probably for the whole community -- because in chalky areas, where the soil is not acidic and bones preserve, all the dolmen excavated have contained human skeletal remains, often in large quantities. (Cf. Jousaume: 17.) But although the dead humans did end up there, I doubt very much that these monuments were *for* the dead *Homo sapiens*.

The French replicated the transport of a dolmen stone by megalithic builders. The experiment took place at Bougon, on 28 July 1979, under the direction of J. P. Mohen and his colleagues.

“The full operation was filmed. At Exoudun, on the actual site where the capstone of chamber-tomb F2 (which weighs about 32 tons) may have been quarried, a copy of this same slab was made in concrete. In two days, a rope of linen cords was in place around the block, with four pulling-ropes, each 100 m (328 ft.) long. The method of traction used requires a flat underside to the block. If this were not the case, as occurs in some chamber-tombs, the block would have to be attached to a sledge and slid along a roadway, a method that was used by the Egyptians. At Bougon, it was decided to move the block over oak rollers along rails made of squared trunks of oak. Two hundred people provided the necessary force, 170 pulling and 30 working levers to push the slab. In one morning, it was shifted about 40 m (131 ft.), which led Mohen to say it would require a month and a half to get the block from Exoudun to Bougon, about 4 km (2 and 1/2 miles) away, allowing for a few detours to avoid the steeper slopes. The 200-people required for the operation represent an overall population for the group responsible of upwards of 1000 individuals, maybe more; and perhaps twice that number would be needed to transport the capstone of Bougon dolmen A. It does not seem possible for there to have been single villages containing 2000 or 3000 inhabitants at this period. It is much more likely that such imposing monuments were the work of a population scattered among several villages within the tribal territory around the structure, a place of veneration for a whole people.” --Joussaume: 102-103

Certainly, Mohen and Joussaume are correct. These dolmens were built by whole peoples. But they were not simply for the *Homo sapiens* dead. They were the earliest artificially constructed temples. Confirm what I said about “Abydos”: cities sometimes developed around temples and not always vice versa. Mohen and his people could have known this at the outset:

“And Jacob rose up early in the morning, and took the stone that he had put for his pillows, and set it up for a pillar, and poured oil upon the top of it... And this stone, which I have set for a pillar, shall be God’s house: and of all that thou shalt give me I will surely give a tenth unto thee.” --Genesis, 28: 18, 22

In the New Testament:

“And I say unto thee, that thou art Peter [*H “rock”*] and upon this rock I will build my church.” --Matthew 16: 18

It is also probably true that, “The dolmens proper gave place in the end to great chambered mounds or tumuli, as at New Grange...” (Rolleston: 54). Burgess confirms that the dolmen preceded the chamber-tombs. (*Cf.* Burgess: 34) The chamber-tombs were also for sepulcher, but only for those who were the warriors and elites of Neolithic society.

The coastal location and the embodied labor of the dolmens leave us little doubt that these were the first churches. They were houses for the first Species War (*Homo erectus*) gods. They also were graveyards that reflected an earlier and more primitive belief system from the one that attached to the large tumuli--the underground collective chamber-tombs. For pictures of the tumuli, see Figures 93, 94, 95 and 96a. These tumuli varied enormously in size and construction. Some were beneath cairns (stone mounds); others were beneath barrows (dirt mounds). Some had passages leading to the main chamber. Some have been categorized as wedge tombs because their entrance is higher

and wider than the rest of the chamber. (*Cf.* O’Kelly: 115) Some were round; others were long and narrow. In Southwest England, most of the wedge tombs of this pre-3200 B.C. era were long earthen mounds. Holes were dug in them at ground level for the bodies to be inserted. *These long mounds invariably faced southwest, the east end usually being higher and covering a dolmen.* In addition

to these early chamber-tombs having been burial tombs for warriors and the elite, there was another common denominator of all the early chamber-tombs -- an idea determined by the solar or sun god belief. We’ll discover it momentarily.

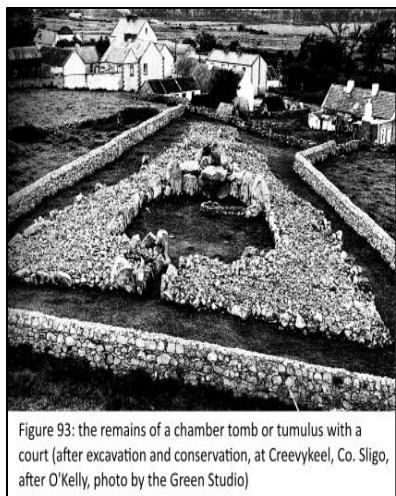


Figure 93: the remains of a chamber tomb or tumulus with a court (after excavation and conservation, at Creevykeel, Co. Sligo, after O’Kelly, photo by the Green Studio)

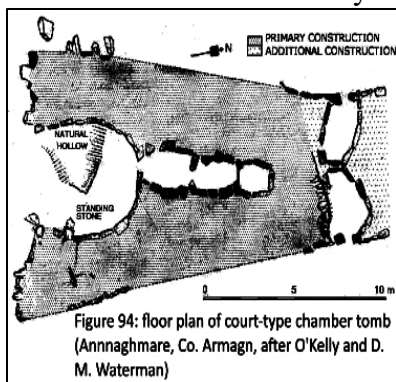


Figure 94: floor plan of court-type chamber tomb (Annnaghmare, Co. Armagh, after O’Kelly and D. M. Waterman)

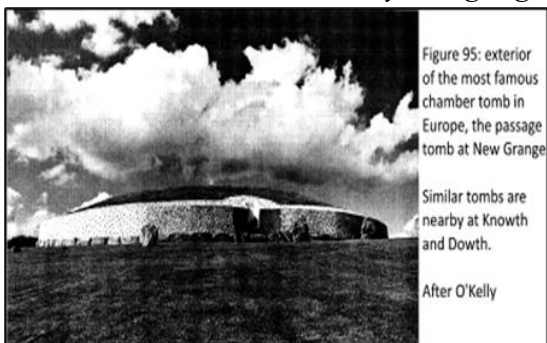


Figure 95: exterior of the most famous chamber tomb in Europe, the passage tomb at New Grange

Similar tombs are nearby at Knowth and Dowth.

After O’Kelly

As I mentioned earlier, archaeologists insisted for decades that the dolmen (or “porthole tombs”) had originally been covered with rocks or earth. They claimed that the dolmen were just collective chamber-tombs of another design.

Even a cursory inspection of the color photos in Cipolloni Sampo’s book suggests that the dolmens were not chamber-tombs. O’Kelly articulated the obvious: “No portal dolmen is known where an appreciable amount of cairn survives; in many cases, no trace of cairn is perceptible.”<sup>69</sup> It is probable that portal tombs did not have high mounds to begin with, just enough stones around the bases of the orthostats to hold them firm. A high mound, even if it did not cover the capstone, would have taken from the magnificent appearance of the great soaring roof-slab.” (O’Kelly: 94)

So, have you got it yet -- the distinction between the dolmen and the chamber-tombs? We’ve already gone over all the mythology necessary to figure this one out. The gods of the early and pre-Neolithic would have been imminent like those of the hunter-gatherer period. Men would have believed, as did the Kwakiutls and the Australians, that human lives were taken by *Homo erectus*, just as men took animal lives and had taken the lives of our archaic ancestors. Occasionally, shamans would have been thought to be accomplices. Recall that in their great winter celebration, Kwakiutls brought their dead to “Tanis.” The hope was that, with each new death, Cannibal-at-the-North-End-of-the-World (or the “Grim Reaper”) would be satisfied and take no more lives. The Delaware also referred to *Homo erectus* as “Dead-Keeper” (Figure 25, glyph II, 4 of the *Walam Olum*). The Australians also thought that all deaths were murders. Recall that their mythology spoke of devil-men, “*Orunchas*,” who carry their victims around on their horns. As I explained above, what remains of the Irish belief in the banshee probably descends, in part, from this early hunter-gatherer superstition. Recall that we discovered the Irish and the Kwakiutls to have a word in common, “Tanis(t).” An echo of this Paleolithic belief is also in Homer. When Odysseus sees his mother in Hades, he asks her,

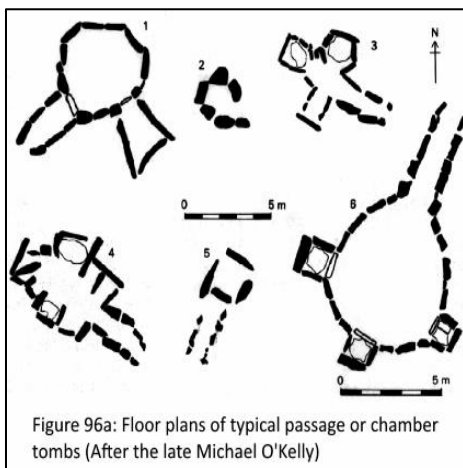


Figure 96a: Floor plans of typical passage or chamber tombs (After the late Michael O’Kelly)

<sup>69</sup> O’Kelly qualifies this statement by citing one recently discovered exception with a low cairn. But there are at least 163 surviving porthole tombs (dolmen) in Ireland alone. (Cf. O’Kelly: 92) Moreover, dolmens being the oldest and least awe-inspiring type of megalith, tells us that probably more of them than chamber-tombs have been destroyed.

“How did you die? Was it a long disease? *Or did Artemis Archeress kill you with her gentle shafts?*” She answers, “The Archeress did not shoot me in my own house with those gentle shafts that never miss; it was no disease that made me pine away, but I missed you so much, and your clever wit and your gay merry ways, and life was sweet no longer, so I died” (*Odyssey*, XI: 132-133).

A similar passage says that Apollo took the lives of men (*Odyssey*, XV: 187). *These passages clearly show that at one time, the “Greeks” believed not only that the Homo erectus gods took their lives but also that they did it with the bow and arrow!* (You’ll soon discover that Homer’s characters weren’t from Greece!)

At the start of the Neolithic, trade and its ethos (ethical reciprocity) would not have *rigidly* separated the godhead into good gods and evil demons. As was suggested by the Kwakiutl rites, the same gods could be either wrathful or loving. Moreover, except for the dog, animals were all still wild and not divisible into domesticated and wild groupings. The dead would have been brought to these dolmens, these early houses for the (largely Neanderthal) gods, in attempt to placate them, especially their chief, and dissuade them (him) from taking any more human lives.

Notice that right up to recent times, we have located our cemeteries around churches, the “houses of God.” Of course, the modern godhead has been subdivided into “God” and the “Devil,” and most of our conscious thoughts are focused on the former, but burial around churches is undoubtedly traceable to the earliest beliefs in the predecessors of the “Grim Reaper.” Continuing:

“Another singular and yet unexplained feature that appears in many of these monuments, from Western Europe to India, is the presence of a small hole bored through one of the stones composing the chamber.” –Rolleston: 65

Once one realizes that these dolmens are for the gods, the porthole presents no challenge. Sir James could have gotten this one. Average people, with average souls, are not to come into direct contact with or to look into the faces of kings and gods. To do so is to become a lightning rod; so, most people, average people, presented their food offerings through the porthole. Shamans or magician-priests probably officiated over ceremonies involving the presentation of the dead, and they alone would address the gods from the more open side of the dolmen.

Later, as the new solar mythology developed, the collective tumuli (chamber-tombs) came into being. For as we shall see, everything about these tombs of c.

4000 B.C. to 2500 B.C. points to the expression of solar mythology that was much like what we have seen in Mexico. But before I say another word about them, note that other Europeans saw the people of the British Isles as the people expert in matters of religion. *Europeans knew these islands as the "Land of the Dead" because they knew them to be the last sanctuary for free-roaming Neanderthals.* This is very important. Don't forget it.

"At one time, it was believed that the practice of building megalithic tombs emanated from the eastern Mediterranean by a process of diffusion, but radiocarbon dating of tombs in Brittany and elsewhere in the West had shown that the practice began earlier there than in the East. From the Early Neolithic onward, Ireland cannot have been isolated from the rest of the world, awaiting the influx of colonists to point the way to the next step. The practice of erecting houses for the Dead would have become known through two-way contacts with Britain and the Continent." --O'Kelly: 123

The earliest dolmen in France radiocarbon date to 4600 B.C. Nothing is found in stone in Egypt or Mesopotamia before 3000 B.C. (Joussaume: 23 or Brown: 171). More to the point is the origin of solar mythology altogether. As we've seen, the sun god and solar worship came into being due to the sun's association with the Deluge bonfires and the bright, happy, well-remembered times that followed the Species War. *The elaborate solar mythology that added a cosmic struggle for the sun was just an extension of the old Paleolithic belief that gods and demons (e. g. "Fomorians") fought a tug of war for the pulling of the land either out of or into the ice zone with a modification. Henceforth, the cables were attached to the sun instead of continents and the gods and the demons fought over which were to pull the sun.*

[Figure 111e](#) shows these cables. A, b and c of Figure 111 show the transitional development of the ankh, which was popular in Egypt by the beginning of the Early Dynastic Period (3150 B.C.). Figure 111f is the Waas Sceptre that was ever in the possession of pharaohs and queens. This powerful sceptre is, of course, a compromised arrow. Originally the harpoon of Horus, the *Homo sapiens* sun god and Species War victor; it had been used to harpoon Seth (the *Homo erecti*) on his (earlier, native Egyptian) travels on the Nile. In Figure 111e, this harpoon/arrow is the cable between the sun and the arrow-killed, named, propitiated and thought-to-be-coopted souls of *Homo erecti* (the ankhs).

A Fir Bolg myth also clearly shows this transition. In the myth, "Balor of the Evil Eye and Lui Lavada, His Grandson," Balor can set afire anything he looks

*at with the third eye in the middle of his head. He can only be killed by his own grandson throwing a spear into the eye, as it first opens and when he (Balor) is standing atop the highest hill in Ireland. Balor's eye is the sun, which Balor controls. Spearing the sun at high noon ends Balor's control of it and tethers it to Ireland. The elaboration of this idea, solar mythology, was exported from the Land of the Dead (the British Isles, probably Ireland) to the rest of the world. Pharaohs didn't identify with the sun god until the Fourth Dynasty (late third millennium). When they did begin to define themselves as the children of Ra, their sun god, it was only after the city of Heliopolis had founded Egypt's sun god cult and risen to prominence. (Cf. Casson: 73)*

Helios is the Greek word for sun; so, Heliopolis, Egypt and its solar mythology probably came directly from Greece. But as we've already started to learn, there was a close connection between Greece and the British Isles. Solar myths and many other "Greek" myths came from the British Isles when they were ruled by their first *Homo sapiens* lords, the Fir Bolgs and their better-known cousins. In Appendix F, a Dutch scholar will uncover the cousins for us. For now, be assured that the Fir Bolgs of Ireland and their cousins of what is now England were the experts in mythology that were also known as the "Atlanteans" after Atlas, son of Poseidon, their first mythologically-eponymous king. (See Plato's Atlantis tale in Chapter 1.) Diodorus, who has already impressed us as one of the more reliable classical commentators, has more revelations about the "Atlanteans," most of which we shall not examine until later. But for now, consider the following myth of Helios; and note that it is consistent with what we have learned about mythology in general and "Greek" mythology in particular:

*"To Uranus, [H the "first king" recognized by the Atlantean people before they were known as such] ...were born forty-five sons from a number of wives, and, of these, eighteen, it is said, were by Titaea, each of them bearing a distinct name, but all them as a group were called, after their mother, Titans. Titaea, because she was prudent and had brought about many good deeds for the peoples, was deified after her death by those whom she had helped; and her name was changed to Gê. To Uranus were also born daughters... [H It is unlikely for anyone to have this many children, even by a number of wives. What is indicated here is Uranus's status as the primal father, the father for the whole sub-species, Homo erectus.] the two eldest of whom were by far the most renowned above the others and were*

called *Basileira* and Rhea, whom some also named Pandora.<sup>70</sup> Of these daughters Basileira, who was the eldest and far excelled the others in both prudence and understanding, reared all her bothers, showing them collectively a mother's kindness; consequently, she was given the appellation of "Great Mother;" and after her father had been translated from among men into the circle of the gods, with the approval of the masses and of her brothers she succeeded to the royal dignity, though she was still a maiden and because of her exceedingly great chastity had been unwilling to unite in marriage with any man.<sup>71</sup> But later, because of her desire to leave sons who should succeed to the throne, she united in marriage with Hyperion, one of her brothers, for whom she had the greatest affection. And when there were born to her two children, Helius and Selenê, who were greatly admired for both their beauty and their chastity, the brothers of Basileira [*H 44 of them*] they say, being envious of her because of her happy issue of children and fearing that Hyperion would divert the royal power to himself, committed an utterly impious deed; for entering into a conspiracy among themselves they put Hyperion to the sword, and casting Helius, who was still in years a child, into the Eridanus River, drowned him.<sup>72</sup> When this crime came to light, Selenê, who loved her brother very greatly, threw herself down from the roof, but as for his mother, while seeking his body along the river, her strength left her and falling into a swoon she beheld a vision in which she thought that Helius stood over her and urged her not to mourn the death of her children; for, he said, the Titans would meet the punishment that they deserve, while he and his sister would be transformed, by some divine providence, into immortal natures, since that which had formerly

---

<sup>70</sup> The ills or blessings (late version) that escaped this Titaness' "box" (uterus) were virtually the whole of the subspecies *Homo erectus*.

<sup>71</sup> Here Diodorus confirms that the first women toward whom our ancestors had strong ambivalence, women associated with fertility and dubbed "Great Mothers" or "Earth Mothers," were *Homo erectus*. As we've seen in Chapters 21 and 36, they were originally the "good witches" of Species War vintage.

<sup>72</sup> Our translator, C. H. Oldfather, translated the Eridanus as the Po River; but the word refers to the long constellation, Eridanus, "the River" of Greek mythology. It is the same river that Babylonians named after the ancient Sumerian city of Eridu. This city lay at the mouth of the Euphrates and was home of the cult of Ea (Enki) and one of the two great schools of Sumerian and Babylonian theology. (*Cf.* Langdon: 310, 103-104) But Eridu and Eridanus may have been among the many names that were transplanted, first from Sumer to the North Atlantic and later from the North Atlantic to the Mediterranean region.



been called the “holy fire” in the heavens would be called by men Helios (“the sun”) and that addressed as *menê* would be called *Selenê* (“the moon”)...

Notice from the last sentence, that the sun is no longer associated with the “holy fire” (Species War bonfires and the Species War). This is a Bronze-Age-renovated myth for an era of weak sun gods. That this myth of Paleolithic origins makes no effort to hide the brothers’ jealousy of Hyperion and love of Basileira, their sister/mother, tells us that the First Mask and its lies about “different kinds of love” were still not well developed. Confirm also that the “Atlanteans” derived their first, pre-Helios sun gods from the “holy [*H Deluge*] fire” exactly as did the Mexica, the Hindus and others. This myth is just more compromised. Here, “the Titans” have killed the sun god. The moon too is obsessively connected with the “Titans,” the Species War victims. Diodorus said the Atlanteans were the first astrologers to establish the year on the basis of the sun and the months on that of the moon.

“When she was aroused from the swoon she recounted to the common crowd [*H the Homo sapiens*] both the dream and the misfortunes that had befallen her [*H giving them an excuse for killing all the Titans*], asking that they render to the dead honors like those accorded to the gods and asserting that no man should there-after touch her body. And after this she became frenzied, and seizing such of her daughter’s playthings as could make a noise, she began to wander over the land, with her hair hanging free, inspired by the noise of the kettledrum and cymbals, so that those who saw her were struck with astonishment.” And they pitied her and worshipped her as the great mother -- especially in Phrygia where she was called Cybelê.”  
--Diodorus: III.57

As you’re beginning to see, most people lost the knowledge of where “Atlantis” and the “Atlanteans” had been, but Diodorus remembered that they were a historic people. The original Phrygia was not the latter-day Phrygia of Asia Minor (Turkey) where there was a bizarre fertility cult in the eastern Mediterranean world that worshipped Cybelê. As I insisted in Chapter 37, regarding frigate war ships, original Phrygia was a province of Atlantis. We will discover how much of this confusion came about in Appendix F.

But notice two other things about the Atlantean solar myth. First, unlike Mexican mythology, here the Titans’ immediate opponent is not the sun god but men. Second, consider again the line, “that which had formerly been called ‘the

holy fire' would now be called 'the sun.'" This line implies that the "Atlanteans" modified their mythology to reflect a changing attitude toward the sun. We'll refer to this myth later and be able to confirm that it heralded a new stage of religious worship, in the Bronze Age, a stage that succeeded worship at the chamber-tombs. As we'll see, the late Neolithic stage of worship at the chamber-tombs, which eclipsed that of early Neolithic worship at the dolmens, was one of strong sun gods. The Bronze Age stage eclipsed worship at the chamber-tombs and was centered on the ring monuments. The Bronze Age stage of beliefs was one of weak sun gods.

O'Kelly, without sharing our understanding of the dolmen rites, supported our estimation of their antiquity: "The idea of a House for the Dead could have been a familiar one long before the first megaliths were erected in Ireland and it could have lain dormant until the conditions were right, that is, until there was a well-fed settled population with time and reserves of wealth in food and labor sufficient to undertake enterprises on such a scale" (O'Kelly: 123).

I second his observation (of the communication and trade links that are implied by the dolmens). Note too that the incentive for trade with the British Isles probably began when farmers began to produce surpluses of grain and animals. This was probably as early as 4300 B.C. in England (Joussaume: 23) and 3855+/-100 in Ireland (O'Kelly: 36).

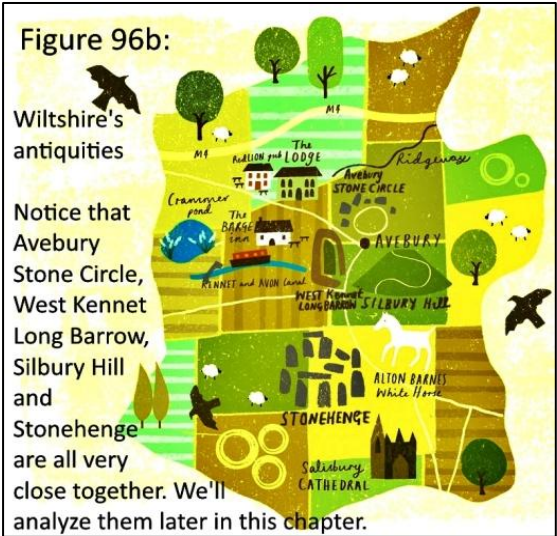
These late Neolithic sun gods were more powerful but also more remote than their predecessors. Domesticated animals would have been observed to die of natural causes with attendant, recognizable and predictable symptoms of disease. The gods of this later era, a more confident era wherein man's technology was rapidly expanding and his anxieties were focused on the sun, would have been less involved with man's day to day existence and more concerned with the ultimate battle for the sun. The Hebrew Armageddon, Germanic Ragnarok and all other semi-conscious fears of our world ending as had *Homo erectus* were readily adapted to this belief in an ultimate battle for the sun such as the one that survived in pre-Columbian Mexico.

In the Ultonian Cycle of the official Celtic mythology, Lugh of the Long Arm is a feeble ancestor of the original Irish or Celtic sun god. The same is true for Tyr (Tiwaz) of Scandinavian (Germanic) mythology. The transcribers and poets of our Scandinavian mythology knew Tyr as the lord of law and order. He also was said to give victory in battle, to rule and even hold up the sky. Sacrifices had been made to him; but, in later times, he was greatly overshadowed by Odin, Thor and others. (Cf. Davidson: 52) "Giving victory in battle" would have been an attribute of the Lord of the gods at every stage. But "holding up the sky" -- and holding off the demon stars that start to collapse around us at night -- was a

function of the early sun gods who unfolded after the period of worship at the dolmens.<sup>73</sup> And “law and order” (to the extent to which we’ve enjoyed it) is synonymous with settled community. It developed rapidly during the early stages of the Neolithic.

For the Atlanteans, Uranus was said to have brought law and order. (Cf. Diodorus III, 56) According to Diodorus, he was the grandfather of Helius, their weak sun god and the father of Atlas and Cronus and about sixty other Titans. So, the “Atlanteans” credited the Neanderthals with having a lawful and orderly society.

Interment or cremation within the costly tumuli would have been limited to society’s elite equivalents of the Mexican warrior class, rulers and priests -- to those destined to join the army of the sun god. Archaeologists have already discovered the elite nature of the chamber-tombs without fully understanding their religious significance:



<sup>73</sup> “Holding up the sky” not only referred to the rainbow and Deluge obsessional fear. It apparently also referred to the literal Flood because it was often mentioned in parallel with “the sea coming over us.” For example, in the most famous of all Irish myths, the Book of Leinster’s version of the *Cattle Raid of Cooley* (*the Tain Bo Cuailgne*), the Ulster heroes declare to their king, who wishes to leave them in battle in order to meet an attack in another part of the field: “Heaven is above us, and earth beneath us, and the sea is round about us. Unless the sky shall fall with its showers of stars on the ground where we are camped, or unless the earth shall be rent by an earthquake, or unless the waves of the blue sea come over the forests of the living world, we shall not give ground” (Rolleston: 24, citing de Jubainville). The same solar expression of obsessional Deluge fear survived among the Celts into the beginning of the modern era. Before Alexander the Great undertook his campaigns of conquest in Asia and Egypt in 334 B.C., he had to secure his Greek dominions from attack from their northern and the western frontiers, which had been extended by Philip, his father. The vassals on these frontiers were the Celts and with them he made a compact. The episode was related by Ptolemy, a friend and probably half-brother of Alexander; and though his work has not survived, he was quoted after Arrian (*Anabasis*, Book I, Ch. 4.2-5.8) and de Jubainville by Rolleston, p. 23: “As the Celtic envoys, who are described as men of haughty bearing and great stature, their mission concluded, were drinking with the king, he asked them, it is said, what was the thing they, the Celts, most feared. The envoys replied: ‘We fear no man: there is but one thing that we fear, namely, that the sky should fall on us; but we regard nothing so much as the friendship of a man such as thou.’”

“[I]t is now clear that only a favored few could have qualified for burial in the splendid funeral monuments of the period, which suggests some degree of social stratification. Other elements were disposed of much less formally, such as those deposited in the ditches of causewayed enclosures. It would be a mistake to read too much into the apparent absence of personal wealth,



Figure 96c: West Kennet Long Barrow entrance

for riches in peasant societies are often expressed in terms that leave little or no trace for the archaeologist: in women, cattle, salt and produce or other perishable possessions. It has been suggested that already Wessex had been carved up into separate chiefdoms, and certainly it seems inconceivable that the great monuments of that region, such as the Dorset Cursus, the West Kennet chambered tomb and Silbury Hill, could be constructed except by well-organized societies, with an individual or class at the top very much in control.<sup>74</sup>,<sup>75</sup>,<sup>76</sup> *[H See Figure 96b, which shows the locations of West Kennet chamber tomb, Silbury Hill and Stonehenge. We'll analyze them all later in this chapter. Wessex was a rich culture of southern England. It included the Cornwall area and its tin. Throughout much of the Bronze Age, Wessex enjoyed a virtual world monopoly in the production of this vital element that was needed to make bronze. We'll learn much more about Wessex and Cornwall in Appendix F. By the way, have you seen anything yet to confirm the equivalence of*

<sup>74</sup> The West Kennet long barrow is one of the largest chamber tombs in England. It is located one- and one-half miles south of Avebury in Wiltshire.

<sup>75</sup> A cursus is a linear bank and ditch that stretches across the flat British countryside (usually in the south) for 2 or 3 kilometers. But the Dorset Cursus is 9.6 km long. When we get to Appendix F, I will convince you that these were war dykes. They were especially affective against war chariots.

<sup>76</sup> Also, in Wiltshire near Avebury is Silbury Hill, the largest artificial mound in Europe. It is almost as big as the greatest mounds in the USA; but unlike the latter, it does not have a large platform on top. The top is only 30 meters in diameter. Since large deposits of human remains have not been found within or around it, its purpose is still widely debated. I'll reveal its latter-day purpose when we get to Stonehenge later in this chapter and its origin in Appendix H.



Figure 96d: West Kennet Long Barrow (passage tomb, tumulus or collective chamber tomb; they were built between 4000 & 2400 BC as terminals for the elite warriors of the sun god on their passage to the sun.)

*picking forbidden fruit with picking flowery branches in Tamoanchan?]*” -- Burgess: 32-33 (See Figure 127, a photo of Silbury Hill.)

Whereas dolmens had been day-to-day houses of the gods, chamber-tombs were burial place /hotels through which the elite warriors of the sun god passed enroute from the profane world to the sun. Periodically, the cremated remains of the departed had to be shoveled out

to make room for new guests. This explains why the dolmens are almost always found in low-lying settings, often near streams, whereas the most elaborate chamber- tombs (the long barrows, tumuli or passage-tombs) almost always are found on the highest hilltops. See O'Kelly's pages 94 and 97 and Figures 96c & 96d.

Now look at Figure 97, and listen to Rolleston (p. 67) describe these cup and ring markings that often appear on or near chamber tombs. Archaeologists are still scratching their heads when they look at them. Their status hasn't changed since Rolleston described them as follows:

“Another singular emblem, upon the meaning of which no light has yet been thrown, occurs frequently at megalithic monuments. The

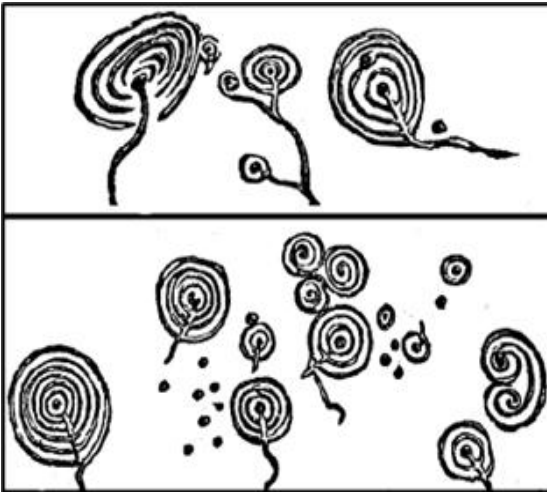


Figure 97: Cup and ring markings from Scotland (After Sir F. Simpson and Rolleston)

accompanying illustrations show examples of it. Cup-shaped hollows are made in the surface of the stone, these are often surrounded with concentric rings, and from the cup one or more radial lines are drawn to a point outside the circumference of the rings. Occasionally these lines join a system of cups, but more frequently they end a little way outside the widest of the rings. (Joussaume [his page 74] adds: these strange markings are found in Great Britain and Ireland, in

Brittany, and at various places in India, where they are called *mahadeos*. In Europe, they only appear at passage graves.)”

*Is it as obvious to you, at this point, as it is to me that these markings are maps? They showed the souls of the dead warriors their flight route to the sun. The rings spiral as the smoke from the first burning Homo erectus bodies and all other burnt offerings since then have spiraled toward the sun. This same spiral looks like a coiled snake, as Maria Reiche (in Volume 2) noticed. At an earlier time, this strengthened the rings’ unconscious association with Homo erectus.*<sup>77</sup> It also appears to me, from the few pictures that I’ve seen, that those “ring markings,” “spirals” or “flight maps” that are indented to form a cup are meant to be exactly that. These cups are formed in the horizontal engravings of this design to catch water for some of the gods -- for the birds that are their incarnations. Don’t birds always seek out such depressions from which to drink? How likely is it that the ancestors who made these cups and located Dolmens near streams still had mythology that indicated how earlier ancestors had denied *Homo erectus*, the folks who flew up to heaven as aither, access to water?

Recall also that Indians and Mexicans worshipped the sun and had an elaborate solar mythology. If you doubt this interpretation, just listen to the rest:

“I have also found a curious example -- for such it appears to be -- in Dupaix’ Monuments of New Spain [*H Mexico*]. It is reproduced in Lord Kingsborough’s *Antiquities of Mexico*, vol. IV. On the circular top of a cylindrical stone, known as the Triumphal Stone, is carved a central cup, with nine [*H “nine” referring to the dead*] concentric circles round it, and a duct or channel cut straight from the cup through all the circles to the rim. Except that the design here is richly decorated and accurately drawn, it closely resembles a typical European cup-and-ring marking. That these markings mean something and that, wherever they are found, they mean the same

---

<sup>77</sup> I participated in a traditional Japanese tea ceremony held at the art gallery of Japanese friends who pride themselves on being relatively free of superstitions. The traditional Japanese wafer that I was given with my traditional Japanese tea was decorated with a spiral exactly like those in Figures 97 and 98. (In Chapter 26, we found spirals at Nazca, Peru too.) Our hosts, experts in the traditions of this formal ceremony, were unable to tell me anything about its meaning. This removal of a sacred symbol from its original, sepulchral context supports my contention (Appendix B, [footnote 60](#)) that the Japanese adopted many Ainu symbols and imitated some Ainu religious beliefs out of a respect for and a desire to identify themselves with the aboriginal people whom they had conquered.



thing can hardly be doubted; but what that meaning is remains yet a puzzle to antiquarians.” --Rolleston: 68

Ring markings are also on depictions of a reclining Buddha in Rangoon, Burma. Figure 98 shows the unrestored entrance to New Grange, the grandest of all the European chamber-tombs. Look at the enormous size of the ring designs on the threshold stone. These represent the more powerful souls of kings, great chieftains or gods. While New Grange was being restored, it was noticed that the tomb was constructed to allow the rays of the sun, for a period of two weeks bracketing the winter solstice, to pass through a slit in the floor of a roof-box above the entrance in such a way as to illuminate, with a pencil of light, the chamber floor all the way to the sarcophagus at its end. (Cf. O’Kelly: 106) It turns

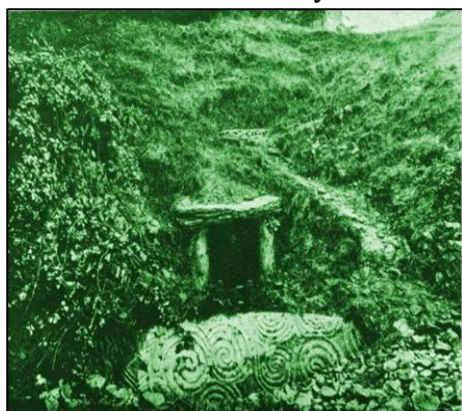


Figure 98: Unrestored entrance to New Grange. Note the cup and ring markings on the threshold.

out that many of the passage graves are so oriented and constructed. The idea was to construct the tomb so that, at the time of the solstice, light would stream in and any gods that were checked in would get a wakeup call and be mobilized for the common cause, the battle with the demons for the

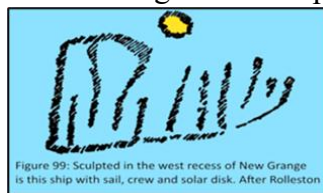


Figure 99: Sculpted in the west recess of New Grange is this ship with sail, crew and solar disk. After Rolleston

sun. As we learned in the chapter on Irish mythology, the gentry and great champions were sometimes thought to be the reincarnations of the *Sídhe*; a word that literally means “people of the fairy mounds.”

Two or more ring markings connected might indicate warriors, priests or nobles who had died in battle together, been sacrificed together or were kinsmen. These and other relationships might explain why people were expected to fly together, the way “angels” were later depicted (or the way Freddy Laker crammed people into cheap seats).

Most of the early Irish passage graves were stripped of their contents (allegedly by the Norsemen in the ninth and tenth centuries [Rolleston: 69] but possibly by local Irishmen). Typical contents consisted of

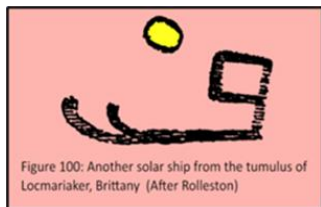


Figure 100: Another solar ship from the tumulus of Locmariaker, Brittany (After Rolleston)

round-bottomed bowls with or without shoulders,

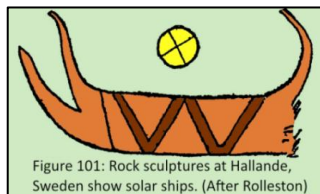
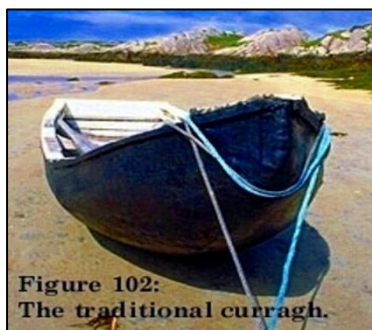


Figure 101: Rock sculptures at Hallande, Sweden show solar ships. (After Rolleston)

coarsely-made flat-bottomed, bucket shaped vessels, leaf- and lozenge-shaped arrowheads, hollow scrapers, polished stone axes and javelin heads. (Cf. O'Kelly: 89)

Sculpture in the west recess of New Grange, in the tumulus of Locmariaker in Brittany, in rock sculptures of Sweden and elsewhere show ships such as in Figures 99, 100 and 101. (Cf Rolleston: 72) The round circle above them is the sun. Notice that one of them (and at least one other that is shown in Rolleston) appears to have a sail.

Just as Neolithic men's anxieties were focused on the sun, they were heightened during sea voyages. And Neolithic man did have ships. Gimbutas estimates that sea travel began c. 7000 to 6500 B.C. on the Black Sea (Gimbutas: 334). Cattle were first domesticated in Greece during this period (Champion *et al.*: 120). The Black Sea was easier to navigate than the Mediterranean, and it united cultures with varying resources and productive conditions. It is becoming clear that the early cites of the Carpathian Basin, Anatolia and Transcaucasia



pioneered metallurgy, surpassed Mesopotamia and long remained as centers of civilization. (See Gimbutas.) The first north Atlantic sea-worthy boats were made of frame and wicker and covered with stretched cowhide. In Ireland, the one-man variety was called a coracle and is frequently alluded to in myth. Larger vessels of the same type were called curraghs. (See Figure 102 for a modern descendant of the traditional curragh.)

Because the land bridges over the Irish Sea and English Channel were lost c. 6000 B.C. (Brown: 86), the first curraghs came to the British Isles no later than the first cattle, which was sometime in the fifth millennium.

These Neolithic ancestors equipped their sun gods with a ship for at least four reasons. First, both associated with their fears. Seafaring was dangerous. Second, "Balder" and his *Homo erectus* counterparts were remembered as having gone to sea in a fiery ship. Third, as we'll discover, Neolithic people were much more traumatized then than they are today by the Great Flood and viewed boats as a means of escaping another one. Fourth, and most importantly, *the sun appeared, to our Neolithic western ancestors, to sink into the sea at dusk.*

In Sweden, archaeologists uncovered a whole ship that the Norsemen had used as a coffin. See Davidson for a picture. *Now can you see the meaning of the elevated eastern ends of the long mounds of southern England or the high-wedged entrances of the wedge tombs of Ireland? They are the sail of the mound or*



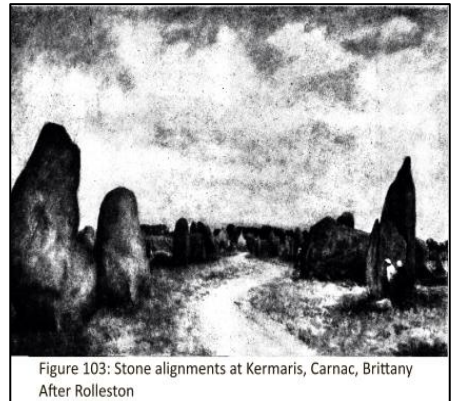
*chamber, which is itself a solar ship on which dead warriors sailed to the sun. The Neolithic Britons enclosed their dolmens in the long mounds, hoping that the souls of their long-dead ancestors would board a boat to the sun. Look again at Figure 96a. The floor plans of these early chamber- tombs, seen from “on high,” represent ships (some others have sails) docking at the sun. This is the other reason why all the chamber tombs (shown in Figure 88a) are near the coastlines. Most of the exterior round and long mounds also would have been conceived as suns or ships.*

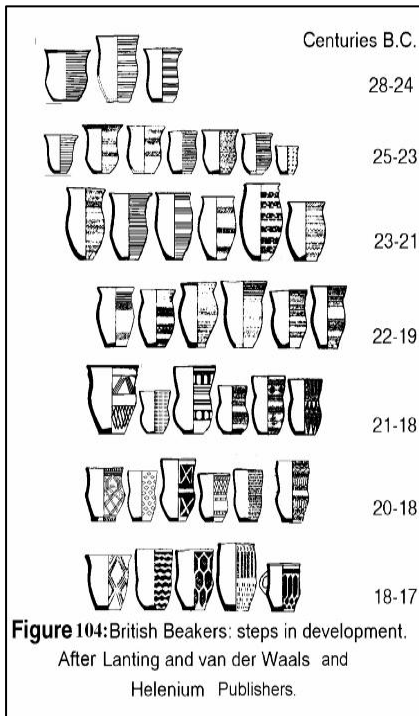
*For these primitive ancestors, it was reasonable to assume that one could get to the sun by ship -- at the point where the sun intersected with the sea each night. So, they constructed the chamber tombs of warriors to look like ships or suns where ships ported to provide the magical, imitative demiurge that would make it happen. Their religious ideology was, at this stage, like that of the pre-conquest Mesoamericans.*

We now know African people to have been in South America by 65 kya. They had to arrive by raft or canoe, which means that men have been plying the oceans for at least 65 ky. However, it's probable that the first arrivers got their fishing canoes caught in the strong equatorial current and arrived in South America by accident. But either at least one of these sailors had to navigate the opposite current to return to Africa and fetch at least one woman or at least one African woman (a New World Eve) had also to arrive by accident. We'll learn much more about the Aboriginal African Americans, both the Olmecs and the original mound builders of North America, in Appendix H. Return with me now to the megaliths of the British Isles.

Of this Neolithic era, it remains for us to say who the chamber tomb builders were relative to Professor O'Rahilly's four groups. There can be no question: they were the “Pretani,” “Pics,” or “Picti,” *etc.* The human remains found within the earliest collective chamber tombs and long mounds of the British Isles tend to be gracile and dolichocephalic. They did become less gracile and dolichocephalic during the late fourth and third millennium when another people started arriving, a shorter more robust, brachycephalic people; but that was due to the gradual introduction of and intermarriage with the newcomers.

Professor Burgess dismisses these differences as inconsequential. He suggests that the dolichocephalic Neolithic people were the elite of their society and therefore unrepresentative of the whole people. But these people are still





gracile and dolichocephalic relative to the remains in the rich Wessex tombs, and these latter certainly were the elite of the Wessex era. But to this Burgess seems to have another answer ready: “these two series are separated by the several centuries of the Meldon Bridge period [H 3200-2750 B.C.], when very little is known about the development of British and Irish physical types. But [H And?] it is clear that there was ample time for the ‘dolichocephaly’ of the Fourth Millennium to develop naturally into the ‘brachycephaly’ of the later Third-Second Millennia...” (Burgess: 36). But if less than 2,000 years suffices for dolichocephalic people to evolve into brachycephalic, then the modern Swedes would be much more brachycephalic than were the Wessex people; and the modern-day Swedes are still dolichocephalic.

Conversely, if 2,000 years suffices for this evolution, then it is reasonable to suppose that 2,000 years would equally suffice for evolution in the opposite direction. If so, Mongoloid Americans and many other peoples who migrated from cold to warm climates would now be dolichocephalic, and they are not. We’ll reconsider migration groups momentarily.

The dolmens and the tumuli correspond to the first two major stages of worship after Paleolithic totemism. Older than each of these is another type of megalithic monument. The basic meaning of this one will be obvious to you veteran correspondents of the Species War. But the subtle implications of it are extremely difficult to realize owing to a deeply-ingrained and universal belief in the superiority of “white” Europeans and their culture. *There is to be found in Brittany and a few places in the British Isles upright-standing parallel cordons of megaliths.* See Figure 103, above. Of course, these are the western-most places of Europe where the largest body of *Homo erectus* people were progressively driven and ultimately forced to fight. The Brittany home of these stone avenues is where “stone worship” survived into modern times. These stone avenues represent opposing hordes of Species Warriors.

We had no trouble interpreting the Wintu myth of Klakherrit and Kaisusherrit (in Chapter 30), the Royal Hunts [the chacos of the Incas (Chapter 26) and

Huexotzinco's sacred rite of Camaxtli (Chapter 35)], and the cordons of Species Warriors that are inferred by the corn rites and fire festivals (Chapters 28 and 29). The Australian Aborigines were by far the most open and easy to interpret. Their mythology and tabus regarding the Achilpa frankly admit that they systematically and progressively drove the main body of *Homo erecti* totally across Australia, from west to east, cannibalizing them as they went. All that was easy for us to see. But, owing to our post-Great-Flood animal alienation and universal prejudice against dark skin and favoritism of white skin; it is difficult to see the same of our European ancestors. *During **their** age of cannibalism, between their Paleolithic Boundary and Neolithic; they did the same thing. They expunged the mythology of it but worked very hard to memorialize the truth in stone.* This phenomenon, and I submit – only it, explains why western-most Europe, of prehistoric times and prior to the Trojan War and the population collapse that followed it; was much more densely populated than we would expect. Accordingly, as antiquaries and archaeologists are slowly realizing; prehistoric cultural contributions, of every sort, were at least as likely to be exported as to be imported from there.

Another type of megalithic structure that our ancestors built was the stone circle, ring monument or *henge*. Like the tumuli and the stone avenues, most are in Western Europe, especially Ireland and England. The appearance of these stone circles and the evolution of their designs strikingly confirm Freud's dictum that neurotic symptoms tend to ever more closely reveal the underlying, repressed impulse or fear. But before I describe the stone circles, the most magnificent and revealing example being Stonehenge, let's consider the next historical period and the next major group to migrate to the British Isles.

Professor Burgess has spearheaded the movement of recent years that has refuted old notions of there having been an "invasion" of Beaker Folk. These hypothetical people had long been cited to explain changes in burial tradition and public ceremonies and the sudden appearance of an assemblage. This assemblage included buttons, wrist guards for archers, bronze work and the very beautiful, thin-walled and hard pottery known as Bell Beakers. In varied designs, the Bell Beakers became popular all over Europe. (See Figure 104.)

"Towards the end of the Fourth Millennium striking innovations in burial and ritual monuments and material culture herald the age..." (Burgess: 17). More specifically, prior to 3000 B.C. and over the greater part of western, northwestern and west-central Europe; various forms of collective burial generally prevailed. (Cf. Champion *et al.*: 171) As of the start of the third millennium, collective burial began to disappear and sepulchral traditions, monuments and pottery in the British Isles became infinitely varied. (Cf. Burgess: 296) "The Age of Stonehenge saw a remarkable development of burial, ritual and public monuments. Above all, this was the age of the round burial mound [*H new to England*], both chambered

and un-chambered, forming one of the most numerous and familiar relics of our prehistoric past. These round mounds epitomize an era that saw great social, economic and spiritual changes but with an essential continuity scarcely disturbed by the arrival of metallurgy and the Beaker tradition after 3000 B.C.” (Burgess: 17).

***Hallelujah!*** It just now occurred to me, while making the audiotape of this chapter, some 37 years into my research, why the lords of the Fir Bolgs and their better-known, “Atlantean” cousins – who, as I am proceeding now to prove to you, were the “Beaker Folk” that brought the Bronze Age to the Isles in the early 4<sup>th</sup> Millennium B.C and became the rich lords of what Big Brother’s present-day archaeologists refer to as the Wessex Culture – insisted upon being buried in round mounds. This confirms, better than any other evidence, that they and they alone had fought the Species War in the Isles. They and they alone remembered what the “fairy mounds” were all about, which is why they insisted upon being buried in round mounds that looked like the fairy mounds. You’ll see exactly what the fairy mounds are in Appendix H.

Professor Burgess is apparently correct in asserting that there was no wholesale invasion such as the one that we shall consider in Appendix F, an invasion that occurred circa 1200 B.C. Third millennium changes came gradually. “By the Third Millennium, Britain and Ireland had already been divided fairly rigidly into territories by stratified societies, which, confined within their borders, were much more static than has usually been conceived” (Burgess: 20). Old forms coexisted beside the new. Signs of warfare, of great social upheaval, just aren’t there at 3000 B.C.

This was, of course, after the time when bronze began to appear in the Mid-East. Although it is clear that vigorous contact had been maintained between Ireland and England and England and the continent, in my opinion, the normal rate of local exchange is *unlikely* to account for the many novelties and innovations that appear at this time.

Perhaps the best evidence that the new artifacts constituted an assemblage, a package that was characteristic of a distinct culture, comes from Carlton Coon. Coon observed that the force-draft, charcoal-fed furnace that is required to produce quality pottery -- that is not easily broken but hard through and through and not soft in the center like that made by the lower temperatures of the wood-burning open-hearths of the early Neolithic -- *is the same furnace that is required for smelting*. (Cf. Coon, 1977: 221)

Moreover, I am quite certain, from the mythology of Ireland and Greece that most of these novel forms and ideas were brought by newcomers to the British Isles. In later times, the very violent invasion that brought the Celts, may have

distorted the memory of the earlier arrival, may have caused it, by association, to be labeled as an “invasion.” But if the scenario that I am about to create for you is correct, these newcomers, who brought bronze, bell beakers, buttons, and wrist-guards and insisted upon being buried in round mounds, had little need to fight. They made themselves needed, and they traded to provide for all their own needs.

These newcomers, the mysterious “Beaker Folk,” bronze workers, were the group that included the Fir Bolgs and the two allied tribes, the Fir-Domnan and the Galioin, who are fabled in Irish mythology. Their members who settled in England became lords there too but became famous by another name. As you’ll see, these folks were overthrown by invaders who arrived in 1194 B.C. While I’m told that Carlton Coon became discredited in archaeology due to supporting the multiregional theory of evolution and the belief in races, supporters of these beliefs still occupy university chairs today. *The more likely reason for Coon getting bounced was his insistence upon the “Beaker Folk” truth, which in turn led to the other great discovery (the invasion sequence) that the ruling class is still desperate to cover up.* Oh, what tangled webs we weave when first we venture to deceive! The whole of academia, especially in the social sciences and archaeology, is riddled with lies and cover-ups. The most wishful thinkers, religious babies, will believe in almost anything and love a good lie. Latent homosexual, Third Mask people, as Orwell and I have tried to tell you, tend to be just the opposite. They tend to cover up or deny all new information because they are afraid of all change and information that might cause change because they associate change and truth with the removal of their masks, which, owing to homophobia, they cannot do. *The most insane people, people who are both religious and Third Mask latent homosexuals, tend to both cover up or deny the truth and actively spread lies whenever they deem it to be in their material or class interest. The same insane K class, latent homosexuals, Christians and Jews that dominate our commercial and political world thoroughly dominate and control academia. I know what I’m telling you not just from theory but from personal experience. The richest scoundrels of both the USA and China have used almost every carrot and stick to try to manipulate me and gain editorial control over this book. They’ve attempted to bribe me with every kind of carrot and have bludgeoned me with every kind of stick. Mostly outside of academia but in the publishing world are a few R class, militant partisans who believe in fighting fire with fire. They are quick to invent and spread whatever lie might suit their immediate ends. I disagree with them too.*

I believe that we can never have a sustainable and civilized world until we become honest with ourselves and others and that there is never any better time to start than now. Refusing to cooperate with the scoundrels and being militantly honest makes my life materially difficult, condemns me to poverty and oppression;

but it is the key to my intellectual success, to my mastery of all the social sciences. Even in archaeology, where the elite scoundrels are working so hard to control the field and what gets released to the public, I have been able to put it all together! I don't know of any important question in archaeology that I haven't found the answer for, and I'll give you the answers in the next 175 pages. If I leave anything important

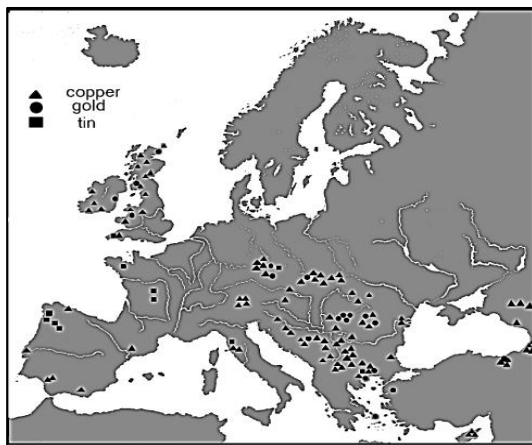
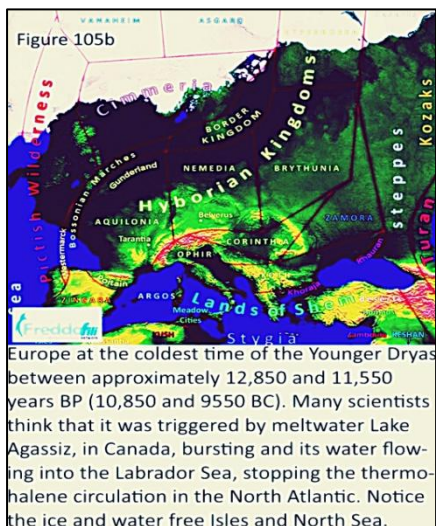


Figure 105a: Copper, tin and gold sources in Europe (After J. M. Cole's and A. F. Harding's, "The Bronze Age in Europe," Methuen and Co.



Europe at the coldest time of the Younger Dryas between approximately 12,850 and 11,550 years BP (10,850 and 9550 BC). Many scientists think that it was triggered by meltwater Lake Agassiz, in Canada, bursting and its water flowing into the Labrador Sea, stopping the thermohaline circulation in the North Atlantic. Notice the ice and water free Isles and North Sea.

out, write me. I generally need to study an issue and sleep on it for only a few nights to come up with the answer.

*Just as unswerving honesty is necessary for science and progress, the converse is also true. Even the first, little lie becomes a slippery slope. The very first lie (i. e. the compromised identity of the original sin victims) begot self-hatred, which begot fear, which begot a desire for punishment (as a means of ending the fear), which produced more negative behavior, which produced another lie, etc. **Humanity is currently***

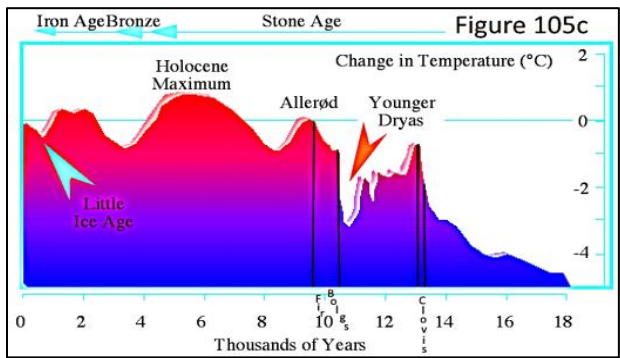
*drowning in lies. This is what [Daniel Boorstin tried to tell us, above](#). His message simply wasn't forceful enough, and it was improperly confined to Americans. The dishonesty is universal. Humanity is drowning in lies, lies that may already have doomed us. WWII or another Great Flood (either of which are likely to touch off irreversible anarchy) awaits us at a lower level of the vortex we are already in. An ever-increasing majority of people are religious babies or latent homosexual scoundrels. Both are zombies who are dead psychologically and whose lives are meaningless. That's the result of becoming so confused or cynical as to not care about true or false and right or wrong.*

Recall that the Fir Bolgs claimed to have been Nemed's people, to have been the first people in Ireland and to have been driven out by the Fomorians. They said that they had gone to Greece where they were oppressed; they were made to

put clay, which they carried in bags, on stony ground. Later, “Two hundred and thirty years after Nemed,” two plus three equals five, work, plus and enlarging place-holder, after much hard work, they made their bags into boats and returned to Ireland. (Cf. O’Rahilly: 46, citing the *Book of Ballymote* 29 a.1.; *The Book of Lecan* fo. 276 a.1.48-49; and *Genealogical Tracts*, ed. T. O. Raithbheartaigh.) O’Rahilly believed this arrival of the Fir Bolgs was just one more mendacious invasion tale.

But tin was always scarce in Europe and the Mid-East; and since bronze is much harder than copper but requires eleven percent tin, finding tin was the big Bronze Age problem. (See the metals map, Figure 105a.) Between 2700 and 1700 B.C., tin disappeared entirely from Sumer and Mesopotamia. Mesopotamians reverted to copper as the Egyptians had always done. Anatolian tin mines had either been exhausted or not yet discovered. They got their tin from the Assyrians, who got it from some eastern source. (Cf. Coon, 1977: 241, 246, 248)

Moreover, in what is now southern Bulgaria, many of the tell settlements were abandoned at the end of the



people the Fir Bolgs, the Fir-Domnan and the Galioin? Curiously, the language of the Fir Bolgs and their pliable, break-away brothers, the Érainn (who chose to change their name and oral history rather than displease their conquerors, the Goidelic Celts), is known to have been “dark, obscure and dense.” Though the language is not recoverable, it is known to have employed “unusual words and word forms” (O’Rahilly: 84, citing *Sanas Cormaic*, ed. Meyer [*Anecdota* IV]). If the Fir Bolgs (and most of the Belgae or Pelasgians) had indeed started to come back to Ireland after being five thousand years in Greece or the Carpathian Basin, they certainly would have spoken a language that was incomprehensible to their new hosts. This “five-thousand-year interval” assures us that their mythology is honest and accurate. They claimed to have left northwestern Europe, what is now the British Isles, at that time because “the Fomorians drove them out.” Figure 105b shows what Europe looked like 10.9 kya, during the depths of the Younger Dryas.



Figure 105c shows the time periods of great flooding when the Lenape and other Clovis people left Asia for North America and when the Fir Bolgs left Northern Europe for Greece. Although the right-most part of this graph, from the right-most peak to the right-most terminus is out of accord with the latest and best Vostok Ice Core data (Figure 10b) and needs to be shifted about three eighths inches to the right, this graph gives us a bird's eye view of the Younger Dryas and the Holocene (the present interglacial). Not only does the Fir Bolgs date roughly accord with this record for the ice cycle, but they also retained a primitive, dreamlike myth that verifies their claim. It is the primitive precursor of the Polyphemus (Cyclops) myth that was later incorporated into Homer's *Odyssey*. It is one of several that appear to have been compounded into "The Birth of Fin McCumhail and The Origin of The Fenians" (Curtin: 1894). I italicized the unique portions that differ from Homer's *Odyssey* (starring Odysseus). The complete myth is in my *Irish Mythology: Passageway to Prehistory*. Here it is:

Fin and Bran went on till they came to a great cave, in which they found a herd of goats. At the further end of the cave was a smoldering fire. The two lay down to rest.

A couple of hours later, in came a giant with a salmon in his hand. This giant was of awful height; he had but one eye, and that in the middle of his forehead, as large as the sun in heaven.

When he saw Fin, he called out: "Here, take this salmon and roast it; but be careful, for if you raise a single blister on it, I'll cut the head off you. *I've followed this salmon for three days and three nights without stopping, and I never let it out of my sight, for it is the most wonderful salmon in the world.*"

The giant lay down to sleep in the middle of the cave. Fin spitted the salmon, and held it over the fire.

The minute the giant closed the one eye in his head, he began to snore. Every time he drew breath into his body, he dragged Fin, the spit, the salmon, Bran, and all the goats to his mouth; and every time he drove a breath out of himself, he threw them back to the places they were in before. Fin was drawn time after time to the mouth of the giant with such force, that he was in dread of going down his throat.

When partly cooked, a blister rose on the salmon. Fin pressed the place with his thumb, to know could he break the blister, and hide from the giant the harm that was done. But he burned his thumb, and, to ease the pain, *put it between his teeth, and gnawed the skin to the*



*flesh, the flesh to the bone, the bone to the marrow; and when he had tasted the marrow, he received the knowledge of all things.*

This thumb gnawing, which Fin resorts to again and again, says several things. First, deep inside us, buried within the unconscious is the knowledge of (many) things. Second, gnawing on skin, flesh and bone marrow suggests cannibalism, the practice of which recovers (by homeopathic magic) the knowledge that our cannibal ancestors possessed. Third, the development of our prehensile thumb was fundamental in the transition from ape to man. The ability of the human thumb to manipulate tools and the struggle to develop and select for enhanced neuro-motor control of the thumb and other fingers was an important evolutionary process. The German-speaking peoples have a stone-old expression: *Ich drücke Ihnen den Daumen*. The closest English equivalent of this is: I wish you luck. But literally translated it says: I press my thumb for you. The chewing and the pressing have the same prehistoric origin in fact: the *Homo sapiens* thumb, which reversed the comparative lengths of the first and second pollical digits from what they were in the *Homo erectus* thumb, represented a subtle but tremendous advance. [Search “thumb” and Enkidu’s hand getting caught in a gate in Volume 1 and, in Volume 2, “Nuada of the Silver Hand” and the Cheyenne myth, “The Hand Game.”] Fintann, the Salmon of Knowledge (Figure 62b), also became a part of this myth and Finn’s thumb chewing. Thanks to the Gaelic research of Grigory Bondarenko (his pages 2-3), I’ll be able to reveal Fintann’s origins in Appendix H. Continuing with the original Irish Cyclops myth...

Next moment, he was drawn by the breath of the giant right up to his face, and, knowing from his thumb what to do, he plunged the hot spit into the sleeping eye of the giant and destroyed it. [*H True to the prehistoric past, the giant (Homo erectus) is attacked with the hot spit (an arrow).*]

That instant the giant with a single bound was at the low entrance of the cave, and, standing with his back to the wall and a foot on each side of the opening, roared out: “You’ll not leave this place alive.” [*H Wounded Neanderthal would have been terrifying to behold!*]

*Now Fin killed the largest goat, skinned him as quickly as he could, then putting the skin on himself* he drove the herd to where the giant stood; the goats passed out one by one between his legs. When the great goat came, the giant took him by the horns. Fin slipped from the skin, and ran out.

Notice that in the Greek version, Odysseus only clings to the belly of the animal. This mere “clinging” is further from the original meaning of the myth. The wooly hide is a displacement for the hairy hide of *Homo erectus*. Disguising oneself as a goat is symbolic of disguising oneself as *Homo erectus*. Being an earlier branch on the hominid tree, *Homo erectus* was more ape-like than us in every way. Continuing...

“Oh, you've escaped,” said the giant, “but before we part let me make you a present.”

“I'm afraid to go near you,” said Fin; “if you wish to give me a present, put it out this way, and then go back.”

The giant placed a ring on the ground, then went back. Fin took up the ring and put it on the end of his little finger above the first joint. It clung so firmly that no man in the world could have taken it off.

The giant then called out, “Where are you?”

“On Fin's finger,” cried the ring.

That instant the giant sprang at Fin and almost came down on his head, thinking in this way to crush him to bits. Fin sprang to a distance.

Again, the giant asked, “Where are you?”

The “ring” condenses a shackle, a cowbell and something else. Notice that Fin put it, “on the end of his little finger above the first joint.” No one does this. But something else was done with the least-used joints of fingers, one joint at a time. Continuing...

“On Fin's finger,” answered the ring.

Again, the giant made a leap, coming down just in front of Fin. Many times, he called and many times almost caught Fin, who could not escape with the ring on his finger. While in this terrible struggle, not knowing how to escape, Bran ran up and asked: “Why don't you chew your thumb?”

Fin bit his thumb to the marrow, and then knew what to do. He took the knife with which he had skinned the goat, cut off his finger at the first joint, and threw it, with the ring still on, into a deep bog nearby.

Primitive hunters are known to sacrifice joints of their fingers to the gods for better luck in hunting. Some of the motivation for these finger sacrifices derives from ongoing guilt vis-à-vis the animals that they kill. (See Campbell, 1959: 229-

230, 288-289, 375.) But the practice probably started after the Deluge, and the greatest part of the motivation for it derives from guilt and fear vis-à-vis killing *Homo erectus*. Cutting off joints of fingers and giving the *Homo erectus* gods the fingers that let the arrows fly that killed them would have been a replacement idea for the fear that *Homo erectus* would take revenge in kind.

Again, the giant called out, “Where are you?” and the ring answered, “On Fin’s finger.”

Straightway the giant sprang towards the voice, sank to his shoulders in the bog, and stayed there.

In this Irish version, the monster is just a one-eyed giant. He is not a generic Greek “Cyclops.” “Polyphemus,” the individual name of Homer’s Cyclops, probably means “many sounds.” “Many sounds” may describe the many foreign voices that told Neolithic Greeks about the disaster that giants (“Fomorians”) had wrought in their native land.

Moreover, and as I noted, unlike the Homeric myth wherein his one eye is understood by familiar readers, here he is defined as “having one big eye, in the middle of his forehead, as large as the sun.” What *is* understood in this original, Pleistocene, post-Species War version is that “giants” (Neanderthals) eat *Homo sapiens*. The cannibalism that is explicitly stated in Homer’s version of the myth (several of Odysseus’s men are eaten) is understood in this original Irish version. Everything about the Irish version testifies to its greater antiquity.

Now, for the giant to follow a salmon for three days suggests something vital. It is the same something, for which the ring closing around the finger is a microcosmic symbol. Do you see it?

It suggests that all the land is flooded, which was true of most of what is now England and all of what is now Ireland during periods of rapid glacial thaw. That’s why there are no snakes in Ireland!

But when the Fir Bolgs/ “Beaker Folk” returned to Ireland from Greece or an area around the Black Sea, it was with the knowledge of how to make bronze. Certainly, some of them, who had been among the “Greek” or East Balkan peoples who had run out of tin, original inhabitants of Ireland or not, would have hit upon a winning strategy for finding new supplies of it. The winning strategy would have been as follows: load two or three boats (currachs) with a dozen or so good-looking, well- but discreetly-armed and affable men and follow the coastline west; carry samples of tin and perhaps gold and arsenic ore (arsenic is an adequate substitute for tin in bronze); stop intermittently and ask natives if they have seen heavy ores like the samples -- befriending or bribing them as necessary; once a source is found, note the location carefully; fetch tribe and precious bronze

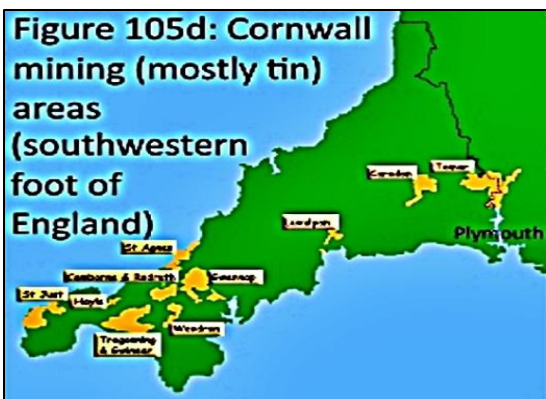
tools and weapons that can be bartered for purchase of the ore-rich property; operate bronze works in utmost secrecy; sacrifice female babies who would grow up to marry young men that would learn and disseminate the trade; and instruct sons to opportunely marry daughters of local chiefs. It was with a similar strategy that the Dutch bought Manhattan Island for twenty-five dollars-worth of beads and trinkets, and I submit that it was by a strategy like the above that men from south-eastern Europe found and developed the tin mines of Portugal, Spain and Britain. Neolithic men, accustomed to looking among rocks for flint and chert, would have noticed the heavy, colored, ore-bearing rocks and would have thought nothing of pointing them out to newcomers who came to cunningly exploit mineral wealth. Do you recall Frazer informing us (in Chapter 29) that the English, the French and the Southern Slavs share the distinction of having best-preserved at least one odd ritual (the Yule log)?

“The deliberate introduction of the Bronze Age to Europe was...the work of [*H this*] ...metalworking center, in Spain and Portugal. From there, about 2,000 B.C [*H 3,000 B. C. in Britain*], the Bell-Beaker people (so called from the elaborately decorated bell-shaped beakers found in all their graves) traveled in small groups as far as Czechoslovakia, Poland, Sicily and Great Britain. Wherever they went, they seem to have helped exploit local sources of copper and tin, and undoubtedly traded bronze to the “natives” when no local source existed. They seem too to have encouraged the exploitation of many other primary products, mainly of a luxury trade nature, including gold, amber, jet and perhaps other more perishable luxuries (such as furs).” –Bibby<sup>78</sup>

Professors Burgess and O’Rahilly and others (including most of the present-day ruling class of the British Isles) do not want to believe that there was a Beaker Folk, corresponding to the Fir Bolgs, the early Britons and the Belgae in general. They prefer to believe that most innovations were spread gradually from one contiguous trading area to another across Europe. Yet Iman Wilkens has inadvertently put forth powerful evidence to support the older notion of the Beaker Folk as representing a revolution in Bronze Age culture. “Pelasgians,”

---

<sup>78</sup> Incidentally, the Americana Encyclopedia did not choose Geoffrey Bibby to write its article on bronze without good reason. He is with the Prehistoric Museum in Aarhus Denmark. In 1953, working with Peter Glob in the islands off Bahrain, Bibby brought to light the first traces of the Kingdom of Dilmaun, a lost kingdom that, from 4000 B.C. onwards, was at the crossroads of trade between Mesopotamia and the Indus Valley.



which, as we said after Wilkens, is ancestral to “Belgae” (including Fir “Bolgs” and “Britons”) means “Sea People.” It is cognate with the Greek *pelagos*, which meant “flat surface” or “both of land and sea.” As of the late second millennium and the Trojan War, which we’ll discuss in Appendix F, it referred to the people of the northern European lowlands. (Cf. Wilkens: 107) The name “Sea

People” suggests that these were a distinct people who came by and remained by the sea.

So, although O’Rahilly may be right in saying that “Fir Bolgs” did not mean men of bags (bag-like, hide-covered ships), the actual meaning of “Fir Bolgs” and “Belgae” carries many of the same implications.



Figure 106: Early ring monument, stone circle, henge or cromlech at Castlerigg, near Keswick, Cumbria, England. (Photo by Janet and Colin Bord, Corwen Clwyd)

Now, as I mentioned above, Neolithic men had to look closely at rocks in their search for flint and chert. They would have noticed the unusual rocks in their localities. From Cantabria and other Spanish and Portuguese ports, these “prospecting” Sea Peoples would only have had to

sail due north and question the natives about the ore for which they were looking. In fact, “Cambridge” is apparently the equivalent of the Middle Latin *Cantabrigia*. Cambridge and the plains of Cambridge were named after Cantabria, an earlier stop on the Fir Bolgs’ tin-searching journey. A fleet in the Wash (the big bay, sea basin, off the southeastern coast of England), a militarily-strategic point north of what is now Cambridge, would have enabled the lords of the rich Cornwall tin deposits to control sea traffic in and out of the English Channel to safe-guard the world tin monopoly that they founded. See Figure 105d. But here we are jumping too far ahead in our story of the Isles’ prehistory.

Gordon Childe, the father of British archaeology, repeatedly stressed the strong evidence for cultural contacts between the rich Wessex Culture (that mined and monopolized the Cornwall tin) and Mycenae, “resemblances that may be individually fortuitous; but their cumulative effects are too remarkable to dismiss...” (Brown: 87). Of course, the later resemblances were owing to the tin

trade and the conquest we shall consider in Appendix F. However, Childe's description of the *direction* of all learning and innovation as having moved from the eastern Mediterranean to the north and west has been thoroughly discredited. Recall also that Caesar was amazed at the number of "Celts" who were knowledgeable of Greek. These "Celts" may have been descendants of the Belgae, the continental relatives of the Fir Bolgs who came into the British Isles in the early third millennium ([Bibby's Bell Beaker People](#)). Another similarity between southeastern Europe and the people who brought the Beaker and bronze culture to the British Isles is that they both eschewed collective burial (Champion *et al.*: 175). To still better explain Caesar's observation: Mycennae included Greece, Crete and the Ionian Islands and was the eastern end of the bronze trade that nearby Troy had controlled, prior to the convulsions that ended the Bronze Age.

Those of you with your thinking caps on will note also that the ice age terrors that spawned solar worship would not have been operative in southeastern Europe. Now see Figure 106, above, an early ring monument or *cromlech*. The ring monuments (that were built between 3200 and 2750 B.C. under the aegis of the Fir Bolgs and were most popular between 2000 and 1600 B.C.) coincided with a modified solar ideology. Their locations reflect local Species War knowledge that the Fir Bolgs could not have picked up in Greece.

Wrathful, Bronze Age gods were the *immediate and direct* threat. They needed to be appeased. Recall from Diodorus' account of the "Atlantean" myth, [above](#), that in this Atlantean solar myth, Helios and the sun were incidental to the direct conflict between the Titans and men. Helios, in that myth, is characteristic of Bronze Age mythology. He is a weak sun god. The Bronze Age men, more secure in their knowledge of navigation, astronomy, farming and the climate of their age, were not afraid that the sun would entirely disappear.

As we'll see when we review the findings of Mr. Iman Wilkens, Bronze Age men navigated the entire Atlantic Ocean in their search for tin. When the setting sun appeared no bigger to them in the western Atlantic than it did in the eastern Atlantic, they must have called into question the solar mythology of the previous age. Some of these early navigators may even have reasoned that the world is round. Why was the navigational and geographic knowledge of Bronze Age seamen lost, and why did it need to be rediscovered three millennia later? When iron replaced bronze, coal and iron were plentiful. Men no longer needed to risk their lives plying the sea in hide-covered, wicker-work boats searching for arsenic or tin and copper for bronze making.

So, we have analyzed the dolmens, the stone avenues and the collective chamber-tombs (solar ships), I hope to your satisfaction. I have assured you that the round burial cairns and mounds of the "Beaker Folk" (Fir Bolgs and

“Atlantians”) were made to simulate the “fairy mounds.” But somewhere in the heavens on high, Mr. Mencken is pointing at the stone circles and daring us to explain these remaining ogres “that sit calmly licking their chops.”

Patience Old Boy. We Mid-westerners are slow talkers.

“The orthodox henge,” said O’Kelly, “consists of a bank and ditch, the latter usually internal, surrounding a roughly circular area within which may be features such as stone setting, postholes, burials and so forth” (O’Kelly: 132). They were built between 3200 B.C. and 1650 B.C. (Burgess: 325). Everything about the henges suggests that they were used for ceremonial purposes.

There is one reference to a stone circle in the Bible:

“And the children of Israel did so as Joshua commanded, and took up twelve stones out of the midst of Jordan, as the Lord spake unto Joshua, according to the number of the tribes of the children of Israel, and carried them over with them unto the place where they lodged, and laid them down there. And Joshua set up twelve stones in the midst of Jordan, in the place where the feet of the priests that bare the ark of the covenant stood: and they are



Figure 107: Aerial view of Stonehenge with heel stone in the foreground (Photo by Aerofilms, Hertfordshire, England)

there unto this day.” -- Joshua 4: 8-9

The above passage is profoundly revelatory if you interpret it figuratively. Recall, from Chapter 29, that the Ark of the Covenant symbolized *Homo erectus*’ promise not to seek revenge as long as the Hebrews continued to worship them (now, “Him”). The twelve (“twelve,” as in every day of the month, a mild version of seven, a Fraternal complex symbol) stones are taking the place of those twelve feet. They worship the gods; they are a monument to the gods (now, “God”).

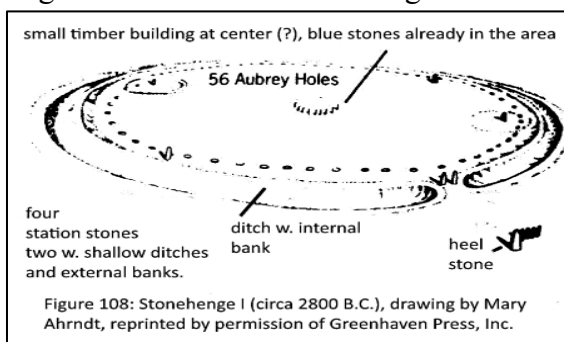
As you will see and should be able to guess, the stone circles are readily and most significantly divided into two sub-classes. The Roops noticed this. *Stonehenge*, the recent book by Peter and Connie Roop from which this map and some of my data is taken, is very interesting and informative. But I shall take issue with the Roops over their traditional designations of stone circle sub-classes. The important sub-classes are not “with and without center stones,” but “with and without concentric circles.”

Oh! Before I proceed any further, a disclaimer is in order: the lords of our modern world do not recognize me as an expert on anything. Although I scored in the top two percentiles on the Multistate Bar Exam, first time taking it, immediately after law school, they claim that I'm unfit to practice law. I've also been shut out of teaching positions and five other professions that I'm trained and (I think) qualified for. I must consider myself fortunate when I'm allowed to work any kind of job. Thus, forewarned of your author's pariah status, perhaps, before I offer my analysis of the henges, you would prefer to let the various experts weigh in. Perhaps you'd prefer the opinions of those who have enjoyed the confidence of the ruling class through the ages.

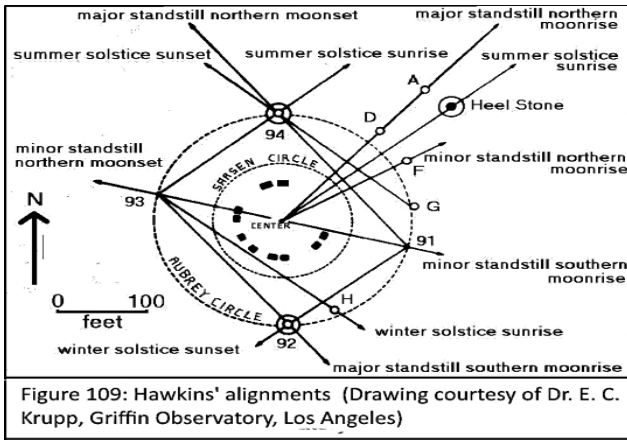
The twelfth-century English writer and historian, Geoffrey of Monmouth, first recorded in his famous book, *History of the Kings of Britain*, that Merlin, the magician of King Arthur's court, used magic to construct Stonehenge and mark the burial place of slain British princes. (Cf. the Roops: 25-27) Christian legend had it that the devil had built Stonehenge and some of the other megaliths. Over the years, religious fanatics disassembled and removed or destroyed many of the megaliths. Naturally.

Figure 107, above, shows an aerial view of Stonehenge as it looks today. The smaller (in circumference), outer ring of upright "sarsens" consists of stones that are each close to forty tons and sixteen feet tall. In 1620, King James was intrigued by an excavation ordered by the Duke of Buckingham that uncovered stag and bull horns, arrow points, rusty armor, charcoal and rotten bones (maybe human) at the center of Stonehenge. James ordered his chief architect and Surveyor-General of Works to investigate. Though the monument's only inscriptions are carved daggers, long believed to represent the daggers of Mycenaean royalty that appeared circa 1500 B.C., Inigo Jones assured the King that Stonehenge had to have been built by the Romans.

In 1663, King Charles II asked his friend John Aubrey to study Stonehenge. Aubrey discovered the fifty-six outer holes that bear his name and are depicted in Figure 108, above. In 1921, an archaeological dig determined that most of these holes contained human bones. Since then, large, near-by pockets of human bones have been excavated at Stonehenge. And most of the other ring monuments have produced cremations. (Cf. Burgess: 308-309)







Three archaeological digs at Stonehenge in the 20th Century and radiocarbon dating have concluded that the first building at Stonehenge (the most enduring and magnificent of the world's megaliths) began circa 2600 B.C.

Stonehenge was apparently built or rebuilt at least three times, as described

in Professor Richard Atkinson's book, *Stonehenge*. Figure 108 shows the first incarnation. Pre-Celtic people that archaeologists refer to as the Wessex culture people, whom I equate with the Fir Bolgs and their cousins in England who are known by a more famous name, completed the third stage around 2000 B.C. Your taxi-driver believes that the Fir Bolgs (and their cousins) inspired the building of all three stages. Following Atkinson and others, the Roops give interesting and detailed descriptions of the primitive tools and building methods used.

For our purposes, we are chiefly interested in the religious significance of the various designs of Stonehenge (I, II, and III) and earlier stone circles, *hengese* or *cromlechs*. We want to determine (as we have already done with the dolmens, chamber-tombs and stone alignments or avenues) the meaning of those designs within the conscious or unconscious minds of the builders. We shall proceed to analyze those designs; but first, we would be grossly negligent if we failed to cite the most recent and popular expert on the stone circles. He is no less than a Harvard astronomer; and since the 1965 publication of Professor Gerald S. Hawkins's popular, *Stonehenge Decoded*, the dominant trend has been to disregard or deny that the cromlechs (stone circles) have any religious significance! (Obviously, more than a few wishful thinkers would like to portray our savage British ancestors in pastel colors, as celebrities who would be welcome guests for tea.)

Hawkins pointed out that the heel stone, which is on the avenue that leads away from Stonehenge to the northeast, forms an axis with both the center of the monument and the point on the horizon where the sun rises at summer solstice. (See Figure 107.) Hawkins proceeded to use computer calculations and astronomical data to demonstrate that axes drawn between various sarsens and Aubrey holes could be used to predict a host of other celestial events. He concluded that Stonehenge had been built for wholly astronomical purposes, that

it was in fact a giant, sophisticated calendar, a computer for determining the time of year. (See Figure 109, above.)

Hawkins' critics, most notably Astronomy Professor Fred Hoyle of Cambridge, have pointed out that many of Hawkins' celestial events vary widely in their points of appearance on the horizon over time. Moreover, with all the circles of sarsens and holes of which Stonehenge has consisted during its three incarnations, it would indeed be surprising if any celestial event were not predictably in line with one or more of all the possible axes. As for Stonehenge's designed utility in predicting the summer solstice, this has not been refuted since Dr. William Stikeley pointed it out in 1740 (Roops: 43).

That the Wessex Culture, the Beaker Folk, Sea People or the Fir Bolgs (or their Brit cousins by another name) were great astronomers, in their day, cannot be doubted. Their relative sophistication as astronomers further suggests that the new leaders and bearers of the Bell Beaker assemblage were sailors who had come to the isles from distant places because early sailors navigated by the stars.

But, as Hawkins admits, to predict the axis of the solstice, one needs only two stones. If the builders' motives had been only to predict the solstice, then why would they have devoted the labor equivalent of 1500 men working for ten years to build the massive and complex monument that was Stonehenge III? (See *The New How It Works: Encyclopedia of Science and Invention*, v. 19, p. 2623 for the labor statistic.)

And finally, in early times, astronomy, astrology and religion were one; and they were the specialty of the priesthood. Nothing could be more absurd than to juxtapose early religion with "the heavens." One may as well contend, "I'm full of guilt and fear, but I'm not religious."

Kenton (his page 7) says, "Everywhere fables arose populating the skies with gods, demons and heroes. Gradually the heavens were hung with myths, every people adding their own version, until eventually in each culture a complex hierarchy of celestial beings was formulated, who watched, judged and manipulated the lives of men below."

More specifically and as I've already said, all the constellations that most of our ancestors "saw" in the sky appear to have been totem animals or more explicit representations of *Homo erectus* and the Species War. This earliest Rorschach test could only produce results that, on average, reflected man's universal obsessions, the obsessions of the Oedipal and Fraternal complexes. They projected the symbols of their obsessions all around them, especially upon the sky because of their acute dependence upon the sun, because of their Pleistocene memories and -- if I may make a slight concession to the naturists -- because of the similar awe and wonder that the sky evokes within us.

The Greeks (and later the Romans) believed that Eurynome had set a Titan and a Titaness over each celestial body. (Cf. Graves: 27-30.) For primitives, especially westerners and others traumatized by the primal deed, the Species War and the Great Flood; it was the gods -- the ambivalent objects of their Oedipal and Fraternal Complexes -- who controlled the forces of nature. For the celestial gods to forgive men for their sins and perform beneficently, especially at those times when they were inclined to change the sun's direction of flight, they needed the revenge that was owed to them. They had to be surfeited with human blood.

*More than any other structure, the observatories of primitive religious men, neurotic men who were still very vulnerable to the vagaries of nature, had to be structured as a stage production set befitting the drama that they needed to act out to appease the gods.* Now let's see how Stonehenge I, II and III and the other stone circles accomplished this.

Let's analyze the simpler cromlechs (stone circles, ring monuments or henges) first. The significant difference between the cromlechs is not whether they have center stones, as some have believed. They should be classified according to the neurotic complex (Oedipal or Fraternal) that they manifest. The prehistoric aspect of the Oedipal Complex is the primal deed. It marked the beginning of civilization. It occurred in the time of *Homo erectus* and long preceded the Species War. It would be more simply and primitively represented: one circle of comparatively small stones with several, one or no stones in the center. See, for example, Figure 106. The earliest of these might even have been built by *Homo erectus* and used for sacrifices to the primal father.

Recall also that neurotic symptoms are compromise formations, half-measures. Something is always left out or compromised by the expression of its opposite. With the most primitive (original sin) cromlechs, it is often the stone at the center, the one symbolizing the primordial father that is left out. There is a part of every one of us that would readily substitute for that missing rock (would readily be a primal father): our Ids. As we've seen, our immediate ancestors

generally sacrificed only animals to the primal father. *Homo erectus* sacrifices to him would have been at the center and would have both substituted for the primal father in repetitiously-compulsive

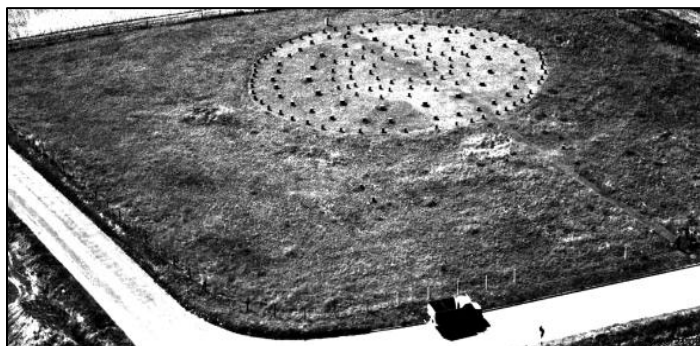


Figure 110: Woodhenge: notice that if one includes the center, under which human remains have been found, the concentric rings are seven in number. Like the number seven, Woodhenge is associated w. Fraternal ambivalence.

reenactment of the deed and served to propitiate him.

Generally, the larger, more elaborate cromlechs, having two or more but often *seven* concentric circles, are symbolic of the Fraternal Complex. Look at the Fraternal cromlech in Figure 110. It is known as Woodhenge and is near Stonehenge. By design, the cromlech has *seven* concentric rings representing the *ongoing*, contemporary aspect of the Fraternal complex. Excavation of its center produced a child's skull that had been split open. (At this late stop on our world tour, you know not to expect to find sacrificial remains at these monuments.)

The impetus for the design of the Fraternal cromlech may have derived from cup and ring markings. Recall that the sacrificial ground at Ingenio Valley, Nazca had the same spiral design on it. Maria Reiche noticed also that they resemble coiled snakes (Volume 2)! The same old struggle between "good guys" and "bad guys" is represented here. But now, in the Bronze Age, the sun is largely out of the picture and the demons and gods have resumed their human-like form as Titans or giants (*Homo erecti* still at large) vs. the gods (dead, propitiated *Homo erecti*) and their *Homo sapiens* allies.

Now, with respect to Stonehenge and its several designs, the most recent and sophisticated of the Fraternal cromlechs, note most generally that the gods (*Homo sapiens*, hybrids and *Homo erectus*) would have consistently been represented at the ceremonial center. We can assume this because the *Homo sapiens* mythmakers and the gods who "protected them" were -- from their own point of view -- the center of the universe. The "bad guys" (both the *Homo erecti* feared to be at large and other peoples on whom genetic hostility was projected) were in the outer world. They would have generally been represented at the cromlech's outer circles. Also, this arrangement would have allowed the spectators a better view of the blood and gore!

Figure 108 shows Stonehenge I. The circle of large, blue stones at the center represents the *Homo sapiens* Species War gods. The lower Aubrey holes must have originally contained stakes to which the sacrificial victims were bound. They correspond to giants or Titans still at large. To propitiate and appease the angry *Homo erectus* gods, these sacrificial *passion plays* had to end with the sacrifice of numerous bad guys and (in so far as the victims were all *Homo sapiens*) reverse the actual outcome of the Species War. *Homo sapiens* victims were sacrificed and at the grandest and most public celebrations of these passion plays, the bodies were then burned in Deluge bonfires atop great mounds, such as Silbury "Hill." Look again at Figure 96b, above; and notice how close Silbury Mound is to Stonehenge. The mound, the henge and the barrow were all part of the same ceremonial center here in the "Land of the Dead," the last stronghold of European *Homo erectus*, the holy prehistoric European center of spiritual knowledge.

Notice too, from Figure 96b, that the Avebury ring had to have been built first. As repetition compulsion eased the priests' superego censorship (and pursuant to Freud's law of symptoms ever more nearly resembling the original trauma), the designs for the henge got better and better. At the critical times of the year -- solstices, equinoxes, sowing and reaping and All Hallow's Eve -- the Wiltshire Complex would have provided the central model for ceremonies that all the local centers imitated and looked to for spiritual and moral guidance.<sup>79</sup> (It was akin to Americans looking to the nightclubs of their biggest cities on New Year's Eve for guidance in love and romance.) That's why the Deluge bonfire for burning the bodies had to be atop a high mound -- so that it could be seen from afar, especially from smaller mounds in the distance at local centers where smaller but otherwise identical ceremonies were performed. There are no human remains atop these mounds. Don't even look for them, Richard Leakey. The ashes were in great demand as fertilizer for the fields. But, as we will discover in Appendix H, there is likely to be a very thin layer of ashes beneath the mound, at the ground level.

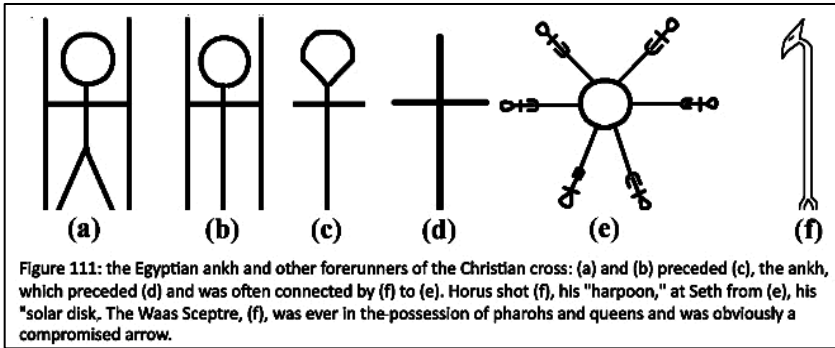
This is macabre, but I probably should go into a bit more detail about the killing. The victims were tied to posts (later, at Stonehenge, large sarsen<sup>80</sup> stones) and shot full of arrows. Also, these passion plays gave rise to the county's name, to "Wiltshire." Shoot enough arrows into a person tied to a post, "sarsen," tree trunk or cross; and at the point of death, his head falls to one side and he *wilts* as does a flower. This is the connection between flowers, picking blossoming branches (or the fruit that replaces the blossoms) from a tree and human sacrifice. *Confirm that the picking of forbidden fruit in Genesis 3 has exactly the same meaning as picking flowering branches from the tree in Aztec Tamoanchan.*

The ditch provided the dirt for the bank. They would have been much deeper and higher than they are today. The bank provided an early grandstand for these popular spectacles that were the early equals of public hangings. "Grandstand" was probably coined on these occasions. At Stonehenge III, the *orthostat* tops would have provided the box seats for spectators. These sacred passion plays were probably also the forerunners of theatrical productions, for which round or oval theaters and amphitheaters were later built. Greek *amphitheater* means theater with seats on all sides.

---

<sup>79</sup> The guiding message was always the same: the prehistoric equivalent of "Praise the Lord and pass the ammunition."

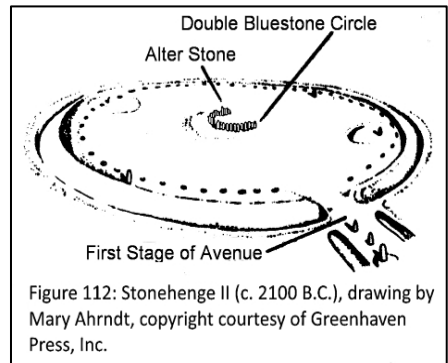
<sup>80</sup> By the way, Wikipedia informs us that "sarsen" is an abbreviation of "Saracen;" so I suspect that Stonehenge and perhaps a few other ring monuments were revived during the crusades for the murdering of Muslims or other non-Christians.



Doubtest thou that Stonehenge victims were made to suffer the fate of *Homo erectus*? Do you recall Durán telling us in Chapter 35 about the Aztec rite of *Chicomcoatl* wherein prisoners of war were crucified upon high scaffolding and shot with arrows? Do you recall how the Quechua Indians of *Pacarigtambo*, during their Festival of Saint Peter, "erect scaffolding and hoist onto it an image of Christ" (Chapter 26)?

Obviously, the cross has a universal meaning! Figures 111 (a), (b), (c) and (d), above, show what I believe to be the progression of distortions that, starting with a stick-figure drawing of a man bound to a tree, resulted in the cross. Figure 111 (c) is the ankh or *crux ansata*, a very common and sacred symbol of the ancient Egyptians. It was said to be symbolic of "life," but this is obviously a reaction formation. Its

appearance in the hands of or around the necks of the dead gods suggests otherwise. The noose-like shape of the top of the ankh may also suggest that many *Homo erecti* were hung to death. Figure 111 (e) shows the ankh as it often appeared, attached to the winged disk of Ra the sun god. (Cf. Barrett: 47-49) This glyph obviously suggests that the "wings" of the sun (the arrows or the warriors of "the fiery disk" or the "flaming eye" of the sun god, Ra) took the ankhs up to heaven (killed the *Homo erecti*). These wings (arrows) of the sun god became compromised as the "harpoon" that Horus "shot" to castrate Seth from his boat, which was elevated from the Nile to the sky when the pharaohs adopted solar mythology. This "harpoon" was independently represented as the Waas Sceptre (Figure 111 [f]), which had an animated head variously described as a fox, a dog or a phoenix. The Waas Sceptre remained a common symbol of the power of every reigning sun god (pharaoh) and queen.



Our Chinese ancestors also confirm this origin of the cross. In the ancient *Chuang-tzu*, “Chief Tzu-t’ui,” a summer solstice sacrificial victim referenced in the seventh century B.C., “was a model of fealty, going so far as to *cut a piece of his flesh from his thigh to feed his lord*, Duke Wen [of Chin]. But later when the Duke failed to reward him, he went off in a rage. [He withdrew to a forest and when the king tried to *smoke him out*] he *wrapped his arms around a tree and burned to death*” (Schneider: 139, *Emphasis mine*).

In Stonehenge II (Figure 112), the blue stones, representing the gods and their human allies, are increased in number and placed in two circles that are close together. The inner circle may represent women and children. The central altar stone suggests that, at this late time, priests were still hard at work, earning their living.

The horseshoe, in place of the circle, may have been adopted as a distortion that further compromised the symbolism as demanded by our ancestors’ superegos. The Roops report (p. 69-70) that a double circle of holes for Stonehenge II had been dug and many of the stones placed. “However, for some mysterious reason, the circles were not completed. The massive stones that had already been erected were removed and all the holes filled in” (*Ibid.*).

Now, at some point, as the technical ability, population and mobile labor resources increased, it was decided that the large stone orthostats would be employed to represent the gods and hybrids. Large, surface deposits of the blue stone, which had previously represented the Species War gods, may have become exhausted. In Stonehenge III, the smaller, blue stones were apparently used to represent the *Homo sapiens* allies (the majority of the real Species War victors).

What’s the significance of the color blue? The corpses of the Neanderthal victims of the Species War had been thrown in the (blue) water and had been burned and made to disappear into the (blue) sky. As is suggested by classical Greek mythology, sea gods like Poseidon or the Irish Manannan were thought to have ruled the island nations. Blue still provides the background for the British flag. *Homo sapiens*, especially priests and ruling elites identified ever more closely with the Neanderthal gods, the “gentry,” and began to appropriate their color. The Roops confirm this interpretation, informing us that the early Britons identified themselves with the color blue. They wore elaborate blue tattoos. (*Cf.* Roops: 64) And remember the massive wickerwork giant that the peasants paraded and burned every spring at the Follies of Dunkirk? Frazer described the “giant’s” traditional garb as a long *blue robe with gold stripes*. (See Volume 2.) And do you remember Plato’s mention of the color blue in his “Atlantis” tale? The ten kings of “Atlantis” were said to have worn *azure* robes when making sacrifices to Poseidon and holding court for the people. (See Volume 1.) *Azure blue and everyone wearing it were identified with Homo erectus*.

In addition to all the other evidence we've seen for the close identification of the people of the Isles with (the "good") Neanderthals, these people provide more support for Ann MacLarnon's informed speculation about *Homo erectus*' neural anatomy and speech

limitations (Volume 1). Consider their bagpipes. The bagpipes, which are thought to have originated in the orient, were a sacred musical instrument for the Irish and Scotch-Irish. They were and still are played on all sorts of ceremonial occasions. In particular, they are played for calling men to and leading them into war. This instrument can only represent the voice of the gods. (In historical times, they still called the pipers that led men into battle the "screaming devils." Moreover, the feather bonnets that many pipers still wear simulate the thick black hair of *Homo erectus*.) How do the gods' or devils' voices sound? Each instrument has one to six *drone* pipes that accompany the melody played on the one or two chanter pipes that have finger holes. The single notes of the drone pipes create an eerie and haunting effect.

Neanderthal, lacking the nerves to control his diaphragm as we do, would have produced a similar sort of drone when he spoke.<sup>81</sup> The droning hum of the bullroarer no doubt reflects the same physiology. So too do the droning sounds of the sitar, Gregorian and Tibetan chants and the chants of primitive peoples generally.

Now, returning to the color blue and its association with royalty and *Homo erectus*, especially in the British Isles and "Atlantis," look at the picture of Stonehenge III (Figure 113, above). Recall Freud's dictum that neurotic symptoms progress to ever more closely represent the unconscious idea. The proliferating Aubrey holes are still for the victims of sacrifice, but they have been

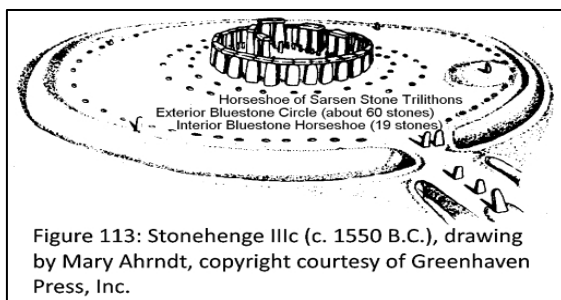


Figure 113: Stonehenge IIIc (c. 1550 B.C.), drawing by Mary Ahrndt, copyright courtesy of Greenhaven Press, Inc.

<sup>81</sup> Darwin and philologists of his day anticipated this finding. He cited some of these philologists before concluding the following. "When we treat of sexual selection we shall see that primeval man, or rather some early progenitor of man, probably used his voice largely, as does one of the gibbon-apes at the present day, in producing true musical cadences, that is in singing; we may conclude from a widely-spread analogy that this power would have been especially exerted during the courtship of the sexes, serving to express various emotions, as love, jealousy, triumph, and serving as a challenge to their rivals. The imitation by articulate sounds of musical cries might have given rise to words expressive of various complex emotions" (Darwin, 1871: i 56). Note too that women tend to value love and family life more than men do. Many female-created languages of the Far East employ tones.



increased to form -- in addition with the trilithons and blue stones -- *seven* concentric circles. The circle of 60 blue stones would have to still represent the *Homo sapiens* but anonymous ones. (As indicated by their number, they enjoyed perfect sex after the war was won.) The inner horseshoe of five trilithons represents the hybrids, our champions and gods of war. (As we'll see in Appendix E, the myrmidons and their leader Achilles, the largest and best warriors of Homer's *Iliad*, symbolized hybrids.) The outer circle of smaller trilithons represents the other, recognized Species War gods. The Aubrey holes still represent the "giants" or "fomorians," the *Homo erecti* feared to be still at large.

Now, look at the map in Figure 88a. Notice that almost all the cromlechs (or stone circles) are in western Britain and in the peninsular cul-de-sacs of Wales, Scotland and Ireland. Whoever located these monuments as they did in Ireland and England during the third millennium and first four hundred years of the second millennium, had to have an intimate knowledge of the Species War that had transpired thirty thousand years earlier. *It's possible that those people were the Pretani. But it was the Fir Bolgs who claimed to have fought and almost beaten "the Fomorians." Only the Fir Bolgs are named in all the early and genuine Irish mythology. Because the Pretani appear to have left us no deluge mythology or because their deluge mythology was eclipsed by that of the Fir Bolgs, as Professor Burgess notes -- without warfare between the two peoples, we can feel reasonably assured that it was the Fir Bolgs and their better-known cousins on the larger isle who took the northwest of Europe (now the British Isles) from Neanderthals.*

Stonehenge lies in the east-west center of southern England. It probably marks the location of the greatest and most decisive battle fought by the *Homo sapiens* forces that had crossed the channel (a stream 33 kya) into Britain from somewhere in or near Brittany.

Those of you who go on to read my *Irish Mythology: Passageway to Prehistory* will see that there is an Irish myth that may tell us of the invasion of southern Britain by our immediate ancestors. Looking at the Irish megaliths in Figure 88a, it appears that the *Homo sapiens* forces crossed over (also a stream at 33 kya) from Britain where the Irish Sea is narrowest and severed Neanderthal's lines of communication, driving him northeast toward Ulster and southwest toward Munster.

Now, do you see any of Mencken's ogres calmly licking their chops? I don't, but feel free to [email](#) me if you have any comments, questions or suggestions.

So, as of the early and mid-Bronze Age, Irishmen and Britons were disposing of all manner of people at the stone circles. By the year 2000 B.C., copper had everywhere given way to bronze. (I shall now follow Professor Burgess in summarizing the background prehistory leading up to the next big religious

change.) The chamber-tombs all over Ireland and Britain were blocked up at this time. The chieftains of the rich Wessex culture [*H Fir Bolgs and English cousins of a better-known name*] were buried in graves that were ever more luxuriously equipped. A growing population and increased pressure on the land may be signaled by the increase in land enclosure and great field systems. Bronze weaponry improved steadily. After 1600 B.C., little interest is shown in the stone circles. Lowland farms began to be abandoned and upland tracts were opened. (Cf. Burgess: 23) Down to 1200 B.C., intensified agricultural exploitation of the uplands, abandonment of some of the lowlands, increased enclosure, a worsening climate and the insidious development of blanket peat all point to the buildup of an agricultural crisis. (Cf. Burgess: 129-130)

Around 1400 B.C., austerity set in. Rich burials disappeared. Activity at the stone circles stopped altogether. Crude, plain burial urns replaced the prestigious ones, suggesting that trade with other parts of the world for potter's clay and other materials had been cut off.

A major change in religious rites occurred at this time. "If, as suspected, religious interest had shifted completely to rivers, lakes and bogs, this would explain the abandonment of the old centers and the absence of new ones" (Burgess: 146). This was a change to a pre-modern phase of worship. Communications and trade brought a new ethos. Moreover, the presage of their own impending doom probably further motivated the people of these islands to substitute votive offering at water bodies for human sacrifice. The stone circles would have portended the worst possible prospect for their own futures; so, the henge centers (like Wiltshire) had to be not only closed, but also deconstructed (if possible), hushed up and forgotten as soon as possible. The new religious practice, throwing votive offerings into lakes and streams, also meant that priests had to learn to swim.

In the last few centuries before the collapse of the powerful kingdom that had grown out of the Wessex culture and the Cornwall tin deposits, the people must have prided themselves in their civility, in their abrogation or curtailment of blood sacrifice. (The veneer of British civility, which we've all come to know and love so well, developed at this time.) Maybe you still don't believe me when I tell you that these people were the "Atlanteans." Do you recall that the Atlanteans were also distinguished for their civility? In the Amazon myths, prior to them being conquered by Heracles, Diodorus says, "The first people against whom they advanced, according to the tale, was the Atlanteans, the most civilized men among the inhabitants of those regions, who dwelt in a prosperous country and possessed great cities" (Diodorus: III.56).

Well, doom was on the horizon for the British Isles. The collapse of the tin monopoly was imminent. Conquest of the tin-rich few by the many was only a matter of time. The many had been locked out of and victimized by the monopolization of this metal that was as vital for the second and third millennia B.C. as oil has been in the 20th Century A.D. The collapse came about first, as we've already said, in the eastern part of the trade route. From the middle of the fifteenth century to the early part of the twelfth century B.C.,

“[T]he written sources of the great east Mediterranean civilizations are full of reports of raids, warfare and destruction, carried out by barbarians of whom the ‘Sea People’ are apportioned most blame. The identity of these intruders is far from clear, but references to ‘all peoples of the north, coming from every country’ suggests one of those periodic episodes where all the poor neighbors [H *the Rs who specialize in their own reproduction*] ...joined in the raiding and plundering [H *of privileged K societies*]. Only Egypt withstood the shock; by the early twelfth century both the Mycenaean and Hittite empires had collapsed, [H *all the palaces on Crete were burned and looted by 1380 B.C., and their pictograph language, linear A, was lost except for a few records that have not yet been deciphered. With the fall of Mycenae in 1150 B.C., writing and the fine arts that had been cultivated at the Cretan and Mycenaean palaces disappeared. The population of Greece declined sharply, and men reverted to nomadism and barbarism.*] ... [T]he Aegean world entered a dark age. The parallel with the collapse of Rome fifteen hundred years later and its aftermath is very apt.” --Burgess: 156

The big blow, to the western end of the commercial, Bronze Age world, came circa 1200 B.C. That there was such a western end and a collapse of it has only recently been discovered. In Appendix F, you may be as surprised as I was to discover that the military and commercial center at the western end of Bronze Age trade was a city in England. *It was a city called Troy*. Iman Wilkens and I will prove this in Appendix F. Yes, the latent homosexual, Christian, K rulers of the modern world have been lying to you about Troy. Don't be surprised. What don't they lie about?

As we discovered in Chapter 17 of Vol 1, the Athenian Greeks were largely descended from the Trojans and their Fir Bolg cousins. (They created the “Atlantis” myth, which lied about this ancestry as necessary to unite the Greeks for defense against the Persians.) This further assures us of the veracity of Fir Bolg mythology and their claims of having come, like their Trojan cousins and

other Pelasgians, to and from Greece or neighboring areas. (After losing the Trojan War, fleeing Trojans would have been most likely to return to the places from which their ancestors had come.)

The Fir Bolgs that remained in Ireland after the Trojan War were responsible for the wealth of detail and accuracy within the popular Irish mythology. These once proud people, who were the first wealthy and powerful *Homo sapiens* rulers of Ireland, were reduced to poverty and ignominy by their conquerors. They chose to remain an underclass rather than falsify their oral history. *And it must be their history, the history of the people who were defeated and displaced by the Celts who conquered Britain and Ireland circa 1200 B.C., that has been preserved within the unofficial, popular tradition of Irish mythology. It is a tradition that has survived only among the poorest, most conservative, Gaelic-speaking people of northern and western Ireland.* I guarantee you that you will be even more amazed at what that tradition has yet to tell us.

## E. The Common Core to The World's Earliest “Heroic” Literatures

*It will be seen that we believe [H the unwritten] literary tradition to have been a more developed and potent force and to have had a longer life than many scholars are willing to allow.*

*--H.M. and N.K. Chadwick*

We have just discovered Stonehenge and other primitive rock architecture of Western Europe and the world to be products of our ancestors' religious obsessions.

We discovered, in Appendix B, that all the aboriginal Australian rituals are obsessional, neurotic symptoms commemorating the original or the second sin. Contrary to what Freud would have thought, the vast majority of these Aboriginal rituals relate not to the killing of the primal fathers; but to the Deluge, to the second sin, to the Species War.

We now recognize the murder of the primordial fathers and the extermination of our parent species (*Homo erectus*) as the prehistoric components, the archetypes, of the two complexes that give rise to the godhead. The Oedipal and the Fraternal Complexes, especially their prehistoric components, are the subjects of all the religious myths and rituals we've reviewed. I know of no exception. (Count the literal flood [Great Flood] material as part of the Fraternal complex because in the popular mind the Flood was sent as punishment for the Species War. The two fused in the minds of our ancestors, and the Flood did in fact result from fierce ongoing, genetic competition.)

I can assure you that most, if not all, of the dramatic supply and demand for “good guys” and “bad guys” are born of our ambivalence toward the objects of the same two complexes, especially our ongoing genetic competitors. The characters with whom we identify are the dramatist's “good” characters. They are generally the ones whose genetic competition is less intense, who abide by the modern ethos, the Golden Rule, and who prove themselves capable of love. We focus and project our negative Oedipal and Fraternal emotions onto the “bad” opponents of these characters with whom we identify. These “bad guys” tend to be fiercer in their genetic competition, unobservant of the Golden Rule (ethical reciprocity) and exposed as loveless and malevolent Third Mask people. (Dramatists don't dare to explicitly say how and why the Third Mask comes into being. If they did, the audience would develop sympathy for the bad guy and become political; and the dramatist would be censored by the Big Brothers whose Third Masks are still holding up.) The dramatist's “bad guys” become the embodiment of evil. Their defeat then has the therapeutic but temporary effect of re-establishing our emotional equanimity.

I could prove this to your satisfaction by analyzing contemporary books and screenplays, but it will be far more interesting and convincing for you to see that the religious obsession with the *prehistoric* components of the godhead and the complexes is the common core of the world's earliest (heroic) literature. This literature was derived from the oral tradition. The oral tradition, the world over (but especially among the *cul-de-sac* peoples), was a religious tradition based upon Paleolithic myths and rituals. I shall prove to you that the characters of this literature reflect the hang-ups that our traumatized ancestors all had in common. The characters of this literature became *screens* onto which our ancestors projected their lies, guilt, fear and wishful thinking – all the psychic garbage.

Were it possible for fictional characters to be *receptacles* for the garbage and *carry it away*, then we modern men would have become civilized and healthy long ago. *But this is not possible. By definition, fiction is the realm of make-believe, whatever we want to make it. Great literature attempts to teach us about our most difficult, "taboo" problems. But it doesn't force the message upon our consciousness, and those who most need the message generally don't get it. (See the one-page Peace Love and Progress Party plea, "[Ornithology](#)."*)

When we do make basic realizations about ourselves and the social world, change is automatic. This comprehensive new social science and basic biography of Man is a revolutionary attempt to cut through all the lies and raise consciousness, about us, from our earliest times forward, and to enable readers to do the same for their individual lives. To whatever extent you help to spread the work and it succeeds, we will enable our species to undergo psycho-therapy and change our world. Continuing...

The earliest heroic literary works could only have dealt with the great traumas of our collective past, for this material is what the intellectual market demanded. These earliest written works, all of them "heroic" works, were recorded in the 8<sup>th</sup> and 7<sup>th</sup> centuries B. C., after or toward the end of the dark age that followed the fall of Troy (1183) and the palace at Knossos, Crete (1150). We'll learn much more about Troy and Crete below.

Most of the preserved, ancient Greek tragedies and comedies were written in the 5<sup>th</sup> century B.C., two-to-three-hundred years after the heroic epics. (Comedies are tragedies in which the victims are too obviously flawed for us to identify with, and the harm they suffer is either not fatal or not terribly disproportionate to their flaw.) The most famous tragedies and comedies won the competition in their respective classes at the Greater Dionysia (a religious festival) in Athens. (*Cf. Seven Famous Greek Plays*, intro by Oates and O'Neill Jr.) Although the tragedies are off point for this chapter, I mention them for two reasons. First, they deal much more thoughtfully with some of the same subject matter as the heroic epics.

They took existent religious myths and legends (especially material from Homer's *Iliad* and *Odyssey*) as their subject matter. Homer's works were so popular that many of the papyri, recovered from Hellenic settlements such as Oxyrhynchus in Greco-Roman Egypt as late as the second century A.D., were copies of them. (Cf. Kirk: 15) The other reason why I must deal summarily with the tragedies is that the Master (Freud) had much to say about them. The most famous tragedies were those of Aeschylus, Sophocles and Euripides.

We will analyze, line by line, the most famous, four of the earliest works of "heroic" literature. They are the two Homeric works, the earliest work of Germanic literature (*Beowulf*) and the most developed of the earliest works of Irish literature (*The Cattle Raid of Cooley*). All four are religious and based upon mythological, oral traditions. The latter two are totally anonymous.

Do you recall the tale of *Ch'u Yüan*, which Schneider related to us in footnote 75 of Chapter 30? There is a large body of anonymous poetry describing this mythical hero's self-defense and grief from banishment. Schneider is probably correct in believing that it is the earliest Chinese literature (Schneider: 4). It too is a "heroic" and child-like reaction formation to Species War guilt and fear. I've shown you enough to enable you to see right through all of it.

Before the rise of Islam, Arab tribes kept oral records of the deeds of their ancestors. Some of this oral tradition was preserved in poetry and rhymed prose. Much of it describes a trickster, which is enough to assure us that Arab oral tradition, minus the guilty reaction formation, minus the "heroism," also descends from the Deluge. (Cf. Hourani: 52-53)

The Chadwicks researched very similar heroic literature from around the world, especially from Greece, the Teutonic peoples, the Polynesians, the people of the Malay Archipelago and the Mongols of Siberia (all peoples whose involvement in the Species War we know to have been intense). They arrived at some bold conclusions:

"It will be seen that we believe [*H the unwritten*] literary tradition to have been a more developed and potent force and to have had a longer life than many scholars are willing to allow. We cannot admit that the [*H manuscript*] was quite so formidable a foe to this tradition as the printing press is now among remote and backward peoples, or that it won its way so quickly. The evidence seems to us to point to a long period of transition, during which in the northern literatures the native tradition became restricted in scope -- somewhat as in the modern backward literatures -- before it was finally submerged..." (Chadwicks, VI: XIII). The northern literatures are all, in greater or lesser degree, products of independent native growth (*Op. cit.*: XVIII).

Until the invention of the printing press, written literature was the exclusive possession of ecclesiastics, state officials and the gentry. When the vernacular was applied to the MS (manuscript), the oral tradition began to lose its creativity. When printed works became plentiful and accessible, the oral tradition began to disappear. (Cf. Chadwicks, V3: 698)

W.P. Ker and H. M. Chadwick were the first to note the similarities in the earliest literature of many peoples. They developed the concept of the heroic age: “the age of a special kind of militaristic and aristocratic society, whose leaders are bound by a rigid code of personal honor and self-esteem and by the glorification of physical prowess and personal possessions” (Kirk: 10; citing Ker and Chadwick, 1912).

Dear Reader, look carefully at the above quote and, with all that you now know about the evolution of our culture, especially our traumas, our forces of production and the K and R class struggle; you should be able to see that, as of their rapid rise to power and wealth during the Neolithic, *the Ks identified with past leaders and transformed them pursuant to their own Third Mask psychology and wishful thinking. Their own homosexuality and homophobia cause them to be always fighting (motivated by paranoid delusions) and to compensate for their own humiliation by casting themselves in heroic roles. Consequently, all the past leaders with whom they identified had to be heroes too.* Especially in the west, in *Homo erectus*’ population center, the “Land of the Dead,” where the most angry and belligerent latent homosexuals were inclined to go; this literature became in great demand and stripped Species Warriors of their ignoble, trickster and selfish aspects to make heroes of them. The Ks developed the heroic aspect of the oral tradition slowly as of their rise during the Neolithic. During the Iron Age and the invention of the manuscript, it “sprang” into being. If the “bigmen” of Papua New Guinea, such as Kepa who spoke to us in Chapter 22, could have had access to an oral history of the Species War and the opportunity to develop in isolation from the more modern world; you can bet your life that New Guinea would have developed its own local version of “heroic” literature.

Most of the following guesses about the heroic epics’ historical frame of reference are accurate with respect to its near-bracket. As you are surely able to anticipate, they are about 30 ky off the mark with respect to the far bracket of the time frame. The far end, the common core, is, of course, the Species War. (Why else would these epics constitute a chapter of *Decoding the Deluge*?)

Professor Jackson attributed the heroic values to the Iron Age, which for Greece began in the last half of the second millennium and was well under way by 1100 B.C. But Greece isn’t the setting for any of the epics we’ll be analyzing.



In the British Isles, the Iron Age began with the fall of Troy in 1183 B. C. Cattle raiding would have begun soon after cattle were introduced from the continent, circa 4000 B.C. But cattle raiding and every sort of civil disorder would have peaked during the 400-500-year dark age and population collapse that followed the fall of Troy. So, Jackson's observation is right on the money for *The Cattle Raid of Cooley*. The Iron Age is its near bracket, timewise.

*Beowulf* is already recognized as being of an uncertain date of origin and is believed to have been copied down at some time between the 8th and the 10th centuries. The Chadwicks are the only experts I found willing to go out on a limb in guessing its origins. This testifies to the diligence with which the Scandinavians maintained their oral history and protected it from modern corruption.

The Chadwicks referred to the heroic period for Northern Europe as the age of national migrations, the period after the fall of the western empire, from the 4th to the 6th centuries. (Cf. Chadwicks, 1932, vI: 14) This guess about the near bracket of *Beowulf* should earn them a second gold star. They earned a first one with their quotation at the top of this chapter.

*The Cattle Raid of Cooley* is recognized as having had an oral tradition "for many centuries before the first written reference to it occurred in the 7th century." (Cf. Ellis' dictionary) They don't want to sound clueless as to that far bracket, but obviously they are.

Kirk said that the historical setting of the Homeric works is known to have been a period of decline, conquest, migration and drastic social and political changes in "Mycenaean civilization." He thought that these national epics were therefore written and popularized owing to nostalgia for a vanished era of glory and success. (Cf. Kirk: 10)

In modern times, "Mycenaean" civilization has referred to the late Bronze and early Iron Ages (1600-1050 B. C.) in Greece, Crete, the Cyclades (islands south of Greece) and the south-western coast of Anatolia (Turkey). The area was overthrown largely by "Sea Peoples" from the North Atlantic, the same peoples, mostly Celts, that overthrew Troy from (1194-1183). Their influence upon the region succeeded that of Minoan Crete; and their writing, Linear B, succeeded that of the Cretans' Linear A, which has been lost. This was the eastern end of the trade in bronze, which Troy had monopolized. Although the eastern end was closely related to Troy and fell mostly before Troy fell, Homer's works are specifically about Troy. We will learn much more about Troy and the Bronze Age in the next two chapters. We'll discover that most of the names we associate with the Eastern Mediterranean, including *Troy* and *Mycenae* were transplanted from northwestern Europe.

As the very popular myth of the Black Thief tells us, the Species War was far and away the most traumatic period in the life of man. These tales have Species

War mythology and obsessions at their core. (See Chapter 19 for the Black Thief.) As we've seen, *Homo erectus* and the Species War were the principal subjects of our totem religions; and the allegorical accuracy of totem religion made it possible for insightful Neolithic men to reconfigure the totem gods, to reconvert them back into hominid form, without losing the basic prehistoric truths that they embodied. *We'll discover that it was not nostalgia that produced the values of the heroic age -- but reaction formation to Species War guilt and nascent K latent homosexuality, the Third Mask that savagery thrusts upon homosexual folks.*

*The very same dynamic is constantly at work within the minds of the latent homosexual men who are our contemporaries. Their need to be heroes (e. g. to be tougher, stronger, braver, etc. than others) is owing to Third Mask guilt and shame. The guilt results not only from lies and hostile acts but from the psychological process of repression (i. e. of their homosexual impulses and awareness due to homophobia). Repression requires a constant expenditure of energy and involves an internal struggle between the forces of repression and the repressed impulse and awareness. The struggle results ultimately in coronary failure, but it results constantly in guilt, in the vague feeling that something about one's self is wrong or false.*

Because the heroic tales combine and overlay sacred, Paleolithic themes with analogous, ongoing conflicts (e. g. numerous nationalities have suffered banishment or virtual extermination), it will never be possible to *measure* the extent to which the Primal Deed and the Deluge have contributed to the oral traditions and earliest literatures. This is true despite the first and second sins being at the core of the earliest literatures and despite the confidence with which we conclude that the Deluge was the greatest human trauma.<sup>82</sup>

Before we start to interpret, line by line, the four most popular works of the Heroic Age, let's see what the Master had to say about Greek tragedies. (A more thoughtful treatment of similar subject matter, two hundred years later.) Freud was inspired by the death of Orpheus. Here is what Freud (following Solomon Reinach, his v2: 100 ff) had to say:

“In the history of Greek art, we come upon a situation that shows striking resemblances to the scene of the totem meal as identified by Robertson Smith, and not less profound differences from it. I have in mind the situation of the most ancient Greek tragedy. A company of

---

<sup>82</sup> Was there ever an ethnic or national group of our own in-breeding species that we wiped out completely? Even the Assyrians and the Mexica undoubtedly still have a few of their genes among us. Relative to the population levels of their times, none of our internecine *Homo sapiens* conflicts could have compared to the violence of the Species War.

individuals, named and dressed alike, surrounded a single figure, all hanging upon his words and deeds: they were the Chorus and the impersonator of the Hero. He was originally the only actor. Later, a second and third actor were added, to play as counterpart to the Hero and as characters split off from him; but the character of the Hero himself and his relation to the Chorus remained unaltered. The Hero of tragedy must suffer; to this day that remains the essence of a tragedy. He had to bear the burden of what was known as “tragic guilt”; the basis of that guilt is not always easy to find, for in the light of our everyday life it is often not guilt at all. As a rule, it lay in rebellion against some divine or human authority; and the Chorus accompanied the Hero with feelings of sympathy, sought to hold him back, to warn him and to sober him, and mourned over him when he had met with what was felt as the merited punishment for his rash undertaking.

But why had the Hero of tragedy to suffer? And what was the meaning of his “tragic guilt”? I will cut the discussion short and give a quick reply. He had to suffer because he was the primal father, the Hero of the great primeval tragedy which was being re-enacted with a tendentious twist; and the tragic guilt was the guilt that he had to take on himself to relieve the Chorus from theirs. The scene upon the stage was derived from the historical scene through a process of systematic distortion--one might even say, as the product of a refined hypocrisy. In the remote reality, it had actually been the members of the Chorus who caused the Hero's suffering; now, however, they exhausted themselves with sympathy and regret and it was the Hero himself who was responsible for his own sufferings. The crime that was thrown on to his shoulders, presumptuousness and rebelliousness against a great authority, was precisely the crime for which the members of the Chorus, the company of brothers, were responsible. Thus, the tragic Hero became, though it might be against his will, the redeemer of the Chorus.

In Greek tragedy, the special subject matter of the performance was the sufferings of the divine goat, Dionysus, and the lamentation of the goats who were his followers and who identified themselves with him. That being so, it is easy to understand how drama, which had become extinct, was kindled into fresh life in the Middle Ages around the Passion of Christ.” --Freud, 1913: 155-156

Freud's insight into religious guilt, fear and hypocrisy is absolutely brilliant! But we shouldn't lose sight of the fact that tragic *religious* heroes constitute only the most important variety of victims. Tragedy is ultimately inevitable and just waiting to happen whenever we fail to recognize or refuse to accept the whole truth. *The older and more widely believed and relied upon a fallacy is the greater is the ultimate, tragic harm.*

Moreover, and as we've seen throughout our tour of the prehistoric world, the Species War everywhere greatly overshadowed the primal deed, and *Homo sapiens* had no responsibility for the primal deed. The primal fathers were *Homo erecti* and were killed by their *Homo erectus* sons. Our *Homo sapiens* guilt is for *having exterminated our father (or parent) species (Homo erectus)*. As we've seen, in many of our sacred myths and rituals, the primal father's *Homo erectus* sons having killed him provided our ancestors with a mythological excuse for killing the *Homo erecti* – ***all of them*** – in order to avenge the "Earth Mother." "Jesus" and other fertility gods are creatures of the Species War. "Jesus," the perfect goat or "lamb of God," symbolizes the amalgamated sons of the original four, universal elements of the godhead. It is as the symbol for *Homo sapiens per se*, the "son" of *Homo erectus*, the Species War victors and the 5<sup>th</sup>, derivative element of the godhead, that he relieves us of *our*, *Homo sapiens*, wellspring of guilt with respect to the gods that we fear most, our parent species, the *Homo erectus* gods, the "Holy Ghost." (Relief is, of course, hypocritically available only to those who are childish enough to believe in "Jesus" as the amalgamated son and who help the gods to obtain their revenge by eating Jesus' body and drinking his blood. (I take communion every day just to stay on the safe side.)

Freud was similarly confused with respect to the other example he cited, Dionysus. (Dionysus was Zeus' son whom the childless Titans tore apart in a fit of jealous rage. Recall the Orphics saying this in Chapter 25. It is for our *Species War* guilt that Dionysus was made to suffer.) Because he was unconscious of the main series of events in the life of man, the Species War, we can't expect accuracy of Freud in analyzing the ancestors. I'm standing on his shoulders and couldn't have done it without him.

Credit Freud with perfectly describing the *Blame-the-Victim* game with which we are all familiar. All of us savages become tendentious hammers as soon as we sense we're locked in a hammer-versus-nail scenario that necessitates a sacrifice. Moreover, his *Oedipus* (for gals, *Electra*) complex is well represented in Greek drama. The names *Oedipus* and *Electra* come from plays of Sophocles and Aeschylus.

But the Oedipal complex is hardly the sole nucleus of all neuroses as Freud wanted to believe.<sup>83</sup> Certainly, the prehistoric object of the Fraternal complex, the parent species, might be said to fall within Freud's "father" rubric. One might even call the ongoing objects of the Fraternal complex (contemporary genetic competitors) fathers. But the ongoing political aspect of the Fraternal complex, the K and R class struggle, can't be said to involve fathers at all unless you want to become as obtuse as the makers of the Fall of Tula mythology were in calling Tezcatlipocha (the Rs) the father of Quetzalcoatl (the Ks) owing to the fact that the Ks grew out of tribal R society. That's stretching things to prehistoric limits!

In fact, as those of you who read *Stage II of the Nonviolent Rainbow Revolution* will see, Freud's failure to get political, to understand the class struggle and identify the Fraternal complex precluded him from ever fully resolving anyone's Oedipal complex. Fully resolving it requires us *first* to *collectively* resolve the Fraternal complex by minimizing K and R. Furthermore, *both* aspects of the Fraternal complex are salient in Greek tragedies.

Note these examples. Although only one part of Aeschylus's *Prometheus* survives, we know that Prometheus is a foil for our Species War guilt. Zeus, the king of the gods, wished to punish humanity. Prometheus contravened Zeus' wishes by giving us fire and had to suffer for this insubordination. This too is Blame-the-Victim but within a "Deluge"/Species War/Fraternal complex context. The plot appears to make no sense, and the play was rightfully consigned to oblivion because it was performed after the Titan cult had been outlawed. Substitute Cronus for Zeus, and the Species War meaning is apparent.

Consider some other examples of the Fraternal complex in these dramas. The source of the conflict in Sophocles's *Antigone* is a feud between the brothers Eteocles and Polyneices who fight over their dead father's (Oedipus') throne. The conflict that besets *The House of Atreus* (Agamemnon) is also between two brothers. Cassandra, Agamemnon's captured Trojan concubine, is (or was originally, in some orally-transmitted episode of the Species War) a *Homo erectus* woman (as will be clear when we see whom the Trojans, at the unconscious level, symbolize).

Yet the fountainhead of Fraternal complex symptoms within our earliest literature is not to be found among the dramas. They were meant for the stage, and how many actors can you put on a stage? The oral traditions that specialized in Fraternal (especially Deluge) guilt, obsessional fear and paranoia were the national heroic epics. Prior to Cecil B. De Mille, the national epics were adaptable only to the oral historian and the MS. With the exception of *Beowulf* (in which

---

<sup>83</sup> "It seems to me a most surprising discovery that the problems of social psychology, too, should prove soluble based on one single concrete point -- man's relation to his father," Freud, 1913: 157.

the antagonists are monsters), the heroic epics that I shall now briefly analyze describe decisive struggles between whole peoples. They are adapted from Species War mythology (or in the case of *Beowulf*, reflect obsessional fear derived from the Species War). See for yourself.

## BEOWULF

The name *Beowulf* is an immediate tip-off. How many times above have we seen *Homo erectus* symbolized as a wolf? *Homo erectus* was to us as the wolf is to the dog. He was wild and closer to the rest of the animal kingdom. But there's more to the name than that.

"*Beowulf* signifies bee-wolf (Old High German *Piawolf*?), and that is the name for woodpecker, a bird of gay plumage that hunts after bees" (Grimm: 368). In classical mythology, Picus, the woodpecker, was both an ancient Italian king and, still earlier, the son of Saturn. (Cf. Grimm: 368; Grant and Hazel) The witch Circe supposedly changed Picus into a woodpecker for rebuffing her advances (Grant and Hazel). *Beowulf* must have originated as a symbol for the god by the same name, a good *Homo erectus* god or hybrid who fights the negative aspect of *Homo erectus* (the demons, giants or monsters).

The story, which was first recorded by Christian monks, opens with ships being used as funeral pyres and set out to sea aflame. We know from our analysis of the Norse myth of Balder (Chapter 21) and from the boat rituals of the Malay Archipelago (Chapter 30) that this practice started during the Species War as a means of disposing of *Homo erectus* corpses. The Danes immolating *their own* dead in this manner on ships loaded with treasures had the popular effect of moderating obsessional fear and paranoia through repetition compulsion and identification with the common object of fear. The story enhances this effect when, on one of these ships laden with treasures, they find and rescue a castaway baby. Naturally this baby is the reincarnation of the good (dead) *Homo erectus* gods. The baby is destined to become their greatest king, Scyld Scaefing. (Defense mechanisms and wishful thinking turn things upside down. The floating pyres became associated with the sun god who brought the sun and with generosity, grace and providence.)

Next the scene changes to Denmark, where we meet Hrothgar, a descendant of Scyld Scaefing. (*As everywhere, the whole "royal" line is more closely related to Homo erectus than you and I. You believe in this Fifth Mask, right?*) He builds Heorot, a great hall where he holds feasts and distributes wealth (mostly plunder) among his many thanes (knights). The hall is joyous until one night, without warning, Grendel -- a gigantic, bear-like ogre -- attacks the hall killing thirty of

the sleeping thanes. Thanes become Grendel's favorite food, and Hrothgar grieves continually for twelve years as Grendel turns his knights into an endangered species.

The poem reveals the editorial hand of a Christian monk when Cain finds his way into this setting where even bagels have yet to arrive. Cain is said to be Grendel's ancestor; and Grendel is one of those marauding monsters, trolls, giants, *etc.* who, banished from human society, have found their way into Cain's good graces.<sup>84</sup> Like Cain, Grendel is an outcast who envies the camaraderie and happiness of men. [This aspect of monsters, especially giants, as having been banished from human society is usually, as here with Grendel, a reference to *Homo erectus*. Recall the Hamatsa or "Wild Man" ritual of the Kwakiutls (Chapter 23).]

The news of this plague upon the Danes reaches the court of King Hygelac in Geatland.<sup>85</sup> *Beowulf*, Hygelac's heroic nephew who has the strength of thirty men in his hands, sets sail for Denmark with fourteen of their best thanes. (Fourteen equals two times *seven*, the repressed ongoing fraternal hostility of two peoples.) They reach shore and thank God for providing a safe journey. Hrothgar believes that God has sent this mighty warrior to his assistance. (Confirm our interpretation of *Beowulf* as a symbol for the co-opted *Homo erectus* gods.) God has backed *Beowulf* in numerous other encounters with water-monsters. (Like the floating funeral pyres, "water-monsters" suggests that the makers of this myth were a people who disposed of *Homo erectus* corpses at sea.) Everyone trusts in "fate" as "God" designs it.

Time out. We have seen evidence now of many peoples having disposed of Species War victims in the water: the Scythians, Lenape, Mesopotamians, Aztecs, Irish, Chinese, Malaysians, Greeks, Indians (of the subcontinent), Franks, Egyptians and Scandinavians. But of all these disposals of *Homo erectus* corpses in water, there was something essentially different about the phenomenon in Egypt. Have you got it yet? Try to figure it out before we get to Appendix H.

Accounts of Grendel's ferocity follow and are enough to stand the reader's hair on end. *Beowulf* exposes Unferth, a rival thane, as being battle-tested only against his own brother --whom Unferth murdered. (More references to the

---

<sup>84</sup> The Christian monk connected Grendel with Cain because both were outcasts. But species identity is always most important; and by calling Cain Grendel's ancestor, the monk showed a lack of basic understanding. He turned Grendel's species identity upside down. In the Biblical story of Cain and Abel, the Bible's chronologically first allegory for the Species War, "Abel" represents the murdered *Homo erecti*; and the banished Cain represents the *Homo sapiens* victors. (See Chapter 18.)

<sup>85</sup> Götaland, Gothia, Gothland, Gotland, Gautland or *Geatland* was a historical land in what is now southern Sweden. My guess is that the names had their origin in myth.

ongoing side of the Fraternal complex follow. They don't get any clearer than this.)

The Oedipal complex is expressed when Hrothgar's beautifully-adorned Queen Wealhtheow enters the mead hall and takes the mead cup from man to man. She pauses before *Beowulf* to augment his motivation. *Beowulf* goes to bed immediately thereafter, vowing hand to hand (a Freudian slip) combat -- that is, fight Grendel on his own terms -- without sword or armor.

Here again is the characteristic honor and bravura of heroic literature. This is the characteristic reaction formation to 1) K, male, latent homosexual humiliation and homophobia when savage society requires men to become killing machines or face irrational dangers and 2) *Homo sapien* guilt at having defeated Neanderthal, a stronger relative, through the clever invention and use of the bow and arrow. This weapon was best combined -- not with strength, courage and bravura but -- with stealth, cunning and hit and run tactics. We'll find many more references to the weapon in these heroic epics. The subtle references to it in the Curtin myths that are interpreted in my *Irish Mythology: Passageway to Prehistory* will knock your socks off.

Returning to *Beowulf*, after the poet reasserts his faith in God, Grendel drops in for a midnight snack. As he devours a thane, *Beowulf* studies his methods. Then begins the barehanded combat that tears the mead hall apart and results in *Beowulf* ripping the monster's arm out of its socket. Leaving a bloody trail, Grendel retreats to his dark and boiling mere (lake).

*Does this "ripping an arm out of its socket" turn on any lights? Recall that in the Irish myth of Chapter 32, Strong ripped Mal MacMulcan's arm out of its socket when Mal was reaching down the chimney to steal the baby of the King of France. In Appendix B, we observed that the Australian impichiuma symbols for dead Homo erecti are limbless. Ditto for their cherished churingas. Look at these Australian dwelling receptacles for unincarnated Homo erectus spirits again in my Figures 72 and 73. The same limblessness characterizes many more symbols than the ones to which I draw your attention. The exact and concrete antecedents of all these sacred objects were the headless and limbless Homo erectus torsos that would have been disposed of in Species War bonfires. Heads and limbs were the preferred parts of the cannibal's prey, the former having been valued for their mana and protein-rich brains and the latter having been easily hacked off and barbecued on spits. The torsos remained in the fire. All these post-Paleolithic, mythological references to "heroes ripping out arms" are highly-compromised allusions to Paleolithic, especially Species War, cannibalism, cannibalism that earlier*



versions of *Beowulf* undoubtedly described more vividly. For another example, the white circles on the thighs of the “Old Cannibals” in Figure 78 mark the thighs as one of the cannibals’ preferred body parts.

*Beowulf*’s victory is celebrated in song. Two of the songs are predictable. One, “The Lay of Sigemund,” is Oedipal; the other, “The Fight at Finnsburg,” is Fraternal. But the celebration is short-lived. In *Beowulf*’s absence, another thane is devoured, this time by Grendel’s mother monster. *Beowulf* and company pursue her to her lake. There strange fires glow at night and waves form that can make heaven weep. (This physically unlikely combination of water and fire reflects our obsessional fear of *Homo erectus* who was disposed of with fire and water.) The lake is surrounded by other sea-monsters. *Beowulf* kills one with an arrow, but he quickly puts down the bow for the more heroic weaponry. As he is fastening on his armor, the rival thane disgraces himself by offering his own sword to *Beowulf*.

Once in the lake, our hero descends for a day before hitting bottom where the “she-wolf of the waters” grasps him and drags him to her dwelling, an enemy hall complete with a fire. (This under-water dwelling looks like a mead hall and condenses the prehistoric and the ongoing aspect of the Fraternal complex.) *Beowulf*’s borrowed sword fails to pierce her. Throwing it aside, he spies a huge broadsword, splendidly wrought, “the work of giants.” He kills her (*Homo erectus* at large) not with the cunning bow and arrow but with the “giant’s” (*Homo erectus*’) own sword.

The last half of the story is more of the same. Hrothgar richly rewards *Beowulf*. All praise God for the victory. *Beowulf* and his men sail home. He becomes king of the Geats, rules for fifty years and is killed defending his people from a *snake-like* (Fraternal) dragon whose “ornamental (sexual) cup” has been stolen by a subject. This dragon episode includes other symbols of Fraternal conflict. Seven thanes accompany *Beowulf*’s successor into a *cave* to remove the dragon’s dead body and *treasure*. (*Homo erectus* was linked with treasure and caves.) They shove the dragon’s body over a cliff, *disposing of it at sea*. The sons of *Beowulf*’s earls then ride around his funeral barrow, (*round like the fairy mounds of Ireland and all the original mounds, whose Species War origin we have yet to analyze*), chanting their laments and symbolizing their ambivalence toward an ongoing, genetic competitor by riding *twelve (every month of the year)* at a time.

### THE CATTLE RAID OF COOLEY

*The Cattle Raid of Cooley* is the foremost of a large group of the earliest Irish myths, which are collectively known as the Ulster or the Red Branch Cycle. “The Ulster of these stories is a great and powerful kingdom -- *Ulaid*, ‘the men of Ulster’

-- able to take on the rest of Ireland in war, the enemy being constantly referred to as *Fir Érenn*, ‘the men of Ireland’” (Jackson: 7).

Confirm my interpretation, in Chapter 31, of the “Ulstermen” as originally being the Tuatha de Danann and the *Cattle Raid*... as being the last Fir Bolg myth of the Species War. It was the myth in which they admitted to killing the last of the *Homo erecti* in Ireland. But the Goidels and their Druids modified it to make credible their counterfeit “Sons of Mil” invasion mythology. The Fir Bolgs and the Goidels, enemies who did not arrive in Ireland together, could not both be credited with having taken Ireland from *Homo erectus*.

If I am not mistaken, some of the antagonism between Ulster and the rest of Ireland (which continues to the present day) is attributable to the subtlety with which the subject of this myth was disguised and to the subsequent, literal interpretation of “Ulstermen” as being opposed to other Irishmen. Recall also that Figure 88a and the locations of Irish cromlechs confirm that Neanderthal made his last stand mostly in the north and the southwest of Ireland.

My interpretation of the Ulstermen is supported by another myth. Before “The Second Battle of Moytura,” when Lugh (the Sun God) is preparing to lead the Dananns (the good Neanderthals) in battle against the Fomorians (the bad Neanderthal), Lugh’s father, Kian, “was sent northward by Lugh to summon the fighting men of the Dananns *in Ulster* to the hosting against the Fomorians” (Rolleston: 114, *Emphasis mine*). The battle itself is to be held in the north, and Kian isn’t sent anywhere other than Ulster to summon the Dananns. So clearly, all the Dananns are in the northern province of Ulster. (Cf. Rolleston: 116)

There are a few parallels between *The Cattle Raid* and Homer’s *Iliad*. Some of the more obvious ones, as you’ll see, are between Ulster and Achaea [continental Europe, from which the Achaeans (‘brothers’ who attacked Troy) came] on the one hand, and Connacht (the province leading the battle against Ulster) and Troy on the other. The most mighty and supernatural warrior in the *Iliad* is Achilles, an Achaean. In *The Cattle Raid* it’s Cuchulain, an Ulster man. But as you’ll see, both epics originate in the Species War; and we must associate Ulster with Troy and Connacht with Achaea because the former are associated with *Homo erectus* and the latter with *Homo sapiens*.

First, here’s the story of *The Cattle Raid of Cooley*, based on Rolleston’s review of the oldest surviving texts of it, the *Book of Dun Cow* (11th century) and the *Book of Leinster* (mid-12th century).

Maev and Ailell are the queen and king of Connacht. Maev, the de facto ruler, is headstrong and does as she pleases -- even when choosing her lovers. She is also slightly richer than Ailell in possessions, which in the Neolithic, Bronze and Iron Ages of Ireland meant cattle. But her material superiority is compromised by

her prize bull refusing to stay in the hands of a woman. Subsequently, to maintain her superiority in cattle wealth, she organizes a military expedition to Ulster, home of the best bull in Ireland whose owner refuses to sell or lend it.

The bull refusing to “remain in the hands of a woman” is at least partially symbolic of western men refusing to submit to the rule or the control of women. Maev “organizing the raid” and “choosing her lovers as she pleases” are the symbolic equivalent of Eve “picking the apple and persuading Adam to bite into it.” These are highly symbolic ways of saying what Hebraic, Germanic, Hindu and other mythologies said more directly: *Homo sapiens* women were a contested source of Species War conflict. Up to this point, it looks as if the cattle may be a symbol of property *per se*. *Homo sapiens* wanted *Homo erectus*’ property -- Earth.

On the other side, King Conor Mac Nessa and the Red Branch order of Chivalry lead the Ulster men. Cuchulain is their greatest champion. Think back to the chapter on the oak trees and other sacred symbols, and you’ll immediately recognize the significance of a “red branch.” *It is a line of murdered ancestors*. This symbolism plus the fairy status of many of the Ulster characters, leaves us no doubt as to whom the Ulstermen symbolize: Neanderthals.

“Bricriu of the Poison-tongue,” the Irish trickster, fights with the men of Ireland, the Connacht forces. This inclusion of a Connacht trickster further assures us that this tale is an allegory for the Species War.

The Ulstermen’s fortress is at *Emain Macha*, which was named after Macha, the earliest fairy queen of Emain. She returned from Tir-na-nOg to marry a widower. The Ulster king of the time forced her to win a foot race with his horses -- while she was pregnant -- to save her mortal husband’s life. In great travail, she won the race and then put a tragic curse upon the Ultonians that was to last for *nine* generations (till the end of their line): they were to suffer a woman’s birth pains in their hours of greatest need.

The astute reader will immediately see herein a familiar pattern. Our *Homo sapiens* ancestors were once more inventing an alternative explanation for *Homo erectus*’ demise, a hypocritical explanation that projects their own guilt onto their victims. Like the symbols that the mind uses to construct a dream, the selection of this alternate explanation was *not* accidental. Just as the day’s residues are used as material for the dream, historical residues go into the making of the myth. This is what Robert Graves referred to when he said that myths, “are always practical,” and “insist on some point of tradition.”

Can you guess what this part of the myth symbolizes in our prehistory? The first explanation that springs to mind is that Neanderthal had a longer gestation period and underwent a greater percent of his brain development *in utero*. Trinkaus once argued for such a difference between the two subspecies (Trinkaus, 1984). Opposing this opinion is the conclusion of a recent study comparing the

human pelvis with that of the first complete Neanderthal pelvis found (at Kebara Cave, Mt. Carmel, Israel): the substantial differences are not related to obstetric demands. However, this assessment was based solely on the size of the pelvic opening. (Cf. Rak: 331.) Even if the obstetric differences were insignificant, then the myth is probably alluding to a tendency of latter-day Neanderthals to keep their women constantly pregnant in a desperate effort to preserve their race. Moreover, mythology also suggests that slightly stooped *Homo erectus* could not run as well as our ancestors. Part II of the *Walam Olum* and numerous other North American tales that symbolize our immediate ancestors as trickster *hares* may imply this. Pregnant Neanderthals would have been doubly slow on their feet, and Macha the fairy is a pregnant Neanderthal. This part of the myth hypocritically attempts to transfer *Homo sapiens* guilt over having put the Machas on the run -- to Neanderthal men. Continuing...

The Ulster King Conor is the son of Fachtna the Giant. Fachtna was a Neanderthal or at least a hybrid; for his mother is said to have been Magna, a fairy (Neanderthal). Cuchulain, Conor's foremost champion, is a hybrid. Accounts of Cuchulain's lineage differ. According to one account, Lugh was his father; but this contradicts what we know from other tales -- that Lugh, the Irish sun god, was himself a hybrid.

Other accounts named the great champion, Sualtain or King Conchobar Mac Nessa (Conor) himself as Cuchulain's father. (Cf. Faraday's translation of *The Cattle Raid: X*) When Cuchulain's battle fury is on him, a light shines from his forehead. Like Saturn, Osiris, Balder, Ossian's fairy bride and other mythical hybrid or *Homo erectus* characters, Cuchulain was said to be beautiful. This beauty was a replacement idea for the obsessional fear that *Homo erectus* gods would punish us for our displeasure with their appearance. The most renowned warriors (before *The Cattle Raid*) are said to have been women: the fairies Aifa and Skatha (Cuchulain's instructor) and Queen Maev. Other mythical elements contradict the alleged military might of these women. Cuchulain spares Maev's life when she is in retreat to Connacht because it is beneath him to fight and slay a woman. Similarly, he merely subdues Aifa when she revolts against her vassalage to Skatha.

An altercation between Conor and some of his vassals preceded the war. They became divided over the beautiful young Deirdre, who was fated to cause the downfall of Ulster. How often have we heard this before? Wise old Fergus, who was Conor's father's half-brother, had lost the throne to Conor owing to the wiles of Conor's beautiful mother. Fergus finally turned against Conor when Fergus' only son died due to Conor's duplicity to acquire Deirdre. Fergus then goes to Connacht seeking vengeance and encourages Maev to launch her raid.

(As everywhere, *Homo erectus*' problems and fraternal conflict *per se* are portrayed as sexual rivalry.)

As for the more modern contributions to the epic, cattle raids were commonplace during the Iron Age. Listen to Professor Jackson:

“When a young man reached manhood, he seems to have been ceremonially initiated into the status of a warrior by receiving from his lord a set of weapons, a spear and shield... and [*H then he*] formally mounted a chariot. This ceremony was called “taking arms,” and it bears a loose resemblance to that associated with knighthood in medieval Europe. It was thereupon his duty to gather his men and lead them on a raid against the nearest hostile district, returning if possible, with spoils of cattle.” --Jackson: 18

As the cattle raid begins, the men of Ireland cross into Ulster territory; and the curse of Macha takes effect. Ulster's only hope lies in the persons of Cuchulain and his chariot driver, both of whom were born elsewhere and are not subject to the cursed pains of childbirth.

A series of fabulous battles describe the supernatural strength, speed and fury of Cuchulain, who turns into a giant as his battle fury comes on him. He is more than a match for all Ireland and exacts a terrible toll upon their forces as he struggles to slow their advance until the men of Ulster can recover from their travails, from the simulated pain of pregnancy.

Wounded severely, Cuchulain is forced to rest. Lugh, Cuchulain's fairy father, takes his place in battle.

Cuchulain's ultimate weapon is the Gai Bulga or “belly spear.” It seems to come out of nowhere because it is thrown by the foot. O’Rahilly and Jackson interpreted this weapon in the obvious manner: as the lightning bolt. (*Cf.* O’Rahilly: 58-84; Jackson: 15-16) Gai Bulga literally means, “Spear of lightning” (O’Rahilly). But the lightning bolt is itself only a symbol for the arrow. As Robert Graves advised us and as psychoanalysis has confirmed time and time again, “Myths are always practical... insisting on some point of tradition.”

Do you doubt me when I say that this weapon is a neurotic compromise formation for what was originally the bow and arrow? (Have you stopped believing in experts and started believing in your taxi driver?) The name “belly spear” is a dead give-away. Spears and atlatls are thrown from overhead. The revolutionary modification of the spear, the arrow, is “launched” (the word most often used in the myth) from a lower level than is the spear. Thus, “belly spear.”

Apparently without understanding “the Deluge” or seeing the weapon encoded in myth, Jackson was struck by the absence of explicit allusions to it and

the almost complete absence of this weapon within the archaeological record for the heroic period (the Bronze and Iron Ages):

“There is no mention anywhere in the early texts of the use of bows and arrows, though they occur in later sources; and it is significant [*H here comes another dead give-away*] that even the names for these, once they do appear, are foreign loan-words, respectively *boga* from the Norse *bógi* and *saiget* from the Latin *sagitta*, the former of which can scarcely have been borrowed before the ninth century [*H A.D.*]. It would seem that the warriors of Ulster were not acquainted with the bow and arrow [*H or so they wanted their gods to believe!*].” --Jackson: 16

“The total absence of the bow and arrow in the early Irish stories is paralleled by the virtually complete lack of archaeological evidence for them in the pre-Roman period in Gaul and the British Isles; one may say the Celts of the Iron Age made almost no use of the bow and arrow.” --Jackson: 33

In Polynesia (as reported [here](#) and [here](#)), in New Britain among the [Nakanai](#) people, in [Australia](#) and in Ireland, the bow was taboo.

Well, be this unmentionable as it may, the men of Ulster finally rise up; *but only after their sons have all been killed. The subtle implication is that the remaining, fertile Neanderthal women could only mate with Homo sapien men--producing sterile hybrids.*

*The Cattle Raid* is as consistent as it is subtle. It describes --in addition to the special travails of Neanderthal women and cattle raiding --the extinction of a people, the elimination of the “*Tuatha de Danann*” (Neanderthals) as mortal men.

The Ultonians drive the Irishmen from Ulster, decimating them as they flee. But the noble Cuchulain spares Maev; and the men of Ireland get away with the famous brown bull, *which is, as is only now apparent, a symbol for the right to populate the planet, a right that Homo erectus and Homo sapiens could not share.*

## THE ILIAD

As already noted, there may have been a bard named Homer. A prominent family on the island of Chios traces their ancestry to him. As we’ll see in the next appendix, there definitely was a Troy. Eratosthenes, the great mathematician, geographer, astrologer and librarian from Alexandria, assures us that the Trojan War was fought between 1194 and 1183 B.C. It was *not* fought on the hill called

Hisarlik in northwestern Turkey where, in the late Nineteenth Century, Heinrich Schliemann found a strategic military outpost. That outpost, Schliemann's Troy, may have been a Troy but only a Troy II or III.

A Trojan horse may even have enabled invaders to conquer Troy; but as we'll see, the important symbolic function of the "Trojan horse" lessens the likelihood that it actually existed. Many of the other details are strictly mythical, as mythical as the Greek gods who support their favorites on either side of Homer's Trojan battle lines. *We'll discover that the main battle lines in Homer's Iliad, though not at a Mediterranean Troy, were real!*

I'm sure that most of you are familiar with the basic stories of both the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey*, so I'll review them summarily and confine these final two sections mostly to my arguments.

Like all the early heroic works of literature, the *Iliad* is built upon a substratum of myth, Species War myth. More specifically, note that, like *The Cattle Raid*, this epic describes the extinction of an entire people. We are told that all but a small band of Trojan men are massacred. [*H These correspond to the "demons and giants still at large" who in turn correspond to men's obsessional fear of Homo erectus and guilty hope that a few may have survived. As in Easter Island mythology, the survivors may also correspond to the Homo erecti who "intermarried with Homo sapiens" to create the "gentry."*] The Trojan women are carried off with the victorious Achaeans.

The actual Trojan War, as you'll see, was fought over tin. But the popular myth-patronizing mind grasped that the ultimate prize --regardless of the immediate objective --was women and the right to reproduce with them. And never had the sexual basis for fraternal conflict been as clear as it was in the Species War, when property and ancillary goods were almost nonexistent. So, the popular mind could not avoid associating the Trojan War with the Species War. Believe it or not, we shall discover that there is also an Irish account of the Trojan War; and it too is full of unconscious references to the Species War.

Helen, the alleged object of the Trojan War, the "face that launched a thousand ships," is symbolic of *Homo sapiens* women *per se*. The ten-year war begins after Trojan Prince Paris steals her. This general theme is repeated in subsequent conflict between the Achaean high king Agamemnon and Achilles over Briseis, the beautiful woman that was hybrid Achilles' war prize.

Aias or Ajax is the son of Telamon and second only to Achilles on the battlefield. Both are hybrids. I'll offer elaborate proof of this below; but for now, note that both are giants. Achilles is "handsome," and his mother, Thetis, is a sea nymph. (You know what that means. We've seen this pattern many times.) Poseidon, god of the sea, is said to have fathered the Atlanteans and at least one of the Cyclopes, Polyphemus, the Cyclops that Odysseus blinds.

When Agamemnon appropriates Achilles' concubine, Achilles refuses to fight. His prolonged refusal to fight is a mythical explanation for Achilles' hybrid ambivalence and manic depression with respect to the Species War. This hybrid ambivalence and manic depression was owing to the need to reject a basic part of their own identity (a Neanderthal parent) and to the hybrid inability to produce offspring.<sup>86</sup>

Poseidon was with the Trojans and helped to build an impregnable wall around their city, but the Trojans spurned him when they failed to make the promised sacrifices. Thus, he withdrew his divine protection and aided Troy's enemies. The message is like those issued by the Kwakiutls (whose potlatching was a form of sacrifice or reparation payment), the Incas, the Irish and primitive people generally. The erection of new structures was one of the occasions when men were unconsciously reminded that all the land had once belonged to *Homo erectus*. "Poseidon Earthshaker" (or some god symbolic of *Homo erectus*) had to be mollified on these occasions. (Recall that Poseidon, god of the sea and brother of Zeus and Hades, became the favored substitute for Cronus after the Titan cult was outlawed.)

For the principal divine benefactors of the Trojans to be Aphrodite, Apollo and Artemis also tells us whom they unconsciously represented. These three gods, especially Aphrodite, were known for their beauty (which, as we've seen, is usually a reaction formation to *Homo sapiens*' dislike of *Homo erectus*' looks).

Apollo and Artemis (goddess of the hunt) were also the archer and archeress. Homer hints that Apollo and Artemis had once been thought to take the lives of men and women, respectively, by shooting them with their arrows (Od. XV: 496-500; XI: 192-195, 220-227).<sup>87</sup> These most-angry gods, into whose hands the weapon was displaced, were all *Homo erectus*.

To reward Paris for electing her more beautiful than Hera (Zeus' wife) and Athena (one of Zeus' daughters), Aphrodite (goddess of love) grants Paris the love of the world's most beautiful woman, Helen. Helen is already the wife of Menelaus, brother to Agamemnon, the over-king of the Achaeans. Ganymedês, son of Tros, the first Trojan king, was also said to be the most beautiful of mortal men. Again, all this beauty within the Trojan camp is a reaction formation for

---

<sup>86</sup> In the Fenian Cycle of Irish mythology, the same manic depression is the *sine qua non* of Conan Maol Mac Morna. Of Conan's hybrid pedigree, there can be no doubt. He has a thick, woolly swath of black hair running down his back. Greek myths are more distorted because they were imported and their gods were ripe for inclusion in fraudulent genealogies. Yet you should now be able to spot another manic-depressive hybrid in the popular legends of Heracles. He was said to have attempted suicide, "for accidentally killing his wife and children."

<sup>87</sup> Homeric quotations are from the Rouse translations cited in the bibliography.



obsessional fear of having insulted the *Homo erectus* gods by rejecting their appearance. Confirmation of Aphrodite's true identity as an unsightly *Homo erectus* comes from her having sprung from the severed penis of Uranus, a (*Homo erectus*) primal father. (Cotterell: 142.)

Note also that "Tros," "Trojan," and "Titan" all look and sound alike. We know, of course, that the Titans were Neanderthals. I will confirm this association and show you from whence the word "Trojan" was derived, below. *But the most obvious and necessary reason why the Trojans and their Fir Bolg allies were associated with the Homo erecti was that they, like the Toltecs, were the era's wealthiest Ks.*

In the end, as in our other mythologies, the hybrid (Achilles) becomes a "hero of old." He kills Hector, the military and spiritual leader of the Trojans.

Now, here is the proof that Achilles and Telamonian Aias symbolize hybrids. Take note. Homer tells us that Achilles came from Pelasgian Argos. In memorable history, Argos was an ancient city in the northeastern part of Greece's Peloponnesian Peninsula. Yet Iman Wilkens, the brilliant etymologist that we shall meet in the next chapter, assures us that the name was only transplanted to Greece by the invaders from the North Atlantic who (with people from the Balkans and elsewhere) overthrew the eastern Mediterranean civilizations between 1450 and 1150 B.C. Prior to the modern era, "Argos" referred to what is now France.

There is enormous disagreement in the archeological claims regarding the eastern Mediterranean in the second half of the Second Millennium B. C., especially regarding the palace at Knossos, Crete. It seems that the controversy is still political. Descendants of the Pelasgians (e. g. Fir Bolgs and Trojans) are still fighting a blame game with the descendants of their conquerors, Homer's Achaeans, despite the periodic need for all of them to be united as Greeks.

There is better accord regarding the Pelasgians, sea peoples of the lowlands. They were described in Greek mythology as the first people, as we'll discover in a Deucalion myth and Appendix H, due to so many of them having been swept away by the Great Flood. Like Poseidon and the people of the (western-most) Isles, Pelasgians were further associated with *Homo erectus* due to this "first people" association, especially after the banning of the Titan cult. Eurynome was said to have created them after she set a Titan and a Titaness over each planet. (Cf. Graves: 27-30)

Achilles was a Pelasgian from the lowlands of the continent. He fought with the Achaeans. But, in the minds of the Greeks, Achilles and his people were a special breed of Pelasgians. He was of mixed ancestry. Like his chariot team, which consisted of mortal and immortal horses, he was of mixed parentage. He was a hybrid (*Iliad*: XVI, 174-184). Thetis the sea nymph was his mother and

Peleus was his father (*Iliad*: XVI, 37-40). Peleus and Aias's father Telamon were both sons of Aeacus and grandsons of Zeus (*Iliad*: XXI, 213-215-). Aeacus was also said to have been begotten by Zeus and a river goddess (Graves: 212-213). Hera, jealous as ever of Zeus having children by other women (a recurrent Fraternal complex theme), destroyed the inhabitants of Oenome where Aeacus was king (creating a mythical rationale for the infertility of hybrid Aeacus). Zeus then granted Aeacus' request to repopulate the land by, "giving him as many subjects as there were ants carrying grains of corn up a near-by oak." And so it was that ants (*myrmidons*), who had been serving the gods [carrying grains of corn up a nearby (Olympian) oak], fell to the ground from a sacred oak and sprang up as men. (Cf. Graves: 212-213) This myth assures us that Aeacus, Achilles and his myrmidons were hybrids. The largest class of ant, the worker, is sterile -- like the hybrids who aided *Homo sapiens* in the Species War by killing the *Homo erectus* ancestors (adding them to the oak tree).<sup>88</sup> *Our Homo sapiens ancestors were saying here that they were willing to give babies to the hybrid warriors to rear as their own, that hybrid women didn't have to steal them as was their want. You who read this book's supplement, Irish Mythology, Passageway to Prehistory, will see that Finn (a hybrid) raised a child (Oscar) that Diarmuid gave to Finn's wife. [See Chapter 35 for an ant and corn myth that reverses the prehistoric truth (of the Amerindians learning to grow corn from the Aboriginal African Americans).]*

So, the myrmidons (sterile, worker ants) were hybrids that killed *Homo erectus*. Judging by his association with them and river goddesses and "the first (Pelagian) men" and a team of horses that is half mortal and half immortal -- Achilles was a hybrid too.

The myrmidons (hybrids) who took part in the Species War were heroes not only due to their physical superiority. Their participation was heroic due to their lack of long run genetic interest in *Homo sapiens* civilization. They had no offspring to bequeath to it. Thus, the myrmidons "had no mind for the din of battle, when there was no one to lead them to their place" (*Iliad*: II, 781-782). Those

---

<sup>88</sup> Graves believed the dream of Aeacus to represent, "a concise account of immigrations into Aegina towards the end of the second millennium B.C." (Graves: 20). This is much too late in our prehistory to enable Mediterranean people, at or near the center of human civilization, to fashion hallucinatory dream material. The fall of Troy itself dates to the end of the second millennium B.C., and it is one of the least dream-like and hallucinatory aspects of the Homeric works! Expert though he was in the classics, Mr. Graves was not very familiar with modern accounts of primitive people or with psychoanalysis. He seems not to have known the length of the oral tradition or that tens of thousands of years separated the ages of bronze and iron from the "dreamtime" in which the basic religious myths were first created, a time in which people lived and thought as did the most primitive Australians.

hybrids who fought well were deserving of fabulous honors and rewards such as those that the Achaean King Agamemnon ultimately gave to Achilles.

Aias' (Ajax's) genealogy is also not fully *Homo sapiens*. Aeacus was his grandfather; and his mother was an Athenian granddaughter of Pelops, the "Pelasgian" boy whose cannibalization brought on the Deucalion deluge [H *the Great Flood*] (Graves: 268 or Chapter 25, herein).

But the best evidence of Achilles' hybrid pedigree is the story of his birth and death. His mother, the sea nymph Thetis, wanting to bestow immortality upon him, dipped him in the river Styx. But the heel of the foot she held was not immersed. The adult Achilles died when Apollo directed Paris's arrow to this heel. Psychoanalysis tells us that the foot symbolizes the penis. Achilles' and *the hybrids' flaw was in their "foot," their heels, testicles, genitalia, in their inability to reproduce.*<sup>89</sup>

The ignoble and non-heroic bow and arrow, though displaced onto Apollo (the Greek Grim Reaper), is subtly acknowledged here as the key to victory. After the deaths of their champions Aias and Achilles, the Achaeans become apprehensive and consult seers and oracles, who tell them that to win they must secure the bow and arrows of Heracles. Although we haven't discussed the legendary heroics of Heracles (Hercules to the Romans), I'll assure you that, like Achilles, Heracles, son of Alcmene and Zeus, was also a hybrid.<sup>90</sup>

Achaean (*Homo sapiens*) victory is said to require three additional feats. They must bring the bones of Pelops back to Greece from Asia (unite the enemies of the Trojans [*Homo sapiens* of every ethnicity]). They must bring Achilles' "son" into the war (give children to the hybrids, children that they can father and mother and thereby feel as if they have a stake in *Homo sapiens'* future). Finally, they must steal the sacred image of Athena from the Trojan sanctuary. (Put wisdom and military skill firmly on their side; strength is on the side of Neanderthal).

---

<sup>89</sup> Confirmation of this psychoanalysis comes from the *Mabinogion*. Bendigeid Vran, king of the "Isle of the Mighty," who could never be contained within a house, who married off his beautiful daughter to an Irish king and who hosted on his island the giants who escaped burning to death in the "iron house" in Ireland (See footnote 124 in Chapter 16.); was himself "wounded in the foot with a poisoned dart" (*Mabinogion*: 25).

<sup>90</sup> Heracles had used a bow to destroy the giants that Mother Earth released to punish Zeus for imprisoning her Titans in Tartarus. The twelve labors, heroic adventures, of Heracles take him to the far ends of the Greek world, where he does everything to make the world safe for *Homo sapiens* (e. g. kills the hydra, the last of the *Homo erectus* still at large; pacifies the angry *Homo erectus* gods by finding the "golden pin" [arrow] in the Augean Stables and removing it). He also does everything we fear we can't do (e. g. overcome mortality by going to hell and back).

These deeds are accomplished, but they are insufficient to change the course of the war. What decides the outcome is Odysseus' plan to use the Trojan horse.<sup>91</sup> The Trojan horse stratagem is one of stealth and guile. It is for these abilities that *Homo sapiens* was fated to win. Stealth and guile are symbolic of the *tactical* use of the bow and arrow.

Moreover, the Trojan horse, though symbolic of internal weakness and vulnerability, is also, like horses *per se*, symbolic of Neanderthal. Like Neanderthal, the horse is big, large-boned and strong. All Indo-European peoples sacrificed horses. In the unconscious minds of the mythmakers and Homer's readers, the addition of a Trojan horse inexorably identified the rich, K, Trojan tin lords with Neanderthal. The Achaeans who came out of the horse were inexorably identified with *Homo sapiens*, who (as a subspecies) "came out of" Neanderthal. This complex metaphor developed to describe the outcome of both the Tin War and the Species War.

The war took an enormous number of lives on either side. Homer informs us time and time again, that the treatment given to one's corpse was of the utmost importance to the Greeks. The honorable, god-like treatment was the same as that which we know to have been given to most of the victims of the Species War -- cremation.

### THE ODYSSEY

The Homeric works are a complete treatment of the Fraternal complex. Both the Iliad, as you've seen, and the Odyssey, as you're about to see, deal cryptically and allegorically but repeatedly with the prehistoric, inter-species model for genetic competition, the Species War. In being overtly about the competition for tin and women (the Iliad) and for Odysseus' estate and beautiful wife (the Odyssey) they also deal with ongoing genetic competition. The Homeric works are a complete treatment of the Fraternal complex.

Add Sophocles' play, Oedipus Rex and Euripides' play, Electra to the Homeric works and you have, minus the primal father ("Uranos"), a complete, classical Greek religion.

*The Odyssey* follows the *Iliad* and pieces together myths that expressed our ancestors' obsessional fears and their guilt-ridden, unsatisfactory relations with widowed *Homo erectus* women. (Recall that Homer tells us that the victorious

---

<sup>91</sup> The *Iliad* ends with Priam (Hector's father) visiting Achilles. The story of the Trojan horse, which has been preserved in Virgil's *Aeneid*, was one of many lost but related poems that are indirectly known as the *Cyclic Epics*.

“Achaeans” killed almost all the Trojan men *and carried off their women.*) Although resolution of the Fraternal Complex (population control and reforms to create equal opportunity) was beyond the realm of possibility in Homer’s time, by showing that “God” punishes those who go to excesses, the *Odyssey* implies that moderation is essential in dealing with competitors. This understanding was to be articulated four centuries later by Aristotle in his *Nicomachean Ethics* and is a recurrent motif of the *New Testament*. *The Odyssey* consistently implies that the unrestrained expression of genetic competition is offensive to the “gods.” We need only to add our conscious understanding that it is offensive because it associates with the same abuses that “the gods” suffered during the Species War.

All these motifs are strung together like beads on the thread of the story of a single man’s life. Due to the diversity of required roles, Homer continually refers to this protagonist as “one who is ready for any event.” This able man who epitomizes the Achaean victory, the man best-suited to undergo the torments of “God” (torments manifesting obsessional fear of *Homo erectus*) is Odysseus, the author of the clever plan to deploy the Trojan horse, the plan that doomed the Trojans (and symbolically, *Homo erectus*). Ostensibly, Odysseus must be punished because he blinded Polyphemus, the giant Cyclops and son of Poseidon. Poseidon (the patron and founding god of all island nations, including Troy and “Atlantis”) is also associated with the world’s water bodies, water bodies into which many *Homo erectus* corpses disappeared. Of course, we know, from Chapter 25, that the cyclopes symbolize imaginary *Homo erectus* archers bent on revenge. So, killing Poseidon’s cyclops son is symbolic of killing *Homo erectus*. As the principal killer of all these Fraternal complex victims (the Trojans, Polyphemus and, as we’ll see, his wife’s suitors) Odysseus is a scapegoat second in value only to Jesus. Moreover, for his role of scapegoat for our sins, the name “Odysseus” could not be more appropriate. One translation of the name is “he who is pursued by the wrath of gods.”<sup>92</sup>

Odysseus suffers the wrath of the gods, during a nine-year effort to sail home from Troy to his kingdom of Ithaca. I shall show you how his specific adventures correspond to obsessional fears of *Homo erectus*.

During these adventures and ordeals, Odysseus’ vassals and competitors take general advantage of his absence: free-loading as unwelcome guests at his estate, pressuring his beautiful and faithful wife Penelope to choose one of them as a husband and even attempting to murder Telemachus, his son. Telemachus is not yet an adult and hesitates to assume the father’s role as manager of the estate. Telemachus’ weakness or exaggerated respect for his father allows the suitors

---

<sup>92</sup> This does not appear in my Rouse translation; but Wilkens, whose knowledge of linguistics and the classics far exceeds my own, assures us of as much (Wilkens: 263 citing Od. XIX).

who have overrun the palace to commit no end of abuses and to become deserving of capital punishment.

Before Odysseus can repay his rivals for their unchecked expression of genetic competition and rid his family and estate of them, before he can metamorphose from scape goat to priest, he must first suffer the wrath of the gods for his own excesses (and for those of our ancestors' vis-à-vis *Homo erectus*). Certain of Odysseus' acts of redemption simultaneously bring about his apotheosis, his elevation to godlike status and to becoming a symbol for Zeus -- whom Homer often refers to as "God." Odysseus serves as a surrogate husband to two goddesses (widowed *Homo erectus* women) and journeys to Hades and back. Of course, those heroes who were celebrated in poetry and song became automatically associated with the gods. Thus, Zeus responds to Athena's pleas to help Odysseus: "How could I forget that fine fellow Odysseus, after all! He is almost one of us" (Od. I: 87-89). But Odysseus is also godlike to the extent that the *Iliad* was unconsciously identified with the Species War. To the extent that the Trojans represented *Homo erectus*, the ambivalence felt toward them rubbed off on Odysseus, their killer. When Odysseus goes to Hades and returns from this land of the dead, his apotheosis is complete.

He then returns home as the personification of "God" to punish the wicked men that have excessively severe Fraternal complexes. In these final episodes, the other meaning of the name "Odysseus," "*child of wrath*," comes into play. (Cf. Wilkens: 263 for this translation.)

Before we analyze Odysseus' adventures and point out the connections with the Species War and *Homo erectus*, let's back up a bit to acknowledge a recent and important discovery that has been made about *The Odyssey*.

Perhaps the best evidence that the Trojans were unconsciously equated with *Homo erectus* in the popular mind is this: even though most Europeans of the late Bronze Age who were using bronze commodities, were using Trojan tin; they didn't know for sure that Troy existed or -- if it existed -- where it was. Proof of this lies in the real Troy having been only recently discovered (as we shall see in the next Appendix). Remember, in the second and first millennium B.C., there were no global news service, no radio, no television and no photography. People did not travel for pleasure. Travel and trade by land or sea was extremely risky business that only the most stouthearted dared to even consider. Linear A of the Cretans and Linear B of the Mycenaeans notwithstanding, writing wasn't invented in Europe until ancient Greek was developed sometime in the eighth

century B.C.<sup>93</sup> Only then could non-adventurers, non-pirates, average people, begin to learn vicariously about geography. Herodotus tells us that the early Greeks divided the world into Europe and Asia. Egypt and Libya (the rest of northern Africa) were thought to be in Asia. Professor Burton assures us that the ancient Greeks acquired geographic knowledge only very gradually.

“Interest in geography began in Greece circa 500 B.C. Thereafter, many books were published, most of them unscientific and existing now only as fragments... By the end of the sixth century, the Greeks had become familiar with the whole of the Mediterranean Sea. Herodotus speaks of the Celts as living beyond the Pillars of Hercules, and the Kynetes (a name unknown to later geographers) as living beyond the Celts... (Burton: 26-28). Until about the beginning of the third century B.C., the history of the discovery of the world is concerned chiefly with the coast of the Mediterranean Sea and the continent of Asia; in much less degree with the continent of Africa. Though the names of the Iberians, Celts, and certain other peoples of Italy were known, the Greeks had little, if any, definite knowledge of the interior of Spain or Gaul or the peoples and places of central and northern Italy. Of Germany and the west coast of Europe, they were absolutely ignorant.” --Burton: 53

This ignorance of geography persisted well into the first millennium B.C., even among the literate and educated people of Greece. It persisted despite Troy (in north-western Europe) having been of such paramount importance throughout the second and third millennia. Geographic ignorance persisted because iron, the iron-ore and charcoal for which were widespread and plentiful, began to widely replace bronze circa 1100 in the Levant, Cyprus and parts of Greece, thus reducing the demand for tin and tin exploration.

As you will see in Appendix G, perhaps the best evidence of just how confused most of the people of the classical world were in matters of geography is the myth of “Atlantis,” which condenses at least three locations and four events into one. Also in Appendix F, we’ll discover another traditional oral account of the Trojan War that also blends that war with the Species War. It will confirm Wilkens’ discovery that Troy, original Troy, Homer’s Troy, was in England.

---

<sup>93</sup> Linear A and B were extinguished by the wave of invasions and anarchy that drowned eastern Mediterranean civilizations in the late 2nd millennium.

Mariners, traders and pirates benefited from this general ignorance of geography and the rarity of their navigational skills. According to Iman Wilkens, author of *Where Troy Once Stood*,

“To keep their knowledge of sea routes secret, all the information required by Celtic navigators... (as a maritime chart for use in the tin, gold, iron and amber trades in an age when tin was found virtually only in England, gold in Ireland and amber in the Baltic) was contained in the *Odyssey* in such a way that it could not be understood except by those who knew how to interpret it. The *Odyssey* thus fulfilled the function of a maritime chart, containing not only explicit information, but also hidden indications that have only recently begun to be decoded. On another level, the *Odyssey* also contains information of a totally different nature -- a description of the stages of initiation into the Mysteries.” --Wilkens: 163-164

Aside from saying that Wilkens’ research into Bronze Age navigation and sea-travel is very interesting and that his book is a great read, I’m not going to try to even venture an opinion as to the accuracy of his map of Odysseus’ wanderings around the Atlantic. It’s hard enough for me to navigate the highways in a taxi with a GPS navigation system. Yet for our purposes, we can hardly overlook his information regarding the Celtic calendar and astrology and his thesis that the *Odyssey* is a metaphor for the initiation rites of a religious mystery cult.

Consider first the calendar. It seems the Celts divided their year into thirty-six, ten-day months, and each of the constellations corresponding to these months associated with a different type of tree. So, knowing the religious significance of trees, we must conclude that the results of the Celts’ heavenly Rorschach test would fall within the “normal” range for Westerners.

As for the initiation thesis, people engaged in dangerous vocations, especially mariners and soldiers, developed real fears that associated with the obsessional Deluge fears. The ongoing sides of the complexes keep their prehistoric archetypes, the timeless aspect of religions, unconsciously alive. These people were drawn to religious “mystery” cults (e. g. the Mithras of Roman Empire days) that were like fraternities. Most members of Mithras mystai were soldiers or merchants (Cf Burkert: 42). “Not surprisingly [*H among the mystery cults*] the themes of seafaring and of illness stand out” (Burkert: 15). Typically, the Dionysian mysteries’ Orphic hymns pray for health and wealth, for a good year, for good luck at sea and in general for a pleasant life with death as late as possible. (Cf. Burkert: 18)



Although, as we shall see, and for good reason, very little is known about the particulars of these cults, it is likely that Homer was a member of one of them. Within such a fraternity, a blind poet could have skillfully combined religious myths with navigational secrets to create an adventure story (the *Odyssey*) that became an exaggerated model for the initiation rites of the Circe (or Demeter) cult. It took Odysseus (the initiate) over known sea routes and encoded the navigational information for those routes within the story.

But, as I shall show you in the next chapter and as you who have read the foregoing can well imagine, the mystery cult members' consciousness of their rites and of religious mythology in general was no better than that of religious men today.

Literal believers have never known their own minds or understood their religions other than "as through a glass darkly." The *conscious*, religious meaning of the *Odyssey* or the *Iliad* is only a distorted reflection of the real action, which is overwhelmingly *unconscious*. So, although Mr. Wilkens' contribution, if correct, is important and interesting, it will not deter us from analyzing the unconscious psychological and primeval meaning of the Paleolithic myths incorporated into Homer's work. It will not deter us from extracting the oral history that has been obscured by the poetry of many successive millennia of priests and storytellers. Let's get on with it.

After Homer recounts for us the outrages that the suitors have committed in Odysseus' absence and after the readers and Telemachus are given a brief history of the *Iliad* by Kings Nestor and Menelaus (friends of Odysseus), Homer jumps ahead to the last year of Odysseus' journey home. The scene is Calypso Island. There, shipwrecked Odysseus has washed ashore without any of his galleys and shipmates. The gods have variously taken all their defiant lives during the nine years since they left Troy. *Seven* of those years have been spent here as the captive husband of the beautiful witch Calypso. (As you'll see, these "beautiful," isolated and island-dwelling witches decode differently from the Gullveig/Ishtar variety.) Athena, the mother-sister-daughter, has persuaded Zeus to over-rule Poseidon (whose wrath is just about spent anyway) and to allow Odysseus to return to his home, family and kingdom in Ithaca. The beautiful goddess Calypso was a daughter of Atlas, who was the first (i. e. *Homo erectus*) king of Atlantis and the grandson of Cronus. This makes it clear that the witch Calypso was (in the original story) a Neanderthal. One could argue that, in Plato's (later) time, Atlas was also the son of Poseidon and he was the brother of Zeus and therefore a *Homo sapiens*. But, as we have noted elsewhere, because his realm was the sea, lakes and rivers (places where *Homo erectus* corpses had been dumped), after the Titan cult was outlawed in Greece, Poseidon was increasingly but unconsciously associated with *Homo erectus*. This unconscious identification of Poseidon with

*Homo erectus* was underscored by the alleged rivalry that was said to have arisen between Zeus and Poseidon. In the original “Atlantean” mythology, Atlas’s *Homo erectus* pedigree was even more obvious. He was a brother of Cronus (Diodorus III.61.1). If any of you still question Calypso’s Neanderthal pedigree, consider this: she lives in a cave and is surrounded by lions and wolves!

Odysseus’ fraternal ambivalence toward her (as indicated by his *seven-year* stay) and his imprisonment is symbolic of the peculiar combination of sexual desire, guilt and revulsion that would have caused many Species War victors to cohabit unhappily with and remain with the daughters and the wives of their Neanderthal victims. Remember -- there was no necessity to kill the *Homo erectus* women. They would not have been physically threatening, and their offspring by *Homo sapiens* men would have been sterile hybrids. Especially in remote areas, especially on islands where isolated pockets of *Homo erecti* were among the last to be eliminated, the guilt felt toward the female survivors would have been intense; the social proscription of consorting with them minimal; and many men would have ended their gene lines in the company of these pathetic companions. These unions would have given rise to all the myths about “good” and “beautiful” witches who seduce and “imprison.” As we’ll see, most of Odysseus’ adventures appear to be adapted from tales of this type. In the *Iliad*, the abduction of Trojan women after the fall of Troy quite naturally leads into this post-Species War phenomenon as one of the subjects of Odysseus’ continuing adventures. Continuing in Homer...<sup>94</sup>

Enroute from Calypso’s Island to Phaiacia, Odysseus is attacked by Poseidon for the last time. His raft is destroyed, but Athena calms the sea for Odysseus and provides a single log to which he clings for a raft. After being washed ashore and with Athena’s help, he wins the friendship of the rich and civilized Phaiacians, who safely and secretly deliver him to his homeland. In Phaiacia and in sharp contrast to the unbridled genetic hostility of his enemies, Odysseus shows respect for others and good will toward their offspring, saying to his hosts, “[M]ay the gods grant them to be happy while they live, and may each have children to inherit

---

<sup>94</sup> In 2004, Peter Brown, leading a team of archeologists from New South Wales’ New England University and clued by an abundance of local folklore about “little people,” discovered on Flores Island the remains of an adult hominid female little more than three feet tall. The skull is obviously *Homo erectus*. It confirms what other “lumpers” and I surmise about the physiological diversity of *Homo erectus* owing to his great geographic range, tremendous life span and the “us versus them” character of our mythologies. Numerous similar remains, including complete skeletons, were soon unearthed, some dated to only 18 kya. Survival pressure caused by the rising sea level and the submergence of Malay Archipelago rainforest selected for little people who required less food and could climb higher in the trees. Treetops provided them better defense and a greater range for their missiles.

his wealth and the honorable place which the people have given him” (Od. VII: 160-162). Commensurate with this expression of fraternal goodwill, Odysseus is awarded the most honored seat after that of the king.

The story also confers upon the Phaiacian queen a Neanderthal pedigree such as royalty everywhere were wont to claim. (Cf. Od. VII: 57-65) As we noted elsewhere, this not only gave the “gentry” enormous prestige, it soothed the obsessional fears, guilt and paranoia of the people. It enabled them to believe that a peace pact with the gods had been secured through intermarriage.

Before departing for home with his Phaiacian friends, Odysseus relates to them the full story of his adventures at sea. Let’s analyze them.

After Odysseus and his countrymen left ruined and plundered Troy in a fleet



Figure 114: Goddess Urnanche, patron goddess of Ur (Photo courtesy of Directorate General of Antiquities and Museums, Damascus, Syria)

of ships, they stopped first at Ismaros of the Ciconians (a historically-known people [Burton: 15-16]). Ciconian spearmen had fought beside the Trojans, so Odysseus and his men destroyed their city and killed all the men. Again, we are presented with a reflection of what must have happened countless times in the Species War: “We spared the women and plenty of cattle and goods, which we divided to give each man a fair share” (Od. IX: 48-49). This repeated the Trojan War in microcosm. Only now the (*Homo erectus*) gods are less favorable to the (guilty) Achaeans (*Homo sapiens*), and six men from each vessel were lost: “Zeus sent us a hard fate that day to bring trouble on a lot of poor devils!” The clear suggestion is that “God” was punishing “the devils” for their own excessive fraternal hostility.

Their next port-of-call is the country of the lotus-eaters. These were, according to some of the ancients who referred to them, a historical people, somewhere off the coast of Africa (Burton: 15-16). Wilkens suggests, from what he interprets as Homer’s navigational and geographic hints, that the lotus-eaters lived near the mouth of the Senegal River. The lotus-eaters, doing no harm to Odysseus’ men, only gave them some of their lotus to eat. But, “As soon as they tasted that honey-sweet fruit, they thought no more of coming back to us with news, but chose rather to stay there with the lotus-eating natives, and chew their lotus, and good-bye to home.” So, Odysseus had these men forcibly returned to the ship.

Their departure without further incident might support Wilkens' contentions that they were eating a legume variety of lotus and that the lotus-eaters are included in Odysseus' adventures mainly just to include this distant place within a maritime chart. I don't know what type of edible water lotus Wilkens could be referring to. However, every part of *the sacred lotus*, the tropical African or Asian water lily, *Nelumbo nucifera*, is edible. It prefers to grow in the slow-moving waters of river deltas and can attach itself in waters up to 6'7" deep. The flower closes and submerges to develop its edible seeds. As such, this sacred lotus resembles a man standing in the water and ducking up and down. This and the disposal of the less-edible *Homo erectus* body parts in the Nile explain, no doubt, why the cult surrounding it developed at Abydos. (See [Figure 81](#).) *This port-of-call was included in Odysseus' journey because an addiction to eating lotuses would symbolize an addiction to eating the flesh of Homo erecti that had been disposed of in the waters. For more about the sacred lotus see* [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nelumbo\\_nucifera](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Nelumbo_nucifera) *or* [https://specialtyproduce.com/produce/Water\\_Lily\\_Fruit\\_12929.php](https://specialtyproduce.com/produce/Water_Lily_Fruit_12929.php).

Next, they sailed to the island of the Cyclopes, of the "Goggle-eyes, a violent and lawless tribe" (Od. IX: 113-114). Here, quite appropriately and as guilt, obsessional fear and paranoia demand, *the tables are turned*. Odysseus and his men are imprisoned in the cave of the giant Cyclops Polyphemus, Poseidon's son, *who proceeds to eat them* at his leisure. Everything about the Cyclopes suggests Neanderthal, and we have already equated having one eye with being an archer. [This is consistent with the Greek myth that charges them with having provided Zeus and his brothers with the three weapons (all encoded bows and arrows) needed to win the war with Cronus and the Titans (the Species War). (See Chapter 25.)] Our obsessional fears of the bow and arrow are realized, but a substitute victim is provided when Odysseus and his men stab the sleeping Cyclops in his one eye with a "sharpened olive pole" (*an arrow*). When Polyphemus (Neanderthal) rolls away the gigantic boulder from the cave exit to let the rams and sheep out to graze, the men escape by clinging to the bellies of his rams (by becoming as hirsute as *Homo erectus*). Thus, the blinding of Poseidon's son was, in this and an earlier, Irish version of the story, repetition compulsion for obsessional, Species War fear. Not only Odysseus but Polyphemus too becomes a surrogate for the guilty *Homo sapien* audience that fears the wrath of "the gods."

Because he can't explain the meaning of the Cyclopes and dares not suggest that the "all-wise leaders of the mystery cults" had a rational explanation for them, Wilkens would have us believe that the giant, one-eyed Polyphemus was atypical of the other Cyclopes. Wilkens attempts to support this claim with the astute observation of the meaning of "Cyclops." He reasons: "The other Cyclopes

certainly had two eyes, otherwise Homer would have called them Monopes. Cyclopes means the ‘round eyed’ and is intended to describe the black Africans, by contrast with the Achaeans, who are ‘oblong eyed’” (Wilkens: 177). However, scrutiny does not support this.

*Homo erectus*’ eyes were far rounder than ours. We know this from the squarer shape of the eye sockets in their skulls (Figure 11e). This is confirmed by early Sumerian art. Look at the eyes of the gods and the goddess depicted in Figures [65](#), [66](#) and [114](#)! Figure 114’s “Urnanche” or “Nanna” was the protector deity at Ur. Look at her eyes. The “Wandjinas” of NW Australia, who allegedly created men and give the rain and control the lightning, are also portrayed in cave paintings as having globular heads and large, square eye sockets. (See *Australian Dreaming*: 68-71.) As we learned in Chapter 26, the statues at Lake Titicaca and many other images of our primitive ancestors’ gods also depict unnaturally round eyes. This is also why Polynesians viewed round eyes as sacred. Round eyes are also a reptilian (serpentine) trait! Our rapid evolution to smaller, weaker eyes, made possible perhaps by selective fetal cell death (see Chapter 10), was one of the perceptual prices that our species paid for the rapid development of other neurological abilities that were selected by a tamer environment.

Moreover, as we saw in Appendix D, this myth did not originate in Greece. In what was probably the original Irish Cyclops myth, this monster is described as having, “but one eye, and that in the middle of his head, as large as the sun in heaven.” He was called “Cyclops” or “round-eyed” mostly because his eye was round like the sun. By Neolithic times, these one-eyed monsters had become popular; so, Homer didn’t have to be specific in describing Polyphemus. His readers already knew all about him. So, Homer merely refers to “his eye;” or Polyphemus says, when the one eye is gouged, that it had been prophesied, “That a man called Odysseus would rob me of my sight.”

The Greeks undoubtedly imagined the Cyclopes as a specific breed of monster. There were many Cyclopes. “They” are referred to in many Greek myths. All of them were sons of Poseidon because they came from “Atlantis,” an island nation that was within Poseidon’s domain, was even his capitol. All were thought to be giants, one-eyed and strong. When Odysseus warns Polyphemus that his cannibalism will incur the wrath of Zeus, Polyphemus answers: “You are a fool, stranger, or you come from a long way off, if you expect me to fear gods. Zeus Almighty be damned and his blessed gods with him. We Cyclopians care nothing for them; we are stronger than they are” (Od. IX: 296-300). But let us escape the Cyclopes for now with Odysseus and his remaining men.

Once more having been blown off their course, they landed at the island of Aiolia. “There lived Aiolos Hipputadês, a friend of the immortal gods... When at last I spoke of leaving, and asked him for help on our way, he was glad to consent,

and did everything he could. He gave me the skin of a nine-year ox, which he flayed for us and made into a bag; and in this he bottled up the blustering winds. For Cronion had appointed him to be manager of the winds, to hold them or to let them go as he liked... but he left the west wind free to blow, that it might carry our ships along” (Od. X: 1-).

Of course, our primitive ancestors everywhere associated the wind with the breath of the *Homo erectus* gods. Recall that the Aztecs (with Ehecatl, an avatar of Quetzalcoatl, Chapter 35), the North Americans (with Old-One’s Earth Mother, Chapter 4), and the Babylonians (with Pazuzu, Chapter 19) are but a few examples of ancestors who told us as much. Search for “wind” in the eBook of this work for others.

But just before the winds of the gods were to blow their ships into the homeport, Odysseus fell asleep. Again, his men could not control their Fraternal complexes, their genetic hostility. Assuming it was (*Homo erectus*’) gold and silver in the bag (instead of his breath), they opened it and were immediately blown back to Aiolia. There they requested that the favor be repeated; but this time Odysseus receives the reproach of the gods’ agent, Aiolos: “Get out of this island at once, you miserable sinner! It is not permitted to comfort the enemy of the blessed gods! Get out of this! You are the gods’ enemy come to my doors!”

Turned away disheartened, *seven* days later, they reached the lofty stronghold of Lamas. Wilkens poses a convincing argument that Homer’s “Land of the Laestrygonians” was Cuba. Rather than recite his evidence, I’ll simply add some of my own. Homer’s description of the Laestrygonians is mostly consistent with the Spanish characterization of the Carib Indians c. 1500 A.D.: they were hostile cannibals. (Cf. S. Wilson, 1990) In Homer’s tale, only Odysseus and his own crew escaped this island of “man-eating, rock-throwing giants.” But the Caribs were frail people, not “great human wretches like giants.” With this, the episode includes a fragmented reference to the Species War.

Wilkens suggests that the Celts had come to Cuba -- and perhaps came regularly -- for gold (Wilkens: 184). Wild as this may sound for the first millennium B.C., consider this: they sailed only during the summer months; their boats were extremely light and water-tight due to being pitch-covered; and they followed the currents. In the North Atlantic, the currents move in a wide counter-clockwise direction around the North Atlantic’s perimeter (S. Wilson, 1992). Most people are surprised if you tell them that hundreds of Vikings from Iceland were in Greenland as early as the late tenth century or that by the early eleventh century, they had colonized Newfoundland. But they were and they did. Their colonies failed not for want of navigational ability but for want of firearms. (Cf. Oxenstierna: 245-263) Even more surprising is the apparent crossing of the

Atlantic by the Phoenicians some 3,000 years ago, as certain inscriptions on stone in Brazil attest.<sup>95</sup> (It had long been suspected from Book IV, Chapter 42 of Herodotus that the Phoenicians circumnavigated Africa prior to 425 B.C.)

Again, if sea routes here encoded in the *Odyssey* fell out of use in the first millennium B.C. and the unrecorded navigational knowledge was lost, it is because iron working became ever more widespread. Simultaneously, tin demand declined because iron and charcoal were plentiful. Additionally, the gold needed for non-barter exchange could still be found in Ireland and other parts of the old world. (See Figure 105a.) Plato's "Atlantis" contains a hint that this is in fact what happened. The sixth and seventh lines (of the myth in Volume 1) state, "For in those days the Atlantic was navigable." Wherever it was, for our research purposes, both cannibalism and the "giants" at Lamas associate with the Deluge.

Odysseus and his one remaining ship full of men ported next in Aiaia, the island of Circe. Circe, another witch who seduces and imprisons Odysseus, is, like Calypso, a *Homo erectus* "witch." Her maternal grandfather was Oceanus, the eldest Titan who represented the ocean stream surrounding the earth; and her father was Helios, grandson of the Titan Uranus (Diodorus III. 56-). Wolves and lions surround Circe's house: "All around it were wolves and lions of the mountains, really men whom she had bewitched by giving them poisonous drugs" (Od. X: 231). Circe had tamed these men as the witches of old tamed Species Warriors. Her loom clearly suggests a spider's web, "As she worked at the web on her loom, a large web of imperishable stuff, a glorious thing of delicate gossamer fabric, such as goddesses make."

Hermes advised Odysseus how to deal with Circes and prevent her from turning him into a pig as she did to his mates. Odysseus is told to "accept her sexual advances but at sword point tell her to swear the most solemn oath of the blessed gods that she will never attempt any other evil against you, or else when you are stripped, she may unman you and make you a weakling" (Od. X: 338-340). Circe also had four maids.

This story contains the highly-distorted remains of early histories of debauchery with *Homo erectus* women. In this case, the men becoming pigs could be symbolic either of their reduced self-esteem through intimacy with an (inferior) ancestor (Freud's organic repression), or they and the pigsty could be suggestive of anal intercourse (likely between *Homo erectus* women, whose faces were less than bewitching, and homosexual soldiers). Circe and her companions end up giving baths to all the men, rubbing them down with olive oil, giving them tunics and woolen wraps, feasting them and entertaining them for a year. (Cf. Od. X:

---

<sup>95</sup> See my other Wilkens: 157, citing "Hi, Columbus, like the trip?" in Newsweek, 28 September, 1978.

495-520) Then Circe supplied them for their departure and instructed Odysseus to do what no mortal had done before: journey to Hades (the Underworld or Land of the Dead) and consult the blind wise man, Tiresias.

Once in Hades, Odysseus' and Homer's public were instructed "by the souls of the dead" in the very religious eschatology of the Celts and early Greeks. After the ethereal soul of the blind Tiresias is treated to the blood libation of a jet-black animal, he instructs Odysseus of the fate that the gods have designed for him. Of course, were it not for the fact that going to Hades and returning is an essential part of Odysseus' apotheosis, Circe, Athena or another immortal could have simply narrated a description of Hades and instructed Odysseus of his fate. But death and returning from Hades was a demonstration of immortality, and immortality is an essential property of the gods.

Once his remaining crewmen had assisted in sacrificing the black ewe and ram to Tiresias and other notable personages in Hades, these crewmen were dead weight with respect to the plot. Homer disposes of them by making them victims in hallucinatory myths that describe more of the same obsessional Deluge fears and unsatisfying unions with *Homo erectus* women. Circe foretold of Odysseus' problems with these women as follows:

"First you will come to the Sirens, who bewitch everyone who comes near them. If any man draws near in his innocence and listens to their voice, he never sees home again, never again will wife and little children run to greet him with joy; but the Sirens bewitch him with their melodious song... [*H They must not have been very demanding.*]

When you have got clear of them, there is choice of two courses, and I will not lay down for you which to take; use your own judgment. I will just say what they are. One course will bring you to a pair of precipitous rocks, washed by the boisterous breakers of dark-eyed Amphitritê [*H one of the Nereids, sea nymphs, and wife of Poseidon*]; the gods call them the Moving Rocks. [*H As we saw in the previous appendix and elsewhere, Homo erectus was often associated with large stones. Are two of these rocks that Poseidon's wife washes his testicles?*] Not a bird can pass between them, not even the timorous doves that carry the ambrosia to Father Zeus; one of these is always caught between the towering rocks, and the father sends in another to keep the number right. [*H Testicles also move, are very close together and are associated with "the father."*] No ship sailed by men that came that way has ever escaped, but timbers and dead bodies are all



carried away by the rolling seas and tempests of blazing fire... [H *These hard rocks, Homo erectus testicles, are to be avoided at all cost. They must take their chances with the Homo erectus women.*]

The other course leads between two unscalable cliffs... [I]n the side of the cliff is a dark gloomy cave, facing the west towards Erebus,<sup>96</sup> just where you will steer your ship, Odysseus. [H *Here's the cave again! Here it's a symbol for a Homo erectus vagina: but it is always generally symbolic of Homo erectus, even when associated with the ubiquitous "cave man." In the Christian myth, before the angels come to resurrect "Jesus" and escort him to "heaven," his interment in a cave is symbolic of giving the body to Homo erectus (who lived in caves).*] There Scylla dwells, and yelps in her dreadful way; the cave is so high that the strongest man could not reach it with an arrow shot from the ship. [H *"You're not going to dispatch these gals as easily as you dispatched their husbands and fathers. These gals are divine."*] It is true her voice is no louder than a puppy-dog newborn, but she is a terrible monster! [H *Notice the ambivalence.*] Such a sight could give pleasure to no one, not even one of the immortal gods! [H *"Their looks take some getting used to. Even their men preferred our women."*] She has twelve flapping feet, and six necks enormously long, set thick and close, full of black death. [H *This is a brilliantly-creative image that some ancestor's unconscious mind developed to compromise the latent dream symbol and circumvent superego censorship. Six long, serpentine necks and twelve feet correspond to six Homo erectus women. "Six," sex, is to be very much a part of the relationship. The necks and the six women are close because they are very dependent upon each other, and you recognize black as the color of the "black-headed people." Notice too that this Paleolithic symbol reveals the reason for the last of the odd, prehistoric customs of physical self-abuse that we began to review and analyze in Chapter 24. The somewhat universal custom of using rings to stretch the neck was surely an attempt to add a serpentine trait to the human form. Stretched necks associated with snakes, which associated with our archaic ancestor.*] She is hidden in the cave as far as the waist [H *the lower anatomy is censored out*], but she pokes out her heads from the gloomy depth; and there she fishes, hunting all round for dolphins and swordfish, or any of those

---

<sup>96</sup> According to Hesiod's *Theogony*, Erebus was an early primordial (*Homo erectus*) god and personification of darkness.

leviathans of the deep which Amphitritê breeds in thousands. [H *They are looking for any penis or even a facsimile of one.*] No seamen can boast that they have escaped scot-free from her: she grabs a poor wretch with each head out of the ship as it sails along. [H *Each head, each woman, wants one man of her own. Not strange, just sad.*<sup>97</sup> So, here with Calypso, Circe and Scylla, we have discovered recurring images of forlorn and widowed *Homo erectus* women. These same women would have been depicted -- perhaps at an earlier time -- in mourning. The universal image of the wailing and widowed *Homo erectus* woman is what eventually caused A'wade/Ta'nis, the *Homo erectus* agent of death, to become a mere death messenger and a female -- the banshee.]

The other cliff is lower, as you will see, Odysseus. They are not far from one another; you could shoot an arrow across. There is a wild fig-tree growing from it, a tall tree covered with leaves; [H *Again, the black, bulbous fruit of the sacred fig tree reminded our ancestors of the male scrotum, especially the fire-charred scrotum of the "black-headed people," of Homo erectus. Doesn't this explain why the "fig leaf" has been, as in Genesis 3:7, synonymous with a primitive loincloth? When our ancestors were still conscious of the sacred meaning of the fig, it was only natural to think of the fig leaves that covered the symbolic genitalia hanging in trees, as covers for actual genitalia.*];<sup>98</sup> and Charybdis underneath swallows down the black water. [H *Charybdis, the whirlpool beneath the fig tree, symbolizes a "swallowing," Homo erectus female.*] Three times a day she spouts it out, three times a day she swallows it down [H *sex, oral sex, the number three, the sex organs, rhythmically having oral sex (3+3=6 or sex), a standard motive for superego censorship*]: she is a terror--

---

<sup>97</sup> My interpretation of these "witches" that seduce and imprison wandering men, my interpretation of them as *Homo erectus* survivors of the Species War, is also suggested by Herodotus's tale of the birth of the eponymous ancestor of the Scythians by Hercules and a woman whom he found in a woodland cave. She was, "a strange being, between a maiden and a serpent, whose form from the waist upwards was like that of a woman, while all below was like a snake." She refused to give back his horses until he took her for a mistress. "[B]ut afterwards she put him off and delayed restoring the mares, since she wished to keep him with her as long as possible." And keep him she did until he got her pregnant. (Cf. Herodotus, Book IV, Chapter 9)

<sup>98</sup> Recall that in the Babylonian Creation Epic, one of the very fragmented (probably censored) rituals involved a cavalryman who carried a sweet fig in his hand. The "fig" was presented to the king and to Marduk and was probably symbolic (as a friend has pointed out) of the scrotum of someone who was "bound." (Cf. Langdon: 321.)

don't you be there when she swallows!" [H *What sailor would dream of suffering such a fate!*] --Od. XII: 48-

When I interpreted a *Walam Olum* glyph as describing the adventures of *Homo sapiens* men with widowed or unattached *Homo erectus* women, did you think I was over-reaching? Well, the *Walam Olum* and the *Odyssey* don't even begin to exhaust the subject. Irish and Germanic mythology and many of the folk tales from around the world are rife with these highly-censored themes. For another sample, take a close look at the famous *Volsunga Saga* (e. g. in Guerber: 251-297); and you'll now be able to see the exploits of the many generations of the *Volsung* (well-heralded?) family as a highly compromised, wishful account of the last generations of *Homo erectus*. The *Volsunga* all meet their demise by accident or at the hands of each other. The royals are all eager to intermarry with them, as they struggle to keep their genes alive, until the last of the heroic and sympathetic *Volsunga*, Sigurd and Brunhild, agree to accept the ideal and peaceful solution recommended by me and the Babylonian myth of Enkidu's last days (in Chapter 19). (*Brave and strong* Sigurd, possessor of a *Helmet of Dread*, rescues the *incomparably beautiful* Brunhild from the ubiquitous *ring of fire* -- for her betrothed [*Homo sapiens*] prince. Sigurd chastely sleeps with her for three nights -- separated by a sword, by a treaty agreement that forbids *Homo erecti* to mate with each

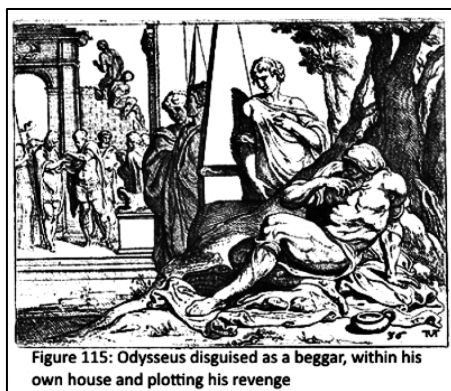


Figure 115: Odysseus disguised as a beggar, within his own house and plotting his revenge

other. We forbade their reproduction as they had earlier forbidden ours.) Now you can read these tales and understand them. Return now to where we left Odysseus.

Naturally they choose the course that takes them between the cliffs and the *Homo erectus* women over that of the two precipitous rocks and confrontation with *Homo erectus* males. The sailors, except for Odysseus whom they bind to the mast, plug their ears to the bewitching calls of the Sirens. But *six* men are lost to sex and Scylla. (H *Confirm my interpretation of Scylla*.) Odysseus and the remainder of his crew must now sail past the Island of Thrinacia, where the herds of Helios feed.

"There are his cattle and great sheep, *seven* herds of cattle and *seven* fine flocks of sheep, fifty in each. [H (*Seven + seven*) x *fifty* = *seven hundred*, the *Fraternal complex* symbolized *thrice*.] These never have young, and never die" (Od. XII: 339-342). These animals of Helios the sun god are immortal -- symbolic

of lesser *Homo erectus* gods. They are especially blessed because, as immortals they never die or need to make babies; they have no Fraternal complex.

Circe warns Odysseus and his men not to eat Helios's cattle or sheep. All save Odysseus do so anyway. So, Zeus sends a storm to wreck their ships. Only Odysseus reached dry land -- Calypso's Island, the scene where the story opened.

With his story told and his body and spirits renewed, Odysseus takes leave of his Phaiacan hosts and, days later, secretly steps ashore on his native Ithaca.

Now, practicality would have Odysseus seek the aid of his friends, the Phaiacians and Kings Menelaus and Nestor in regaining his throne. Practicality would have him gather these allies into an army with which any sensible military man would easily give the suitors their due. But to raise the theme of genetic competition and fraternal hostility to a fever pitch, Odysseus must return disguised as a beggar and be treated with the utmost abuse and contempt by the suitors, by his genetic competitors. He must then single-handedly, combat and destroy an army of these vicious genetic competitors who -- by attempting to murder Odysseus' son -- have mimicked the lions who murder the cubs of dominant males they oust from the pride. See Figure 115, above.

Everyone knows that no one man can defeat an army, which underscores the point that Odysseus, upon his return to Ithaca from Troy, the Species War and Hades, is no longer a man. He is a god, and as a god, he destroys the suitors.

These suitors must die because, in paying with their lives, the storyline becomes a replacement idea for our unconscious guilt and fear, guilt and fear that have been transmitted over the last 35,000 years via the religious "culture." The death of the suitors validates and hypocritically but temporarily relieves us of our own guilt and fear. The suitors take our places at the sacrificial altar.

*The Odyssey* conveys a similar warning with respect to our *ongoing* genetic competition. The same warning is conveyed repeatedly by all of our modern religions: the expression of unbridled hostility to others is an insult to God (the gods); it reminds God (the gods) of the Deluge for which humanity has yet to pay.

*Odysseus (God) punishes the suitors with the very weapon with which we (Homo sapiens) killed God (Homo erectus): the bow and arrow.* But God's bow is so strong, so well laminated, that only he and possibly his maturing Son can string and draw it. Odysseus shoots his first arrow through *twelve* (every month of the year) axes, before he shoots the most serious of his every-day genetic competitors. The corpse-strewn scene of the slaughter is then fumigated with sulfur (brimstone). God (the gods) punish only a fictional few so that the rest of us can put down our books and enjoy temporary relief.

But the hostility between men will never be resolved, our psychic scars removed or the world civilized through obsessional half-measures and symbolic

observances (neurotic symptoms). This can only be accomplished through the establishment of rational limits upon our genetic competition -- through the minimization of the K and the R strategies -- through the maximization of equal opportunity and population control. Before we can do that, we've got to remove all our masks and get real about ourselves and our ancestors.

## F. Iman Wilkens Finds Troy but Fails to Understand Religion

*A genius is anyone who accomplishes something that we can't imagine being able to accomplish ourselves.*

*-- An obscure New York City taxi-driver*

To my mind, Iman Wilkens is a genius. Wilkens, a Dutchman, started with an excellent knowledge of ancient and modern European languages. He combined this with known rules of etymology to suggest the original form of words that have been transliterated into the languages resulting from conquests. He mixed in fine geographical detective work; and, by this means, he found Troy -- original Troy -- and most of the other places and peoples cited in Homer.

I can't imagine being able to do what he has done. For me, ancient Greek was a lost cause from the start. The only thing I remember about eighth grade French is the teacher's name and appearance. ("Miss Mars [was] out of this world.") And throughout junior high, high school and college, my worst marks were in German.

But as they say, thank goodness, we've got different abilities. Mr. Wilkens is clueless as to what religion is about. So, I've decided to devote an appendix to him and his work not only because I want to criticize his misconceptions but also because I want to confirm his major discovery.

After his book pointed it out to me, I noticed that Irish mythology supports his major thesis: Homer's Troy was somewhere in the British Isles, very probably (as Wilkens claims) on a series of hills that form a small plateau that dominates the plains of Cambridge, England. The site is a few miles southeast of the city of Cambridge and south of the Fleam Dyke.

Most of the history of Troy and the western-world-war that took place there was blacked out by subsequent generations of islanders. Much of the history was also censored by the descendants of the conquerors, *and they are still censoring it -- lying to the world about where Troy was and what happened there.*

But the id-like, truth-demanding element within the local people applied to the place another name, a name from their Bibles which, though vague, retained the worldwide, apocalyptic importance of the place. They refer to this small plateau of hills, which is being protected from all entry and excavation by the British Government, as the Gog Magog Hills.

In Ezekiel 38–39, Gog is the chief prince of the tribes of Meshech and Tubal in the land of Magog. He is called upon by God to conquer the land of Israel.

“With a great coalition of forces from throughout the world, Gog and his entire army will invade Israel ‘like a cloud covering the earth’ (38:16). They will plunder and loot the cities. God, however, will send terrible natural disasters that will destroy Gog and his forces. The defeat of Gog will demonstrate the greatness and holiness of God and restore good relations between God and his people.” (See the article recently revised and updated by Matt Stefon at <https://www.britannica.com/topic/Gog>.)

Ezekiel prophesied in the seventh century B.C. of the *recurrence* of the conflagrations of the fifteenth through the twelfth centuries BC that ended the Bronze Age. As we noted in Chapter 21, prophesies of Ragnarok, Doomsday, Armageddon, Gog Magog, etc. are as old as the Fraternal complex and will be with us until we tame that complex by globally minimizing it. Notice too that his third sentence confirms that, in the popular mind, the *Homo erectus* gods had sent the Great Flood as punishment for the Species War. It had not been fully forgotten, and the Trojan War was associated with it.

At these Gog Magog hills, where Troy once stood, hundreds of bronze weapons have been found dated to the later Bronze Age, c.1200 BC. Skeletal remains are forever turning up in the region. Not far away, in Isleham near Ely in Cambridgeshire, a hoard of more than 6,500 pieces of worked and unworked bronze were found in 1959. The hoard is the largest Bronze Age hoard ever discovered in England and is one of the finest. It consists of swords, spear-heads, arrows, axes, palstaves, knives, daggers, armor, decorative equipment (in particular for horses) and many fragments of sheet bronze, all dating from the Wilburton-Wallington (metalworking) Phase of the late Bronze Age (about 1000 BC). (See the Wikipedia article on the Isleham Hoard.)

Given the number of artifacts and what we will discover to be landmarks of war, whatever happened here was an event unparalleled until World War I. If you deny that this was the site of the Trojan War, then you’ve got to suggest what other war could have been fought here. Great traumas (*e. g.* wars) don’t occur without impacting our psyches and our (oral) histories (mythology).

As a summary of the nature and the meaning of the Trojan War, Wilkens states:

“[W]e can consider Argos and its capital Mycenae to be the cradle of modern France, and Agamemnon to be the first king of France of documented history, living in the twelfth century B.C. The Trojan War thus turns out to have been a big war, between the king of England and his allies on the one side, and the king of France and his allies on the other. At stake was the access for continental

Europeans to a raw material that was found virtually exclusively on the British Isles and that was as essential at the time as crude oil is in our time. In the Bronze Age this raw material was tin.” --Wilkins:  
134

Tin had been the source of Trojan wealth throughout the Bronze Age. Tin was needed to make bronze. Moreover, as Carlton Coon suggested, [above](#), as of 1700 B. C.; the Trojans apparently had a monopoly on tin. The tin monopoly that they exercised for about 500 years had enabled the Trojans to become fabulously rich. But as we shall see, it is only in the broadest historical sense that the Trojan War can be said to have been fought over tin.

*Iron production had been discovered at least as early as 3,500 years ago first in Egypt and later by the Hittites in what is now Turkey. The process of learning how to make it hard and flexible (to hold a good sword edge) and the transition to steel and other alloys was a lengthy one. Each discovery became a closely guarded secret. For a very basic **metallurgical** history of iron, see <http://www.madehow.com/Volume-2/Iron.html>.*

*Much more important but less well-known is the **political** history of iron. The people with by far the greatest motive to suppress the knowledge of iron and how to make it and the greatest ability to suppress that information were the Trojan tin lords. **Unlike tin, iron and coal were both very plentiful, especially in Europe. Unlike tin, iron and coal could not be monopolized.***

*By 1194 B. C., the start of the Trojan War, the leaders on both sides would have known all about iron. The Trojans were using all their wealth and power to suppress that knowledge. The Achaeans were fighting to strip the tin lords of the (from the Achaean point of view) ill-begotten wealth, women and power that enabled them (the tin lords) to suppress that information and stifle progress. All of them were fighting to survive in the collapsing environment of an over-populated and savage world.*

*In the pages ahead, as we drill down into the archeology and mythology of Troy, as we arrive on the scene of the action and analyze the voices of our ancestors; these broad conclusions will be confirmed.*

But before we get into the details, I’m going to ask you to think still further out of the box. Aren’t miniature Trojan Wars still going on all around us?

As I stated in the Conclusion, an unlimited supply of geothermal energy is beneath all our feet. We only need to upscale the production of nanocarbon tubes or graphene sheets and create layered nanocarbon wires 4 km in length to have more than enough renewable energy for every conceivable purpose. As you surely know if you’ve read this far into this work and as every visitor to



<http://PeaceLoveAndProgressParty.org> finds out; all the latest and best social science is available there, FREE of charge! Yet we all pay richly for our energy, and college students in the social sciences or their parents, all over the world, are paying tuition at “universe cities” that violate their professed ideals and missions and defraud families by denying students access to the latest and best social science! These are only the two worst examples of which I know. We could add indefinitely to this list of instances of the monopolization of resources and the suppression and falsification of information.

The reptiles that are engaged such fraud and wrongful enrichment are NOT principally motivated by the selfish pursuit of creature comfort and security. Creature comfort is not much affected by the cotton, satin or silk sheets one sleeps upon. The richest scoundrels would be *more* socially secure and *more* comfortable within their own skin if they had less guilt and alienation. Their principal motivation is exactly as Orwell described it: these angry, latent homosexual people indiscriminately blame and seek to “get even with” the rest of us for homophobia and their own inability to love.

Politics today is still as it was in Trojan times. It is not applied social science. It is competition between latent homosexual gangster groups. Please help the Peace Love and Progress Party change that.

In addition to Homer’s *Iliad* and the Irish account that I’ll introduce, at least two other oral accounts of the Trojan War found their way into print. One, dating from the fifth century A.D., is ascribed to Dares Phrygius. It inspired medieval authors and gives a Trojan point of view. The other was translated from Greek into Latin as *Ephemeris belli Trojani* (“Diary of the Trojan War”) and is attributed to Dictys Cretensis. These works describe the war over intervals that span the full eleven years and estimate casualties at 250,000 Trojans and 750,000 Achaeans. As Wilkens points out, these figures are consistent with Homer’s description of the peoples and forces involved. Moreover, the construction of the still-existent war dykes shows that the invader had a sizable army and prepared for protracted warfare. Two parallel dykes that are twelve and fifteen kilometers long, 20 meters high and 30 meters wide have anti-chariot ditches dug on the inland side. They were dug for the defense of the invaders! (*Cf.* Wilkens: 71-75)

We should view the Trojan War as but the north Atlantic part of the convulsions that rocked the major Bronze Age, sea-trade route between 1450 and 1150. In the eastern Mediterranean, the other end of that route, these convulsions toppled the Anatolian, Minoan (Cretan) and Mycenaean civilizations. In combination, these convulsions constituted a world war. According to Homer, the garrison at Troy had 50,000 troops. The invaders numbered twice that. By all accounts, very few survived the war. The Trojan War may have been the second

most traumatic war in the history of the world. I say second worst because, as we've begun to see from my analysis of Homer and as the Irish myth of the Trojan War will confirm, even 30,000 years later, the unconscious memory of the Species War was powerful enough to determine the basic outline of what was remembered and attributed to the Trojan War.

The *Mabinogion* confirms this linkage in the memories of our Welsh ancestors. After allegedly fighting a battle in Ireland that is obviously symbolic of the Species War and losing Bendigeid Vran, their king, and most of their compatriots; the *seven* survivors of "the Isle of the Mighty" journey to southwestern England. This is where their Trojan War mythology begins. Obeying the dying words of their king, *they encamp for eighty years at a regal spot overlooking the ocean, at a great hall with three doors*. Two were open; the third, which looked toward Cornwall, was closed. (Remember, Cornwall, the southwestern tail of England, was the site of the contested, Trojan tin mines.) The king, whose head they were carrying, had also advised them not to open the door looking toward Cornwall, lest the head become corrupted and they become unable to tarry there. Nevertheless, after eighty years, they opened the door; and, "when they had looked, they were as conscious of all the evils they had ever sustained, and of all the friends and companions they had lost, and of all the misery that had befallen them, *as if all had happened in that very spot*; and especially of the fate of their lord" (*Mabinogion*: 26-27).

On the surface, these Welsh ancestors are expressing remorse for the war and all the suffering that the tin monopoly seems to have caused. But this dramatic little myth tells us a lot more than that. We'll revisit it and see what was so special about *that very spot* when we analyze the military situation, below.

Crete and Mycenae were probably named after other places. Wilkens identifies the original "Crete" as present-day Scandinavia and original "Mycenae" as the capital of Argos, present-day Troyes on the Seine River in the Champagne region of France.

"A number of countries in the eastern Mediterranean changed names in the Bronze Age or shortly thereafter to be henceforth called Syria, Lebanon, Egypt, Lybia, Crete, Lesbos and Cyprus, due to conquests by peoples from the Atlantic seaboard, just as the descendants of these "Sea Peoples" gave new names during the colonial era, only a few centuries ago, to a number of countries all around the world as distant as New Zealand." --Wilkens: 154.

Remember our discussion of [Phrygia](#), the place and the warlike Sea People that gave their name to the “frigate”? This upland nation on the second frontier of the Troad consisted of the highlands and eastern coast of modern-day Scotland. Wilkens cites convincing reasons for coming to this conclusion (Wilkens: 98-99 and 312-313). One reason is that “Phrygia” probably derived from “Frigg” (Odin’s wife), the Norse (Germanic) goddess; and that name would have been more likely adopted on Troy’s northern frontier, which is close to Scandinavia, than on its western (Welsh) frontier.

The newly-transplanted names that the invading Sea Peoples gave to the eastern Mediterranean survived better there for the same reason that “Greek” mythology -- which the “Greeks” borrowed from the Cretans (Diodorus V.46.1-3-) and (as we’ve seen) the Irish, Babylonians and Egyptians -- became attributed to the Greeks.<sup>99</sup> The Greeks developed a written language that was in widespread secular use almost half a millennium before the Romans and a millennium before most other Europeans.

By identifying Troy and other Homeric place names, Wilkens has solved a mystery that has puzzled scholars since Third-Century-Alexandrian Eratosthenes noted that the “Egypt” of Homer could not have referred to the Egypt he knew. Wilkens equates the former with northwestern France around the Epte River. Modern Egypt was originally known as Misr, Al-Khem, Kemi or Meroë. Many scholars have noted that Homer’s descriptions (e. g. nautical distances, ocean tides, the “dark salty sea,” the rainy climate, fog and snow, temperate trees, *etc.*) don’t fit the eastern Mediterranean. Yet, it was always clear that Homer was describing real people and places.

“Whatever classical historians may have to say about the dates of the period depicted, the date of the composition of the epics, or of Homer himself, there can be no doubt about two points: the culture depicted is a whole culture and a real one because it makes sense internally. No man could invent a civilization out of a whole cloth and have it fail to strike a false note. The Homeric civilization is essentially that of an Indo-European speaking people transplanted into a Mediterranean setting, and not that of an urban, literate, eastern Mediterranean, early Bronze Age people.” --Coon, 1977: 250

---

<sup>99</sup> Donnelly (p. 283) quotes Lord Bacon thus: “The mythology of the Greeks, which their oldest writers do not pretend to have invented, was no more than a light air, which had passed from a more ancient people into the flutes of the Greeks, which they modulated to such descants as best suited their fancies.” How surprised would Sir Francis have been to discover that many of these “ancient people” were his own ancestors!

Coon saw a disconnect between Homeric people and places and assumed that the people of Homer's world had been transplanted because he couldn't foresee that the names of *his own* world had been transplanted. Not only the geography and the names (altered but still identifiable with names on Europe's Atlantic seaboard) but also the mythology and the customs of Homer's characters correspond to that of the Celts of northwest Europe. For example, Irish myths refer repeatedly to the Celtic custom of travelers not identifying themselves or their country until they have been informed of the name of the host country and its people. Homer's characters behave the same way. Telemachus and Nestor's son didn't identify themselves to Menelaus until he wined and dined them and told them everything he knew about Odysseus. (Cf. Od. IV: 22-169) Odysseus behaved the same way among his Phaiacian hosts (Od. VII: 148-255).

In book twenty of the *Iliad*, lines 256 and 257, before fighting Achilles, Hector boasts about the first Trojan kings, his ancestors. Of King Erichthonios he says,

The wealthiest was he of mortal men;  
Three thousand mares he had that grazed throughout  
His marshy pastures.

The west coast of Asia Minor and the city on the hill called Hisarlik, which Heinrich Schliemann found in 1873 and identified as Troy, has never had marshlands around it. The same is true for the whole coast of western Turkey. But the plains of Cambridge circa 1200 B.C. were low and marshy, and the "Wash" (a bay to the northeast) was probably three times its present size. The unparalleled wealth of the Trojans, referred to in this poem, could possibly be said to correspond to the Anatolian (Hittite) capital of Hattusas but not to the west coast of Asia Minor prior to the mid first millennium Lydians. On the other hand, this adjective certainly *did* apply to tin-rich, Bronze Age Britain. Moreover, as Wilkens points out, of the *seven*, vertically stratigraphic towns of this strategic hill-fortress, Hisarlik, which dominated the entrance to the Dardanelles on the Aegean side, all are the size of villages and none of them were destroyed circa 1200 B.C. (Wilkens: 33). Hisarlik or one of the towns around the Dardanelles *was* the Troy referred to in the *Anabases* of Xenophon and Arrian and the *Histories* of Herodotus, but Herodotus noted in footnote *seven* of Chapter 43, Book VII that this town was "New Ilium" [*H New Troy*].

After surveying the archaeology of the British Isles in Appendix D, we found trade between Mycenae and the isles as of 1700 B.C.<sup>100</sup> In Appendix D we also discovered that, not long after Crete was overrun in 1450, the round mounds of the rich Wessex culture in southern England became noticeably more austere. The rituals at the ring monuments also vanished entirely at this time, and the Deverul-Rimbury vessels came back into vogue. All this suggests a, “major social upheaval affecting the whole of Britain and Ireland.” (Cf. Burgess: 24) The agricultural and population crisis had been building up for some time,

“[B]ut while new lands could be opened and ever larger tracts enclosed by field systems it [H *economic collapse*] had been kept at bay. This whole complex process now collapsed over the length and breadth of the country. Perhaps people had run out of new lands to clear and enclose, and a distinct worsening of the climate may have tipped the scales. Field systems from Achnacree in Argyll to Fengate in the Midlands and Dartmoor in the southwest were abandoned. At some of these, the insidious spread of blanket peat has been revealed. Great areas of Celtic fields on the chalk were also abandoned, and the land reorganized for stock raising by division into grazing blocks with ranch boundaries. These were drawn across the downland, often directly over the abandoned field system. Widespread waterlogging is indicated by the appearance on riverbanks from the Thames to the Trent of pile dwellings, and new track ways were laid down in all those areas, such as Somerset Levels, prone to flooding.” --Burgess: 157

Our temperature map for the last 18 ky, Figure 105c, suggests that temperatures were rising somewhat and the ocean level would have been a bit less than half of the difference between today and the Holocene Maximum. We know from the Australian aborigines (who have proven to have great memories for such things, see the John Upton and the Climate Central article) that the sea level at Holocene Maximum was about 30 feet higher than today. Therefore, it

---

<sup>100</sup> Recall that 1700 B.C. is the time when, as Coon told us, the Near East and the Eastern Mediterranean ran out of tin. Bone dentated mounts and amber spacer-bead necklaces from Bush Barrow (1700 B.C.) occur also in Mycenae. The mounts have been found at shaft grave Iota (1600+ B.C.), and similar beads turn up in many Aegean contexts (1600-1500 B.C.). Most authorities agree that these are indisputable evidence of Wessex Mycenae contact, though not agreeing on the number of removes separating the two areas. The beads are generally thought to have gone from Wessex to the Aegean. (Cf. Burgess: 108)

was about 13 feet higher than today at the time of the Trojan War (1194-1183 BC).

After 1200 B.C., hillforts like those of the Penard Period in England developed in Mycenae.<sup>101</sup> The population and the agriculture crisis and the war footing on which the island empire and other places had been put circa 1200 B.C. all testify to the enormous scale of the Trojan War that Wilkens has described and the likelihood that it occurred in Britain.

Note also that Homer described Menelaus, the brother of Achaean High-King Agamemnon and husband of the abducted Helen, as red-haired, as the Goidelic Celts, the last prehistoric conquerors of the Isles, are known to have been (Od. I: 330).

Archaeology also confirms the increasing popularity of cremation throughout the second millennium in the British Isles. (Cf. Burgess: 23) Cremation is especially associated with the Beaker Folk/Fir Bolgs/Belgae/Pelasgians. Similarly, in Homer, it is of the utmost importance for a warrior, properly buried, to be cremated. King Priam, Hector's father, offered Achilles expensive gifts if he would release his son's body so that it might be cremated as befitting heroes and gods.

These are but a few of the reasons why we can conclude that Troy was on the plains of Cambridge. Wilkens offers the reader an enormous store of additional etymological evidence. His book is fascinating. Although it appears to me that many of his claims regarding Odysseus' travels are speculative and open to debate, he does a more than adequate job of proving that Troy was on the Gog Magog hills of the Cambridge plains. His book has been largely ignored or discredited by academicians only because they are such unconscionable lackeys for the ruling gangsters who are at least as savage today as at any time in history. Nay, more so because they have much more historical data with which they ought to be able to learn and avoid repeating the errors of the past; but they don't.

Consider the obvious reasons why they want to pretend that Troy was somewhere else: 1) Every group of savage conquerors wants to cover up their violent past and pretend that their lordship is based upon priority of possession; 2) it would be especially embarrassing for the western oil gangsters to have to admit that our Britannic ancestors were once in the exact same position that the Arabs, Iranians and Russians are in today (notwithstanding the fact that the vital resource was tin instead of gas and oil); 3) the K class does not want the world to know that there is a continent-wide precedent for the sort of anarchy that erupted

---

<sup>101</sup> The Penard Period was a metalworking phase of the Bronze Age in England spanning the years 1275-1140 B.C. It was characterized by increased experimentation.

in 1992 in Los Angeles; 4) white westerners have traditionally identified with the “Greeks,” have believed classical Greek propaganda about “autochthonous” Greek culture and freely cite “the miracle that was Greece” as evidence for European cultural and racial superiority. In fact, “the Greeks” had come to Greece from all over Europe, northern Africa and the Middle East. Greek culture was cosmopolitan; and 5) the K scoundrels tend to automatically lie about everything important that might cause change because they are all homophobic latent homosexuals. They fear all basic truth and change because they unconsciously associate both with the all-important truth and change that they dare not and cannot make – removing their Third Masks.

*Whenever possible, ignore the rich scoundrels and their hirelings of any and every title.* I am going to give you even better proof that Troy was where Iman says it was. I’m going to prove it to you militarily, with Irish mythology, by revealing a common, mythological identity and with an amazingly-coincidental personal anecdote. But before I do so, I want to take exception to several of Iman’s views. Two exceptions are minor ones, but one is major; and this one requires some background information. Let’s deal with the major exception first, with Wilkens’ reverence for Gnosticism.

Iman Wilkens convinces us that the part of the *Odyssey* that is not concerned with navigation -- most of it -- concerns the symbolic initiation of Odysseus into a mystery cult. As I’ve already suggested, Homer probably was a cult member and may have obtained some of his (especially navigational) material from other cult members. Moreover, Wilkens persuasively suggests that the adventures of Odysseus are symbolic of the initiation ordeal that new members of a cult of Circe had to undergo. Yet, as I showed you in Appendix D, the story is strung together with Species War myths. Is it possible for the *Odyssey* to consist of Paleolithic myths and also be a metaphor for second and first millennia initiation rites? *Certainly! The latter were based on fragments of the former.*

A survey of what is known of these initiation rites will clarify my point. But look first at the ingenious observation that apparently led Wilkens to the cult explanation:

“According to the Oxford Dictionary of English Etymology, the word “church” comes from Old English *cirice* or *circe*, a word that clearly seems to be cognate with Circe. We also know that the dialectal form of Circe (also found in Greek) was *Kirke* and etymologists are agreed that the Dutch word for “church,” *kerk*, the German *Kirche* and the Scots *kirk* all come from the Old Saxon *kirika*, another word cognate with Kirke or Circe.

If *Zierikzee*, for which many different spellings can be seen on old maps, such as *Ziericxzee*, *Sierckzee*, or *Zircze* was also the same word as *circe* meaning “sacred place” or “church,” then Circe, the goddess whose name was Church with a capital “c,” must have been the highest authority of the Gnostic religion. [*H Indo-Europeans commonly named their meeting place after the high god.*] In the Bronze Age, *Zierikzee* must then have been the religious center of the Gnostics, invariably associated with initiation into the Mysteries, the knowledge of the universe that surrounds us. Therefore, the most important Gnostic school of Homer’s time must also have been located here.” --Wilkins: 187

*It’s one thing to acknowledge that Gnostic cults existed and contributed Homeric symbols. It is quite another to revere them, as Wilkins does, for their “secret knowledge.”* Although very little is known about the druids and the cults of Homer’s day, it is reasonable to assume that the same Sea Peoples who brought Celtic mythology and language into the eastern Mediterranean world that they conquered also brought their mysteries and religious “knowledge.” It appears that the Gnostic cult of Circe, which Wilkins believes to have been centered at *Zierikzee*, the Netherlands, was later centered at Eleusis, Greece. Circe appears to have been the early Celtic forerunner of the Greek and Roman goddesses of agriculture and fertility, Demeter and Ceres respectively. Let’s examine what is known about them and other latter-day Greek and Roman cults to better evaluate their Gnostic forerunners and their sacred books.

The Eleusian initiate [of this cult once popular throughout Greece, centered at Eleusis and dedicated to Demeter (Ceres or Circe) and Persephone (Proserpina)] is supposed to have come close to death and the underworld. The introduction to the most-quoted initiation sentences reads, “I approached the frontier of death, I set foot on the threshold of Persephone, I journeyed through all the elements and came back, I saw at midnight the sun [*H on its nightly journey through the underworld*], sparkling in white light, I came close to the gods of the upper and nether world and adored them from near at hand” (Burkert: 97).<sup>102</sup> The experience consisted of the initiate following a prepared course along which various symbolic monsters and pitfalls were prepared for him -- monsters and pitfalls that imitated those that Odysseus supposedly encountered (Huttner). The following

---

<sup>102</sup> Of the three or four books I’ve read or perused on the subject, Walter Burkert’s is by far the best. He is a sane and realistic man who is not easily fooled by neurotic pretensions. I’ll rely mostly on Professor Burkert’s data about the cults of classical times to support my arguments.



morning the initiate was dressed in regal garb as the sun god and presented to a crowd of admiring cultists for “purification” by the “elements” of air, fire and water. (Cf. Burkert: 97) The air, fire and water are, of course, the elements into which *Homo erectus* corpses “disappeared.” At the deepest level of prehistoric, now-unconscious, religious meaning, the adventures of Odysseus (or the Gnostic initiate) were all symbols for fraternal conflict and the related guilt, paranoia and obsessional fears.

“Totally different is the taurobolium in the cult of the Great Mother. As described by [*H numerous*] Christian authors, the initiand, crouching in a pit, is flooded with fifty liters of blood from the bull agonizing just above. The unforgettable character of this experience is easy to imagine; it would hardly have seemed a blessed state, yet emerging from the pit the initiate is “adored” by others, as one who has risen to a superior state, and feelings of liberation and a new life would have been overwhelming by contrast, just because of the horrifying procedure undergone before.” --Burkert: 98.

If I may take issue with Professor Burkert just a little bit -- the only thing essentially different about these two initiations appears to be the complex and elements of the godhead emphasized. Some of the initiations involved reenactments of the cult-defining myths.

“In general, each divinity of a mystery cult has a specific myth to which he or she is intimately bound. Usually, the general outlines are well known; some details though, are said to be “sacred” and are allegedly kept secret. Thus, the myths about Demeter-Persephone<sup>103</sup> and Osiris-Isis are extant in several elaborations... As for Dionysus, there is a rich variety of Bacchic mythology, but with regarding mysteries, one tale had commanded attention, perhaps too exclusively: the story of Chthonian [*H underworld*] Dionysus born from Persephone and slaughtered by the Titans... This myth is explicitly connected with the mysteries by several authors...” -- Burkert: 73

---

<sup>103</sup> Hades abducts and rapes Persephone the beautiful daughter of Zeus and Demeter. He consents to letting her return to the world above ground to cheer up her mother each spring and to allow her to rejuvenate nature.

As we've seen, this myth addresses the obsessional fear of *Homo erectus* killing us or stealing our babies to avenge the severance of his gene line. Here's an earlier Dionysian ceremony:

"An older stratum of testimonies regarding Dionysian initiation puts the emphasis on purification and change of status, even change of identity. Through Demosthenes' invective against Aeschines we discern a nocturnal ceremony that includes putting on fawn skins and setting up a krater with wine. The initiands, seated, are then smeared with a mixture of clay and chaff; from the dark the priests appear like a frightening demon; clean again and rising to their feet, the initiates exclaim, "I escaped from evil, I found the better," and the bystanders yell in a high, shrieking voice (*ololyge*) as though in the presence of some divine agent. In the daytime, there follows the integration of the initiates into the group of celebrants, with the *thiasos* (religious association) moving through the streets; people are crowned with fennel and white poplar; they dance and utter rhythmic cries, carrying the *kiste* and the *likon* ... [*H a box that holds a castrated penis*], and some brandishing live snakes." --Burkert: 96

Except for the penis, this one sounds like the Kwakiutl, winter celebration wherein they break up and divide the red cedar bark ring symbolizing the Great Spirit, give it to the "sparrows" and smear their faces with tallow. (See Ch. 23.)

Those of you who have closely followed the chapters above should easily grasp the meaning of all these initiation rites. Here's another homophobic, latent homosexual ritual.

"There remains the intriguing depiction in the Villa of the Mysteries of what is no doubt a flagellation scene. A kneeling girl, keeping her head in the lap of a seated woman and shutting her eyes, the seated woman grasping her hands and drawing back the garment from the kneeling girl's bare back, while a sinister-looking female behind is raising a rod -- these are all quite realistic details of caning. But the threatening figure wielding the rod *has black wings; she is not from this world...*" --Burkert: 103, *H emphasis mine*

*The caning on the bare buttocks and the burying of a face in the lap of another woman are compromised, homosexual acts that the superegos of these latent homosexuals will only allow in a context consciously defined as other*

*worldly. All the devil worship and skull and bones nonsense has the same objective: to create an aberrant, "other world" context in which homophobic latent homosexuals feel permitted to be themselves and engage in homosexual acts. How pathetic that homophobia forces people to go to such extremes!*

Another initiation that bombarded the initiate with Deluge symbolism involved a *lion*-headed statue that was constructed so as to breathe *fire* through an opening in the *stone* and to burn *incense*. (Cf. Burkert: 103) Burkert describes numerous other initiation rites, alleged to have contained "the most impenetrable and darkest secrets of the universe, secrets beyond the ken of reason and mortal men." Because neurotics, especially of the latent homosexual variety, dread awareness that would require personal and socio-political change, they avoid analysis at all costs. Subject the "holy books" of the modern religions to critical analysis; and if they don't, like the Moslems, try to kill you for it, they beg the question by referring you to a high priest or a council of priests who are allegedly closer to god and have divine understanding unavailable to ordinary men.

Additionally, the mystery cults offered a fraternal family to the member as a replacement for the tribal family that overpopulation and secular class society had rent asunder. These cults were not principally concerned with making new converts. For them, doctrinal books would have been an absolute liability. For in addition to the need to maintain the element of surprise and emotional shock of the initiation rite and in addition to the need to exclude poor and undesirable people, secrecy was needed to hold the cult aloof from criticism. However much religious fundamentalists would like to think that religion made literal sense to someone and that esoteric books once existed that could provide *literal* religion with a logical and scientific basis, they have yet to prove it. "There is not the slightest evidence to support Reizenstein's assertion that mystery communities were held together by fixed forms of a Credo" (Burkert: 46).<sup>104</sup>

"There is an interesting account in Livy of how a praetor at Rome, trying to eliminate the new forms of religious superstition that were encroaching on the people under the pressure of the Hannibalic war, had all the relevant books confiscated."<sup>105</sup> These consisted of books of

---

<sup>104</sup> The foremost, present-day inventor of neurotic apologetics in Germany is a man named Reitzenstein. He and his followers call their cult the *religionswissenschaftliche schule*, the "scientific school of religion."

<sup>105</sup> Professor Burkert cites Livy 25.1.12, and adds; "At Ephesus, those convicted by Saint Paul burned their magical books" *Acts* 19.19. Bishop Porphyrius, fighting paganism at Gaza, had all 'books full of charlatanism, which the priests called sacred, and from which they performed their *teletai* (*H initiations*) and other elicit rites collected and burned.'" –Burkert, citing Marcus 332

prophecy (*libra vatican*), prayer books (*precationes*), and prescriptions for sacrifice (*ars sacrificandi conscripta*); nothing resembling ‘theology’ in our sense is mentioned.” --Burkert: 68

Cobo said as much of the Peruvians: “The most notable aspect of this religion is how they had nothing written down to learn and keep... They did not even know the grounds on which they relied for their opinions. At the most, they considered the main cause to be the custom of their ancestors, which they held to be such an inviolable law for many things that some of them did not know how to give any other explanation, and if they did give any, though they agreed on the form, solemnity, and superstitions, they disagreed on the rationale. This is because they did not have any writings, and thus the rationale and motives of their ancestors were lost.” (Cobo: 9) *As we’ve seen, sacred myths and rituals are always compromise formations; their meaning is symbolic; their motives unconscious. From the codices, quipus, RongOrongo boards, etc. that aboriginal people did have, we could not have learned anything about “God” or secret worlds. But had the Catholics not confiscated and destroyed these things, we social scientists could have learned a lot sooner about the mental illness that creates “God.”*<sup>106</sup>



Figure 116a: Mithra slaying the Mithraic bull

Since the Celtic Druids were, like the Greeks and the Galicians, Indo-Europeans, it is doubtful that druidic books would have been (had they been kept) any more sophisticated than their southern counterparts. The nearest things to knowledge that priests have ever possessed are new symbols for old symbols, which is what astrology amounts to.

Quite by accident, as the “birth” of Christ has served as a convenient point zero on our historical time-line, astrology has served a useful purpose. The constellations that our ancestors “saw” aided navigation and astronomy, but to claim as David Ulansey does that the stars inspired the Mithra cult or that he has

---

Diaconus *Vit Porph.* 71 and referring us to W. Speyer, “Büchervernichtung” (*H Book-burning*), *Jahrbuch für Antike und Christentum* 13, (1970), esp. 123-152.

<sup>106</sup> The knotted chords, *quipus*, which were originally used by the Inca Empire for accounting, surely contained important historical and anthropological information. The Catholics destroyed these chords.

solved the meaning of their myths by finding the astronomical patterns correspondent to the Mithraic cave figures is to confuse effects with causes. The same applies to the 2008 film series, *Zeitgeist*, by Peter Joseph, which attempts to use astronomy to explain all religion.

The all-male Mithra cult was very popular during the time of the Roman Empire. It was probably spread by the Roman legions. The uniform size of the chapters (usually twenty men) and the uniform murals on the ceilings of their chapter “caves” (lodges) are to be explained by their division into *seven* grades or ranks. Only the highest-ranking *paters* were authorized to organize new chapters. (Cf. Burkert: 42) Little is known of their beliefs; but few of the soldiers and merchants who gravitated to this cult would have been philosophers. Also, the classical, polytheistic, Mediterranean world was generally tolerant of diverse pagan beliefs, for gods from every pantheon tended to correspond to each other - as we have seen.

Knowing what you know about religion, a brief description of the Mithras’ principal images should lay bare their “mysteries.” In the late nineteenth century, the Belgian scholar Franz Cumont tracked down the Iranian myth that gave rise to the Mithraic bull slaying as depicted by the central mural of every Mithraic cave. (See Figure 116a, above.) A decade and a half before Freud wrote *Totem and Taboo*, Cumont described the Mithraic slaying of the bull, the mural’s meaning, thusly:

“[A]n extraordinary prodigy came to pass. From the body of the moribund victim sprang forth all the useful herbs and plants that cover the earth with their verdure. From the spinal cord of the animal sprang the wheat that gives us our bread, and from its blood the vine that produces the sacred drink of the mysteries. In vain did the Evil Spirit launch forth his unclean demons against the anguish-wrung animal, to poison in it the very sources of life; the scorpion, the ant, the serpent, strove in vain to consume the genital parts and to drink the blood of the prolific quadruped; but they were powerless to impede the miracle that was enacting... [H *The bull represents the biological father, the primal father and the father species. The latter is also represented by “demons” and two totemic representations of Homo erectus and one of the hybrids (the ants). Here again we see the amalgamation of the gods, the formation of the godhead in progress, for which the bull was a very useful symbol.*] Thus, through the sacrifice that he had so resignedly undertaken, tauroctonous hero became the creator of all the beneficent beings on earth; and, from

the death that he had caused, was born a new life, richer and more fecund than the old.” --Ulansey: 9; quoting Cumont: 136-137

The other ubiquitous symbol of the Mithras was the lion-headed god, the Iranian deity Zurvan, “the god of infinite time.” Cronus too means time, and you know that Cronus, Titans and lions are symbols for *Homo erectus* -- “timeless” *Homo erectus* who dominated the earth for two million years. Look at Zurvan’s symbols. He holds the keys to the future, which, like the Babylonian “tablets of fate,” say that he rose to the top of the food chain and was master of his own fate and shepherd of all the other animals (the staff), until he created us. A snake (another *Homo erectus* symbol) is around his neck, and a lightning bolt (an arrow) is on his chest. Notice also that he stands upon a globe. (See Figure 74.) (*Homo erectus*’ range nearly equaled ours. He covered the globe.) So, with these two images, the Mithras clearly represented the two complexes and four of the five universal elements of the godhead. Soldiers didn’t need to be reminded of the fifth, their ongoing genetic competitors.

The known mystery cults offer no hint of any rational or scientific basis for the *literal* belief in religion. Moreover, the secrecy of cults and pagan priests such as the Celtic Druids is an anathema to science, which requires openness for communication, testing, verification and criticism. Druidic secrecy and suppression of information could only have benefited the druids themselves, by holding their ideas and assumptions aloof from criticism and safeguarding their privileges. As Rolleston noted, Celtdom’s undoing was its control by religious leaders. It could not compete with a Rome that was organized and led by practical, secular men.

*Social oppression is just the collective, obverse side of what religion is all about for the individual: repression and avoidance of realizations that might be unpleasant and necessitate change.* When cornered and drawn into a theoretical discussion that challenges literal beliefs, neurotics will quickly and invariably push the focus to the prevailing limits of our space or time understanding and argue that the greater part of the universe is as unknown and unknowable as the “spiritual” world beyond those limits. That’s generally the extent of their interest in physics. Other apologists for neurotics, dabblers in speculative philosophy, like to point to the orderly results of billions of years of evolution, and -- *overlooking nature’s countless dead ends and bloody failures* -- they cite the “order” of the “cosmos” as evidence for a divine plan and a divine being.<sup>107</sup>

---

<sup>107</sup> Roughly ninety-nine percent of all the species that have ever lived are now extinct. (Cf. Stevens, citing Steve Jones, a geneticist at University College, London)

The “mystery” cult people and religious fundamentalists have never understood or wanted to understand their neurotic religious complexes. Really analyzing and understanding ourselves virtually compels us to resolve our complexes through compromises that involve making an instinctual renunciation and accepting compensation. This process of personal growth and change is exactly what neurotics dread most.

Change also implies sometimes having to admit that one has erred, and neurotics usually can’t admit this even to themselves in a whisper. Their ridiculous and hypocritical talk about agape (love), “rebirth” or a change of mind resulting from the “experience of the sacred” such as what was supposed to happen at many initiation rites all over the world, consisted of merely balancing, fine-tuning and maintaining ambivalence toward the elements of the godhead by surprising, shocking, emotional exposure to the negative and positive aspects of symbols for these elements.

Like their “rebirth,” the neurotics’ “knowledge” or “Gnosticism” is just the opposite of what they claim it is. The progressive substitution of symbols for symbols removes us further from recognition and identification of the original antecedent. Abstraction beyond the limits of perception rules out the possibility of converting theory into knowledge by proving it in practice.

More than a few intellectuals have assisted in perpetuating neurosis and have been well rewarded for kowtowing to neurotics. Helping neurotics confuse issues has been a means for some mythographers and psychoanalysts to achieve popularity among undergraduates, rich patrons and an untutored public. But as a civilization, we are paying an ever-greater price for our refusal to be realistic; and it is very sad whenever a man such as Iman Wilkens who has made important cultural contributions, a scientist, provides grist for the neurotic mill with statements such as this:

“[T]he Druids left their subjects in a spiritual void by refusing to explain their religion and philosophy to outsiders. It seems that their philosophy was very advanced indeed, not to say of great complexity and therefore incomprehensible for ordinary man anyhow. The common public was therefore given only the empty shells: a series of fairytales called “mythology,” devised by the Druids to hide and pass on their philosophy in space and time to other initiates, while keeping the masses happy with simplistic, popular stories.” --Wilkens: 268

Although he may have discovered the intentions of Homer and a neurotic cult to use the *Odyssey* as an initiation myth, Iman Wilkens’ understanding of religion is about as good as the baseball knowledge of a Martian who has only

flown over a baseball stadium. (I can't get Miss Mars off my mind.) All the real action is on the inside, or, in the case of religion -- within the unconscious. "Outside" research alone will never get the serious student of religion to first base because, to paraphrase Shakespeare: the problem, dear Iman, is not in our charts, it's in us.

Of the minor objections I have to Wilkens' work, one concerns his belief that the Irish and the British of Homer's day were very different peoples. (Cf. Wilkens: 152) What is there to suggest, prior to the coming of the Angles, Saxons and Jutes to Britain in the fifth and six centuries A.D. or possibly the coming of the Romans to Britain in 55 B.C., that the same groups did not inhabit both islands? Caesar's resources and need for reliable, political information were unsurpassed. He supported what we can conclude from O'Rahilly and the archaeological record: "There were three peoples...inhabiting Gaul [*H and the British Isles*] when his conquest began; 'They differ from each other in language, in customs, and in laws.' These people he named respectively as the Belgae, the Celtae, and the Aquitani... Strabo speaks of the Aquitani as differing markedly from the rest of the inhabitants and as resembling the Iberians" (Rolleston: 58-59 quoting Caesar). The Aquitani were apparently dark-skinned Cretani, Pretani or Pritani. The Belgae, in Ireland and England, were represented by the Fir Bolgs and Trojans, "Beaker Folk" or "Pelasgians." They took the Isles from *Homo erectus*, left after the Great Flood of 14634 years BPE (12634 BC) and became the lords of the islands after returning with the knowledge of good pottery and bronze making. The Goidelic Celts (Celts proper), of whom the Lagenians, in Ireland, were earlier-arriving vassals, dominated the islands only *after* winning the Trojan War.

On the same page, Wilkens states his belief that the Irish did not fight beside the British in the Trojan War. Again, he offers no evidence for this belief, and it seems to me that there is much evidence to the contrary. First, it appears that the peoples of both islands were identical and therefore inclined to support one another against outsiders. Second, the public ceremonies on both islands were very much the same. Third, circa 2000 B.C., the passage graves all over both islands were blocked up -- at the same time. (Cf. Burgess: 23) This certainly suggests that the Irish were, at the very least, vassals of the English. Fourth, they needed each other for defense. Fifth, Ireland had gold and Britain had tin, so there was a basis for cooperative trade. Sixth, the ancients often referred to them as one, as the Cassiterites or tin islands. *Seventh*, for the British to have held out for ten years against all the seaboard forces without the aid of the Irish is unlikely. Eighth and most importantly, I'm going to show you Irish mythology that leaves no doubt that the Irish were vassals of their kinsmen on the larger island and that the Trojan War was fought on both islands.



Before we turn to that mythology, here's an interesting etymological discovery. (Iman has taught me some tricks!) In Irish mythology, the island where Balor, the King of the Fomorians retired is Tory Island. I believe that "*Troy*" comes from "*Tory*." Here's the logic: early men often used one word to indicate a broad area of meaning. "Aloha" is still a greeting or a farewell in Hawaiian. Often, when discrimination was finally made, the new word referring to half of the newly divided area of meaning was formed by slightly altering the old word. Freud cites examples such as "withhold" and "withdraw." Both evolved from "with." (Cf. Freud, 1916: 221) A similar division in Spanish produced "sima" (chasm) and "cima" (summit). German often represents functional differences in the use of a root word by slightly altering the vowel sound of the accented syllable and placing an umlaut (") over it. Similarly, it appears that from one of these four-letter words, Tory or Troy, the inner letters were reversed to form the other and divide the old area of meaning.

Now, the Oxford English Dictionary has almost nothing to tell us about "Troy." There is some speculation that the Troy ounce may have been developed at the fairs of Troyes, France. But this would seem to be intuitively incorrect. "Troyes" would have been derived from the simpler and more basic "Troy." "Troy houses" or "Troy rooms" were ones that were completely torn apart and disheveled. Plus, there are a few old and Middle English literary references; but apparently, none of them have produced any clues as to the original meaning of the word. This is quite understandable because the Goidelic Celts, who invaded the isles, after winning the war at Troy, were as eager to suppress all references to Troy and the war as the British government has been to suppress excavation of the Gog Magog hills.

But OE has much more to say about the word *Tory*; and, fortunately, it appears to be the older of the two. *Tory* is the anglicized spelling of the Irish *tóraidhe* or *tóraidheaghe*. It means *pursuer*. Then, after citing some of the derivations and the Scotch Gaelic *tórachd*, which means pursuit or pursuing with hostile intent, OE tells us that in some Irish dictionaries, the meaning is given as "a pursued or persecuted person, hence an outlaw; which is not without historical suitability."<sup>108</sup> Politics aside, the best Irish etymologists agree that the word is an agent noun. So, *Tory* (not as spelled here but as sounded here) is one of those early words that once had a broad area of meaning. Judging by its application to Balor's Island, I think we can conclude that, circa the Species War, it referred both to those who pursued the other subspecies and those who were pursued.

---

<sup>108</sup> In the 17th century, the word was applied to the dispossessed Irish who became outlaws, subsisting by plundering and killing the English soldiers and settlers who had been awarded their (the "outlaws'") property.

After the war, when there were no more Neanderthals to pursue but plenty of “spirits” to do the pursuing, *Tory*, as *pursuer*, became applied to the Fomorians; and *Troy* was invented to refer to the *pursued*. The Troy would have then applied the name to their capital, which, during the Bronze Age, acquired world renown owing to the tin monopoly that its lords enjoyed. As the city grew in renown, it monopolized “Troy.” *Trojans* was derived and applied to its residents.

Now, at last, we are ready to see portions of the Irish myths of which I spoke. They were collected by Jeremiah Curtin in western Ireland and appear in *Hero Tales of Ireland*. There are two that support Wilkens’ theses as I have modified those theses. I shall only summarize these two herein. In the supplement to this work, *Irish Mythology: Passageway to Prehistory*, most of Curtin’s other Irish myths are reproduced and interpreted line-by-line.

Now let’s examine, “Fin Maccool,<sup>109</sup> The Hard Gilla, and the High King.” It opens with the Fenians (the Irish gods of the Species War) living at Fintra, which offers us a very significant hint. Namely: “Fintra” was the earlier name for Ventry, and it was named after Fin Maccool. Ventry is one of the south-western-most tips of Ireland. It’s in County Kerry. It is apparent from the map of the ring monuments and Figure 88a that Ventry is one of the two places where Neanderthal made his last, desperate stand in Ireland and Europe. These towns having been named after Fin confirms what the surrounding monuments to the Species War suggest. Here’s the story.

Twenty-eight of the Fenians (*seven* for each of the four directions, symbolizing an ambivalent army) were captured by an enchanter, “The Hard Gilla.” Gilla is lousy and slovenly in appearance (as the last of the *Homo erectus* people must have been). He tricked the Fenians into mounting his supernatural horse. The horse then raised his tail and his head, and between them he imprisoned all twenty-eight of the Fenians. The horse and its captives then followed Gilla into the sea, which opened and closed before and after them. Gilla, who had come pretending to seek employment, is clearly a Neanderthal god. He and the horse are mangy and flea-bitten; Gilla admits that he doesn’t know who his father was (he’s immortal); and he adds that he is “of one place as well as another.” (He comes and goes from Tir-na-nOg and the Eastern and Western ends of the bronze trade route.) As Fin is deliberating with the Druid (“the adviser”) as to how they shall rescue the men, two young champions approach and introduce themselves as the sons of a king. They claim to each have a special gift, a power left to them by their father and ask Fin “which is the better to live by.” One can make fleets of ships appear and disappear, and the other can catch waterfowl in

---

<sup>109</sup> As you may have noticed, the name of this legendary hero has numerous spellings.

flight. These apparently represent military and divine power respectively. The Fenians need both. They choose a ship by the magic of the first son; and, once aboard it, they use the divine power of the second son to guide the ship to the island to which the Fenians have been abducted. The island is Tir-na-nOg. Dyeermud and the abducted Fenians are conscripted to help restore the rightful king to power on this island. As some of them are so engaged, the two young champions deliver Fin and the rest of the Fenians overseas to the castle of the King of Sorách (light), whom the official Goidelic Celt myth identifies as the King of Greece (Rolleston: 294-295).

The defeated Fir Bolgs and Trojans who wanted to maintain their heritage and version of prehistory would have repaired to the far west of Ireland. In the popular Western Ireland version collected by Curtin -- which is undoubtedly a Fir Bolg or Trojan myth that has been preserved by the descendants of the Trojans and Fir Bolgs -- the King of Greece/ "Sorách" tells the Fenians that they are needed to protect him from an approaching fleet. The fleet is "as numerous as the sands on the seashore." It is "coming for tribute that has not been collected for many years... That is the High King of the World coming against me." [*H For sea (coastal) peoples, reformed pirates, now working mostly in the sphere of exchange, the fair price of anything is whatever it will fetch on the market. Caveat emptor. The more settled peoples, expecting things to trade for their labor-value equivalents, would have seemed to be "demanding tribute."*] The Irishmen convince the High King to defer the attack, and the High King's daughter falls in love with Fin. She is kidnapped (willingly) first by the Fenians, and then unwillingly by her father's agent, then (willingly) re-kidnapped by the Fenians. They all return happily to Erin, but the pretext for war has been invented, and the threat of war is looming as the next myth -- the Fir Bolg version of the Trojan War -- begins.

But before we get into the next myth, it is important to make several observations. Notice that the Ventry setting and the sexual conflict clearly indicate that this new Trojan War myth became stamped with the birthmarks of the old Species War womb. Invaders certainly never landed at Ventry. It is the wrong side of the island and the wrong latitude. Invaders would, and apparently did, land near the mouth of the Boyne where the sea is more navigable and where they might hope to split the defenders in half and sever their lines of communication. The trauma of the Species War, 30,000 years after the fact, was still great enough in the popular mind to influence the basic outline of what was remembered of the events leading up to the Trojan War. The same applies to the rest of the Fir Bolgs' Trojan War myth. It too is set in Ventry; the goddesses of Tir-na-nOg are on the side of the Irish; the Irish Hector is an Ulsterman symbolic of Cuchulain and Neanderthal; the Achilles of this myth, Dealv Dura, ominously

drives his hurley ball across the sky from west to east like a demon threatening to thwart the sun in its orbit.

What is more, the conscription of some Fenians by the Hard Gilla and his horse and the removal of the other Fenians by the two king's sons -- in each case *to reinforce defenders* -- assures us that the Irish were vassals of the Trojan lords (their "Nemedian," "Fir Bolg" or "Belgae" cousins) and pressed into military service. The fall of Trojan trading partners in the Eastern Mediterranean (Anatolia, Crete or Mycenae) were the first big blows to Troy. Crete had been especially peaceful and stable. This easily policed, rustic, nation of farmers would have been the ideal haven for Trojan ships laden with gold and tin and bound for the Eastern Mediterranean. Moreover, the Cretans, possessed of sub-tropical produce and no metals, were ideal trading partners. The Trojans would have made military alliances with these trading partners. Most of the mutually incomprehensible languages spoken at Troy (to which Homer refers in *Iliad* IV-) were not languages of the island empire, as Wilkens thinks. (*Cf.* Wilkens: 146) They were the languages of merchants and mercenaries from distant lands.

Finally, notice that the High King's daughter and Agamemnon's Helen are symbolic of beautiful women *per se*. Whether they were captured or smitten, both myths agree that they ended up in the isles; and it can hardly be denied that they were attracted by wealth. The defensive claims of Irishmen notwithstanding, the rich men of the isles would have maintained their control over women by limiting their property rights and keeping them in a state of dependence. This would account for the English common law's unique system of marital property law. Property acquired during the marriage was not community property, as on the continent, but separate property. The surviving spouse was provided for by the decedent's estate, but (she) was never an equal. Of course, this system of separate property and "equitable distribution" is alive and well in the U.S., especially in "the Empire State," New York.

The Irish, or Fir Bolg, Trojan War myth, "The Battle of Ventry" begins: "It was predicted *seven* years before the battle of Ventry, that Daire Donn, High King of the Great World, would invade Erin to conquer it." As Iman suggests, the "High King," Homer's Agamemnon, would have been the king of what is now France; but it may indeed have been the Scandinavians who were tasked with the job of invading Ireland and Wales via the Irish Sea and making a third strategic landing that we'll discover below. As this passage also reveals, diplomats and spies existed, even then. They had to realize that, at this time when agricultural failure and overpopulation were widespread, any people who conquered Troy were not going to stop there. The probability of Irish warriors not having fought with their kinfolk at Troy is virtually zero. The ending is wishfully compromised

with a fantastic tale about Caol, his guts held in place only by his battle harness, swimming out to sea to stop the sole continental survivor of the war from summoning his brethren to a defenseless and depopulated island. Yet after the war, that is no doubt the condition in which the “invading” Celts found the islands. The impossible wish that no foreigners would escape (and that they left home without telling anyone where they were going) is expressed early in the myth; but even then, it is acknowledged that “on our side few will be left living and none without wounds.”

The beginning of the previous paragraph tells us that the war had been long expected. This too is consistent with the archaeological record and the prehistory that has been inferred from it.

More than in most myths, “The Battle of Ventry” stresses that the defenders are outnumbered. Conn Crithir, an Irish sentry and super hero, is said to slay four hundred men of the enemy on the first day.

Both the “King of France” and the “King of Norway” are fabled enemy leaders. The latter had a “venomous shield with red flames, and if it were put under the sea not one of its flames would stop blazing, and the king himself was not hotter from any of them.” The fire of this shield is a displacement of the hotter fires needed to forge iron and steel. By the start of the Trojan War, 1194 B. C., the continental Achaean leaders would have had lots of iron and steel. They came not so much for the tin as for plunder. By the end of the war, 1183 B. C., all the iron weapons of the Fir Bolg and Trojan lords had come out of hiding to be used in battle. Thus, everyone knew bronze weapons to be obsolete, which is why the [Isleham Hoard](#) remained intact up to recent days. The affinity of the Norway King with fire and water also suggests that he’s a reincarnated Neanderthal. Obsessional fear of *Homo erectus* using the bow and arrow and the typical heroic-myth taboo against mentioning the weapon are combined in a most interesting fashion:

“On the following day, the foreigners came in thousands; for the High King had resolved to put an end to the struggle. Conan Maol, who never spoke well of any man, had a power that he knew not himself, and that no one in Erin knew except Fin. [*H Conan is the well-known, manic depressive character in Irish mythology with the strip of black “sheep’s wool” running down his back. He’s clearly a hybrid.*] When Conan looked through his fingers at any man, that man fell dead the next instant. [*H “Looking through one’s fingers” means using the unmentionable weapon, launching arrows.*]

Fin never told Conan of this, and never told anyone; for he knew that Conan would kill all the Fenians when he got vexed if he knew

his own power [*H to avenge his similarly killed, Homo erectus ancestors*]. When the foreigners landed, Fin sent a party of men with Conan to a suitable place, so that when the enemies were attacking, these men would look with Conan through their fingers at the enemy, and pray for assistance against them. [*H Archers were strategically placed on hilltops to rain down arrows on the enemy.*]

When Conan and his men looked through their fingers, the enemy fell dead in great numbers, and no one knew that it was Conan's look alone, without prayers or assistance from others, that slew them." --Curtin, 1894: 542-543

*"Looking through their fingers" refers to launching arrows. The alternative interpretation, that pagan warriors might pray on the battlefield, is a latter-day Christian contribution. Such passivity and servility sharply differ from Caesar's accounts of Celtic ancestors who were too proud to assume a humiliated profile even after defeat. The suggestion of this is an insult to their memory and a monument to Christian stupidity.*

Hoping to turn the tide of the battle, the High King challenged Fin to single combat. "Fin accepted, though he was greatly in dread; for he knew that the trunk of the High King's body was formed of one bone, and that no sword in the world could cut it but the king's own sword, which was kept in the Eastern World by his grandsire, the King of the Land of the White Men."

This reference to the "Land of the White Men" appears to be a stone-old memory of the Indo-Europeans coming out of the Transcaucasian area. The "single-bone trunk of the King's body that could only be cut by the sword in the Eastern World" refers to iron body armor and swords. Confirm, again, as I said at the top of this chapter; the tin lords and their vassals were hiding their iron weapons and exerting every effort to deny the existence of and stop the spread of iron. The myth goes on to tell how Fin had to resort to deception to acquire this sword. *But the actual deception was all the devious strategies of the tin lords to stop the knowledge of and spread of iron metallurgy from its Transcaucasian or Black Sea Region source. Only thus could they maintain high prices for the tin and bronze that they were monopolizing. Fin and the Tin Lords would have already been in possession of their own iron weapons and armor, but these would have been locked up and hidden until the military situation demanded their use.*

As you can see, aside from the usual braggadocio and cultural narcissism, these Irish myths from the popular tradition are authentic. They are full of encoded history of the Trojan War and the Species War; and although the popular mythology is like the official Goidelic-Celt mythology of the classical

manuscripts, it is not (as Wilkens [p.49] concludes from his interpretation of Homer) identical.

Whenever a popular and a manuscript version of the same myth exist, the popular version is almost always more authentic and richer in detail. And the nature of these differences suggests that the popular, richer tradition is older and is that of the Fir Bolgs. You have just seen some good examples of this. If the Goidelic Celts had their way, the world would not have remembered that there ever was a Trojan War, much less that it occurred in Britain. They would have expunged the memory of the Eastern Mediterranean conflagrations too -- as was very nearly accomplished.

One of Curtin's popular myths makes it absolutely clear that it descends from the Fir Bolgs and their defrocked druids. The very first line reads, "Long ago there were people in Erin called Fir Bolgs; and they lived undisturbed many years, till a king called Balor Beimen came from Lochlin (Denmark) with great forces, made war on the Fir Bolgs, killed their kings and drove them out of Erin." This association of the Fomorian king with the Danes appears to condense the Species War, the glacial thaw and Great Flood circa 14634 BPE that drove the Fir Bolgs from the Isles, the Trojan War of the late second millennium B.C. and the Viking conquests of the 10th century. This myth, "Balor of The Evil Eye and Lui Lavada His Grandson," is apparently an older, more original version of the Irish myth of Lugh, the sun god. It contains many details that are missing from the manuscript version: early history of the Fir Bolgs; suggestions that Balor's eye was once thought to be the sun itself, which Balor had stolen; the story of how Lugh (or Lui Lavada) acquired the appellation "of the long [*H Neanderthal*] arm;" *etc.* This myth is in Curtin's, *Hero Tales of Ireland*.

Have you figured out yet that the third place that condensed into Plato's "Atlantis," other than Paleolithic Greece and Mesolithic and Bronze Age Britain, was Bronze Age Crete? An *unintentional* blending of recollections of the two Bronze Age settings probably resulted from many of the descendants of the people involved in the overthrow of Crete in the fifteenth and fourteenth centuries B.C. participating in the Trojan War in the twelfth century B.C. Images of both places were transmitted from generation to generation within these families and their communities. This blending of recollections was aggravated by these first and second millennium peoples' poor knowledge of world geography. Geographic knowledge was about as rare then as the knowledge of nuclear physics is today. I'll finish interpreting Plato's "Atlantis" in the next appendix.

But first, notice that the "Atlantis" and "Troy" that Homer and Diodorus described were almost always Britain. [The one possible exception is Homer's reference to the "Trojans" having made a campaign against "Asia, which lay to the east of (them)."] As Professor Burton informed us [above](#), through classical

times, the Greeks thought that northern Africa was part of Asia. Homer was probably making this mistake in that passage.] Diodorus even articulated some of the subtle differences between Atlantean and (Goidelic) Celtic mythology. Both identified themselves as ancestors of Neanderthal -- as you would expect of peoples who had gone to the British Isles, which were widely recognized as the "Land of the Dead," the land where Neanderthal had made his last stand. Recall that the Fir Bolgs claimed to be descended from Nemed and Partholan. The latter and his people were giants who had come into Ireland from the west, from beyond the Atlantic Ocean, from Tir-na-nOg. The Goidels (the "Sons of Miled") also claimed to be descended from an "underworld" god. "Miled, whose name occurs as a god in a Celtic inscription from Hungary, is represented as a son of Bil. Bil, like Balor, is one of the names of the god of Death, i. e. of the Underworld" (Rolleston: 130). As with the Greek Cronus, Bil probably became king of the underworld after his defeat in the Species War. So, the Goidels and especially the Fir Bolgs were less inclined than the Greeks to distinguish between "earth-born primeval men" and "Promethean" men, between Titans and Olympians. The Fir Bolgs, and perhaps the Pritani, were the megalith builders of the British Isles. The Fir Bolgs were the people who knew most about Neanderthal and probably wrested the British Isles from him. The Fir Bolgs and the Pritani would have been more inclined to identify with the "good" Neanderthals and to distinguish only between "good" (Tuatha de Danaan) and "bad" (Fomorian) gods.

These peoples of the far west, especially the Pritani and the Fir Bolgs, were intensely-religious and, accordingly, produced the best mythology, mythology that others tended to imitate. Diodorus distinguishes "Atlanteans" according to these same subtleties. Listen:

*[H In the myths about the Amazons, prior to their being conquered by Heracles,] "the first people against whom they advanced, according to the tale, was the Atlanteans, the most civilized men among the inhabitants of those regions, who dwelt in a prosperous country and possessed great cities; [H The tin-rich Isles prospered from trade. The people most engaged in trade had to value reciprocity and be among the first to abstain from the blood sacrifice and captive-taking. This minimal civility toward strangers, which both Plato and Diodorus attributed to the "Atlanteans," had to characterize the Fir Bolgs, Britons, Trojans, Mycenaean and Cretans before the more isolated peoples adopted it.] **it was among them, we are told, that mythology places the birth of the gods, in the regions that lie along the shore of the ocean,** in this respect agreeing*



with those among the Greeks who relate legends... [H *Emphasis mine*. In V.46.1-3 and V.77.3-7 Diodorus says the same of the Cretans; but here, Atlanteans “along the shore of the ocean” means Britons.]

Now the Atlanteans, dwelling as they do in the regions on the edge of the ocean and inhabiting a fertile territory, are reputed far to excel their neighbors in reverence towards the gods and the humanity they showed in their dealings with strangers, [H *Again he stresses the civility to strangers.*] and **the gods, they say, were born among them.** [H *Emphasis mine*. For the gods to have been born among the Atlanteans, “along the shore of the ocean,” tells us something extremely important, something that enables us to identify the location of “Atlantis” with absolute certainty. For 37 years, my unconscious mind kept sending me back to Diodorus’ “Atlantis” material. I knew that there was something important that I was overlooking. Not until near the completion of my audiobooks did I get it. Do you see it?] And their account, they maintain, agrees with that of the most renowned of the Greek poets when he represents Hera as saying:

*For I go to see the ends of the bountiful earth,  
Oceanus source of the gods and Tethys divine  
Their mother.* [H *Emphasis mine*. Confirm  
Oceanus’ Atlantean home to be the birthplace of the gods.]

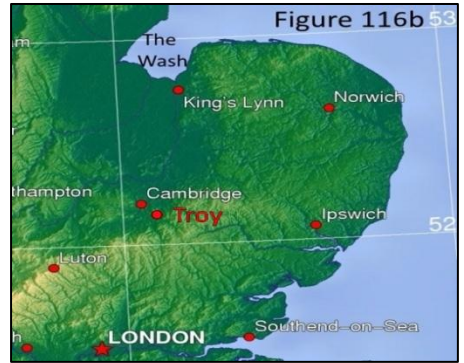
[H *Iliad XIV* says that Oceanus, the eldest Titan represented the ocean stream surrounding the earth. He married Tethys who was, of course, his sister.] This is the account given in their myth: their first king was Uranus, and he gathered the human beings, who dwelt in scattered habitations, within the shelter of a walled city [H *Troy was surrounded by an earthen mound.*] and caused his subjects to cease from their lawless ways and their bestial manner of living, discovering for them the uses of cultivated fruits, how to store them up [H *which was especially important in temperate climates*] and not a few other things that are of benefit to man; and he also subdued the larger part of the inhabited earth, in particular the regions to the west and north. [H *Like Osiris and Tonapa/Tarapaca/Viracocha, this primal father was a culture hero. Note also a standard reference to lingering fears of Neanderthal survivors in the north.*] And since he was a careful observer of the stars, he foretold many things that would take place throughout the world; and for the common people he

introduced the year based on the movement of the sun and the months on that of the moon, and instructed them in the seasons which recur year after year”... [*H We know that the Druids had a center in Britain; and the ring monuments, especially Stonehenge, testify to the keen interest of the people of the isles in the stars.*] (Diodorus: 56.)

To Uranus, the myth continues, were born forty-five sons from a number of wives, and, of these, eighteen, it is said, were by Titaea, each of them bearing a distinct name, but all as a group were called, after their mother, Titans. [*H Notice that this explanation of the origin of the word further suggests that the Titan mythology did, like Uranus, originate in “Atlantis.” Names are the first thing dropped or forgotten when stories are borrowed.*] Titaea, because she was prudent and had brought about many good deeds for the peoples, was deified after her death by those whom she had helped; and her name was changed to Gê... [*H Next follows the myth about Basileira, which I have related elsewhere. She married one of her many Titan brothers; the other jealous brothers killed the husband and her babies by him; the baby boy, Helius, urged her not to mourn and said that*] the Titans would meet the punishment which they deserve, while he and his sister would be transformed, by some divine providence, into immortal natures, since that which had formerly been called the “holy fire” in the heavens would be called by men Helius (the sun) and that addressed as “menê would be called Selenê (the moon). (Diodorus: 57) [*H Although this myth rationalizes the killing of the Titans and the Species War, it describes that conflict as being one that is between demons and men and not between demons and the sun. It reflects that stage of worship in which religious rites shifted from being centered at the chamber-tombs (solar ships) to the new ceremonial centers, the ring monuments. At these primitive observatories, the regularity of the sun’s movement was demonstrated time and again. It would have been concluded that demons could only play tricks to lessen man’s solar exposure. They couldn’t entirely steal the sun. Also, since Troy/Atlantis was increasingly dependent upon trade and decreasingly dependent upon its own agriculture, other, more relevant fears (war, maritime disaster and disease) began to dominate the activities of demons and the imaginations of priests.*

*Helius and other sun gods of the ring monument stage were weak sun gods.]*

After the death of Hyperion [*H Basileira's brother-husband*], the myth relates, the kingdom was divided among the sons of Uranus, the most renowned of whom were Atlas and Cronus. Of these sons, Atlas received as his part the regions on the coast of the ocean, *and he not only gave the name of Atlanteans to his peoples but likewise called the greatest mountain in the land Atlas.* [*H Atlas was a "good" Neanderthal with whom our British ancestors identified.*] They also say that he perfected the science of astrology and was the first to publish to mankind the doctrine of the sphere; [*H Translator Oldfather's note here says that the spherical nature of the stars is referred to, but these Bronze Age people apparently also knew that Earth was spherical.*]; and it was for this reason that the idea was held that the entire heavens were supported upon the shoulders of Atlas, the myth darkly hinting in this way at his discovery and description of the sphere. There were born to him a number of sons, one of whom was distinguished above the others for his piety, justice to his subjects, and love of mankind, his name being Hesperus. This king, having once climbed to the peak of Mount Atlas, was suddenly snatched away by mighty winds while he was making his observations of the stars, and never was seen again; and because of the virtuous life he had lived and their pity for his sad fate the multitudes accorded to him immortal honors and called the brightest of the stars of heaven after him... [*H Note the powerful identification with Neanderthal and the fantastic reaction formation to deluge guilt and fear. More of the same follows with respect to Atlas's daughters, the Atlantides.*] These daughters lay with the most renowned heroes and gods and thus became the first ancestors of the larger part of the race of human beings, giving birth to those who, because of their high achievements, came to be called gods and heroes; [*H The most heroic, rich and effective people were all identified with Neanderthal. They wore the Fifth Mask. Time and again, Irish mythology similarly seeks to neutralize obsessional fear, guilt and paranoia toward Homo erectus by detailing instances of alleged intermarriage.*] --



Diodorus.III.60. The next section, III.61, distinguishes Cronus as the evil Titan.

Ok, now you have seen most of Iman Wilkens' evidence as to where Troy really was. You've seen the censored and distorted but still clear mythology detailing the Irish participation in the Trojan War, and you've seen Diodorus' information about "Atlantis" and Troy. If you have followed up to this point, you have no doubt that Iman and I are correct in insisting that Homer's Troy was on the Gog Magog hills of the Plains of Cambridge. You probably also suspect by now that I am correct when I tell you that, Plato's confusion and pretensions notwithstanding, "the island empire of Atlantis" was the British Isles. There are many details, yet to come, that will assure you that "Atlantis" and the British Isles are the same.

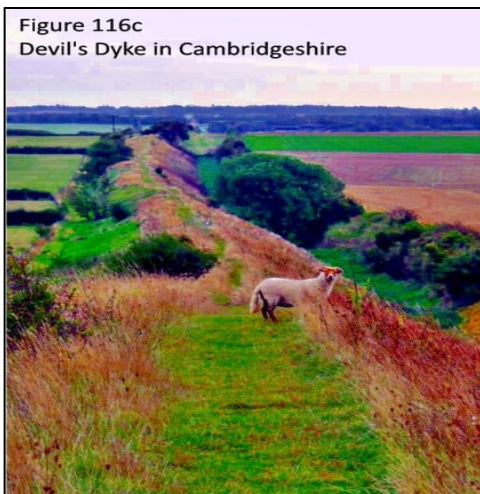
But before we get to those details, have you seen the forest through the trees? Have you spotted what I so long overlooked in Diodorus' material? *Do you see why the European "Land of the (Homo erectus) Dead" (the British Isles) and the European "Birthplace of the gods" must be the same?* For every people, it was only when their chapter of the Species War ended, when the last of the *Homo erecti* were killed off, that they became gods. It was only then that the fear and loathing felt toward them subsided enough for *Homo sapiens* to get in touch with their positive emotions for their parent species. Only then did the *Homo erecti* become objects of extreme ambivalence. Only then did they become divine.

We should have concluded the same of Chicomoztoc ("Seven Caves") and Teotihuacan in Chapter 35. Recall that Durán was subconsciously aware of the fact that Chicomoztoc was the most difficult place to root the *Homo erecti* out of. Why else would he have mentioned Chicomoztoc and "the method by which Aztecs hunted snakes" in adjoining paragraphs? Add to our observations in Chapter 35 the fact that, on moonless nights, the *Homo erecti* would have made stealthy counterattacks against the archer/snipers that were lying in wait for them. Conclude that Chicomoztoc, at Teotihuacan, was the place where *Homo erectus*, of Mesoamerica and perhaps all of the Western Hemisphere, made his last stand. That's why, for our *Mesoamerican* ancestors, "the gods were born at Teotihuacan."

Before I can further prove to you that Plato and the Athenians deliberately compromised the Atlantis myth – important prehistory that Plato included in two of his works, you must first understand what unconscionable and despicable liars and scoundrels every generation of the K ruling class and their politicians and strategic servants (*e. g.* archaeologists) are. Now I'm going to show you the outrageous Trojan evidence, the evidence that they have always been aware of but insist upon hiding and denying. For any of you who think that "Conspiracy

Theory” is an educational movie, who don’t know that every county seat, state and national capital where laws are made is a complex nexus of conspiracies, listen carefully to a couple of basic laws of social science: 1) in any savage K and R society, whenever savages meet privately and regularly, it is inevitable that they will discover their common interests, identify the parties opposed to those interests and plot and scheme to neutralize or eliminate those other parties. That’s why (in English) we refer to any group that meets privately and regularly as a “club.” 2) In any savage K and R society, the most incorrigible and despicable scoundrels are the savages who are the most “successful,” the Ks. Ok, we’ve all quit Disneyland and fairyland now for the real world. You’re ready for the most outrageous Trojan evidence. Right?

Figure 116b, is a topographical map of the Cambridge Plain. I have entered Troy on a little elevated dot south of Cambridge City that appears to be the Gog Magog hills. We have already used the knowledge of the Australian Aborigines and Figure 105c to interpolate sea level at the time of the Trojan War (1194-1183 BC) and determined that it was roughly 13 feet higher than today. The Wash would have been greatly expanded at that time. The Fir Bolgs/Belgae/Pelasgians told us that the “Fomorians” (glacial meltwater) chased them out of Ireland; and after a 5 ky stay in Greece, they returned. See [this passage](#). I suggest that their sabbatical in Greece or the Carpathian Basin was for 7-8 ky and that they remembered it as five thousand because the number five associates with work; and by all accounts, they had to work very hard as immigrants in a foreign land. They probably returned 5.5 to 4.5 kya. This was at the Holocene temperature and sea level maximum, with sea level thirty feet higher than it is today. Look at Figure 116b and realize that Troy, the Gog Magog hills, would have been an island at this time! It may have very well have fit the capital of the Atlantean Empire, founded by “Poseidon,” and the island that Plato described in Chapter 1. If the Fir Bolgs were, as we suspect, among the first bronze smiths and had bronze to trade, they probably could have purchased the island for a few bronze goods the way the Dutch purchased Manhattan Island six or *seven* ky later. They would have wanted to purchase and live on an island 1) for defensive purposes and 2) to prevent trespassers from spying on their bronze-making.





You can guess, by looking at [the map](#) that they would have needed dykes only to the west, south and east of

Troy. The Wash to the north originally extended all the way to Troy and was the base for their navy of wickerwork, hide-covered boats. It is not easy to find information about the war dykes that they built. Farmers have leveled large sections and the elements have also taken a toll on them. *But there were at least five of them, and most of them are near Troy and on its southwestern, southern and eastern sides. All these have or had ditches dug on their outland side.* They are:

Black Ditches, which are in two sections. These remains total 7.2 km in length. They are near Cavenham in the westernmost part of Suffolk, close to Cambridgeshire and are the least well preserved of the dykes;

Bran Ditch is 5 km in length;

Brent Ditch is 2-3 meters high and 2 km long. Most of it has been lost;

Devil's Dyke is 12.1 km long; in some places the bank measures 9 meters (30 ft) high and 36.5 meters (120 ft) across;



Figure 116d: Fleam Dyke

(Photo courtesy of David Gruar. Licensed under CC BY-SA 2.0 via Wikimedia Commons - [http://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Fleam\\_Dyke.jpg#/media/File:Fleam\\_Dyke.jpg](http://commons.wikimedia.org/wiki/File:Fleam_Dyke.jpg#/media/File:Fleam_Dyke.jpg))



Fleam Dyke has one surviving section consisting of a massive bank and ditch, 6.5 km in length.

These dykes around Troy to its east, south and southwest totaled more than 32.8 km in length. The conquerors told the world and even most of the British people still today believe that these dykes were built during the Iron Age (400 BC to 100 AD) to control commerce along many of the Roman roads that parallel them. Many others, like Richard Mudhar believe that they were built by the Saxons, who invaded Briton circa 450 A.D. Mudhar's <https://suite.io/richard-mudhar/1qr82nh> is the best website for photos of the dykes, but these contentions that the dykes were built at any time other than the Bronze Age are idiotic. Archaeologists all know better. At least two of the dykes, the Devil's Dyke cited above and another "Devil's Dyke" near Brighton that we'll consider below both *have barrows (chamber tombs) built on top of them*. Mudhar acknowledges the one on the Cambridgeshire Devil's Dyke. Yet all the antiquaries and



archaeologists know that the long barrows, chamber tombs, were built in the early Bronze Age. How could the barrows get on top of the dykes if they were built before the dykes? Moreover, where in the world are dykes like these needed for commerce? How many surround your town? See Figures 116c, the Devil's Dyke in Cambridgeshire and 116d, above, Fleam Dyke, to the east of it.

Moreover, everyone knows that the Iron Age and the time of the Angles, Saxons and Jutes invasion were Dark Ages for the British Isles. The Romans quit the place because there was nothing there worth stealing. Wikipedia at "British Iron Age" estimates that by the first century BC there were only three or four million people in all of Britain. The life expectancy in this poor, backwater land was only 30 for those lucky enough to reach age 5. All the people who built these massive structures had to be fed, and it is inconceivable that a poverty-stricken, sparsely populated country could have built them. In their day, these dykes were each the labor-equivalent of the Dubai Tower.

Now consider the military situation. The Achaeans' first objective was to 1) defeat or bottle up the Trojan navy. As soon as this was accomplished, the next objectives were to 2) lay siege to Troy and bottle up the Trojan leaders, and 3)

isolate the Cornwall tin deposits. (Stop their appropriation of additional tin revenue.) See Figure 116e, above.

Bottling up their navy would have been relatively easy. Besieging Troy took all eleven years. Isolating the tin mines probably proved much easier than it at first appeared. Practically speaking, it was impossible for the Achaeans to blockade the whole Cornwall Peninsula; but, as we'll see, they didn't need to. They could cut off the overland transport of ore from Cornwall by investing and holding a line that extended from the southern coast to Bridgewater and through the Dorset Cursus to the southern coast. In a moment, you'll see how this line was virtually sufficient for controlling the sea transport of tin ore too. I'm sure that this strategic military objective is what gave the town and the bay their name. The Bridgewater/Dorset line would have been invested permanently (throughout the war). It ran through the lowlands. The lowlands were strategic for two reasons: 1) infantry and wagons could move quickly through them and 2) the rich farms of the rich bottom-lands could supply food for permanently stationed troops. Of course, the Trojans anticipated this; so, the first dyke they built outside of Cambridgeshire would have been the Dorset Cursus, which on my Figure 116e is the little blue line crossing the black dotted line. The Dorset dyke blocks the valley that runs through the hills north and slightly west of Poole and Bournemouth. The Wikipedia article on the Dorset Cursus admits that it dates from 3300 B.C. It is 10 km long and required an estimated .5 million worker hours to build. They would have had to become unbelievably rich before they would have even dreamed of building war dykes. Looking eastward along the southern coast, we see that the next most vulnerable point is the pass just west of Brighton that runs through the ridge that is parallel to the coast. Indeed, this is the location of the famous Devil's Dyke of West Sussex (the little blue line that crosses my yellow, dotted line in Figure 116e). See the dyke in Figure 116f, above. It is described as a 100-meter-deep, v-shaped valley. The Wikipedia article admits that this dyke has been used "during the iron age and earlier for defensive purposes." The geology section of the article explains how glacial meltwater formed the rivers that cut through the chalk in various places. But the article misleads the reader by implying that the dyke was entirely formed by natural processes – without explaining how the river-cut valley got filled in. I am unable to find any clear, close-up photos, and that's probably no accident.

The battle for the Dorset/Bridgewater line had been joined, as expected at the Dorset dyke. But the Achaeans were clever. Instead of attacking from the south, they landed at Bridgewater (the city was close to the water in those days) and attacked from the north. The Trojans defended the dyke well, and it was a long and protracted battle that ensued. Look at what Wiki says:



“The Cursus consisted of a pair of parallel banks (1.5 m tall) running about 82 m apart, with external ditches 1.5 m deep and 2 m wide. One bank is regular, whilst the other meanders, suggesting that the former was laid out first and the latter was dug using the former as a reference.”

The irregular bank, which the Achaeans hastily built with land dug up at their feet to defend themselves from Trojan counter-attack, was the north bank.

Now, let's return the Welsh *Mabinogion* tale, [above](#). Regardless of how “regal” a hill were and how good the view from it, no one would “camp out” on a hill for 80 years. Assume that 80 is perfectly exaggerated by the “perfect number,” 10. Divide 80 by 10, and we get 8. There *is* a strategic military task that the Achaeans may have had to undertake for the last 8 years of the war. As soon as they won the battle at the Dorset Cursus and invested the Bridgewater/Dorset line, they gained control of the peninsula. They positioned scouts atop the Cornwall hills. In conjunction with spies near the mines, these scouts used fire, smoke or reflected light to tell the Achaean navy when and where to intercept slow-moving boats laden with ore. The “seven Welshmen” were an Achaean signal corps looking closely and constantly at Cornwall.

Now that we know this, the rest of the *Mabinogion* myth makes perfect sense – the usual lies, hypocrisy and other defense mechanisms notwithstanding. These scouts were awarded estates in Wales because the new Achaean lords of England needed loyal subjects to serve as a bulwark between themselves and the Irish. Over time, these transplants pretended to be of Irish descent for the same reason that Plato and the Athenians pretended to be of Achaean descent. They needed to improve their relations with their neighbors.

The Irish did briefly conquer Wales and parts of western Scotland in the sixth century AD. But the Welsh purveyors of this myth are not likely to be descended of *both* the Goidels (Achaeans) who conquered Troy and the Irish who briefly conquered Wales. Moreover, Cornwall was not a part of that Irish conquest. Nor would that brief conquest have evoked recollections of the Species War that are also in the *Mabinogion* myth.

Yet, for the soldiers of the conquerors to have been given estates -- anywhere -- was a pretty good deal. What do they get nowadays? They get a GI Bill of Rights that entitles them to a few years of tuition at a college that mostly lies to them and free medical care in a lousy VA hospital. They ought to at least get stock in a gas or oil company!

Now you know that the legacy of the Trojan War has always been carved into the English countryside, in full and obvious view for the whole world to see. Only the perpetuation of the most stupid and obvious lies by the successors of the



worst gangsters and savages has prevented the world from knowing the truth. There is only one more fact about Troy that I must share with you to complete the big picture of Troy and Plato's "Atlantis."

In the summer of either 1997 or 1996 (I forget which), while I was still in CUNY law school, I picked up a taxi fare in Brooklyn. A man in his fifties got into the front seat, and his family

crammed into the back. I asked him the usual question that I asked all my taxi customers: "What do you do?"

He raised his chin, threw out his chest and answered, "I am the Director of the Turkish National Museum." (I swear to you that this actually happened. I will take a lie detector test for anyone who doubts me. Hsarlik, the hill fortress town that Heinrich Schliemann discovered and that the international K class is disguising as Troy, is in northwest Turkey; but at this time, I already knew where Troy really was.) I couldn't restrain myself. I burst out laughing.

"What's so funny!" he said.

"Well," I said, "you know, don't you, that Homer's Troy, the original Troy, was on the Plains of Cambridge in England."

With that, his face turned blue. He grabbed his chest and started convulsing. He was having a heart attack right in my cab. I was afraid I was going to have a corpse on my hands. Fortunately, he recovered. When he did, he leaned toward me, looked me dead in the eye and whispered, "How do you know?"

I could shame this man by looking up his name and inserting it here, but let's be positive. I'll fill up what remains of this chapter and Figure 116g with some of the names and faces that deserve to be remembered.

We need to answer only one more question to complete the big picture of Troy and "Atlantis." Put yourself in the place of the Trojan War survivors. You abandoned your North Atlantic farm when it failed. The world all around you has descended into chaos. What was the wealthy capital of the world is now in ruin.

Epidemics of cholera, trauma and disease are spreading from the corpses that are strewn everywhere. Your best security comes from closely attaching yourself to your soldier/comrades. But none of you want to remain in this cold, ruined and waterlogged land, whose tin deposits are now worth nothing and nightmares of which will haunt you for the rest of your lives. Fortunately, you each still have your weapons and a few precious coins or other objects of plunder. ***Where do you go from here?*** You go to Greece and other, balmy Mediterranean locations.

The Trojans and Fir Bolgs, familiar with those coastlines, identified what was to become Athens, a place with an excellent harbor and mostly sea and mountain boundaries they could easily defend. The Achaeans, most of them farmers, liked the large Peloponnesian Peninsula. As we've seen, it would be very hard for the two sides to unite against the Persians. But unite they did, as necessary to defeat Xerxes in 479 B.C. Only 48 years later, the Athenians and their coastal, trading allies were once more fighting the Achaeans in the Peloponnesian Wars. On the Peloponnesian Peninsula, two *Achaean Leagues* were founded. The second one lasted until 168 B.C., when the Romans dissolved it. Old habits die hard.

Since Greek religion and prehistory, both the Homeric half and the Atlantean half, are almost entirely about the Trojan War and (less consciously) the Species War; what did the pre-Trojan War Greeks contribute, and what happened to them? *The answers are nothing and nobody knows or cares.* As Thucydides informs us in his *Peloponnesian Wars*, 1.2, prior to the Trojan War, especially, prior to the fall of Troy; the various enclaves that are now Greece were occupied by roving bands of marauders. Each one's tenure was only expected to last until a larger and more violent group showed up. The military skills and discipline developed at Troy enabled Trojan War veterans to displace their predecessors, establish permanent city-states and partially tame a lawless land. Fully taming Greece and the world requires other, new skills, skills of statesmanship and social science.

## ***G. Understanding Ice Cycles as We Must to Interpret what Remains of Plato's Atlantis and Pin Down the Start of the Neolithic***

*The world was so recent that many things lacked names, and to indicate them it was necessary to point. --Gabriel Garcia Marquez*

*I have been through some terrible things in my life, some of which actually happened. --Mark Twain*

On April 2<sup>nd</sup> of 2015, less than three years after leaving Kunming University (where I was confined mostly to teaching English) and less than eight months after returning to the USA from China; I discovered that the Great Flood actually happened (as the next appendix will reveal, circa 14,634 years BPE) and that it had to result from atmospheric carbonation brought on by the discovery of horticulture. At that time, archaeologists were still unanimous in estimating the onset of the Neolithic as circa 12,000 BPE, in Mesopotamia or Egypt. I knew, and stated in early versions 23 of this work, that their estimate for the Neolithic was at least 3 ky too late because they weren't looking for the crop pollen at low enough elevation levels.

On July 22<sup>nd</sup> of 2015, PLOS (the Public Library of Science) published "The Origin of Cultivation and Proto-Weeds, Long Before Neolithic Farming," by Snir A, Nadel D, Groman-Yaroslavski I, Melamed Y, Sternberg M, Bar-Yosef O, *et al.* This research article was edited by Sergei Volis, of the Kunming Institute of Botany, China. (I also publish my works openly, all of them. But in my case, due to censorship, I have no choice.)

Snir *et al.* returned to Ohalo II, what was thought to have been a "hunter-gatherer sedentary camp," located on the southwestern shore of the Sea of Galilee (Lake Kinneret), Israel. It was inhabited during the Last Glacial Maximum (LGM) at ~23,000 years ago and discovered in 1989 when the lake water level dropped drastically following several years of drought and intensive water pumping.

This time, investigation of the "hunter-gatherer sedentary camp" led to the conclusion that,

"Archaeobotanically-rich plant assemblage demonstrates extensive human gathering of over 140 plant species and food preparation by grinding wild wheat and barley. Among these, we identified 13 well-known current weeds mixed with numerous seeds of wild emmer, barley, and oat." -Op. cit.

This time, paleo-botanical investigation was made easier and much more reliable by an understanding of and species-specific search for synanthropic

plants – *proto weeds*. Plowing “led to the proliferation of synanthropic plants. These plant species, both annuals and perennials, exhibit functional and adaptive traits that enable them to withstand the disturbed habitats and increase their biological fitness in natural plant communities altered by natural or anthropogenic forces. Owing to their rapid water uptake (particularly in water-limited habitats), high growth rates, dispersal capabilities, and ability to thrive in areas with altered soil nutrient resources, synanthropic species (later termed weeds) frequently invade newly formed habitats. They were able to rapidly establish extensive populations, especially with the expansion of farming by invading cultivated fields and causing reduced crop yields.” – Op. cit.

*After only a cursory study of the **ice cycle** (one can easily devote a lifetime to this and many do), I can confidently say that the Holocene (the current, warm, interglacial era) did not cause the Neolithic (the onset of farming and concomitant explosion of the human population). The reverse is true. Just as human horticulture caused the evolution of weeds, it (especially the fully-developed farming of plants and animals) caused the Holocene.*

## ICE CYCLES

During the past 2.4 billion years, the Earth has fluctuated between warm periods with little to no ice and cold periods when ice and snow covered or nearly covered the Earth. (See “The History of the Earth,” at <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Q1OreyX0-fw&t=74s.>)

“Ever since the Pre-Cambrian (600 million years ago), ice ages have occurred at widely spaced intervals of geologic time—approximately 200 million years—lasting for millions, or even tens of millions of years. For the Cenozoic period, which began about 70 million years ago and continues today, evidence derived from marine sediments provide a detailed, and fairly continuous, record for climate change. This record indicates decreasing deep-water temperature, along with the build-up of continental ice sheets. Much of this deep-water cooling occurred in three major steps about 36, 15 and 3 million years ago—the most recent of which continues today.

During the present ice age, glaciers have advanced and retreated over 20 times, often blanketing North America with ice. Our climate today is actually a warm interval between these many periods of glaciation. The most recent period of glaciation, which many people think of as the “Ice Age,” was at its height approximately 20,000 years ago.” – “What Triggers Ice Ages,” a video by Kirk Maasch and NOVA, 1996

The causes of ice cycle changes (in average temperature and glaciation) are generally of three sorts: 1) three Earth orbital variables that change in cycles of different length and affect solar exposure, 2) radical changes in the water circulation as determined by the configuration of the continents and 3) changes in the composition of the atmosphere.

Serbian mathematician, Milutin Milankovitch discovered the first set of factors in the first half of the 20<sup>th</sup> Century. They are: a) the ellipticity of the orbit over a full cycle of 96 ky; b) the tilt of Earth's axis relative to the solar plane, which is between 21.5 and 24.5 degrees, over a cycle of 41 ky; and c) the axis of spin wobbles over a period of 23 ky. Based upon their periods and the impact of each variable upon solar exposure, Milankovitch theorized variations of more than twenty percent in the sunshine reaching the northern latitudes. But the extreme minimum or maximum average annual exposure value for each variable occurs only once during its cycle (or *period*), one in 96,000 years for the first one. The odds of the second variable being at its same extreme in the same year as the first are one in 41,000 multiplied by the first probability, and the odds of the third variable being at its same extreme in this year are one in 23,000. The multiple of these three probabilities gives us the probability of all three max or min extremes coinciding. So, the maximum or minimum average annual exposure from Milankovitch variables, a variation as great as plus or minus 20%, is likely to occur in only two of every  $9.0528 \times 10^{13}$  years. So, variations in Milankovitch solar exposure would seem to have only a minor influence upon the ice cycle.

The second variable, radical changes in the water circulation as determined by the configuration of the continents, appears to have been the principal variable over all but the last 23 ky (since the start of agriculture and the concomitant explosion of the human population).

The guru associated with this factor is William A. Berggren of the Woods Hole Oceanographic Institute and Brown University. Listen carefully to the artful and profound introduction to his essay, "Role of Ocean Gateways in Climatic Change," which is within "Climate in Earth History: Studies in Geophysics," a National Academies of Sciences, Engineering and Medicine publication on the web at <http://nap.nationalacademies.org/11798>:

"With its low albedo [*H ratio of light reflected to that received*] and large capacity to store heat, the ocean represents one of the most important components of the global climatic system. With a specific heat per unit mass of 4 times that of air [*H Four times more energy is needed to raise the temperature of water by one degree than to raise air by one degree and over 1.5 as much as for the land.*], water (i.e., the ocean) has a thermal

capacity over 1000 times that of the atmosphere. The energy imbalance from incoming solar radiation between the summer and winter hemispheres and between high and low latitudes results in motions (i.e., transport) in the atmosphere and oceans. The result is a net transport of energy from summer to winter hemispheres and from low to high latitudes. There is little variation at low latitudes in temperature and energy transport. The ocean, with its high thermal capacity, acts as a buffer for such energy changes.

The ocean, at the same time, plays an important role in the meridional transport of energy. The question may then be asked: Has it always been so? The answer is unequivocally no. Present continent-ocean geometry is the result of a long [200 million year (m.y.)] history of changing spatial configurations. The role of gateways (and barriers) is fundamental for recreating the scenario of past circulation histories (and their concomitant effect on paleoclimate). We are only at an early stage in understanding this history, but we can outline the following tentative scenario.

The underlying assumption is the general view that the global climatic cooling characteristic of the Cenozoic is due to natural, earthbound causes, namely the poleward shift of continental masses and the gradual development of a meridional (Cenozoic) rather than latitudinal (Mesozoic) oceanic circulation pattern. Late Neogene (last 15 m.y.) climatic oscillations are, in turn, no doubt the result of the superposition on this global cooling trend of short-term periodic fluctuations in orbital parameters (i.e., the astronomical theory of glaciation, which is less a theory than a mechanism).

The discussion below is presented in two parts. The first deals with a brief summary of the role of the oceans (and their geometry) in heat transfer and thus, ultimately, as a source of climatic change. The second summarizes the main paleogeographic events that have had an influence on oceanic circulation and their effect, where discernible, on climatic evolution.”

As Mr. Berggren’s last paragraph suggests, Earth’s history is at least a million times more complicated than the history and prehistory of man that I deal with. But even simple people like me can feel assured of the major role that the configuration of the continents (water gateways and barriers) played in determining global temperature and the ice cycles if we see a video of how the continents have moved between the warm, Mesozoic Era of the dinosaurs (252 – 66 mya) and now. This breakup and movement of the continents is mostly explained by the expansion and cooling of Earth and by plate tectonics, the plates

that make up Earth's crust rotating due to the molten rock beneath them. They currently rotate at about the pace that our fingernails grow; but over millions of years, even that movement is very dramatic. See the video by Benjamin Burger, a paleontologist at Utah State University, "[What did the Earth Look Like During the Age of the Dinosaurs](#) [H Mesozoic Era]?"

Given the present configuration of the continents and mainly meridional circulation of seawater, we technically are still within an ice age. The increasingly-warm temperatures and lack of ice since the LGM, during this "Holocene" interglacial era, are due mainly, if not entirely, to human activity and the explosion of the human population (from a few million to over 8 billion) since the discovery of horticulture. [See [Figure 130a](#) and note how the sine wave pattern for the ice cycles has been altered as of the onset of the Neolithic (the LGM).] Our consumption of fossil fuels is only the worst part of our activity. Like all animals, we inhale O<sub>2</sub> and exhale CO<sub>2</sub>, a greenhouse gas. Plants, especially trees, usually do the reverse. But we continually worsen the needed animal/plant balance by eliminating trees and exploding our own population. The Great Flood that I uncover in the next appendix will come again soon, and billions of human lives will be cut short.

*We are long overdue to own up to our responsibility for our own behavior and our collective impact upon the environment. We must regard the human population and impact as a variable and accordingly learn to control and regulate it. For if we continue to insanely regard our behavior and impact as a "god-given" constant, as an unchangeable (and savage) "human nature," then we will continue to be unfit for our position on the top of the food-chain, unfit as stewards of the biosphere, unfit to have inherited Marduk's "tablets of fate" (Zurvan's "keys to the future"). If we can't even take responsibility for **our own** behavior and environmental impact, then we are wildly unfit to steward Earth's biosphere and should accelerate the pace of our own extinction so that the raccoons can have their chance at the position.*

## INTERPRETING WHAT REMAINS OF PLATO'S "ATLANTIS"

With the basic understanding of ice cycles that you now surely possess, you'll have no trouble comprehending our ancestors' exposure to glacial and sea level changes. The remaining details of Plato's "Atlantis" will make total sense.

In Chapter Seventeen's overview of the Atlantis myth, I told you that the version with which all of us are acquainted was fashioned by the Athenians. They



rewrote their oral history in an effort to unite the Greek city states for defense against the Persians. I showed you that the Athenians were largely descended from the Trojans and their Irish vassals, the Fir Bolgs. They had monopolized tin in the latter half of the Bronze Age, when tin, which is needed for the smelting of bronze, was highly valued. Prior to and during the Persian Wars, unification of the Greek city states required the Trojan War, the subject of Homer's *Iliad*, to be projected as far back into the past as possible. "Troy" and "Trojan" had to be replaced with the more generic "Atlantis" and "Atlantian," and Athenian ancestors, the actual lords of Troy, were recast as the heroic leaders of peoples defending against an aggressive, Atlantean empire.

In Appendixes D and F, I showed you that, Athenian lies and the usual defense mechanisms notwithstanding; the mythology of the Fir Bolgs and their Trojan/Atlantean/Pelasgian cousins is a legitimate one. Although they left the Isles and returned at least two times, as their myths claim, they were the first *Homo sapiens* inhabitants who took the Isles from *Homo erectus*. As all of Europe had known, theirs was the "Land of the Dead," where European *Homo erectus* made his last stand and "where the gods (of Europe) were born." All of you who have read the foregoing know this. No one has questioned my conclusions or accepted my ongoing challenge to debate anyone, anytime and anyplace on any social science issue. *Many of you that understand the foregoing, may want to skip the rest of this appendix. It merely interprets more of Plato's Atlantis, proving more of the same.* "Why beat a dead horse," you might ask? Why the over-kill?

Because I am 74 years old and still censored. Because I refuse to compromise between true and false as I see them; because I refuse to accept the lies and pretensions of the latent homosexual, Orwellian Big Brothers and Sisters who own all the mass media, control all the schools and rule our class and nation-state societies; I am unable to air my views and compete in ANY of their forums. I still have to give my books away as eBooks and virtually beg people to read them. But I have learned enough about the Big Brother scoundrels and their legions of hirelings and secret police agents to know a bit about how they operate.

As soon as I die, brave and conscientious individuals will feel a moral duty to disseminate my books and videos, the electronic versions of which are all in the public domain and which all deal with the most vital social issues. The efforts of these good people will be offset by the malice of the Big Brothers and Big Sisters. They will publish bogus facsimiles of my works. They will task hordes of venal and ignorant "experts," both seasoned lackeys and new ones that pop up like worms after the rain, "experts" that wouldn't dream of debating me in an open and neutral forum, with criticizing and perverting my works. Were I to omit any of my evidence, I would only make their jobs easier.

That's why I must now analyze line by line, Plato's *Atlantis*. As usual, my interpretations will be bracketed, italicized and preceded by "H."

Solon who was a close friend of Plato's great, great, great, great grandfather. [H *How many of you know anything about your "great, great, great, great grandfather," much less who his friends were? Socrates or Plato were the best persons to sell this yarn due to their reputations as philosophers and honest men. Plato preferred to accept the job, rather than be banished or forced to drink hemlock, as Socrates had done. Plato did wring from them a concession. The last philosophically-idealistic paragraph of the myth concedes that the Atlanteans had lost their divine nature, had become greedy, etc.*] Solon learned of Atlantis while in the Nile delta city of Sais, where an old Egyptian priest said [H *The Egyptians had, what may have been the most stable and continuous civilization in the West. Their library at Alexandria was long one of humanity's best storehouses of knowledge. Attributing the myth to Solon, the wise Athenian jurist, and the Egyptians, adds to its credibility.*]:

Many great and wonderful deeds are recorded of your State in our most ancient histories, but one of them exceeds all the rest in greatness and valor [H *"Let none of you Greeks hesitate to follow the Athenians, a people unrivaled for their greatness and valor."*], for these histories tell of a mighty power that was aggressing wantonly against the whole of Europe and Asia [H *Classical Greeks thought that the Middle East and the known part of Africa (Egypt and Libya) were part of Asia (Herodotus, Book IV, Chapters 1-45).*] and to which your city put an end. [H *"You Greeks did not attack the evil empire. It attacked you."* But Britain and its Cretan middlemen in the East might have seemed to be oppressing peoples by restricting the supply of tin and then reaping exorbitant profits for it. Cadogan seems to confirm my speculation that the Cretans were middlemen for the trade in metals, but he thinks that they got their metals via other middlemen in Central Europe (Cadogan: 16). Barring evidence to the contrary, it is much more likely that they got their tin, bronze and gold more directly from Britain and Iberia. Cadogan's scenario would have forced the Cretans to link up with the Central Europeans on the territory of yet other, coastal middlemen or would have necessitated the employment of other middlemen and additional loading and unloading from wagons to ships. The theory that the Cretans were middlemen is reinforced by Arthur Evans's excavation of the Cretan royal palace at Knossos circa 1900. Beneath the palace is a large-scale storehouse. (Cf. Wunderlich: 42) Moreover, the unmistakable evidence for imported finished products in Crete

*begins c. 2000 B.C. (Cadogan: 16), when Beaker Folk traditions appear ubiquitously in Britain.]*

This power came forth out of the Atlantic Ocean, for in those days the Atlantic was navigable [H *Look closely at Figures [120a](#), [120b](#) and [105c](#). Notice that, at the LGM, about 20 kya, the sea-level was about 400 feet lower than today. The English Channel, the Irish Sea and large parts of the North and Baltic Seas were all above water. As the glaciers started to melt and the sea-level rose, these areas became muddied and impassible until the water rose high enough to make them navigable.*] and there was an island [H *Britain*] situated in front of the straits that you call the Columns of Heracles [H *Gibraltar. Plato's belief that Britain was near Gibraltar is attributable to the Greek ignorance of Northern European geography in the fourth century B.C. (See the [Burton quotation](#) above.)*]; the island was larger than Libya and Asia put together [H *To early navigators, the size of places would have been proportionate to their visual attractions.*] and was the way to other islands [H *Bronze Age navigators traveled the North Atlantic on counterclockwise currents that took them from Britain and Ireland to Iceland to Greenland and Newfoundland.*] and from the islands you might pass through the whole of the opposite continent [H *During warmer times of the Holocene, one can pass through the whole of North America by going between Canadian islands and through Arctic waters.*], which surrounded the true [H *Atlantic*] ocean, for this sea that is within the Straits of Heracles [H *the Mediterranean*] is only a harbor having a narrow entrance, but that other is a real sea, and the surrounding land may be most truly called a continent.

Now, in the island of Atlantis there was a great and wonderful empire that had rule over the whole island and several others, as well as over parts of the continent, and, besides these, they subjected the parts of Libya within the Columns of Heracles as far as Egypt and of Europe as far as Tyrrhenia [H *Tyrrhenia refers to Italy between the Apennines and the Alps. It is only reasonable to assume that Trojan ships bearing gold, tin and bronze put into most of the ports between Troy and Crete. These ports were either founded as colonies or ruled by people whose dependence for metals forced them to become vassals of the tin lords. By controlling tin, the Trojans would have been able to demand military and political support from their trading partners.*]. The vast power thus gathered into one, endeavored to subdue at one blow our country and yours and the whole of the land that was within the straits [H *Any people who were being forced to pay monopoly tin prices or who did not border on the principal sea lanes and paid prices inflated by the revenues of middlemen would have felt victimized by the Trojans and their agents.*], and then, Solon, your country shone forth in the excellence of her virtue and strength among all mankind, for she was the first in courage and military skill and was the leader of the Hellenes. [H *The actual leader*

of the Achaeans (“brothers”) was Argos, which Wilkens identifies as France. Its capital, the original Mycenae, was Troyes on the Seine. --Wilkens: 126-134]

And when the rest fell off from her, being compelled to stand alone, after having undergone the very extremity of danger, she defeated and triumphed over the invaders and preserved from slavery those who were not yet subjected and freely liberated all the others who dwelt within the limits of Heracles [H “*We Athenians can beat the Persians by ourselves, but it would be nice to have the help of you other Greeks.*”].

But afterward there occurred violent earthquakes and floods [H *The sea level did continue to rise sharply between 3300 and 300 B. C. But in garbled Greek oral history, floods may have been thought to have followed the Trojan War because the Great Flood did follow the first world war, the Species War.*], and in a single day and night of rain, all your warlike men in a body sunk into the earth [H *In garbled Greek oral history, floods would have been assumed to take the lives of all the belligerents at Troy because the Great Flood had been assumed by everyone to have been punishment for the Species War.*], and the island of Atlantis in like manner disappeared and was sunk beneath the sea. [H “*You won’t find any place called Atlantis, not because we made up the name, but because it sank beneath the sea. So, forget about all that late Bronze Age fighting.*”] And that is the reason why the sea in those parts is impassable and impenetrable because there is such a quantity of shallow mud in the way, and this was caused by the subsidence of the island...” [H *Three or four times since the LGM, a large southern part of the North Sea and the northern half of the English Channel have immersed from and re-submerged into the sea. See Figure [105c.](#)*] (Donnelly, 1985: 10-11; quoting Plato's Dialogues, ii, 517, Timaeus.)

“Let me begin by observing that nine thousand was the sum of years that had elapsed since the war that was said to have taken place between all those who dwelt outside the Pillars of Heracles and those who dwelt within them [H *Per Eratosthenes, the Trojan War was fought between 1194 and 1183 BC. It ended 683 years before 500 BC, not 9000 years. Crete, an ally of Troy, was last sacked and burned in 1150 BC. Again, they’re saying, “Forget, forget, forget about it!”*]; this war I am now to describe.

Of the combatants on the one side, the city of Athens was reported to have been the ruler and to have directed the contest; the combatants on the other side were led by the kings of the islands of Atlantis, which, as I was saying, once had an extent greater than that of Libya and Asia and, when afterward sunk by an earthquake, became an impassable barrier of mud to voyagers sailing from hence to the ocean. The progress of the history will unfold the various tribes of barbarians and Hellenes that then existed, as they successively appear on the

scene, but I must begin by describing, the Athenians as they were in that day and their enemies who fought with them, and I shall have to tell of the power and form of government of both. Let us give the precedence to Athens...

Many great deluges have taken place during the nine thousand years [H *There appears to have been only one Great Flood, which we will discover in the next Appendix. Peoples living far inland or at high elevations weren't directly affected by it. But everyone learned about it and kept oral history about it, histories based upon varying degrees of hearsay. Thus, "the many great floods."*], for that is the number of years that have elapsed since the time of which I am speaking; and in all the ages and changes of things there has never been any settlement of the earth flowing down from the mountains, as in other places, which is worth speaking of; it has always been carried round in a circle and disappeared in the depths below. The consequence is that, in comparison of what then was, there are remaining in small islets only the bones of the wasted body, as they may be called, all the richer and softer parts of the soil having fallen away and the mere skeleton of the country being left. [H *At coastal and riverine places, soil erosion has always been a problem due to flooding, poor land management, deforestation and the overgrazing of animals. Recall the Fir Bolgs telling us that when driven out of Ireland (by meltwater) and returning to Greece, their arduous job was carrying dirt in bags.*], ...

And next, if I have not forgotten what I heard when I was a child, I will impart to you the character and origin of their adversaries, for friends should not keep their stories to themselves but have them in common. [H *This myth was shared not with friends so much as in an effort to make friends. Yet, this is another hint that Plato learned of the Bronze Age holocaust from his ancestors. The story was passed on through generations of his and other families. "Atlantis" is a composite of "shared" histories.*] Yet, before proceeding farther in the narrative, I ought to warn you that you must not be surprised if you should hear Hellenic names given to foreigners. I will tell you the reason of this: Solon, who was intending to use the tale for his poem, made an investigation into the meaning of the names and found that the early Egyptians, in writing them down, had translated them into their own language, and he recovered the meaning of the several names and retranslated them and copied them out again in our [H *Greek*] language [H *They had to invent a false reason as to why "the Atlanteans," like the Trojans in Homer's Iliad, all had Greek names!*] ...

I have before remarked, in speaking of the allotments of the gods, that they distributed the whole earth into portions differing in extent and made themselves temples and sacrifices. And Poseidon, receiving for his lot the island of Atlantis [H *And Crete. After defeating the Titans (Homo erecti), Zeus, Hades and Poseidon divided the world. Poseidon got the seas, Zeus the sky and Hades the*

underworld. They divided the continents equally. But here, in Plato's Atlantis, composed after the banning of the Titan Cult, Poseidon also symbolizes Uranus, the primal father.], begot children by a mortal woman and settled them in a part of the island that I shall proceed to describe. [H As we have already seen, the "Atlantean" gods are the same as the earliest Greek gods: Uranus and Titaea, Cronos and Rhea, all of the Titans, and Poseidon. We've seen too that many of their myths were the same. The cultural contacts between Greece or Mycenae on the one hand and the Isles on the other, were as [Gordon Childe](#), the father of British archaeology told us, "Too remarkable to dismiss." [Caesar](#) was amazed to discover how many of the Celts spoke Greek. What forced me to conclude with great certainty that the Athenians were mostly descended from the Trojans and Fir Bolgs was the clue I received from my Greek friend, Frank Lountzis: the Parthenon, the temple atop the acropolis where the Athenians held their legislative assemblies was referred to by Herodotus as the "Pelasgic fortress," (Book V, Chapter 64). It was named after the original and principal Homo erectus god of the Fir Bolgs and their Pelasgian (North Atlantic sea peoples) cousins who took the Isles from Homo erectus – Partholan. See Chapter 31 for Partholan. Jacob Grimm has already told us that the Indo-European peoples held their first assemblies in the most sacred oak groves because they believed that the deity dwelled there (Chapter 27). They wanted their god to convene the meeting, and "Parthenon" their guest of honor apparently originated as "Partholan." Later, they claimed that the temple had been built to honor Athena; but virgins were still referred to as Parthenos, which probably meant Parthenon's -- or originally Partholan's -- women.]

On the side toward the sea and in the center of the whole island, there was a plain that is said to have been the fairest of all plains and very fertile. Near the plain again and in the center of the island, at a distance of about fifty stadia there was a mountain not very high on any one side... [H Troy. See [Figure 116b](#) and notice that Wilkens' Troy, the Gog Magog Hills, is, more or less in the center of this area. The hills (not shown on my map), which virtually form a plateau, are not very high on any side. They contain traces of three round fortifications and are surrounded by the trace of a war ditch. Of these, Wilkens says,

"Unfortunately, archaeological excavation work carried out on this site over the past century has been very intermittent and far too fragmentary, due partly to lack of funds and more especially to the fact that nobody has had the slightest suspicion that this is one of the most famous sites in the whole of history. [H By saying "nobody suspected," Iman is either playing dumb or believing the elites' dumb

act.] The first, round hillfort, that of Cherry Hinton, was rapidly investigated at the turn of the century and has since been almost entirely destroyed by the construction of a cement works on the site. The fort had a diameter of 165 m and was surrounded by a ditch 4.50 m deep.

Skeletons, pottery and Iron Age objects were found, but in his final report of 1904, Professor McKenny Hughes, who led the work, remarked that it was very difficult to date the finds because all were in some way “exceptional.” The Copley Hill fort, 3 km southeast of Cherry Hinton, suffered a similar fate and is no longer visible today, but between the two there is the better-preserved Wandlebury Ring, located in a public park of 150 hectares.” --Wilkins: 84-85



**Figure 117a: Wandlebury Ring, the center of what once was Troy**

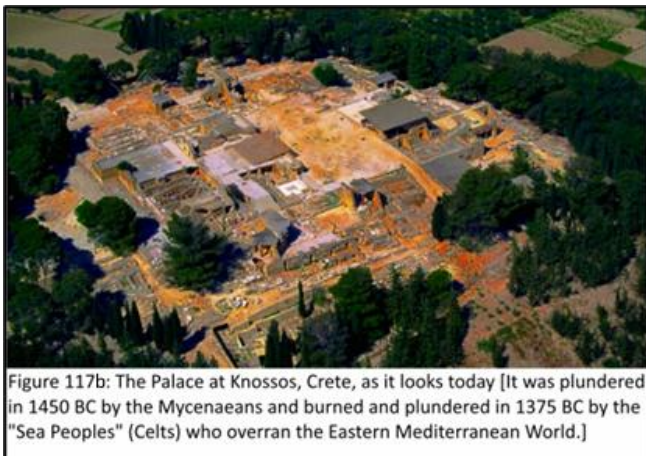
[H See Figure 117a. It is not clear from this passage in Plato's *Atlantis* what is 50 stadia from the hilltop (from Troy) or when this measurement was taken. The Wash, the original Thracian Sea, of 1194 BC is probably intended. If so, then using my guess that a stade referred to the average cast of an arrow with a horn bow (200 yards); Troy, in 1194 BC, at the time of the Trojan War, was 5.68 miles or 9 km from the Wash. This close Wash would be consistent with an ocean level that was fifteen feet higher than today and with the myth's many references to canals and ditches.]

In this mountain there dwelt one of the earth-born primeval men of that country, whose name was Evenor, and he had a wife named Leucippe, and they had an only daughter, who was named Cleito. The maiden was growing up to womanhood when her father and mother died; Poseidon fell in love with her and had intercourse with her [H *Cleito, who is to bear the Atlantean ruling class, was*

368



described earlier as a mortal woman. Here, as the daughter of earth-born Evenor, she is either *Homo erectus* or a hybrid.] and, breaking the ground, enclosed the hill in which she dwelt all round, making alternate zones of sea and land, larger and smaller, encircling one another; there were two of land and three of water, which he



turned as with a lathe out of the center of the island, equidistant every way, so that no man could get to the island, for ships and voyages were not heard of" (Ibid.: 11-14). [H *Extensive defensive works would have been necessary to protect Troy and its fleet. Recall the still-extent war dykes described in Appendix F.*]

He himself, as he was a god, found no difficulty in making special arrangements for the center island, [H *the one now called Wandlebury Ring*] bringing two streams of water under the earth, which he caused to ascend as springs, one of warm water and the other of cold [H *A subterranean spring does run through one of the structures at the royal palace at Knossos, Crete. This "spring house" is near the "caravanserai," which is a hilltop rest house equipped with some of the palace's many baths. (Cf. Wunderlich: 39; Cadogan: 86)*], and making every variety of food to spring up abundantly in the earth. [H *Both Britain and Crete were fertile, but Crete enjoys a year-round growing season if irrigation is provided in the summer. Even after the considerable erosion due to deforestation, Crete's coastal plains and inland valleys produce a bountiful harvest for the export of vineyard products and olives. The island remains self-sufficient in basic foodstuffs (Cadogan: 13-14). At one time, Crete must have been an agricultural paradise. See Figures 117 b and c, the Palace at Knossos.*] He also begot and brought up five pairs of male children, dividing the island of Atlantis into ten portions: he gave to the first-born of the eldest pair his mother's dwelling and the surrounding allotment, which was the largest and best and made him king over the rest; the others he made princes and gave them rule over many men and a large territory. And he named them all: the eldest, who was king, he named Atlas, and from him the whole island and the ocean received the name of Atlantic. To his twin-brother, who was born after him, and obtained as his lot the extremity of the island toward the Pillars of Heracles, as far as the country that is



still called the region of Gades in that part of the world, he gave the name that in the Hellenic language is Eumelus, in the language of the country that is named after him, Gadeirus. [H *Gades (modern-day Cadiz, Spain) was an ancient city located on the island of Erytheia, northwest of Gibraltar at the tip of the Iberian Peninsula and is believed to be one of the most ancient cities still standing in Western Europe.*] Of the second pair of twins, he called one Ampheres and the other Evaemon. To the third pair of twins, he gave the name Mneseus to the elder and Autochthon to the one who followed him. Of the fourth pair of twins, he called the elder Elasippus and the younger Nestor. And of the fifth pair he gave to the elder the name of Azaes and to the younger Diaprepes. [H *As we've learned, in Chapter 3 et. seq., kings and their kith and kin, the royals, the gentry, were everywhere the folks pretending to be more closely related to the Homo erectus gods. Had the rulers of the Isles not donned the Fifth Mask, the people, not just of the Isles, but of Europe, would have forced it upon them. Why? Because all Europe knew that the Isles, western-most Europe, was the last refuge for the Homo erecti. People wanted to believe that Homo erecti had survived, in which case, the British royalty had to be more closely related to them than the rest of us. The "twins" reflects this belief. The two subspecies were often symbolized as twins. Thus, the double-headed eagles on many flags, the twins of the Popol Vuh and Quetzalcoatl's appellation – "Precious Twin." The eldest of each of the five pairs of twins, born to Poseidon and Cleito, symbolized Homo erectus and the younger one symbolized Homo sapiens. As Atlantis was said to consist of ten kingdoms, so too did Athens consist of ten tribes as of the reforms carried out by Cleisthenes in 508 B. C., 18 years prior to the first Persian invasion. These reforms extended the franchise, the rights of citizenship and increased participation in government. Each "tribe" annually elected its own strategus to the war council that was to later also control foreign policy.*]

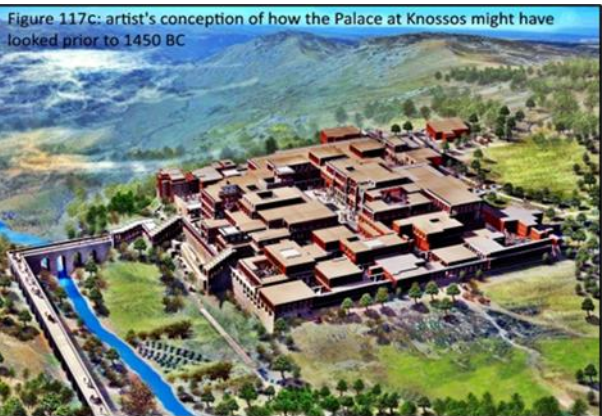
All these and their descendants were the inhabitants and rulers of diverse islands in the open sea, and, as has been already said, they held sway in the other direction over the country within the Pillars as far as Egypt and Tyrrhenia.

Now Atlas had a numerous and honorable family, and his eldest branch always retained the kingdom, which the eldest son handed on to his eldest for many generations [H *Homer's Trojans and the Britons both had hereditary kings.*], and they had such an amount of wealth as was never before possessed by kings and potentates and is not likely ever to be again, and they were furnished with everything that they could have, both in city and country, for, because of the greatness of their empire, many things were brought to them from foreign countries, and the island itself provided much of what was required by them for the uses of life. [H *In the Bronze Age, such incomparable wealth could only be*

*amassed by the possession of a tin monopoly. Britons and the Cretans were the wealthiest peoples of the Bronze Age.]*

In the first place, they dug out of the earth whatever was to be found there, mineral as well as metal and that which is now only a name and was then something more than a name –orichalcum [H *This passage describes the mining of tin at Cornwall and gold around Ireland’s Boyne. Recall discovering the meaning of “orichalcum” in Volume 1.*] ...

There was an abundance of wood for carpenters’ work [H *Both Britain and Crete were well forested.*] and sufficient maintenance for tame and wild animals [H *Perhaps the Trojans also kept wild animals, but the Cretans were apparently great lovers of animals. The rooms and corridors of the 1200 room palace at Knossos have murals and frescoes depicting animals: bulls, birds, mythical animals, cats and dolphins (to name a few).* On his page 44, Cadogan describes it,



*“The frescoes with animal and plant scenes are the most delightful of the Minoan pictures and may do most to show that Minoan Crete was a civilized place to live. There are sea scenes: the best is the dolphin floor from a shrine at Ayia Triadha. There are animals sporting in the flower-strewn meadows of Crete in the springtime, a cat hunting, a monkey picking crocuses, birds such as the partridges from the Caravanserai and the doves from the House of the Frescoes.”*

[H *See my Figure 117d. The Cretans were probably able to purchase exotic African animals from their trading partners, the Ethiopians and the Egyptians.*

*With their tremendous agricultural surplus, animals would have been easy for them to maintain.]*

Moreover, there were many elephants on the island [H *This is probably Crete, where, along with many copper ingots, stores of elephant tusks were found at the Knossos Palace (Cadogan: 14). It is also possible that it refers to mammoths that were in Ireland and Britain in Pleistocene times. Woolly mammoth remains have been found in counties Cork, Waterford and Antrim and in Galway Bay. In the early part of this century [H the 1900s], a mammoth bone was found in Castlepook Cave in Co. Cork, which yielded a radiocarbon date to 35,000 years ago (O'Kelly: 3; citing Mitchell: 59). This contradicts the claim of many Irish archaeologists that modern men didn't come to Ireland until after the Ice Age.*], and there was provision for animals of every kind, both for those that live in lakes and marshes and rivers and for those that live in mountains and on plains and therefore for the animal that is the largest and most voracious of them. Also, whatever fragrant things there are in the earth, whether roots or herbage or woods or distilling drops of flowers or fruits, grew and thrived in that land, and again, the cultivated fruit of the earth, both the dry edible fruit and other species of food that we call by the general name of legumes and the fruits having a hard rind, affording drinks and meats and ointments and good store of chestnuts and the like, which may be used to play with and are fruits which spoil with keeping -- and the pleasant kinds of dessert that console us after dinner when we are full and tired of eating --all these that sacred island lying beneath the sun brought forth fair and wondrous in infinite abundance. All these things they received from the earth [H *Crete*], and they employed themselves in constructing their temples and palaces and harbors and docks, and they arranged the whole country in the following manner:

First, they bridged over the zones of sea that surrounded the ancient metropolis and made a passage into and out of the royal palace, and then they began to build the palace in the habitation of the god and of their ancestors. This they continued to ornament in successive generations, every king surpassing the one who came before him to the utmost of his power, until they made the building a marvel to behold for size and for beauty. And, beginning from the sea, they dug a canal three hundred feet in width and one hundred feet in depth and fifty stadia in length, which they carried through to the outermost zone, making a passage from the sea up to this, which became a harbor and leaving an opening sufficient to enable the largest vessels to find ingress. Moreover, they divided the zones of land that parted the zones of sea, constructing bridges of such a width as would leave a passage for a single trireme to pass out of one into another, and roofed them over; and there was a way underneath for the ships, for the banks of the zones were raised considerably above the water. Now the largest of the zones into

which a passage was cut from the sea was three stadia in breadth and the zone of land which came next of equal breadth, but the next two, as well the zone of water as of land, were two stadia, and the one that surrounded the central island was a stadium only in width. The island in which the palace was situated had a diameter of five stadia. This and the zones and the bridge, which was the sixth part of a stadium in width, they surrounded by a stone wall, on either side placing towers and gates on the bridges where the sea passed in. [H *This suggests a closer Thracian Sea and a more waterlogged plain than that which Wilkens envisioned. Also note that this very low plain of Cambridge has numerous rivers crossing it on their route to the Wash or the Channel. If a portion of the Granta River had overflowed its present banks where it makes a sharp turn due south of the Gog Magog Hills or if the Trojans deliberately diverted part of the Granta around the east side of Troy, then Plato's description of encircling waters would have been accurate for 1200 B.C. The cooling of the climate since then, the drop in the ocean level and the use of irrigation by many generations of farmers has apparently removed every trace of these old waterways.*] The stone that was used in the work they quarried from underneath the center island and from underneath the zones, on the outer as well as the inner side. One kind of stone was white, another black and a third red [H *Crete has gypsum, alabaster, marble and limestone. The limestone is white, the alabaster and marble come in several colors, including red. Marble of many colors was obtainable from the Etruscans. Black obsidian was obtainable from Ethiopia and (black) jet from Asia Minor.*], and as they quarried, they at the same time hollowed out docks double within, having roofs formed out of the native rock. Some of their buildings were simple, but in others they put together different stones, which they intermingled for the sake of ornament, to be a natural source of delight. The entire circuit of the wall that went around the outermost one they covered with a coating of brass, and the circuit of the next wall they coated with tin and the third, which encompassed the citadel, flashed with the red light of orichalcum. [H *Troy*]

The palaces in the interior of the citadel were constructed in this wise: in the center was a holy temple dedicated to Cleito and Poseidon, which remained inaccessible and was surrounded by an enclosure of gold; this was the spot in which they originally begot the race of the ten princes, and thither they annually brought the fruits of the earth in their season from all the ten portions and performed sacrifices to each of them. Here too was Poseidon's own temple, of a stadium in length and half a stadium in width and of a proportionate height, having a sort of barbaric splendor. All the outside of the temple, except for the pinnacles, they covered with silver and the pinnacles with gold. In the interior of the temple, the roof was of ivory, adorned everywhere with gold and silver and

orichalcum; all the other parts of the walls and pillars and floor they lined with orichalcum. In the temple, they placed statues of gold: there was the god himself standing in a chariot -- the charioteer of six winged horses --and of such a size that he touched the roof of the building with his head: around him there were a hundred Nereids riding on dolphins, for such was thought to be the number of them in that day. There were also in the interior of the temple other images that had been dedicated by private individuals. And around the temple on the outside were placed statues of gold of all the ten kings and of their wives; and there were many other great offerings, both of kings and of private individuals, coming both from the city itself and the foreign cities over which they held sway. There was an altar too, which in size and workmanship corresponded to the rest of the work, and there were palaces in like manner that answered to the greatness of the kingdom and the glory of the temple.

In the next place, they used fountains both of cold and hot springs; these were very abundant and both kinds wonderfully adapted to use because of the sweetness and excellence of their waters. They constructed buildings about them and planted suitable trees, also cisterns, some open to the heaven, others that they roofed over, to be used in winter as warm baths: there were the king's baths and the baths of private persons, which were kept apart, also separate baths for women and others again for horses and cattle, and they adorned them suitably. [H *The palace at Knossos is full of baths. The Queen's chamber even had a flush toilet (Wunderlich: 53)!]* The water that ran off they carried, some to the grove of Poseidon, where were growing all manner of trees of wonderful height and beauty, owing to the excellence of the soil; the remainder was conveyed by aqueducts that passed over the bridges to the outer circles, and there were many temples built and dedicated to many gods, also gardens and places of exercise, some for men and some set apart for horses, in both of the two islands formed by the zones, and in the center of the larger of the two there was a race-course of a stadium in width and in length allowed to extend all-round the island, for horses to race in. [H *The British royalty have always been fond of horses, using them for racing, steeple chasing, polo and fox hunting. Although the first regular recorded horse races did not begin until the time of James I, the copious rainfall and flat lands of southern Britain have always been ideal for horses. My guess is that horses were brought to Britain in some of the first ships that returned from the Eastern Mediterranean. They would have brought newborn colts and foals that weigh no more than a large man. These would have been taken from their mothers immediately after birth, fed cow's milk, imprinted with humans and tied by each leg to the side of the ship. Homer's Trojans were famous for their horses too. Note that in Il. XX: 257, quoted above on page 298, Hector boasts that his ancestor possessed three thousand horses.*]

Also, there were guard-houses at intervals for the body-guard, the more trusted of whom had their duties appointed to them in the lesser zone, which was nearer the Acropolis, while the most trusted of all had houses given them within the citadel and about the persons of the kings. The docks were full of triremes and naval stores, and all things were quite ready for use. Enough of the plan of the royal palace. Crossing the outer harbors, which were three in number, you would come to a wall that began at the sea and went all round: this was everywhere distant fifty stadia from the largest zone and harbor and enclosed the whole, meeting at the mouth of the channel toward the sea. [H *Several rivers flow into the Cambridge Plain from a range of hills to the southeast. (See all the rivers in Figure 116b.)*] The entire area was densely crowded with habitation, and the canal and the largest of the harbors were full of vessels and merchants coming from all parts, who, from their numbers, kept up a multitudinous sound of human voices and din of all sorts night and day. I have repeated his descriptions of the city and the parts about the ancient palace nearly as he gave them, and now I must endeavor to describe the nature and arrangement of the rest of the country.

The whole country was described as being very lofty and precipitous on the side of the sea [H *Crete is dominated by harsh mountains rising out of the sea. The island's east-west mountainous range consists of four main groups that rise to the island's highest point, Ídi Mountain, 8,058 feet (2,456 meters) in elevation.*], but the country immediately about and surrounding the city was a level plain, itself surrounded by mountains that descended toward the sea; it was smooth and even, but of an oblong shape, extending in one direction three thousand stadia and going up the country from the sea through the center of the island two thousand stadia; the whole region of the island lies toward the south and is sheltered from the north. The surrounding mountains they celebrated for their number and size and beauty, in which they exceeded all that are now to be seen anywhere, having in them also many wealthy inhabited villages and rivers and lakes and meadows supplying food enough for every animal, wild or tame, and wood of various sorts, abundant for every kind of work. [H *This whole paragraph describes Crete. Crete was sparsely populated, especially around the Palace at Knossos. Amazingly, there are no signs of kitchens or fortifications at the palace.*]

I will now describe the plain, which had been cultivated during many ages by many generations of kings. It was rectangular and for the most part a straight line followed the line of the circular ditch. The depth and width and length of this ditch were incredible and gave the impression that such a work, in addition to so many other works, could hardly have been wrought by the hand of man. But I must say what I have heard. It was excavated to the depth of a hundred feet, and its breadth was a stadium everywhere; it was carried round the whole of the plain

and was ten thousand stadia in length. It received the streams that came down from the mountains and winding round the plain and touching the city at various points was there let off into the sea. From above, likewise, straight canals of a hundred feet in width were cut in the plain and again let off into the ditch toward the sea; these canals were at intervals of a hundred stadia, and by them they brought down the wood from the mountains to the city and conveyed the fruits of the earth in ships, cutting transverse passages from one canal into another and to the city. [H *As the Holocene cooled and the sea level sank (approximately 15 feet between now and when the Trojans bought the island), they would have needed to dig canals to continue to ship exclusively over water. Roofed canals would have improved the security for their precious goods on the least secure part of their shipping lanes. This passage must refer to the Trojans because, even today, the Palace at Knossos is only 4 km or slightly less than 22 stadia from the coast. The Kairatos River, which runs past the east side of the palace (and near the city of Heraklion), may have flowed year-round prior to the 1375 B.C. invasion. Since then, the island has become mostly deforested. (Cf. Wunderlich: 36) Confirm that "Atlantis" was a thriving naval power engaged in overseas trade. The same is suggested by some of Homer's descriptions of Troy. For example, this reference to the many tongues spoken: "The loud clamorous cries resounded throughout the Trojan host; for they had not one speech and one language, but a confusion of tongues, since they were called from many lands" (Il. IV: 503-509). English, the most simple, word-order-dependent language, could only have developed in a very cosmopolitan trading port. If Troy wasn't that port, then we have to ask, "What was?" We must also expect the Athenians to have exaggerated the extent of Troy's/Atlantis' wealth and splendor. Their thinking would have been, "We can't even imagine how rich we would be had they not stolen everything from our ancestors."*] Twice in the year they gathered the fruits of the earth --in winter having the benefit of the rains and in summer introducing the water of the canals. [H *The reference is perhaps to Crete's dry Mediterranean summers.*]

As to the population, each of the lots in the plain had an appointed chief of men who were fit for military service, and the size of the lot was to be a square of ten stadia each way, and the total number of all the lots was sixty thousand. And of the inhabitants of the mountains and of the rest of the country there was also a vast multitude having leaders, to whom they were assigned according to their dwellings and villages. The leader was required to furnish for the war the sixth portion of a war-chariot, to make up a total of ten thousand chariots, also two horses and riders upon them and a light chariot without a seat, accompanied by a fighting man on foot carrying a small shield and having a charioteer mounted to guide the horse; also, he was bound to furnish two heavy-armed men, two archers, two slingers, three stone- shooters and three javelin men, who were



skirmishers, and four sailors to make up a complement of twelve hundred ships. Such was the order of war in the royal city --that of the other nine governments was different in each of them and would be wearisome to narrate. [H *Troy*]

As to offices and honors, the following was the arrangement from the first: each of the ten kings, in his own division and in his own city, had the absolute control of the citizens and in many cases of the laws, punishing and slaying whomsoever he would. [H *The oligarchs of Athens apparently had such powers and couldn't imagine their Trojan ancestors being without them.*]

Now the relations of their governments to one another were regulated by the injunctions of Poseidon as the law had a column of orichalcum, which was situated in the middle of the island, at the temple of Poseidon, whither the people were gathered together every fifth and sixth years alternately, thus giving equal honor to the odd and to the even number. [H *Some three hundred stone columns*

*such as the one in Figure 118 have survived in Ireland, mainly in the south. I don't know if any have been dated by the new absolute dating technologies for minerals. In my opinion, the dates in the following quotation are no better than those of the experts who assign Iron Age dates of origination to Irish myths. The earliest testimony of the earliest known form of Irish comes from Ogham inscriptions. Many linguistic scholars date the earliest of the inscriptions to about the fourth century AD or a little before; but according to James Carney (Carney, 1975: 57), "the earliest possible date for its invention is not 400 A.D. as is widely assumed today. It is rather sometime within the first century before Christ."*



Figure 118:  
Tullygarran Ogham  
stone, County Kerry

*Ogam is a cipher thought to be based on the Latin alphabet. It has been assumed that it was invented in Ireland after the Christians introduced Latin. Others say the perfected cipher came to Ireland from the European mainland. Carney suggests that its place of origin may have been "an area where Romans, Celts and Germans were in contact;" that it was "brought into being by political or military necessity" and that "its purpose could have been to send messages, probably on wood, which if intercepted, could not be read or interpreted." (Cf. Carney, 1975: 63)*

*Yet, "Ogam inscriptions on wood or other perishable materials have not survived on the Continent and there are no known inscriptions on stone monuments there either. A European mainland invention of the cipher must therefore for the time being remain questionable" (O'Kelly: 250-251).]* And when they were gathered together they consulted about public affairs and inquired



if anyone had transgressed in anything and passed judgment on him accordingly --and before they passed judgment they gave their pledges to one another in this wise: there were bulls who had the range of the temple of Poseidon, and the ten who were left alone in the temple, after they had offered prayers to the gods that they might take the sacrifices that were acceptable to them, hunted the bulls without weapons but with staves and nooses, and the bull that they caught they led up to the column; the victim was then struck on the head by them and slain over the sacred inscription. Now on the column, besides the law, there was inscribed an oath invoking mighty curses on the disobedient. When, therefore, after offering sacrifice according to their customs, they had burnt the limbs of the bull, they mingled a cup and cast in a clot of blood for each of them; the rest of the victim they took to the fire, after having made a purification of the column all round. Then they drew from the cup in golden vessels, and, pouring a libation on the fire, they swore that they would judge according to the laws on the column and would punish anyone who had previously transgressed and that for the future they would not, if they could help, transgress any of the inscriptions and would not command or obey any ruler who commanded them to act otherwise than according to the laws of their father Poseidon. This was the prayer that each of them offered up for himself and for his family, at the same time drinking and dedicating the vessel in the temple of the god, and, after spending some necessary time at supper, when darkness came on and the fire about the sacrifice was cool, all put on most beautiful azure robes, and, sitting on the ground at night heard the embers of the sacrifices on which they had sworn and extinguishing all the fire about the temple, they received and gave judgment, if any of them had any accusation to bring against any one, and, when they had given judgment, at daybreak they wrote down their sentences on a golden tablet and deposited them as memorials with their robes. [H *Irish mythology, popular and "official,"* refers repeatedly to "going to judgment." At least one myth, "Balor at Tory Island," implies that judges could be anyone acceptable to both contending parties. In the manuscripts, in the "official" Celtic mythology, Lugh goes before the "high king" for judgment against the sons of Turenn who've murdered Kian, Lugh's father. (Cf. Rolleston: 115) The king gives Lugh the option of having them executed or having them pay a "blood

eric." Rutherford (his page 80) says Druids also served as judges.

Except for the claim that the column was made of "orichalcum," Plato's myth appears to be very plausible

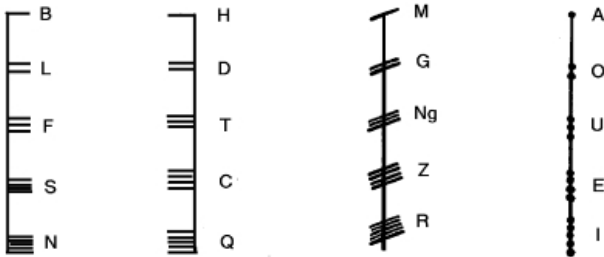


Figure 119: the Ogham cipher (After O'Kelly and J. Carney)

*and consistent with what is suggested by Irish mythology. Once more, the setting of these stones at ceremonial meeting grounds, stones inscribed in a cipher that only they could understand, sounds exactly like something the Druids would do.*

*The claim that Ogham “is based on the Latin alphabet” seems baseless to me. Look at Figure 119 below, the Ogam cipher (after O’Kelly and Carney). Not all the Latin letters are represented, and one of the “letters” corresponds to two of our Latin letters (Ng). Separating these two sounds gives the language more flexibility and therefore would have been done in a later language. So, if we must compare these alphabets (untrammelled, of course, by any sense of cultural inferiority --guilt resulting perhaps from the political suppression of history just as individual guilt results from psychological repression), we should conclude that the Ogham is the older of the two. It is more primitive than the Latin. If they are in series, then Ogham wasn’t based on Latin; Latin was based on Ogham.]*

*There were many special laws that the several kings had inscribed about the temples, but the most important was the following: they were not to take up arms against one another, and they were all to come to the rescue if anyone in any city attempted to overthrow the royal house. Like their ancestors, they deliberated in common about war and other matters, giving the supremacy to the family of Atlas, and the king was not to have the power of life and death over any of his kinsmen, unless he had the assent of much of the ten kings. [H Whether this reverence for justice ever existed at Troy or not, recall that the prehistoric [Britons were enamored with the color blue](#). Perhaps this was because Britain is an island nation, the largest island and the alleged capital of Poseidon the god of the sea. Early Britons are known to have tattooed themselves in blue. The stones that appear to represent the besieged Homo sapiens at Stonehenge III are blue too. They also outfitted their Dunkirk giant in an azure blue robe. Although they never were able to define justice, Plato and Socrates were obsessed with it and knew that it was key to uniting the Greeks.]*

*Such was the vast power that the god settled in the lost island of Atlantis, and this he afterward directed against our land on the following pretext, as traditions tell: for many generations, as long as the divine nature lasted in them, they were obedient to the laws and affectionate toward the gods, who were their kinsmen, for they possessed true and, in every way, great spirits, practicing gentleness and wisdom in the various chances of life and in their intercourse with one another. They despised everything but virtue, not caring for their present state of life and thinking lightly on the possession of gold and other property, which seemed only a burden to them; neither were they intoxicated by luxury; nor did wealth deprive them of their self-control, but they were sober and saw clearly that all these goods are increased by virtuous friendship with one another and that by excessive zeal*

for them and honor of them the good of them is lost, and friendship perishes with them. [H *This paragraph describes the Trojans and Fir Bolgs as the Athenians wanted to remember them, their ancestors.*]

By such reflections, and by the continuance in them of a divine nature, all that which we have described waxed and increased in them, but when this divine portion began to fade away in them and became diluted too often and the human nature got the upper-hand, then, they being unable to bear their fortune, became unseemly, and to him who had an eye to see, they began to appear base and had lost the fairest of their precious gifts, but to those who had no eye to see the true happiness, they were filled with unrighteous avarice and power. Zeus, the god of gods who rules with law and is able to see into such things, perceiving that an honorable race was in a most wretched state and wanting to inflict punishment on them that they might be chastened and improved, collected all the gods into his most holy habitation, which, being placed in the center of the world, sees all things that partake of generation. And when he had called them together, he spoke as follows: (End of story.) [H *This last paragraph describes the lords of the Tin Empire as Plato reasoned they had to have become. It justifies Achaean hatred for them. This last paragraph is, I suspect, a concession that he extracted in return for selling their strategic baloney to the rest of the Greeks and to posterity. Mountains of pulp, rivers of printers' ink and lifetimes of struggle have been wasted trying to make sense of this baloney. In retrospect, we have to ask, did Plato do right in accepting the job?*]

Rest in peace, *Atlantis*.

The British Isles were, during the coldest Ice Age glacial maximums, almost completely covered with ice. During the warmest interglacial periods, they were mostly submerged in glacial meltwater. During the Great Flood they were temporarily but almost totally drowned.<sup>110</sup> The fabulously rich Fir Bolg mythology assures us that the Fir Bolgs were in the Ireland area, and related tribes of Belgae or Pelasgians were living in the Briton area at least since 35 kya. They fought the Species War there. They claimed to have left for Spain or, on the last

---

<sup>110</sup> We concluded from our study of the ice cycle in the previous subsection that the geophysical pattern for the ice cycle was ended, as Figures 10a & 10b show, by the discovery of horticulture and the explosion of the human population. But as readers up to this point are sure to know, I am not a paleontologist capable of reading bristle cone pine tree rings or the changes in the proportions of carbon isotopes in sediment cores. I rely on others for time lines such as those of Figures 10 a&b and 105c. These figures basically agree but are out of sync time-wise. The graph in 105c should apparently be shifted an eighth to a quarter inch to the right on its time-line, for them to coincide time-wise. As we'll see, the Great Flood is represented on 105c by the right-most peak in the graph. In Figures 10 a&b, that peak corresponds to 14,634 years BPE.

occasion, Greece and returned at least three times as required by the “Fomorian.” The cyclopes myth of the Fenian cycle that we reviewed [above](#) left us no doubt of the veracity of these Fir Bolg claims. Other popular, Fir Bolg myths, which I’ll show you momentarily, further confirm all this. The popular Fir Bolg mythology should have made the meaning of Plato’s *Atlantis* clear to the world long ago but for one problem.

It is the problem I describe [on this page](#), *et. seq.*, below, the fact that the world is so full of crazy people: irresponsible religious babies, Third-Mask-latent-homosexual gangsters and people who have both these mental illnesses. The most successful, Orwellian, latent homosexual savages who dominate every sphere of savage society – globally, tell the babies whatever they want to hear. The scoundrels generally co-opt the babies with just four magic words: “In God We Trust” (U.S.); “God Save the Queen” (U.K.); “Gott Sei Mit Uns” (Germany); “Socialism with Chinese Characteristics” (China and its *national* religion); etc. As I said in Chapter 35, this alliance of lying, latent scoundrels and irresponsible, religious babies that everywhere rules the world is a ***Doomsday Alliance***. It maintains the K and R Class Struggle and all of its savage symptoms, including periodic and catastrophic population collapses. Educated and progressive people must learn to see religion and homophobia/latent-homosexuality as the enemies. Once we conquer them, people will be sane and responsible enough to see and minimize the K and R Class Struggle.

Their lies about prehistory and the British Isles in general are as outrageous as their lies about Troy. For example:

“Man, so far as we know at present, did not inhabit Ireland until Post-glacial times when the ice had melted.” –Michael O’Kelly

This author of “Early Ireland” impressed me as being a decent fellow; but he allowed the Church, the rich Ks and the Third Mask people in his field to confuse him. Were this statement true, then Irish mythology couldn’t be the rich mother lode of Species War knowledge that it is because the Species War ended 33 kya and not 20-13 kya, when the ice was rapidly melting.

Don’t get me wrong. By proving that all of *Atlantis*’ underwater claims refer to the British Isles, I don’t want anyone to lose interest in marine archaeology. We are going to be able to discover artifacts and settlements all over the world for a long time to come at up to 400 feet beneath the present surface of the ocean. But a lost continent will never be found because Plato’s “Atlantis” refers to the British Isles (especially Troy), Crete and subconscious recollections of the global Species War.

Here, briefly, is the reason why archaeologists cannot say that men were in Ireland before the end of the last ice age (20-13 kya): the tremendous weight of the glacier would have crushed and destroyed the artifacts in its path. Moreover, once the ice had melted, any artifact that did survive the impact of the glacier would have been transported with the mud, clay, gravel and rocks that the moving ice incorporated and laid down at another location, outside of its context. Only the southern tip of Ireland was not under the glacier at the LGM. (See [Figure 120b](#), below.) Irish archaeologists were claiming from Edition 1 of this book in 1989 until very recently that the first evidence of men in Ireland is from hearth fires found in Atrim (Northern Ireland) that date to 8, 000 B.C. In March of 2016, the official (mass media, university and prestigious journal-endorsed) archaeology pushed back the date to 10,500 B.C. based upon the radio carbon date of a bear patella found in a cave with stone tool cuts in it. As you are about to see and can well imagine, Catholic Ireland would prefer to deny that anyone was in Ireland before Saint Patrick. Most contemporary westerners, especially Irish people, are Christians -- believe literally in their silly myth and want to pretend that all prior religion of our ancestors (compromised oral history) doesn't exist! If you throw it in their faces, forcing them to recognize it, they deny that it can be of any value. It is only this attitude toward all other religion and their complete distortion of the archaeological record that enables them to claim – idiotically – that men were not in Ireland until after the last ice age.

*If it were possible to subject the lying pederasts to the laws of a civilized government and obtain a search warrant for the Vatican, I have no doubt that the search would turn up at least one large storeroom containing not only codices but also every sort of prehistoric artifact and fossil. For it is only by suppressing or buying up and burying all information that might compete with “Jesus” that the non-sheep can be kept stupid and paying into Church coffers. Of course, most people are sheep, exactly as Dostoyevsky’s Grand Inquisitor described them. They are willingly and regularly fleeced. The issues of true or false and right or wrong rarely if ever enter their vacuous minds because their chief concern is just staying at the middle of the herd, where they feel most secure. The sheep at the center **are** the primary victims of war and epidemic diseases, but their collective vulnerability never occurs to them until “God” or the “Devil” changes their fate.*

Irish archaeologists admit, as they must, that there were plenty of interglacial periods in Paleolithic times when Ireland wasn't covered with ice. But they insinuate that when it wasn't covered with ice, it was surrounded by water and men didn't have boats and weren't able to navigate the Irish Sea from Britain. This is, of course, ridiculous nonsense. There would have been many times during the Ice Age when the glacier wasn't extended to the maximum, and both the Isles and Doggerland (the North Sea), and the Irish Sea and a large margin around both

islands were above water as in [Figure 105b](#). Moreover, if Pleistocene men didn't have boats, how I wonder did African people get to the Americas (as we'll discover in the next and last appendix) no later than 65 kya? Certainly, Irish men weren't dumber than other men. They had to be past-masters at killing *Homo erectus*. Certainly, they always saw birds and dead trees floating on water. Do the Irish Catholics want us to believe that pre-Neolithic Irishmen were too stupid and unimaginative to use fire to make dugout canoes? They weren't Catholics!

Archaeologist John Kaye Charlesworth suggested that evidence of Pleistocene (pre-8,000 B.C.) man might be found in the narrow southern belt of Ireland that remained free of the last glacier.

Dear Reader, you've seen how the Catholic Church suppressed the works of



Durán and de Sahagún in Mexico. You've seen their complicity in the enslavement and robbery of the Quechua people in Peru. You've seen the hatchet job they did to Irish mythology in an attempt to denigrate pagan religion and erase the memory of pagan Irishmen, so that they can pretend to be something other than Johnnies-come-lately whose Jesus myth isn't just another chain link in the logical development of the universal form of neurosis. You know that their ideology has hardly changed a bit in the Church's lifetime, and it's extremely powerful in Ireland today. As recently as 1992, international pressure had to be brought to bear upon Catholic Ireland before its government would grant a rape victim the "right" to go abroad to get an abortion!

Listen to my personal experience with the Vatican. During the early stages of my research, back in about 1992, a guy was regularly paying me to drive him from lower Manhattan to his Connecticut home. He admitted to being a fundamentalist Catholic and bore the earmarks of an FBI agent assigned to work on Wall Street. He said the Catholic Church might be willing to buy my book. "Not for less than \$33,000,000 they won't," I said facetiously. Not many days later and to my astonishment, a French diplomat got into my car (by appointment) with a genuine cardinal from the Vatican — the cream-colored robes, the tall red hat and all! Negotiations never got started because I couldn't stop laughing, but subsequently I fell victim to the sort of dirty tricks for which J. Edgar Hoover and the secret police are infamous.



In year 2001, not long after 9/11, I traveled to Ireland with the intent of cycling around the country and giving out free CDs of *Irish Mythology*, *Passageway to Prehistory* and other works of mine. On my first night outside of Dublin, at a youth hostel in Carlowe, I was attacked by a thug who worked there. He did me no harm; but during the following night, someone, with the apparent complicity of the local police, stole my computer from a locked storeroom.

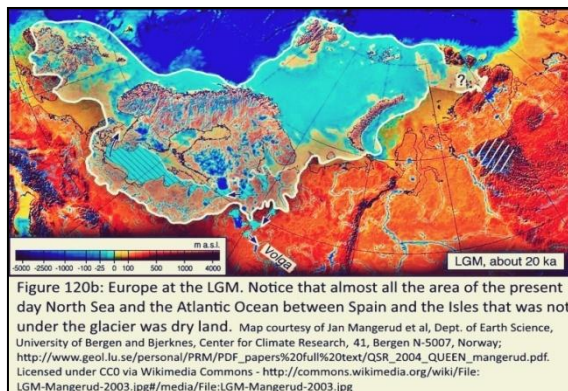
So, Dear Reader, if archaeologists *have* found Paleolithic artifacts in Ireland do you really think that the Catholic Church, scoundrels that they are, will let us know about it?

A couple of other hints of Pleistocene habitation in Ireland do exist. In recent times G.F. Mitchell picked up a flint flake from a gravel deposit in a quarry near Drogheda, County Louth, on the east coast of Ireland. It was a waste piece resulting from the knapping (deliberate breaking-up) of a flint nodule. Mitchell diagnosed the gravel deposit as being of Irish Sea origin. During the glacial period when ice was moving southward from Scotland along what is now the Irish Sea, the flake was picked up with stones and gravel and eventually washed out of the melting ice on to the Irish coast. See Figures [120a](#) & [b](#). The first figure shows where the land would have been above water and either exposed to thin air or under the ice at various times. The second shows the maximum extension of the glacier at the LGM. (The Isles are in the upper left.)

The flake suggests that Old Stone Age hunters were at one time in what is now the basin of the Irish Sea. Paleolithic flint experts are satisfied that the flake was struck by a technique in use in Britain during Paleolithic times (Mitchell and Sieveking 1972). This being so, “it shows how near to Ireland Paleolithic Man came and in fact provokes the question, why not to Ireland?” (O’Kelly: 6)

Most encouraging is this little gem: “In 1974, a visitor to Inishmore, the largest of the islands of Aran in Galway Bay, found a small flint hand-axe amongst the stones of the *Chevaux de frise* (a defense network of upright stones) surrounding the great stone fort of *Dùn Aenghus*. Experts accept the axe as Acheulian/Mousterian, that is, Middle to Lower Paleolithic, but its authenticity as an Irish artifact is highly suspect.” (O’Kelly: 6, citing Murphy 1977)

Murphy’s only basis for dubbing the hand axe a “suspect” Irish artifact is that other Pleistocene artifacts were not found with it; and, with the possible



exceptions we've noted, have not been found in Ireland at all. (Cf. Murphy, 1977) But given that the glaciers only moved north and south, we don't need a stratigraphic context to know that the hand axe's owner was in or around Ireland. Moreover, everyone knows unconsciously what Pleistocene artifacts would indicate about this western-most Eurasian country's Species War role and given the strength of the Catholic Church there and given what we know to be the essence of religion (guilt, fear and repression), *we must question the independence and sincerity of attempts to establish an Irish Pleistocene record.*

Upper Paleolithic stone artifacts don't differ much from their Neolithic counterparts and can be so interpreted.<sup>111</sup> Also, Murphy found his artifact in a crevice. Neither he nor O'Kelly mention systematic excavations at far western sites like Inishmore, sites likely to contain Mousterian artifacts.

Of the cave sites that have been excavated up to the date of publication of O'Kelly's work, only one is in a western location; and even that one, Gort, was in the ice-free part of [Figure 120b](#) but considerably inland. So, it appears that only sites that are obviously Neolithic are systematically excavated in Ireland. Must an Irish archaeologist trip over a Paleolithic artifact, as Murphy apparently did, for it to get into the record?

The archaeological record for Britain is much more encouraging. The lower third of Britain had remained free of glaciation. "Evidence of human activity in the form of assemblages of hand axes of stone is available from Britain, dating from the penultimate interglacial in that country, that is, the Hoxnian. Its age is estimated at 200,000 to 250,000 years ago, and from then on, various Middle and Upper Paleolithic sites have continued the story of Old Stone Age occupation..." (O'Kelly: 5). Did our "Irish" ancestors not know one island from another? Unlikely. Irish mythology had plenty to say about the migrations --wherever and whenever they were; and Irish mythology refers regularly to men, especially the Fenians, traveling by boat.

Irish mythology also appears to produce some of the very evidence that archaeologists and geologists are hard-pressed to find. It is in the Partholan myth, one of the myths about the earliest "settlers": "Ireland...was then a different country, physically, from what it is now. There were then but three lakes in Ireland, nine rivers, and only one plain." (Rolleston: 96) Rolleston interjects that this is "an imaginative touch intended to suggest extreme antiquity."

But at the start of one of the last Pleistocene interglacials, or the end of the Ice Age (i. e. 20 kya), when Ireland was rapidly being released from the weight

---

<sup>111</sup> There's almost no chance that non-stone artifacts would have survived the glacier.





of the glacier, it would have been very flat and only starting to isostatically rise.<sup>112</sup> Moreover, there were no geology texts in the first and early second millennia A.D. that could have inspired our Irish ancestors to fabricate such accounts. Nor could they have received any geology lessons from the Christians, who believed (as many of them still do), based on the

mythology of a desert people, that “God” made the world in *seven* days! So, how would the Fir Bolgs have known that the land was once relatively flat if not from the oral transmission of direct experience?

There are at least two popular myths (Curtin, 1894) that tell of cows coming and going from Ireland as they please. In one of these, *Elin Gow, the Swordsmith from Erin and the Cow Glas Gainach*, the cow is said to be the most productive in the world -- but only while she can graze wherever she pleases. When anyone tries to herd her, she goes into the ocean and swims away. Within this myth, the cow “swims” from Ireland to Spain and back again. The place from which the cow comes and goes is Cluainte in the parish of Bally Ferriter, near Ventry in the southwest corner of Ireland. This is exactly where men and animals would have been corralled by the glacier and from which they would have walked abroad during the coldest glacial episodes or rapid thawing periods when everything was turning to mud. The cow symbolizes animals and men that came and went as the climate necessitated.

Moreover, there is archaeological evidence for Pleistocene migration at the other end, in southern France and Spain where the glacier did not extend and destroy artifacts. Between 21 and 18 kya, during the coldest part of the last glacial period, distinctive assemblages appeared in France and Spain. Collectively known as the Solutrean, they are characterized by their pressure-flaked large leaf points. In a late phase of this industry, shouldered (backed) projectile points and barbed and tanged arrowheads appear in eastern Spain. “The Solutrean is not found outside Western Europe; one reason may be that it developed at a time just prior to and during the maximum extension of the continental ice sheets. It is probable that in central Europe groups abandoned the area during this period of climatic severity... Within western Europe there was a concentration of settlement into the most favored areas” (Champion et al: 56).

It is highly likely, as the Fir Bolgs and the *Book of Leinster* say, that many Britons and Fir Bolgs were there too. Recall that the British historian Nennius

<sup>112</sup> See the article, “What Thawed the Last Ice Age,” by David Biello, April 4, 2012. Find it at <https://www.scientificamerican.com/article/what-thawed-the-last-ice-age/> or watch “[How Snowball Earth Leveled the Mountains and Created the Great Unconformity](#),” by Myron Cook.

also insisted that the Fir Bolgs had come to Ireland from Spain. They probably went to Spain during the coldest part of the last glacial period, 23 to 20 kya, and returned to the Isles as the weather started to warm. They apparently left and returned at least two more times, their final return being between 5,500 and 4,500 B.C. when they returned as the mysterious people heralded by archaeologists as the Beaker Folk. One of their myths says that their last sabbatical was in Greece for 5,000 years. As you now know, there is a wealth of direct and indirect mythical evidence for these Fir Bolg migrations.

Furthermore, we know the Eastern Mediterranean to have suffered from severe soil erosion. The productivity of their lands was destroyed by overpopulation, deforestation of the upland slopes and over-grazing. The denuded slopes do not absorb and hold the rainfall, which then runs rapidly downhill, forming torrential currents that wash all the topsoil into the sea. Plato's "Atlantis" testifies to precisely this phenomenon: "and in all the ages and changes of things there has never been any settlement of the earth flowing down from the mountains, as in other places, which is worth speaking of; it has always been



carried round in a circle, and disappeared in the depths below. The consequence is that, in comparison of what then was, there are remaining in small islets only the bones of the wasted body, as they may be called, all the richer and softer parts of the soil having fallen away, and the mere skeleton of the country

being left" (*Atlantis*). The job of carrying dirt from the valleys and seaside up into the hills sounds like it would have been one of the least appealing jobs. In every society, slaves (or immigrants, who suffer from discrimination and poor communication skills) have been stuck with this sort of work. If the Fir Bolgs were ever in Greece or the Carpathian Basin -- not as conquerors but as refugees of some natural disaster, then this is likely to have been their job. As they said, they were carrying dirt or clay in bags.

While I was in China, the latent homosexual scoundrels came up with a new glaciology claim in their dogged defense of the status quo. Zoom in on the fine, white print at the top of [Figure 120a](#); and you can read it. The suggestion is that sea level rise and flooding is always gradual and that the temperature plunges are always caused by glacial, meltwater lakes bursting, flowing into the sea and stopping the thermo-haline circulation. This may indeed have happened countless times in the North Atlantic and may have caused the cooling event of 8.2 kya, the Younger Dryas, the last Big Freeze primarily affecting the North Atlantic rim countries. If this were always the cause of sea level rise, if we didn't have to worry

about the Greenland and the West Antarctic and the East Antarctic ice sheets sliding into the sea, if the dishes and furniture weren't still in some of those houses that are under the Black Sea, if we only had to worry about glacial lakes on the surface and not those that are under the ice sheets and able at some point to send them sliding as the ice slides off your car hood; then there would be one less emergency reason for us to fundamentally change the way we live. Of course, this wishful thinking is intuitively false and issues from the miserable, Third Mask, latent homosexuals who, due to their lovelessness, anger, compulsive lying, blustering, and manipulating, dominate every organization and sphere of our savage world and reflexively attempt to deny or bury all new information as part of their neurotic fear of truth and change, which they unconsciously associate with the removal of their Third Masks.

The two former, glacial lakes that are the hoped-for-causes of all the catastrophes are Lake Agassiz and Lake Missoula. Lake Agassiz, at its maximum, covered 440,000 km<sup>2</sup> (170,000 sq. mi.), larger in area than any currently existing lake in the world (including the Caspian Sea) and was approximately the volume of the Black Sea. See [Figure 120c](#). Evidence from a variety of sources convincingly shows that the cooling event and sea level rise of 3-9 feet 8.2 kya was caused by this lake breaking through an ice damn at the south end of Hudson Bay. Scientists believe similar events at Lake Agassiz have happened countless times. Glacial Lake Missoula last burst 15 kya [*H* roughly the time of the Great Flood and probably triggered by it], carving out the coulees of eastern Washington State and the Columbia River. (See [Figure 120d](#).) However catastrophic the forty or so bursts of Lake Missoula have been for neighboring states, the 500 cubic miles of water that this mountain basin can hold is just a drop in the Pacific Ocean bucket.

The big turning points in the ice cycles, the highest peaks and the lowest troughs of Figure 10, are the turning points for the Greenland and Antarctic ice sheets. Antarctica represents ten percent of the world's current land mass, and it is almost completely covered by a two-km high ice sheet! Bedmap2, a detailed improvement upon Bedmap1, is being prepared by the British Antarctic Survey with data collected by scientists on location and NASA's Ice, Cloud and Land Elevation satellite. It will enable them to know of any geothermal hot spots under the ice and to make a computer model that will determine exactly how broad and

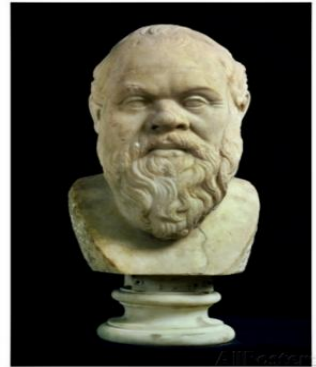


Figure 121: Socrates, portrait bust, early fourth century, BC

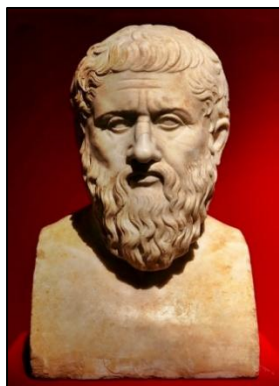


Figure 122: Plato, 1st Century, marble, portrait bust, Capitoline Museum, Rome

deep meltwater pools must become before the ice sheets slide. But when those hotspots or critical pools are detected, are average savages like us going to know as soon as all the billionaires who own property less than 216 feet above sea level? If they can't even tell us the truth about Troy, how likely are they to tell us the truth about the vital stuff?

Socrates (Figure [121](#)) and Plato (Figure [122](#)) and the Fir Bolgs were very close to understanding something that “autochthons,” Catholics, other fundamentalist babies and all the Third Mask, latent homosexual scoundrels are light years away from grasping.

The everlasting test of good or bad, right or wrong and the measure of a man's worth is whether and to what extent his actions contribute to the preservation and advancement of our species, and for this we must know all the most uncomfortable truths about ourselves and our ancestors. No matter how ugly and unflattering it may be, we must know the whole truth. For all the alternatives are tragedies waiting to happen.

## H. Uncovering the First Americans

*We shall not cease from exploration, and the end of all our exploring will be to arrive where we started and know the place for the first time. –T. S. Eliot*

*Art is the imposing of a pattern upon experience and our aesthetic enjoyment in recognition of the pattern. --Alfred North Whitehead*

Recall that in Chapter 11, at the end of the first broad outline of our prehistory, you were challenged to tell what became of the half of our first family that didn't leave Africa first. If you guessed that some of them led interesting and dramatic lives, you guessed right. Although I'm reluctant to discuss Genesis I and Genesis II, two of my unpublished and unproduced screenplays, I will tell you the most dramatic part of their history. We've already seen numerous bits and pieces of evidence and one earth-shaking disclosure that, in total, leave us with little doubt that the African half of our family got to the Americas first and developed the Mississippian Culture of North America and the Olmec Culture of Mesoamerica. (Recall Figures 63b through 63f and the likelihood that most if not all the cultural institutions of later

Mesoamerican civilizations were developed first by the Olmecs. See also Figure 123a, above, C. M. Russell's conception of Cahokia and this 1917 St. Louis Globe Democrat article on the mounds. Russell, the famous artist/antiquary of the Old West, was born near St. Louis in Oak Hill. He had lots of time to think about the great American mounds that most people, even today, know nothing about! *Yet thousands of great, earthen mounds, rivaling their stone-faced, Egyptian counterparts in size, once dotted the eastern United States, the Mississippi River Valley and the southern coastline from South Carolina into Mexico. In the middle*



Figure 123a: Cahokia article with painting by Charles Marion Russell

*latitudes, most of these were conical. Others were truncated pyramids, sometimes terraced, with graded ascents to their summits. Further south, the ratio of conical to pyramid mounds was reversed. A few, massive platform mounds, like Cahokia and Huaca del Sol (vol. 2, Figure 53), were built in both the north and south.*

Who built them remains a controversial question only because so many people, many of them purporting to be scientists, can't set aside their prejudices, superstitions and their fear of change when applying the scientific method (i. e. form a hypothesis, test it but hold it consistently until facts force its modification).

Learning stimulates change, and latent homosexual Big Brothers, the most unhappy but materially successful savages among us, are especially afraid of change. The richest of them are even more terrified of change owing to the disproportionality of their education, imagination and general intelligence on the one hand and their inherited wealth and power on the other. They use police agent proxies to control universities, even the public, tax-supported ones! They hide information and obstruct learning, rationalizing their perfidy and disservice to humanity with upside down theories about what's good for the rest of us.

The correct counter example was set by James Smithson, the eminent British scientist and philanthropist. Smithson understood that it is only with a reverence for truth and a respect for and cooperation with our fellow man that we are able to uncover the laws of nature and society and progress. James Smithson willed his estate, a great fortune, to the United States, a country he'd never visited, to found in Washington D. C. "an establishment for the increase and diffusion of knowledge among men." We shall be indebted to him, his institution and his attitude for what we learn in this appendix.

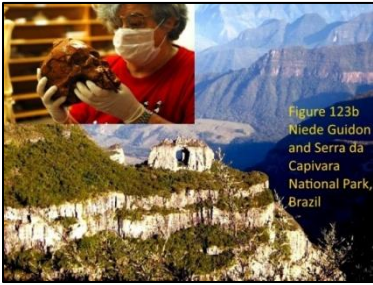
First, let's review all the evidence we've seen to convince us that the half of our family that we left in Africa settled the Americas first and that Aboriginal African Americans built the great American mounds. Then, we'll consider the doubts of the nay-sayers. I apologize for being so slow to learn about Black History. Many other researchers beat me to the subject: William Bartram, Constantine Rafinesque, Jose Melgar, Ivan van Sertima, Carl Winters, David Imhotep – just to name a few. That's an outrageous mistake for the author of a basic biography of man to make. Pleading isolation in China for ten years is an inadequate defense. The shame of it!

However, since coming back to the States in 2014, after ten years' absence, I have not only caught up but also taken the lead in this research. I'm going to tell you the most important things you still don't know and need to know about the first Americans. As of a few weeks ago, at age 66, I've come to know my Midwestern homeland for the first time. We are going to be able to piece together the big picture of American antiquity by using mostly 1) what we already know,



2) the first book ever published by the Smithsonian Institution and 3) the honest application of the scientific method. We'll need very little help from the loyal and obedient boys and girls of private universities that the gangsters trust enough to employ on their secret archaeology excavations. *Per* my favorite line from the silver screen, "We don't need their stinking badges!"

So, first and most importantly, recall the findings of Mark Hubbe, Mercedes Okumura, Danilo V. Bernardo, Susan Pessiss, Walter Neves, Pedro Glória and their colleagues who produced the BBC documentary, "Tracking the First Americans," in Volume 1, herein. This YouTube.com movie dealt the decisive blow to dark-skinned racism. (This chapter should be the *coup de grâce*.) The movie informs us, and my private conversations with the Neves staff confirm, that all the pre-9-kya skulls of South America and all the pre-10-kya skulls of North America are Negroid in their cranial features and the facial features that forensic modeling attributes to them. All the post-7-kya skulls of South America and all the post-8-kya skulls of North America are Amerindian in their cranial

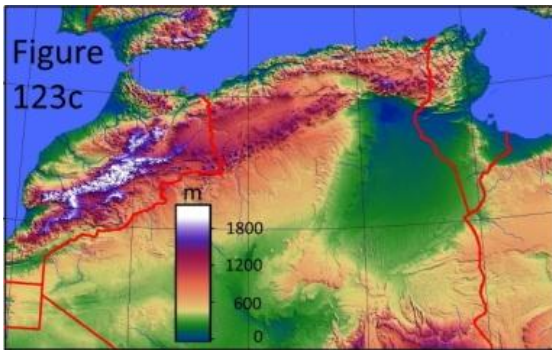


features and inferred facial features. This doesn't contradict our 13.2 kya, calibrated radio carbon date for the Clovis entry of hordes of Amerindians. It only says that there were already so many African people here prior to the entry of the Amerindians and the extermination of the African aboriginals by the Amerindians was so rapid that we are very unlikely to find skulls that are

exceptions to these general statements. Brazilian and French archaeologists have also provided us with the earliest dates for human occupation of the Americas: 65 kya at Pedra Furada ("Pierced Stone") an area with rock shelters within *Serra da Capivara* National Park in Piauí (northeast), Brazil. See Figure 123b, above. There are over 800 archaeological sites here, and we have Niède Guidon to thank for their preservation. She also organized the French and Brazilian team of archaeologists who have been finding all the evidence that was reported in the documentary, "Tracking the First Americans." In the late Twentieth Century, she came out squarely on the side of Rafinesque, José Melgar and Van Sertima, affirming that the first Americans came by boat from Africa.<sup>113</sup> Polynesians came to at least South America very early too. DNA studies are showing that they took the sweet potato home with them and left descendants: the now extinct Botocudo people of southeastern Brazil.

---

<sup>113</sup> In a 1869 work about the Olmec artifacts and heads, Mexican archaeologist José Melgar expressed his opinion that the Olmecs had come from Africa.

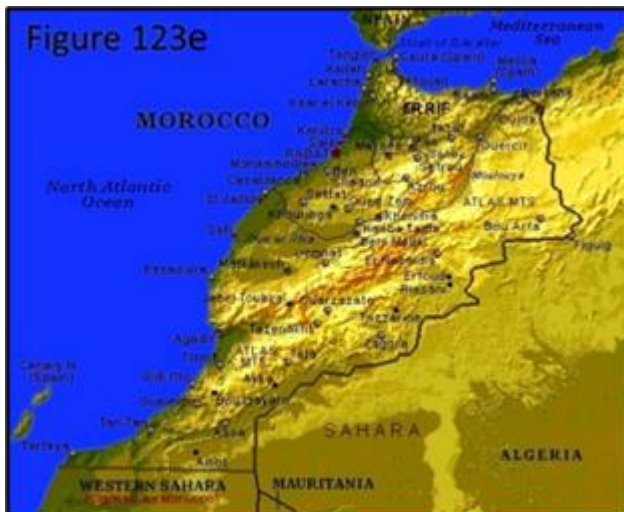


However, it is probable that most of the first Americans came from northern or northwestern Africa. Why? First because, like these peoples, most of the first Americans stayed at or near the coast. Second, recall from Figure 52c, in Chapter 24, the great similarity between North African alphabets and that

of an Otolum inscription. Also, like the Egyptians and Sudanese, the Americans all built pyramids or mounds. Not only did the North and Central Americans build them. Peoples along the Andean coast – the people of Norte Chico and the Moche Empire – built them too. (Recall Figures 53 & 54.) Of course, we won't know where all the earliest settlements were until we finish studying the ocean shelves, more on this below.



Figure 123d: Nile location of all Sudanese pyramids



Most people don't know that there are pyramids in Sudan. They are smaller than those in Egypt but much more numerous. Figure 123d shows their locations. Notice that, like those in Egypt, they are all on or very near the Nile. This observation should help you answer the question that I challenged you to answer when we left Egypt, at the end of Appendix C. At the end of our Egyptian tour, I asked you, "Why did the Egyptians dispose of all their uneaten *Homo erectus* body parts in the water?" Now do you see? Here's the first part of the



answer: what precious little wood that they have in these desert countries must be used for construction. They couldn't afford to burn the corpses. That's why the people of Northern Africa didn't have fire festivals. That's right. You've got to go as far south as Ghana to see a fire festival. You might recall Frazer telling us (Volume 2, Chapter 29) about the typical fire festivals of the Berbers at Rif Province in Morocco. Rif Province may have had fire festivals centuries ago, but it would have been the one exception. Here's why. It is across the strait from Gibraltar. It includes the El Rif Mountains, a northern branch of the Atlas Mountains. See Figures 123 c and e, and *note that these are topographical maps. The green areas do NOT signify rainfall. The only parts of Northern Africa that get any rainfall at all are the immediate coastline and Algeria and Morocco between the mountains and the sea.* If there were fire festivals there, not imported European ones but indigenous ones, it was because they killed so many *Homo erecti* there that they couldn't get rid of the corpses fast enough except by burning them. Recall from Figure 15 that during the ice age you could either walk across or easily swim across the Strait of Gibraltar. Fleeing *Homo erecti* would have tried to exit the continent there.

Frazer also misinterpreted the lighting of lamps at Saïs, Egypt (described by Herodotus in his Book II, Chapter 62) as a modified fire festival. Wikipedia informs us that Saïs is in the western delta on the Canopic fork of the Nile. It was famous as the burial place of Osiris. We know, of course, that the brother/conspirators that trapped Osiris in a coffin nailed it shut and flung it and Osiris into the Nile. Saïs oil lamps were lit to search for Osiris's body in the water, not to commemorate the burning of Osiris's (*Homo erectus*') body. *Neither could the Northern Africans bury the Homo erecti under the sand because the wind could blow the sand away and expose them. That's the second part of the answer. The water was the only place in which most Northern Africans could dispose of the less edible parts of their Species War victims!*

And all the northern and northwestern Africans had this in their heritage because our first *Homo sapiens* family started out in Central Africa, probably, in the heart of lion country, on or around Lake Victoria. The half of the family that didn't leave first, when we were forced by circumstances to divide, had to also go through *Homo erectus* to get to the sea anywhere. The *Homo erecti* fled before them, fled until their backs were against the water, and they were forced to fight. That's why all the north and northwest African people were obsessed with the water. That's why they and only they were obsessed with the primeval mounds in the river bottom. That's why they wanted to be buried like Osiris in pyramids or pyramid shaped mounds. The gods would be pleased by and more accepting of someone who was at least packaged like one of their own.

One would think, from what we consciously know thus far, that it was only the Egyptians of the lower Nile who could have built the *first* pyramids or mounds anywhere; that they were inspired by those little mounds left by the receding river; and that all the other mounds and pyramids, of the Aboriginal African Americans, Mesoamerican Amerindians, the Irish, etc. were built in imitation of the Egyptians. But don't be too sure. As we noted in Chapter 6, even when we've found a rational explanation that satisfies Hegel's dictum ("All that is real is rational, and all that is rational is real."); there may be a simpler explanation!

We can be very certain, from the evidence accumulated thus far, that the Aboriginal Americans came directly from Africa. Rafinesque was the first to *systematically* probe and declare that awareness. The intrepid William Bartram, a Pennsylvania Quaker, had already published his "Travels..." in 1791. Bartram, a dedicated naturalist, chronicled his wanderings from 1783-1788 through the Southeastern United States, wanderings that took him through Cherokee and Seminole Country. The Indians told Bartram that they had not built the mounds.

Rafinesque, a more professional naturalist, learned the same from the *Walam Olum*. This Bible of the Lenni Lenape (Delaware) Indians fell into his hands. He transcribed the glyphs from its painted branches onto linoleum. He then acquired the chants that accompanied their glyphs and translated them into English. He knew that the Olmecs and the mound builders were black Africans; but in the Border States during antebellum (pre-Civil War) times, he dared not belabor the point. Recall how he connected the inscriptions on Otolum (Olmec country) pyramids with archaic writing systems from Northern Africa (my Figure 52c in Chapter 24). With a lesser educational background than ours but with a lot more data at his disposal, data that has since been destroyed by the white men; he could surmise from the *Walam Olum at least as well as we can* that the aboriginal Americans that the Iroquois and the Delaware referred to as the *Telega* – were Black Africans. This is what he meant, in his first letter to Champollion, when he said that *of the many primitive and peripheral peoples who had colonized the Americas, peoples of Northern Africa were the most "conspicuous and civilized."*

The great American mounds were still conspicuous in Rafinesque's day (1783-1840) and eight years later when his archaeology protégés, Ephraim Squier and Edwin Davis, wrote the first book ever published by the Smithsonian Institution, *Ancient Monuments of the Mississippi Valley*. The jacket or introduction to the book included a good introduction to the mounds and the Mississippian Culture:

“Early in the 19th century, as wagon trains streamed into the Ohio and Mississippi valleys, settlers came upon vast numbers of abandoned earthworks that they attributed to a sophisticated race of long-gone mound builders. Giving rise to often-loaded questions about human origins, the mounds and the artifacts found within them became the focus of early American efforts toward a science of archaeology. *Ancient Monuments of the Mississippi Valley* (1848) was the first major work in the nascent discipline as well as the first publication of the newly established Smithsonian Institution. It remains today both a key document in the history of American archaeology and the primary source of information about *hundreds of mounds and earthworks in the eastern United States, most now vanished.*” --H Emphasis mine.

“Hundreds” refers only to the mounds actually excavated by Squier and Davis. The Smithsonian Institution that financed the project released a map, estimating the roughly *ten thousand once-extent mounds and their locations*. See [Figure 125d](#), below. Like most of the early observers, they knew intuitively that the builders could not have been ancestors of Amerindians still living in the region [H *because they had no myths and no rites related to them*].

Archaeology was new at the time; but every form of prejudice, every excuse for savagery, was a time-honored tradition. Rather than be barred from Academia and the publishing world as was Rafinesque, whose descriptions of the Kentucky mounds they incorporated into their work, Squier and Davis took the advice of their editor and the first secretary of the Smithsonian, Joseph Henry. Henry wisely told them not to draw conclusions. Before I draw those conclusions for us, you should understand the enormous pressure they were under.

Their preface is effusive in thanking numerous laymen who volunteered their manuscripts, advice and collected artifacts. They mentioned Rafinesque, who had died a pauper, only apologetically. They used and claimed to only have been influenced by Rafinesque’s drawings and cited locations. The last paragraphs of their preface make subtle illusion to the political difficulty of their situation. I’ll insert my interpretations in italics:

“Before concluding these prefatory remarks—already extended beyond their original design [H “*Coping with the financial pressures and prejudices from all the persons whose cooperation was needed for this project proved to be more daunting than anticipated.*”], -- we may be permitted to say that it has been a constant aim in the preparation of this memoir to present facts in a clear and concise form with such simple deductions and generalizations alone as may follow from their careful

consideration. With no hypothesis to combat or sustain, and with a desire only to arrive at truth, whatever its bearings upon received theories and current prejudices, everything like mere speculation has been avoided. [H *"We tried and are still trying to persuade the savages to abandon their prejudices and think like scientists. But to exclude their prejudicial assumptions and rashly drawn conclusions, we had to omit our own hypotheses and conclusions."*] Analogies, apparently capable of reflecting light upon many important questions, connected with an enlarged view of the subject, have seldom been more than indicated. [H *"We have carefully avoided explicitly associating these New World mounds and cliff dwellings with their counterparts in Egypt and Mali, respectively."*] Their full consideration, as also that of the relations that the ancient monuments of the Mississippi Valley bear to those of other portions of America and the world, has not been attempted here. [H *"We dare not compare our 'mounds' to those anywhere. If we do, someone is bound to mention North Africa and ask for our opinions."*] To such an undertaking, involving long and careful research, as also a more comprehensive view of the monuments of the central part of the continent, this memoir is only preliminary. [H *"We hope that future researchers will be able to continue our investigations within a freer atmosphere."*]

It yet remains to be seen whether all the monuments of the Mississippi valley were constructed upon similar principles, whether they denote a common origin and whether they were probably contemporaneous or otherwise in their erection. It remains to be settled whether the singular and anomalous structures of Wisconsin and the Northwest are part of the same grand system of defense, religious and sepulchral monuments found in the valley of the Ohio and the more imposing, if not the more regular remains, which abound in the southern states. [H *"We're being very creative in articulating every possible petty question to avoid the all-important, controversial and dangerous question (of who built them)."*] The work of investigation has been just commenced; its future progress may, and no doubt will, result in new and perhaps more important disclosures than any hereto made. [H *"The truth will eventually get out; but if we tell it now, it will end our careers."*]

The importance of a complete and speedy examination of the whole field cannot be over-estimated. The operations of the elements, the shifting channels of the streams, the leveling hand of public improvement, and most efficient of all, the slow but constant encroachments of agriculture, are fast destroying these monuments of ancient labor,

breaking in upon their symmetry and obliterating their outlines. ***Thousands have already disappeared or retain but slight and doubtful traces of their former proportions.*** [H *Emphasis mine*] Such examination is, however, too great an undertaking for private enterprise to attempt. It must be left to local explorers, to learned associations or to the government. [H *“We scientists lack the means of preserving them and have had to rely upon business men, rich curiosity seekers and the governments they control. Their financial assistance is contingent upon stroking their egos and tolerating their prejudices.”*] And if this memoir shall succeed in directing that attention to the subject which it merits, and thereby secure in some manner the thorough investigation of these monuments, that result will prove an ample recompense for labors performed in a field of absorbing interest, and one which holds out abundant attractions to the antiquary and the archaeologist. [H *“We really would like to tell the people the truth, and we do hope that it gets out some day, but right now, white folks just can’t take the truth about these mounds.”*] --Chillicothe, Ohio, June 1847.” Page XXXVIII to XXXIX

With the addition of some deductive logic, this remarkable work will tell us most of what we need to know about the Aboriginal African Americans and the evolution of mounds and pyramids -- globally. Lest you think that my estimation of the pressure under which Squier and Davis (hence S&D) worked is exaggerated, note what the “Advertisement”/introduction tells us about the Smithsonian of that time.

The Board of Regents consisted of “three members ex officio of the establishment, namely, the Vice President of the United States, the Chief Justice of the Supreme Court, and the Mayor of Washington, together with twelve other members, three of whom are appointed by the Senate from its own body, three by the House of Representatives from its members, and six citizens appointed by a joint resolution of both houses.” This Board elected other, operating officers.

Fortunately for science, the elected citizens and operating officers included such enlightened scientists as Joseph Henry (physicist that discovered electro-magnetic inductance and for whom the unit of inductance is named) and Alexander D. Bache (founding member of the American Academy of Science). We should also be thankful that Vermont’s George P. Marsh (one of our first environmentalists) was among the Congressmen. *These individuals notwithstanding, the Board was loaded with notorious stinkers: Jefferson Davis (slave owner and future President of the Confederate States of America), Roger B. Taney (later a Chief Justice of the USSC and author of the Dread Scott decision), James Buchanan (a Stephan Douglas supporter that refused to oppose*

*the spread of slavery), Thomas Jefferson (the old slave-owning hypocrite) and many southern Democrats and more than a few northerners who, like Buchanan, opportunistically supported slavery.*

Most North American archaeologists and anthropologists have always been afraid to tell white racists the truth about aboriginal America; but everything is taboo to somebody! By respecting everybody's taboos, by totally dumbing down the public and academic dialog, none of the truth gets out about anything; and we keep burying ourselves deeper and deeper in lies. It was noble of the European and Brazilian archaeologists to break the silence. They assure us of the sharp break in the character of the American skulls between 10 and 7 kya. This verifies what Rafinesque's interpretation of the *Walam Olum* tells us: Amerindians rapidly exterminated the aboriginal African Americans. Women and children were often spared, which is why the Amerindians are so much darker in skin color than other people from Siberia and the Far East. In the swamps of Florida, Louisiana and Belize and on the biggest islands of the Caribbean and off the tip of Tierra del Fuego – in all the cul-de-sacs where the aboriginal African Americans would have been backed up and where it would have been most difficult to dislodge them – the people have always been darker than their neighbors in skin color.

When the Delaware and other Amerindians walked into North America, they were entirely Paleolithic. Like hunter-gatherers everywhere, they practiced totem religion. Their gods, "Nanabush" and other "animal people," were



condensations of their hominid victims and the animals toward which they felt ambivalent. They created most of the monuments in what S&D distinguished as the north and northwest region. These are large effigies of various animals and "present a thousand singular forms and combinations." (S&D: 251). These effigies usually appear on level river terraces near conical mounds, the latter being characteristic of mound sites throughout the USA. These effigies occur mostly in Wisconsin and Michigan, with a few in Minnesota, Iowa, Missouri and

Ohio. They are usually one to four foot in height but, in a few cases, six feet.

*"The human figure is not uncommon among these effigies, and is always characterized by the extraordinary and unnatural length of its (H Homo*

*erectus*) **arms.**” (S&D: 253, *emphasis mine*) By far the most elaborate of all the effigy mounds is – you guessed it – the serpent mound, of Adams County, Ohio. See Figure 123f, above, and note the familiar ring marking that is its tail. The ring marking tells us that they burned *Homo erecti* remains and that the *Homo erectus* spirits rose with their ashes to heaven. The monument is on a level, crescent-shaped hill, 50 feet above the adjacent creek. The side facing the creek is lined with rocks. The other side is five to six feet in height.

This is the one animal effigy that, in my opinion, was built by the Aboriginal African Americans. Why? First, because of the amount of labor that went into its construction; the snake is over 1000 feet in length. Secondly, because the oval that the snake is ejecting *has a four foot embankment*, which, as we shall see and after the oval decompresses to a circle, makes it a perfect replica of the circular enclosures in which the Aboriginal African Americans lived and raised their crops. The monument is telling *Homo erectus*, in heaven, “We remember you and recognize you as our parent species.” (It would have been more realistic to eject the egg from the snake’s other end, but that would have been unacceptable to too many superegos.)

These effigies and the rites that would have been performed at them are the North American counterparts of the Australian Aborigines’ *impichiumas*. They were intended to multiply the animals, to plead for the return of extinct ones and *Homo erectus* and, at the very least, to ask their spirits for protection.

As I said in Volume 2, the Amerindians of both Mesoamerica and North America have always acknowledged one of the things that enabled them to conquer the aboriginal African Americans as quickly as they did: corn. The Mesoamericans were subtle about it. They merely said, “Man was not created until the gods bestowed upon him that special food.” Because their prehistoric gods were *Homo erecti* and Olmecs and because the former were exterminated before the Neolithic, this is an unwitting admission that the Olmecs developed corn. Some of the Amerindian corn legends that rationalize sacrificing women at sowing or reaping time also describe Indians spying on “the corn woman.” No doubt this is exactly how the first Indians learned to plant corn. They spied on the Black women planting it. Also, as I said in Volume 2, the black and red ant tale and the planting of corn *with minnows* confirms who learned from whom.

The Lenni Lenape were candid about corn. In *Walam Olum* Glyphs IV, 24 and 25, they told us that one of their chiefs went south to learn about it. The next chief planted a lot of it. The little circles that the Lenape is sitting on in that glyph symbolize children. If they had wanted to represent corn, they’d have drawn an oblong ear of corn or a corn plant. This glyph says that corn enabled them to undergo explosive population growth that resulted in Glyph IV, 49, my

Figure 38xxviii, which shows the Amerindians re-confronting the Telega at Cahokia and out-numbering them five to one.

Corn and access to the waterways were all that the Aboriginal African Americans needed because they were fishing people, a marine people. That's why they had the boats to come here. Many of the individuals buried in the mounds were buried with marine shells (S&D: 229, referring to the PDF page numbers). Water was their link with the African homeland. That's one of the reasons why "the erections of the mound-builders are almost exclusively confined to the water courses (S&D: 221). Another reason for this confinement is that the river bottoms and coastal plains are the prime areas where everyone has always wanted to live. They are sheltered from the wind and are the most fertile lands for agriculture. So, *in addition to racist disparagement of the native peoples and their culture, the location of the mounds caused them to quickly disappear with the coming of the Europeans. We are extremely fortunate that the Smithsonian Institution, Squier and Davis and their collaborators undertook their study of the monuments when they did!* Shortly afterwards, the Civil War began, ending the spirit of peace time cooperation. After the Civil War, industrialization, massive immigration and a population explosion began. Returning to the subject of corn:

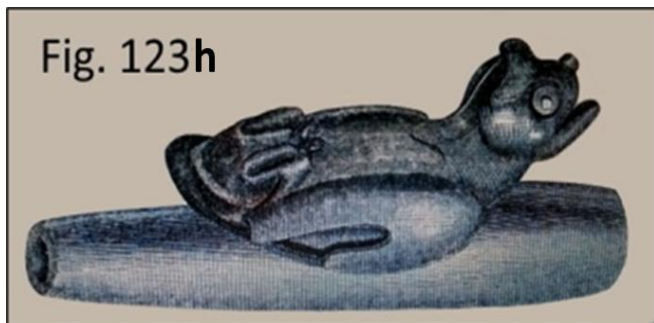
The Blacks conceded almost all the land west of the Mississippi River to the Amerindians. But this policy proved disastrous once the Amerindians learned to grow corn. It meant that the Amerindians had virtually unlimited lands for sowing corn and underwent a population explosion of their own. As we shall see, the Telega probably had no other choice. Their population, at that time, was not nearly as large as their great mounds made it appear.

By the way, the Kuomintang made a similar mistake before WWII. They wanted China's cities and conceded the countryside to the communists. With his land reform policies, Mao Zedong secured the loyalty of the farmers. Thus, the Kuomintang became trapped between the communists and the Japanese.

In addition to their booming population, attribute the Amerindian conquest of the Aboriginal Africans to the fact that the former were expert hunters. They killed off all the megafauna quickly after arriving in the Americas. (Martin) Denied access to "Fish River," (the Mississippi), the Great Lakes and to the more bountiful eastern half of the U. S.; Amerindians hunted buffalo and maintained their prowess with the bow and arrow. This made them better warriors than the fishing people.



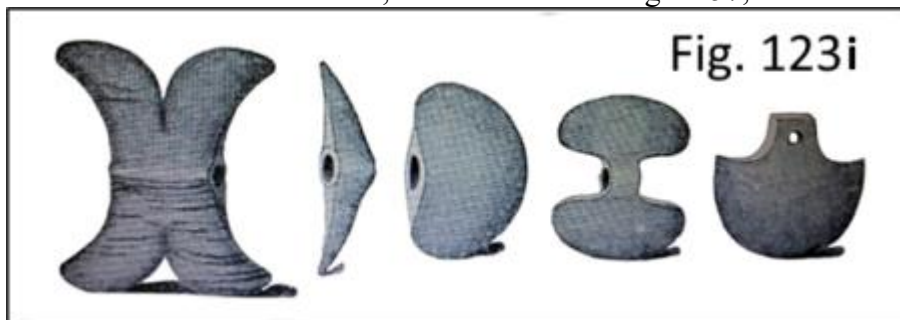
Fig. 123h



stone-faced pyramids of Mesoamerica. (See Figure 123g, a chacmool, from Tula.) Although the official archaeology record for North America includes no chacmools; a miniature, probably Mesolithic, pre-reconfiguration-of-the-gods chacmool was found in South Carolina upon what was, apparently a peace pipe. An image of this soapstone pipe, Figure 123h, appears in S&D, page 365. This ostensible peace pipe conveyed a blunt message to a lesser people: pay tribute or else.

The Aboriginal African Americans of the southern states also had mahquahuitls (S&D: 351), the clubs with embedded obsidian blades, and the sacrificial knives for heart extraction, similar to that of Figure 57, in Volume 2.

Fig. 123i



The knives of Figure 123i, were all found in North America. They are all narrow, made of soft stone, and 5 inches wide. They are all designed for cutting the skin and abdominal muscle beneath the breast plate and enabling a priest to insert his hand into the victim's upper thoracic cavity and extract his beating heart.



Fig.  
123g

**Fig. 123j**



Exquisite works of Olmec and Toltec art have also been found, occasionally within or near the mounds, north and south. The Etowah platform mound of Bartow County, Georgia has yielded Figure 123j.

Notice how characteristic of Toltec art this copper Birdman is. His left hand holds a severed head. Behind his own head and in his right hand are sacrificial knives like those of Figure 123i.

When the Amerindians succeeded in conquering the Blacks, they enjoyed revenge not only in Olmec territory (where Coe found so many broken statues) but in the North too. Figure 123k shows one of two American Woodhenges

where the Amerindians took revenge upon the Cahokians. You know, of course, that this is *not* an Aboriginal African American killing circle because they adopted the

sophisticated practices of their Olmec cousins. Down in the bottom of funnel-shaped North America, where overpopulation was always greatest; the most psychopathic priests killed by heart extraction on top of truncated pyramids and developed religious myths that not only rationalized the practice *but required it* “to keep the sun in its orbit.”

By the time the Delaware and the Iroquois fought their way to the Ohio Valley, they had greatly improved upon their process of

**Fig. 123k**



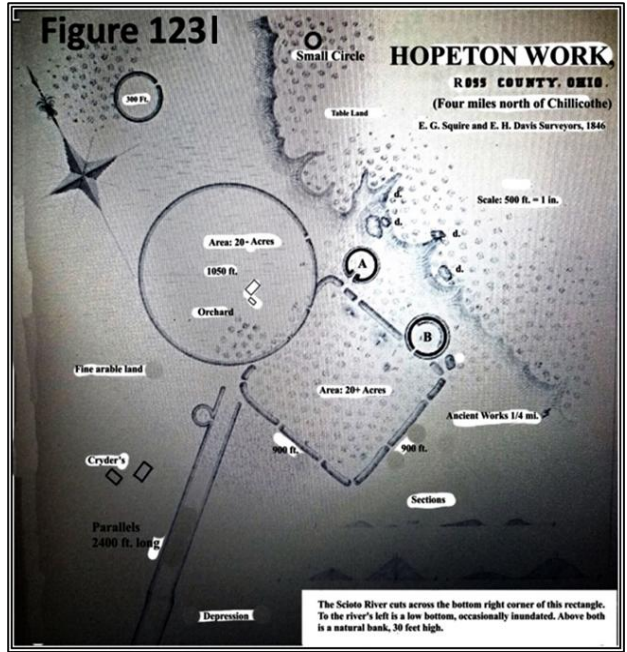
One of two American Woodhenges found near Cahokia Mound. The holes have been refitted with posts.

revenge-taking. First, they moved onto the rich alluvial terraces where the Blacks had lived and built their mounds. Then the Amerindians modified these sites according to their own tastes, as in Figure 1231.

As best I can surmise, the large circles were the places within which people lived and planted their corn, squash and beans. They are typically surrounded by a four-foot-high embankment intended to keep the deer out at night. Mounds were likely to appear anywhere on these flat river

terraces where the remains of the gods had been burned and Amerindians had been sacrificed. The large *squares* of Figure 1231 were killing squares. Small mounds, most of them imitation mounds that would have been made by the Amerindians, block the exits of the squares. Amerindian archers, symbolic of the Amerindians whom the Blacks had captured and sacrificed on top of their pyramid mounds, “magically returned to life” atop these pyramids and launched their arrows at the Black captives tied to posts in the center.

Recall, as Bill Holm told us, that a good laminated bow casts an arrow 600 feet. The average side of the killing squares was about 950 feet, thus 475 feet half-way across, where the arrows would have enough force to easily kill a victim. With or without an interior ditch, the surrounding wall was about 12 feet high, too tall for anyone to scale but wide enough on top for spectators to stand upon and safely view the killing, as at Stonehenge. Unlike the defensive works, ditches, when found in connection with these square enclosures, were always on the inside of the parapet (S&D: 63). Small circles, such as those labeled “A” and “B,” in Figure 1231, were also very thick and tall and probably used as holding areas for the prisoners. Long parallel avenues, such as the one in Figure 1231, with 4-foot-high embankments and always leading at one end to the killing square, were gauntlets that captive Blacks had to run before going to their death in the killing square. These gauntlets gave Amerindian women, children and old people an opportunity to get their licks in and vent their anger upon their former oppressors.





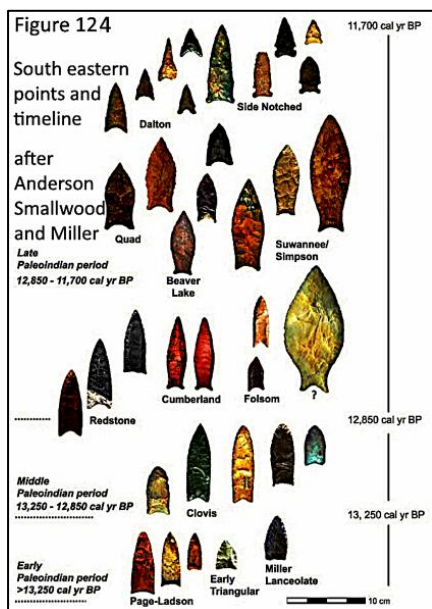
Squier and Davis interpreted the parallel avenues as I do but either remained subconscious of it or were heeding Henry's advice to withhold conclusions. In a footnote (S&D: 166), they say only, "There are some singular structures in Sweden, which coincide very nearly with this remarkable little work (a parallel avenue). They are circles composed of upright stones, having short avenues of approach upon each side, opposite each other, in the manner here represented. See Sjöborg's *Samlingar för Nordens Fornälskare*, 1822." The English word *gauntlet* or *gantlope* apparently is cognate with the Swedish *gatlopp*, which literally means "lane run."

The enclosed circles and the enclosed squares both disappear as one travels south. Why? Circles weren't worth their cost because the deer population shrank and the human population grew as one went south. Killing squares became less in demand because the Blacks learned that they had to compromise with the Amerindians. Later-arriving Amerindians would have received, not a welcome wagon but a less hostile reception, and were less thirsty for revenge. Compromise is also, no doubt, what enabled the Olmecs to hang on as long as they did and what enabled the Mayas and their successors to study and copy Olmec culture.

The close similarity of the monuments in the southern and middle states with those of Mesoamerica, and the similar chacmool and sacrificial knives, the mahquahuits, the exquisite artwork of Mesoamerican origin and the absence of well-designed defensive works in the southern states such as those found in Ohio and Kentucky all lead to the same conclusions. *The Aboriginal African Americans*

*of the north were part of the Olmec Empire. Their Amerindian conquerors of the states bordering the Gulf and Georgia and South Carolina later fell under the Toltec Empire. Just as the American Big Brothers and their archaeologists are hiding the African origin of the first Americans, they are hiding the fact that, in Toltec times, the whole of the Gulf Region tended to be a single culture group. Chaco Canyon, for example, now part of northern New Mexico, was long a Toltec turquoise mine worked by slaves.*

Want more proof that the Aboriginal African Americans were fishing people? Look at Figures 124 and 125a. But stop first for just a minute. This may be a good time for you to pour yourself a strong drink; and if



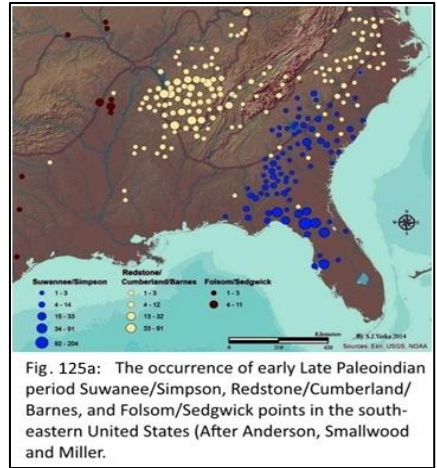
you're not at home, go home to the security of your den or living room. The discovery that we are coming to is the most shocking of all my discoveries. Start sipping your drink now because what follows is going to get increasingly unsettling.

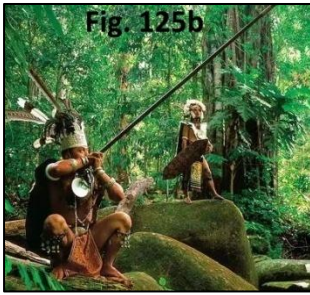
Archaeologists, whether they dare to admit it or not, all know at least subconsciously that the fishtail type points (e. g. the Simpson and Suannee points) are the points of the aboriginal African Americans. That's why Anderson, Smallwood and Miller created Figure 125a. The blue dots of Figure

125a are the fishtail types depicted in Figure 124, the African American points. They are like children's toys compared to the bullet-like Clovis and Folsom points. The Amerindians modified the Clovis point into the Cumberland point, which retains the efficiency of the Clovis but looks a little fishy, just enough so to not divulge the ethnicity of the stealthy archer that launched it. The various types of fishtail points – even in the southeastern US – where most of North America's fishtail points are found – are relatively rare. The various Clovis types, most of them lanceolated, outnumber fishtail points 4 or 5 to one. *The relative distribution of blue dots (African American fishtail points) and beige dots (Amerindian Cumberland points) in this early Late Paleolndian period confirms that Amerindians drove African Americans toward and into Florida.*

My friend Kris Hirst, an archaeologist who is kind enough to answer questions at About.com, explains that the situation is quite different in South America. There the fishtail points are as the Clovis points are in the North – common and associated with all the earliest sites. Archaeologists of the North are legitimately confused regarding the antiquity of the culture that produced the fishtail points because the people of that culture visited only a very few sites, like Topper in South Carolina (a Pleistocene chert mine) before virtually disappearing for almost 2ky. As Anderson, Smallwood and Miller tell us, these points are generally not found until the early Late Pleistocene Period [the first half of the Younger Dryas (Big Chill), 12,850 – 12,275] in the North.

They have been in both North and South America for at least 65 ky, but *there is a reason why they are generally not found, in the North, until this late date. It is the same reason why the Aboriginal African Americans left few artifacts of any kind in the North and the other reason why they were conquered so quickly and easily.*





Even I, near-sighted as I am, was able to knock a pack of cigarettes from its perch, 20 paces away, with my second needle. Made entirely of organic material, it doesn't show up in the archaeological record. See Figure 125b.

As Bernt Peyer told us in Volume 1, citing the Cheyenne's preference for



turkey feather fletching as an example; primitive people identified with their arrows and put their own brands on them. So, fishing people generally fashioned the few arrows they needed to look like fish. It was especially likely for them to do this because it told the *Homo erectus* gods, "Look, now we only kill fish." This helped them to gradually ease their fear of the gods.

Did the Aboriginal African Americans exterminate *Homo erectus* in the Americas? Of course. All of the chacmools, such as Figure 123g, have *Homo erectus*' club feet, his huge nose and huge ears or headdresses that simulate them.

Look at Figure 125c. It shows Beringia as it looked circa 13,200 years ago, when the Delaware became the first Amerindians to successfully enter America. Notice that because the ocean currents flow south to north along the west coast of North America, it would have been possible at many times during the Ice Age, for small groups to walk the coastline from Asia to North America. Walking the coastline from Kenya to Los Angeles, at the rate of ten miles per day, takes only five years. (Ah, the lure of Hollywood!)

As their *Walam Olum* told us, the Delaware stayed in Eastern Siberia for a very long time for several reasons: 1) the game was plentiful there; 2) they fervently believed *Homo erectus* to be across the isthmus in “Snakeland” either because they had chased him there or because small groups of explorers did not return and 3) as recent survivors of the “Water Monster” (the Great Flood), they were afraid to walk the narrow path between the sea and the Cordillera Ice Sheet. They had to wait until a corridor opened in the Laurentide Ice Sheet and until virtually the whole tribe was willing to migrate.

At the same stage of the ice cycle but during some earlier time within the last two million years, *Homo erectus* would not have hesitated to walk the coastal path. *Homo habilis*, with only his small tools for scavenging, was unlikely to be in front of him. Even if he was, *Homo habilis*, in any numbers, would have been no match for *Homo erectus* and his spear.

Moreover, if our first out-of-Africa family needed less than 40 ky to thoroughly defeat *Homo erectus* throughout Eurasia and Australia; why should we assume that our African half could not do the same within a smaller territory and over a longer period of at least 52 ky?

Just as the Australian Big Brothers and *their* archaeologists are hiding the truth about prehistoric Australia, the world’s biggest and sickest Big Brothers in America and *their* archaeologists – intent as they are upon hiding everything and lying about everything -- are hiding the truth about the Aboriginal *Homo erectus* Americans too. As Rafinesque and Ivan van Sertima discovered, the Big Brothers are also hiding everything they can about the Olmecs. Because, as I’m about to show you, the Aboriginal African Americans virtually “disappeared”; it has been possible for Big Brother to hide everything about the Aboriginal African North Americans just by hiding the Olmecs – until now!

*Once you realize, as all the above evidence suggests and as Niède Guidon et al. affirm, that Africans were the first Homo sapien inhabitants of the Americas and combine that fact with the fact that Homo erectus had to have already been in the Americas; then it is impossible to escape the conclusion that Aboriginal African Americans exterminated Homo erectus throughout the Western Hemisphere. (The bears and the blue jays certainly didn’t do it. But bear with me, the biggest news is yet to come.)*

Once we accept this fact, then we know that Aboriginal African Americans were subject to the same parricidal psychology, the same obsessions and the same or very similar practices as our ancestors everywhere else. We can begin to put together the big picture for them – with little or no help from loveless, lying and malicious Big Brother and his minions. This is also fortunate because the obedient boys and girls, mostly from private schools, that execute Big

Brother's orders couldn't see the big picture if they had Rembrandt to paint it for them.

The conical mounds were burial mounds – *originally of a very unique variety*. The truncated pyramids, like the stone-faced pyramids of Mesoamerica, were adapted for sacrifice. The large, platform mounds like Cahokia and Etowah...we're getting to them. Some of the conical mounds that Squier and Davis excavated had the remains of one or more persons enwrapped in bark or a mat or lying on a mat, sometimes framed by logs. (Mats and bark contain communities of microbes that encase a corpse and help to preserve it.) These individuals, for whom the burial mound was originally built (and not the later, intrusive burials of the Amerindians) were placed dead center at or below ground level. S&D judged two exceptions to have been shifted by the wind and rain. These individuals were always buried with implements, ornaments and, usually, marine shells. Fire, and sometimes clay or limestone had also been used to harden the earth around them, keep out moisture and preserve the corpses. Yet they were so old that they invariably crumbled into dust upon being touched. [**H Persons so buried were chiefs or kings.**] *S&D acknowledged that many of the earliest burials would have been of less prominent individuals, heaped together.* Oh, how close they were to an epiphany! *However, they reasoned, if the best-preserved interments were this decomposed, the oldest, common remains would be even more difficult to identify or even locate.* The major discovery was just beneath their level of consciousness! (Cf. S&D: 302)

Any *Homo erectus* remains would be impossible to *directly* identify. But contextual identification can sometimes be made if one has enough insight. Fortunately, a substantial layer of ashes at the bottom of some of these conical mounds has been reported by S&D and others. Here's my favorite:

"In a few instances the symmetrical altar, of which so many examples have been given, is wanting, and its place is supplied by a level floor or platform of earth. Such was the case with mound No. 1, in the plan of the great work on the North fork of Paint creek, already referred to. This mound, although one of the richest in contents, was one of the smallest met with, being not over three feet in height. (*H worn down by the elements over tens of thousands of years*) Its deposit was first disturbed by the plough, some years ago, and numerous singular articles were then taken from it. Upon investigation, in place of the altar, a level area ten or fifteen feet broad was found, much burned, on which the relics had been placed. These had been covered over with earth to perhaps the depth of a foot, followed by a stratum of small stones, and an outer layer of earth two



feet in thickness. Hundreds of relics, and many of the most interesting and valuable hitherto found, were taken from this mound, among which may be mentioned *several coiled serpents, carved in stone, and carefully enveloped in sheet mica and copper*; pottery; carved fragments of ivory; a large number of *fossil* teeth; numerous fine sculptures in stone, etc.” -- S&D: 295-296

Interpretation: if we use our insight into the psychology of the “prominent individuals,” we can anticipate what we are told in the previous, indented paragraph. Until only recently, in the Americas, and since their transition from *ixtliltzins* to kings, the most successful leaders of savage society, everywhere, have been Fifth Mask people, “gentry” or “royalty,” people pretending to be more closely related than the rest of us to the *Homo erectus* gods. Especially in primitive societies wherein the Species War was best remembered, they expected their sepulchral treatment to resemble that of the gods they personated. So, we only have to know the one to know the other.

The Aboriginal African Americans had *not* been required to dispose of the less-edible *Homo erectus* remains as did their African, dessert-dwelling cousins. These Americans had plenty of wood, so they burned the *Homo erectus* remains in bonfires on the alluvial terraces where the victims had been made to give up their lives, their flesh and their residences.

*The Fir Bolgs did the same thing, which is why the Gaelic word Sídhe means “People of the (Fairy) mounds.” (See Volume 1, footnote 41.) Ashes like those of the previous paragraph –at the center and ground level, at a lower level than any altar or where no altar exists – are Homo erectus ashes. Don’t even bother asking anyone to excavate. It had to be this way because the ground upon which Homo erectus remains were burned contracted the ambivalence felt toward Him. That ground became sacred and taboo. Everywhere, the first, conical mounds accumulated gradually, over thousands of years as people threw dirt upon these spots where the Homo erecti had been burned. Just as the Koories threw dirt upon their [parra](#), a ceremonial Homo erectus bonfire, people everywhere threw dirt upon the spots where the actual bonfires had been. The dirt-throwing expressed their ambivalence. It both hid the evidence of the dirty deed and memorialized it.*

The other reason why our Egyptian and Sudanese ancestors couldn’t burn the less edible remains of the *Homo erecti*, in addition to not having wood, was that the shifting sands would have exposed the ashes. So, after their cannibal feasts, the less-edible remains were thrown in the Nile. The Nile was, in virtually every case, very close by because it had been used to stop the *Homo erecti*’s flight

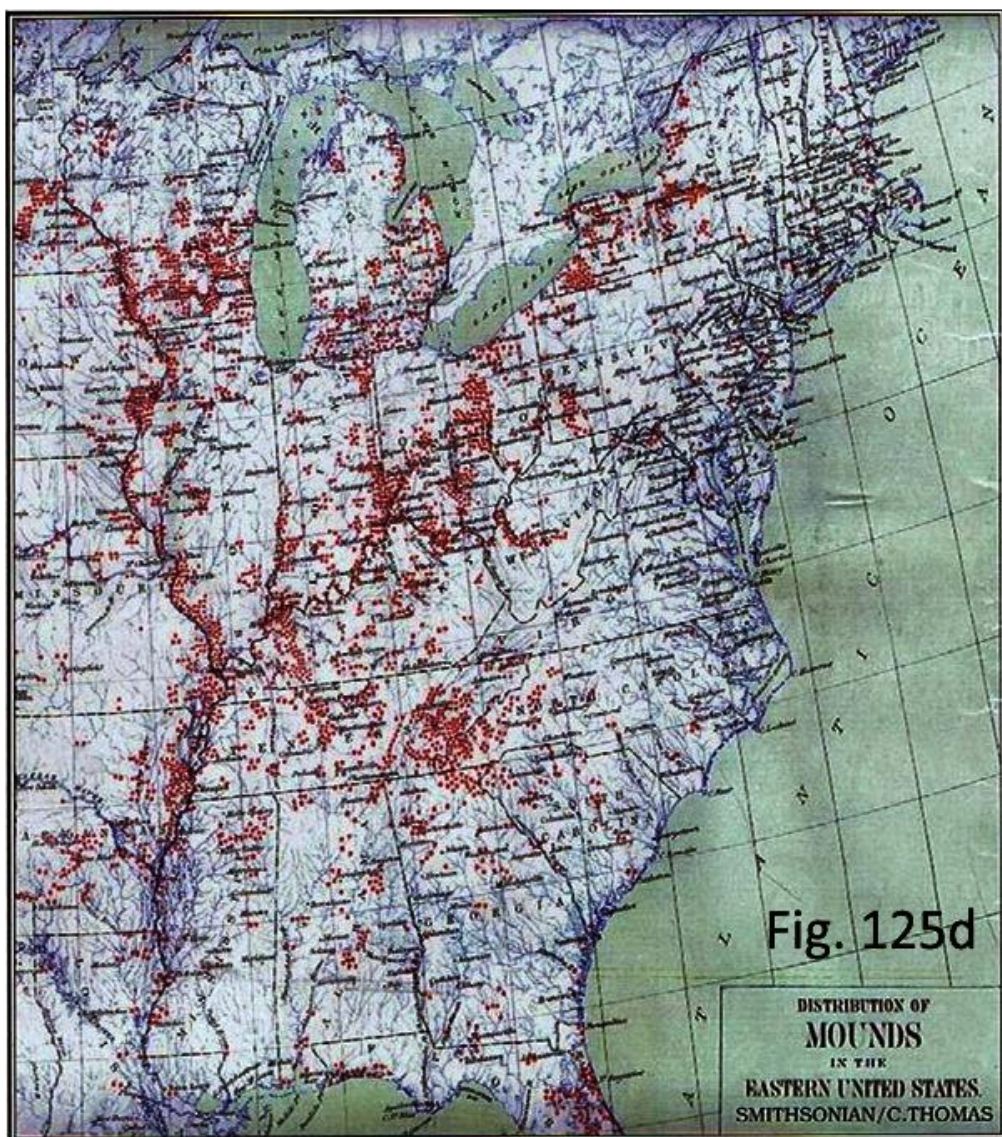
and surround them with only half as many attackers as what would otherwise have been required.

Everything about the above bespeaks of a Species War context except the pottery. Why the pottery? Because at the start of the Neolithic, the Aboriginal African Americans feared that their gods needed clay pots in the afterworld. (Not to pee in but to preserve their seeds through the winter.) So, in the dead of night, with the whole tribe in attendance and the priests in full regalia; they tunneled under the mound and a novice priest, skinny but exceedingly brave, the original Richard Pryor, crawled through the tunnel and placed pots at or just above the level of the ashes. Funny as it sounds, this is exactly what they would have done. Can't you see the other priests pulling Pryor aside and asking, "What were they doing in there?"

Pryor: "Who? ...What? ...Oh! ...They was having a party."

Notice that this discovery forces us to modify and expand a theory that we brought to this appendix. The association of pyramids with the little mounds of the receded Nile did not inspire pyramid building. That was just an afterthought, icing on the Egyptian cake. Replace the old theory with this one until a better one is propounded: *every place where large numbers of Homo erecti were killed or their body parts disposed of became sacred. Where these places were upon land, mounds accumulated upon the ashes or the feasting site. Mounds evolved into stuccoed, stepped and truncated pyramids, like those in Mesoamerica, wherever the number of sacrifices made upon their tops and the traffic to and from the tops warranted it.*

And traffic there was, lots of it! Between the perfection of the laminated bow, which caused the game animals to disappear quickly, and the advent of horticulture (what I sometimes refer to as the "Cannibal Age"); men had little to eat except each other. The following map of the mounds provides a realistic idea of how many *Homo erectus* people were slaughtered in what is now the eastern half of the USA alone!



Only *tlatoanis* (high priest and supreme commanders) and (later) kings and emperors, the greatest phonies, could be buried in these (*Homo erectus*) burial mounds. Sacrifices made on North American *pyramids*, as everywhere else, were generally made in the name of the Species War gods. Of course, today's Big Brothers and the lying scoundrels that are their hirelings will either ignore or deny these revelations, just as they ignore or deny everything that I say. But if you've read this far, you know whom to believe. I'll speculate, now, about the psychopathic minds and reasoning of the American Big Brothers and their archaeologists; but first have another sip of your drink.

For archaeology, North America is the ultimate Berkeleyville, the center for archaeological solipsism. George Berkeley was an Anglo-Irish bishop from the first half of the eighteenth century whose crackpot philosophy of “immaterialism” or “subjective idealism” or “solipsism” basically said, “If an idea of something isn’t in my mind, it doesn’t exist.” The close analog in American archaeology says, “If you can’t prove something existed by showing me the dated artifacts, then it didn’t exist.” For what they don’t want to believe, nothing can be inferred (e. g. an arrow point might not be an arrow point if the shaft is not attached and a bow is not found next to it with the same date range). Yet the same archaeologists wax ultra-creative and speculative in supporting any conclusion that confirms the conventional wisdom or confuses the public and maintains their amnesia. (Amnesia from prehistoric trauma keeps folks from accurately evaluating the world around them and seeing the way forward. That is why we MUST know the truth about our past, regardless of how grim or unflattering it is.) The opposite attitude is that of the Third Mask, latent homosexual scoundrels that want to prevent every possibility of change (and the removal of their masks) by denying or preventing the acquisition of new and basic knowledge that they can’t control.

Such censorship is easy to impose in North America. Unlike Mesoamerica where the pyramids are stone covered and of interest to everyone because they know that their ancestors built most of them, North Americans are mostly new immigrants; and almost all of the earthen mounds have been plowed under. Those few, truly curious and honest people that are determined to become legitimate archaeologists can be put to work on trivial questions and made to excavate in places where you know they’re not likely to find anything new. If they do find something, then the latent homosexuals (and usually fundamentalist Christians) in charge of the project can interpret it in a way that overlooks, denies or otherwise obliterates the news – as Sir Leonard Woolly did in ignoring the serpentine figurines and as Eli Lilly and the Indiana Historical Society did in bastardizing the *Walam Olum*. This is how Big Brother keeps everyone in a coma and focused on his last or next trip to Disneyland.

But nowadays, with all the rapidly developing satellite technology, multiscan sonar and argon-argon dating; it is becoming easy to find and interpret everything under the ground or the water just by applying the right technology to the right area. How are they going to continue to hide everything and keep everyone confused? How can the Big Brother gangsters hope – even without the impending population collapses – to maintain the savage *status quo*? Answer: it appears to me that they are stepping up their attempts to control academia, especially archaeology and anthropology, by arming their most trusted, arrogant

and malicious police agents with fake credentials and putting them in charge of universities and university departments and giving these (mostly private) universities exclusive control of strategic archaeological sites. More on this below, and think twice about spending tens of thousands of dollars to put your kid through one of Big Brother's universities!

The "List of Archaeological Periods," *per* official North American archaeology, that is shown at the Wikipedia page of the same name is so confusing that I'm going to dismiss it. *I'm not saying that these distinctions between the Native Americans of the last few thousand years are inaccurate. I'm saying that they are about as important as the distinctions between today's New Jersey suburbs!* Despairing of answering (and in many cases, even asking) the really important questions about the universal prehistoric traumas that made us all the maladaptive and insane savages that we are; American archaeologists are seeking to justify their existence by focusing on easy but meaningless questions, questions that, even when answered, tell us nothing about the common traumas of our past and how we must change our K and R Class Struggle behavior to avoid repetition of those prehistoric catastrophes.

Some of the confusion is owing to Amerindians not being motivated to tell whites the truth. For example, I found the Aboriginal African American mound (and fish kill!) that I knew would be near the Gorge in Taos, NM; but the Hopi Indians are refusing to point out to me its counterpart near the Grand Canyon, and the eligible area is too large for me to independently search.

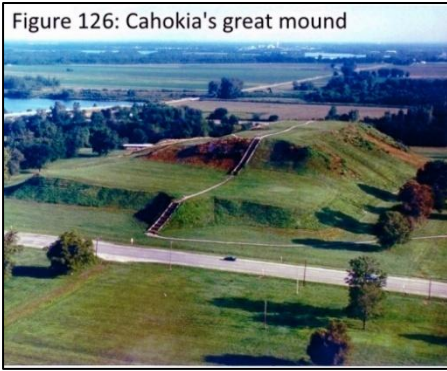
Put yourself in the Amerindians' place. Do you want to admit, today, to having been both conquered *and* conquerors and lose much of your ability to pique Whitey's guilt? Would you have wanted, in slavery times, to admit that the Blacks had preceded you and risk taking their place as slaves?

To the credit of the Amerindians, when asked by Rafinesque, William Bartram and Mr. E. Cornelius about the great earthen mounds; even the chiefs admitted knowing nothing about them. (See S&D, p. 231, for Mr. E. Cornelius.) As we are about to discover, they blacked out what little they once knew about the mounds and the African Americans. The Blacks blacked out everything.

Other, obvious reasons for the archaeological record of the mounds and the first, Aboriginal African Americans being as confused and fallacious as it is are 1) dark-skinned racism and the refusal of the whites, especially in slave days, to credit dark-skinned people for anything, 2) Big Brother's (latent homosexuals') dread fear of all new knowledge and change., 3) nationalist prejudice that says, "Our ancestors were too civilized to exterminate our parent species. Moreover, he was never here" and finally, 3) the Big Brothers gradually come to believe in their own lies and become completely upside down.



Figure 126: Cahokia's great mound



For example, an American secret police agent or stooge of David Rockefeller (I'm not sure which) once told me not to articulate and publicize the basic laws of our psycho-sexual development because "this will cause many young homosexual people to commit suicide." Believe it or not, he was serious! The young homosexual people who commit suicide – most of them – are people who can't escape awareness of their own homosexuality but fail to see

through the Third Masks of other, latent homosexuals and consequently conclude that they themselves are perverse and abnormal. Telling these young people the truth is exactly what is needed to *prevent* them from hating and killing themselves.

Last but not least of reasons why our knowledge of the first Americans is so fallacious and confused is that most of the Aboriginal African Americans and their artifacts...*disappeared*. Have another sip of that drink. I promise to get more specific and get this taxi to its destination.



Figure 127: Silbury Hill

The individuals who were entrusted with the *Walam Olum* were Americans of a different character. They weren't average people trained by their tribe to lie as required

for self-defense. They were the least traumatized individuals specially chosen by their tribe for their honesty. If I had their names and faces, I'd include them in [Figure 116g](#). These trustees of the *Walam Olum* specially chose Dr. Malthus Ward and Constantine Rafinesque to replace themselves as trustees of their tribal Bible because of their humanity and good reputations. There have never been nor will there ever be better and more reliable sources of pre-Columbian information than these. As I've told you, everything in the *Walam Olum* (not as interpreted by Lily and the Indiana Historical Society but as interpreted by Rafinesque and his Indian informants) rings true; and we can infer still more from it.

Although contemporary archaeologists are totally confused as to who built the mounds and when, they can't mistake the unique style of the great Cahokia mound and not associate it with Etowah, Poverty Point and all the similar mounds. The mounds of the southern states tended to be much larger than the average mounds of the north. Moreover, most of the southern mounds were, as of the time when Squier and Davis and the Smithsonian Institution systematically

investigated them, either of the pyramid or the platform type. Conical mounds were comparatively rare in the South. (S&D: 56) The pyramid and platform mounds “are sometimes terraced and generally have graded ascents to their summits.” (S&D: 56)

[Figure 126](#) is an aerial view of Cahokia’s great mound, a typical, platform mound but bigger than the others. Notice how different [Figures 123a](#) and [126](#) are from typical square pyramids [Figures 63e or 63f (in Volume 2)] or conical mounds such as Silbury Hill ([Figure 127](#)).

Figure 123a’s article cites local dentist Edward A. Woelk of Belleville, Illinois as having believed that at least one of Cahokia’s functions was military signaling. Woelk noted that a line of mounds stretches to the east through three counties, and signal fires from atop either end mound can be successively signaled for over a hundred miles. Woelk also believed the mounds to be much older than most people believed (2 ky old) because the drilling of a hole revealed that the soil and clay inside had been baked hard like brick.

I second both these observations. *Even the most recently-renovated, platform mounds are over 14 ky old*; and the Telega would have started using them as signal fire towers no later than the time, about *seven kya*, when the Amerindians turned out in force on the West Bank of the Mississippi with five times the corn-fed population that the Indians thought the Telega to have.

If they ever heard it, Squier and Davis would also have seconded Woelk’s defensive hypothesis because they discovered many elaborate and sophisticated, irregular and adapted-to-the-geography, defensive works lining either side of the Ohio River and its tributaries. See S&D, Chapter II, “Earthworks; Enclosures; Works of Defense.”

*S&D found few defensive works in the southern-most states bordering the Gulf of Mexico.* (Defensive works are always enclosed, have ditches *outside* their

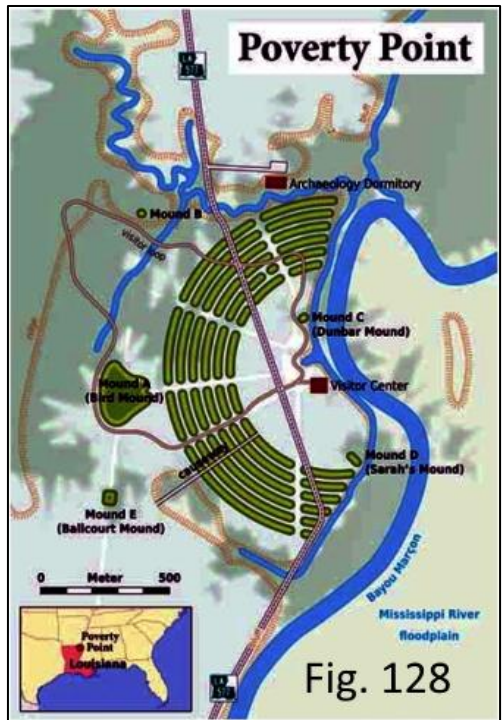


Fig. 128

embankments, occupy the heights or command the headlands where rivers join and are irregular and not circular or square in shape.)

The great mound at Poverty Point, Louisiana is second in size only to the Cahokia Mound. Its ridges were built with 530,000 cubic yards of earth (over 35 times the cubic amount of the Great Giza Pyramid). [Figure 128](#) depicts an aerial view of Poverty Point. Of Poverty Point and other great mounds, the 4th Secretary to the US Treasury, Albert Gallatin once observed that the mound builders had to be agriculture-based, highly populated and organized (S&D: 446).

But that generalization might not have applied to the beginning of the Holocene when the glaciers were melting and rivers such as Fish River, the Mississippi, were teeming with fish that had been in suspended animation in the ice. As to Poverty Point in particular and in a lengthy essay, Wakefield tells us:

“Habitation areas have been identified around the site, especially on the north side, covering more than a square mile, though Gibson states ‘only a handful have received more than passing attention.’ Sixty encampments encircling the core complex are known. No descendants can be traced to any historic tribe or group, despite estimates that many thousands of people were living here, who did not depend upon agriculture, over a thousand-year period. Fruits, acorns, pecans, and other nuts were important in the diet, but the superabundant food, available all year long, was fish. Gibson writes ‘in the 500 square mile swamp around the Poverty Point encampments, there were between 30,000 and 1,000,000 pounds of fish per square mile!’” --Wakefield, citing Gibson

“As of Gibson’s 1974 book, “less than 3/10 of 1%, .3%, of the area of the rings (*H of the terraces on Poverty Point’s main mound*) had been excavated.” --Wakefield, again citing Gibson

“Conical shaped Mound B has had quite a bit of excavation. Gibson reports that Mound B did not contain burials, *but was raised over the ashes of a huge bonfire, which had consumed at least one person*. It was conical, two stories high, built in four major stages.” --Op. cit. citing Milner, H emphasis mine

“The American Museum of Natural History in New York reported dark middens (old debris) on the fore and aft slopes of the rings. Middens are holes wherein garbage was buried. Ford and Gibson confirmed that



the old ground beneath the rings was ‘midden veneered.’” --Wakefield, citing Gibson and Ford, J.A., and Webb

“The Amerindians took over Poverty Point and, at the approach of modern times, were using the main mound as a flourishing port and manufacturing center. It was one of a very few select places from which their canoes could travel long distances with goods and without portage.” --Wakefield

Now, Dear Reader, you have just heard evidence of the Amerindians using the mounds for mundane purposes, which is NOT something they would do if the mounds had ever been sacred to them. Amerindian chiefs, on several occasions, admitted that they knew nothing about them and that their people didn’t build them. Nowhere have I ever seen Amerindian myths or rituals regarding the mounds, myths or rituals that would suggest Amerindian involvement with the mounds. Now look at what S&D said regarding the mounds’ antiquity:

“The rivers are constantly shifting their channels; and they frequently cut their way through all the intermediate up to the earliest-formed, or highest terrace, presenting bold banks, inaccessibly steep, and from sixty to one hundred feet high. At such points, from which the river has, in some instances, receded to the distance of half a mile or more, works of this description are oftenest found.” --S&D: 65

“And it is a fact of much importance, and worthy of special note, that within the scope of a pretty extended observation, no work of any kind has been found occupying the first or latest formed terrace. This (H lowest) terrace alone, except at periods of extraordinary freshets, is subject to overflow. The formation of each terrace constitutes a sort of semi-geological era in the history of the valley; *and the fact that none of the ancient works appear upon the lowest or latest formed of these, while they appear indiscriminately upon all the others, bears directly upon the question of their antiquity.*” --H emphasis mine, S&D: 65

As the above quotations observe, the native peoples were not stupid. They had long experience with and understanding of the natural world. *They would not have built Poverty Point when and where they did only to have half of it washed away within 1-2 k years.*

Yet, in contradiction to all that you have learned from me and we have learned from Wakefield *et al.*, Big Brother’s archaeologists, from Washington University in St. Louis have issued the cartoon that is on the web at:

[https://v.youku.com/v\\_show/id\\_XMTgzMTE0MjY3Mg==.html?from=s1.8-1-1.2&refer=seo\\_operation.liuxiao.liux\\_00003303\\_3000\\_Qzu6ve\\_19042900](https://v.youku.com/v_show/id_XMTgzMTE0MjY3Mg==.html?from=s1.8-1-1.2&refer=seo_operation.liuxiao.liux_00003303_3000_Qzu6ve_19042900).

For those of you not having immediate access to the web, it said (It was removed between Versions 25.5 and 25.6 of this work.):

- A. The Poverty Point monuments were built by “Native Americans,” “hunters and gatherers,” between 1500 and 1200 BCE (3500 – 3200 BPE). Read “Native Americans” as Amerindians.
- B. (With no mechanized equipment) hunters and gatherers built the works at Poverty Point within 30-90 days! Conclude this because:
  - i. The soil throughout the main mound is all very similar.
  - ii. The main mound exhibits little if any weathering.
  - iii. It was found with no large trees growing upon it as are generally found at other mounds, and
  - iv. There is no garbage around it to suggest anyone was living there.
- C. The mound builders had a very sophisticated religion, which we have never before attributed to hunter gatherers.
- D. Hunter gatherers are much more sophisticated and capable of large-scale leadership and organization, and more stratified and less egalitarian than heretofore observers have believed.

The producers of this cartoon are either totally-ignorant, U.S. Government, secret-police agents posing as archaeologists, or they are people with no conscience that will do and say whatever the billionaire Big Brothers tell them to do and say. Big Brothers’ motivation for these lies is transparent and as I’ve described it: 1) to affirm the official racist lie of Thomas Jefferson and Cyrus Thomas of the U. S. Department of Ethnology, whose 727-page report, published in 1894, emphatically concluded that the Amerindians had built the mounds, and 2) to keep the traumatized people ignorant of our common past, keep them in a coma so that they remain disunited, incapable of seeing the way forward and incapable of compelling change. Again, the latent homosexual Big Brothers are NOT protecting us and accommodating the public’s fear of change. They are motivated solely by *their own* animal instincts to proliferate their own genes and by their dread fear of losing *their* Third Masks, the mask that hides homosexuality. They are the unhappiest savages, but the most successful savages, the savages most likely to be on the handle end of the sacrificial knife.

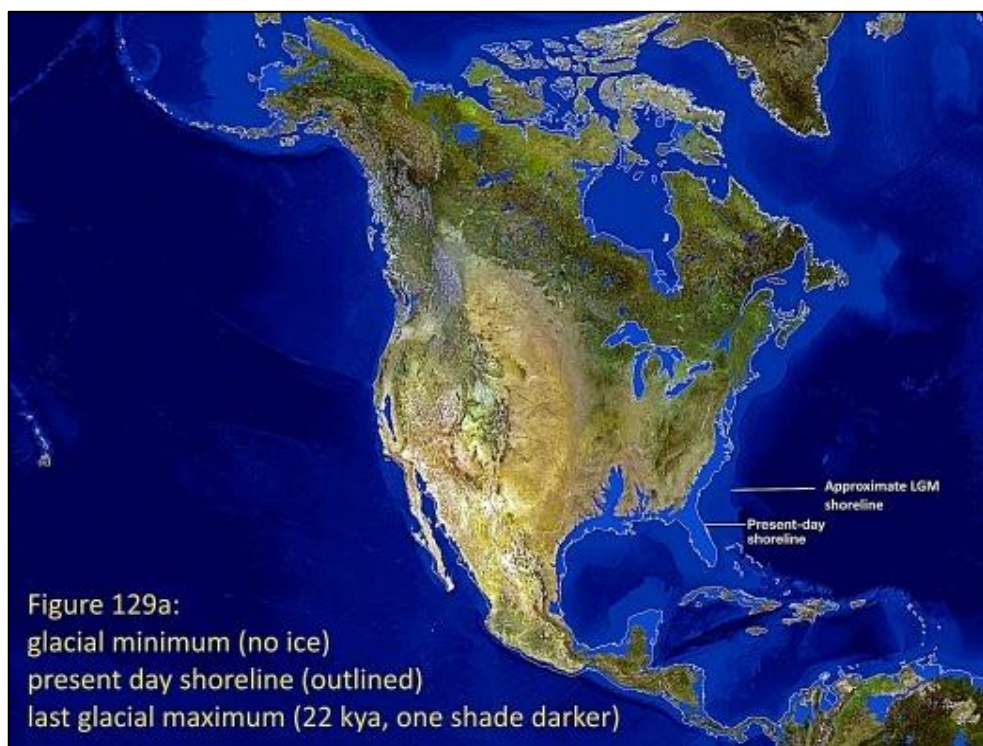
More specifically, these lies enable the U. S. Government and European Americans to maintain the big lie that it was only Amerindians that they

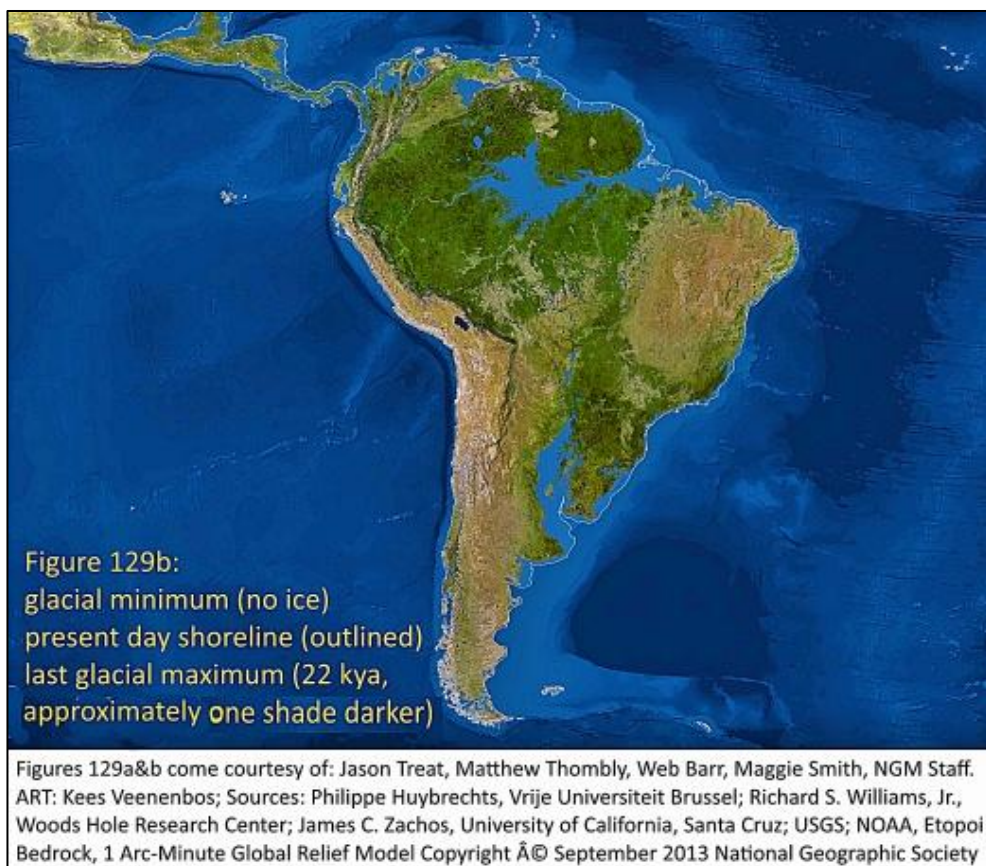
dispossessed. (The few Amerindians that survive are on reservations and can be thrown a few scraps now and then. Black Folks, we are told, have never been good for much of anything and can stay on the bottom where they belong.)

Now the rest of this is going to get incredibly grim. Pour another drink, but we must continue because no matter how ugly the truth is, we all need to know it. *We must know the truth about our traumatic past to avoid repeating the (K and R) mistakes that traumatize us.* I've already told you that the Amerindians, within the space of a few thousand years, conquered a civilization that had developed for at least 55 ky when they conquered it. The reasons were: 1) the Telega were a fishing people who wanted to live at the waterside, so they conceded the interior lands; 2) as hunters, the Amerindians were skilled archers and better warriors; 3) once the Amerindians of the interior learned to grow corn, they had virtually unlimited opportunity to expand their population. They admitted learning to grow it from the "Telega"/ "black ants" / "Corn Woman" etc. before conquering them. They certainly didn't derive corn, maize, from the Europeans because Europeans had only other grains before coming to America. So, calling the Amerindians "hunter gatherers" is very questionable.

We're slowly getting to the other reason as to why the Blacks were so easily conquered. Have another drink.

Recall me mentioning that there is about a 616-foot swing to the ocean between glacial maximum and glacial minimum (no ice). We are about two thirds up the ladder now. Figures 129a and 129b, below, show somewhat clearly how the (respectively) North and South American extremes compare to the present coastlines. Notice that in the depths of the ice age, most people would have been living within the tropics or near the tropics where it wasn't terribly cold. For the reasons I've already noted (them being fishing people and having wanted to stay by the sea, their connection with the homeland); the aboriginal African Americans would have virtually all lived at or near the coastlines. South America has tropical coastline outside of the Caribbean and the Gulf of Mexico area, but North America does not. Notice too how much of the Gulf and the Caribbean would have been above water at or near 23 kya, the LGM. Take another drink.





Now if we had to wait for official archaeology to tell us the details about the Mississippian Mounds or the Royal Compound at La Venta, official archaeology being as controlled as it is by the rich, latent homosexual scoundrels – we’d *never* know anything about either one, much less know in time to avoid new catastrophes. Fortunately, through good detective work, logic and imagination; we now know everything we need to know about the Aboriginal African Americans except why they built the platform mounds, why they seem to have disappeared for two thousand years and why they left so few artifacts. Have another sip.

They could have held some religious ceremonies atop them; but we know enough about Paleolithic and Neolithic religion to say with certainty that there was no ceremony that required huge platforms like this. Their favorite sport, *chunkey*, did require a large playing field (i. e. for throwing spears at a rolling hoop, harpooning and anchoring the sun); but there was no need to play that sport on a platform. They played it on a huge field in front of the mounds or in a sunken court (“Chunk Yard”) resembling the one where Mesoamericans played *tlachtli*.

At some point, stockades were constructed around Cahokia; but these were later innovations. As Rafinesque observed, the mounds couldn't have been built for defensive purposes because 1) most were two or three hundred yards away from a river or the sea, which they would need secure access to in case of a siege; 2) moats that could have been easily made for added security weren't! Instead of gathering dirt from beside the mounds, they skimmed it off the surface and carried it from afar and 3) some of the platform mounds had numerous causeways leading to the platforms, causeways that would have made them vulnerable to attackers. As for their mortuary use, skeletal remains were found in many of the mounds, but platforms and wide terraces were not needed for burials. Have another drink.

Squier and Davis told us that many of the truncated and platform mounds have broad terraces and that; except for the conical mounds, the larger ones of the South "all appear to be truncated and to have, in most instances, graded ascents to their tops." (S&D: 245) If we access the "List of Mississippian Mounds" that can be found at Wikipedia and use their names to zoom in on them via Google Earth, we see that all the sloped or stepped sides of the platform mounds either face the local river or, like Cahokia, face the Gulf of Mexico. ***There's the answer! All of them were built as emergency platforms onto which people could run to escape the tsunami caused by a massive glacial slide. For so many people located over most of the United States, the Mississippi Valley and its western tributaries to all engage in platform mound-building tells us that they were severely and recently traumatized. Have another swig, a big one and one for me.***

***Now look at Figure 130a, below. It's Figure 10 with what may be the single most important year in the life of man circled.<sup>114</sup> During a rapid warming period after a long ice age and midway up the upside, a sudden stoppage of the ocean current and reversal in average global temperature couldn't have been caused by meltwater. Enough ice would have remained to maintain the salinity needed for the thermohaline cycle. The stoppage of the ocean circulation and the sudden reversal in the temperature -- at that point -- could only have been caused by one thing: the sliding into the sea of a massive ice sheet.<sup>115</sup> As big as the glaciers were, it probably raised the ocean level 100 feet; and the tidal waves initially added another 100 feet. Coastlines everywhere would have flooded, and people everywhere within or close to the vulnerable elevations would have been***

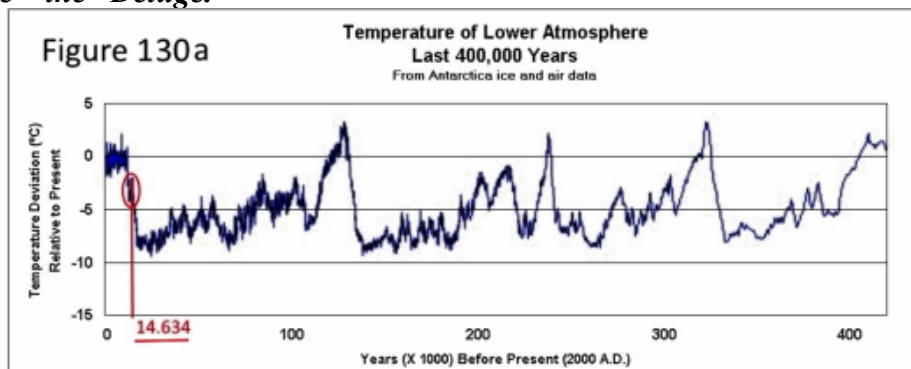
---

<sup>114</sup> I arrived at that date, at 14,634 years ago, by using my Paint.net ruler and the temperature graph of figure 10a or 130a and interpolating six forty-firsts of 100 ky. This date can only be as accurate as the graph itself and my crude effort to interpolate it.

<sup>115</sup> February 3, 2020 correction: zooming in on the fatal date area of the graph, it looks like it fell in three major pieces. The tidal waves from these would have totaled about another 100 feet.



traumatized by that fully striped snake “that brought the monster” (Walam Olum, my Figure 27). Because the Great Flood traumatized everyone at or near the vulnerable elevations, later generations said it had covered the earth. Because it seemed to be punishment for the Species War that did cover the earth, it became a cover for the Species War, about which our ancestors became guiltier than ever and afraid to talk. In the minds of our ancestors, the two fused into one – the “Deluge.”



This confirms my interpretation of the most recent Deucalion flood myth. The discovery of horticulture 23 kya (Snir et al.), sparked a global frenzy of slashing and burning to lay claim to the land. Rapid deforestation and global warming then sent an ice sheet, either western Antarctica or, more likely, Greenland, sliding at a time when the glaciers were still massive. This first Neolithic was aborted and left no trace in the pollenography because the first farmed lands became submerged and are now as many as 300 feet below sea level.

The Great Flood followed “the terrible poison [that] came forth and immediately enveloped the universe... paralyzing the universe with smoky fire and fumes.” Recall how this image popped up in the Hindu Species War myth featuring anti-heroic Vishnu, in Chapter 33 of Volume 2.

This is why the Ona men had become afraid of the water.

I suspect that up to half the world’s people died, but the Lakes of Mexico and the Caribbean Lake would have been the hardest hit. Most First Americans, certainly most First North Americans, would have been living around them. The tidal waves doubled each ocean rise, so they would have swept out to sea and killed many more people than those taken by mere sea level rise. Fintann, who “lost his speech at the time of the Flood,” originally symbolized the Irish swept out to sea or drowned by the Flood.

This explains why the Aboriginal African Americans, especially in the North, left so few artifacts. Most all their wattle and mud huts and their artifacts were swallowed up or swept away by the sea. If their pre-flood mounds were built with a mixture of mud and clay, like the post-flood mounds, then the eroded

remains of some may still be recognizable beneath the Gulf. Few of their habitation sites, such as Topper, South Carolina, a chert mine, would have been high enough to have survived the flood. The severely traumatized survivors would have gone to work, like zombies, building platform mounds. Between 14,634 and the Clovis arrival of the Amerindians (between 14,634 BPE and 13,200 BPE), they would not have had enough time to build all their platform mounds and restore their population to former levels. That's why, outside of a very few sites such as Topper, the fishtail points aren't found until the latter half of the Younger Dryas (about 12.3 kya). The Amerindians would have over-estimated the population of their "great towns." When they finally did attack the Blacks, circa 9 kya, they were surprised at how easy it was to defeat them.

*Moreover, just as Species War trauma repression (the blacking out of all connected memories) caused dark-skin racism, the Great Flood trauma repression obliterated African American aboriginality! **Just like the Species War survivors and my classmates at Indianapolis Public School 80 (described in my memoir, "Heaven Sent") we tend to black out everything connected with our traumas.** For Aboriginal African Americans, that meant blacking out their war with the Amerindians circa 9 kya and all the time preceding it (the Great Flood and the platform mound building that the Flood and its tidal waves precipitated). This meant forgetting their aboriginal American status. For the Amerindians who started walking into North America one thousand four hundred years **after** the Great Flood, the repression of traumatic memories had a lesser effect. They tended to black out their Asian origins and their war with the Blacks (the "Telega") and believe that they had originated in the Americas. Thus, when the Europeans arrived, everyone's traumatic repression of history tended to encourage anti-dark-skin racism, to lump all Africans together as the most recent newcomers and thus encourage Black slavery. The expunction of Black history is most accurately described not only as a product of white racism but also as a product of the traumatization that we all – especially Aboriginal African Americans – have undergone.*

The situation in South America was different. Look at Figure 129b and notice that what is now the ocean shelf is not nearly as wide in most of the South, except for the Argentine shelf, which may have been still ice-covered and uninhabitable. More of the aboriginal South Americans would have survived the flood. Also, it took the Amerindians an additional thousand years to get there, not just because it was further away but because the Olmecs were blocking the way.

Notice from Figure 63c that many of the first mariners from Africa would have followed the warmest currents west until arriving at southwestern-most part of the Gulf. They founded the Olmec civilization there where the climate was



most ideal, and they could look homeward across the water. A rapid return to Pleistocene cannibalism would have motivated Olmec flood survivors to reestablish control of traffic through the isthmus. Trespassers ended up “in the soup,” the exact Mesoamerican expression. Three facts attest to the hatred Amerindians had developed for the Olmecs. First, many of the Olmec heads absorbed the fury of people who pounded chips and gashes out of them in an apparently vain attempt to shatter them. [A YouTube presentation by Frank Joseph leaves no doubt that these heads depicted Olmec kings. Head gear, made of leather and much like the Olmec heads’ gear, was worn by Mali kings and studded with gold and stones. Abubakari the Great, a ruler of the ancient Mali Empire, made an expedition to the New World in the early 1300s, which left numerous inscriptions throughout the Americas in the Manding writing system (Imhotep: xvlll).] The second attestation of Amerindian hatred of the Olmecs is the Indian name given to the river that runs up to and around San Lorenzo, the oldest known Olmec capital. That name is Coatzacoalcos, which is Nahuatl for “hiding place of the snake.” The third and most convincing attestation is Figure 63d, the Mayan pot depicting a Black Xipe To(1)tec or, more realistically, and probably originally: Xipe Olmec. Everywhere, the sacrificers, once conquered, became sacrificees.

As Amerindians entered the South, their situation became much like that of their relatives in the North. The aboriginal, African Americans possessed the coastlines and the main river valleys and conceded the interior. As Guidon, Pessiss, Neves *et al.* assure us, it took the Amerindians a millennium longer (till 7 kya) to conquer the South. Moreover, the Olmecs held out until about 400 BC. How did they do it? As their cousins in the North, they learned to compromise.

Around 900 BC, they moved their capital from San Lorenzo in the foothills to La Venta, an island of high sandy ground in the middle of the great coastal plain beneath the bay. On this high, sandy ground is the Royal Compound with its many complexes, mounds and monuments. “Sterling Acropolis,” a large platform mound and Monument 19 captured my attention. The latter depicts a warrior and a feathered serpent, Tezcatlipocha and Quetzalcoatl. This monument and the many showing victims of sacrifice (all with sad looks on their faces, many of them babies and many of them associated with snakes or jaguars) leave us no doubt that the Olmecs were the founders of Mesoamerican religious and blood sacrifice traditions. It was also they who built the “twisted mounds,” with winding ramps, that Aztecs later referred to (in Chapter 35).

We must assume that over the (at least) 50 ky between Africans first arriving in the Americas and the Great Flood (of roughly 14,634 years BPE) they populated the entire coastline with numerous settlements between northeastern Florida, down both sides of Mesoamerica and all over the northern half of South

America. After the flood, the survivors would have consolidated themselves in various regional centers. Northerners returned as close to the coast as they dared and built platforms there.

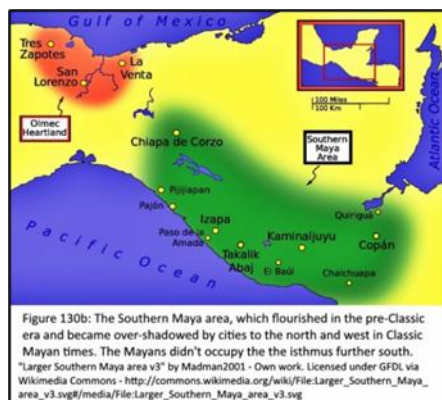
The Mayan conquerors of the Olmecs came from the south. The blood type of Mayan people today is 99% type O, and the blood type of the Indians of both Peru and Brazil is 100% type O ([http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Genetic\\_history\\_of\\_indigenous\\_peoples\\_of\\_the\\_Americas](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Genetic_history_of_indigenous_peoples_of_the_Americas)). Also, the earliest known cities of the Mayas were in the southeastern part of their territory.

For defense, the Olmecs would have tried to control the upper case “Y,” rotated 120 degrees clockwise, that the isthmus forms with South America. This military configuration was secure and kept the Amerindians out only until they made a coordinated attack upon the center of the “Y,” where the isthmus joins the continent, severing the Blacks’ communications. See Figure 130b, and note that the Mayas didn’t occupy the southern-most part of the isthmus. They learned from conquering the Blacks that the Y configuration is indefensible, so they let the jungle grow over their southern-most territory.

That the Olmecs managed to hold out even after their coastal empire was broken up is a tribute to their diplomacy, cunning, artisanship and (perhaps) flexibility and willingness to pay tribute. They crafted beautiful figurines of polished jade, obsidian and magnetite. They would have used these to ingratiate themselves with Indian leaders and establish trade relations. I suspect that this was an additional reason for moving to the La Venta citadel. There the best artisans could be secluded and their skills kept secret from the outside world.

Some of the men buried at the Royal Compound were buried with Asian women. Intermarriage with the Amerindians was another diplomatic strategy by which Olmecs managed to hang on. It was a possibility apparently utilized by many individuals because, as of 3/6/2023, the Afro-Mexico Genomics Project says that “on average, 4-5% of the genomes of mestizo Mexicans is of African origin.”<sup>116</sup>

This completes my answer to the question I asked you about the half of our first family that stayed in Africa. We’d like to imagine that they didn’t change, that they just huddled around campfires, smoking pot and chasing the animals. We are inculcated with dark-skin racism due to our universal,



<sup>116</sup> [Afro-Mexico Genomics Project](#)

religious Species War guilt and denial. They nevertheless pursued their own dreams only in the opposite, westerly direction. In researching them, we have discovered prehistory that was of paramount importance to all our ancestors.

They were no less productive and adventurous than the half of our family that left Africa first. They just had rotten luck. They were the worst victims of both the Species War (indirectly due to the dark-skin racism that resulted from it) and (directly from) the Great Flood. The jet streams also greatly expanded the Sahara Desert. That too was rotten luck. But for these catastrophes, they would be today in total possession of both Africa and the Americas. Now with the carbon content of the atmosphere and average ambient temperature about to skyrocket, the luck of the rest of us is running out.

Minimizing our losses from the looming disasters, civilizing our world and permanently solving any of our problems seems so terribly difficult because it requires us to wage war on four fronts— not against each other but against 1) the K strategy, 2) the R strategy, 3) religious fundamentalism and 4) the inability of so many of us to love due to homophobia, latent homosexuality and impediments to the group marriages that some of the members of our savage, pre-Stage II society need. Learning is not just a matter of filling the mind with knowledge. The hard part is getting rid of the garbage.

The worst of the garbage is fundamentalism and homophobia/latent homosexuality. We must regard these as mental illnesses because they prevent us from being honest and responsible and getting to the root of our problems. They are the Second and Third of the five masks I write about (the big lies with which we deceive ourselves). The First Mask, remnant of our inept transition to exogamy, masks our greatest loves, love for our siblings and opposite-sex parent. It invents “different kinds of love” and prepares us for our unhappy marriages. The Second Mask, remnant of the Species War, masks our animal/great-ape being and makes us the monsters of the natural world. The Third Mask, remnant of our inept Neolithic transition to monogamy and the savage birthrates that force men to become killing machines, masks its wearers’ homosexuality and turns them into the monsters of society. The Fourth is the “transgender” mask, and the Fifth is the “royals” greater descent from *Homo erectus*.

As I’ve insisted, we must remove all the masks and become honest about ourselves and our ancestors to deal with our root problem: our need to minimize the K and R strategies (maximize, respectively, equal opportunity and population control).

“Growth,” indiscriminate growing of the human economy, only shifts our problems from the social to the environmental sphere. The other animals and plants that have evolved with us are necessary for the ecosystem, and a balance of animal and vegetative life is necessary to maintain an atmosphere conducive

to life. “Growth” politics sounds great to morons. It compromises Big Brother’s terror of change with the desperate masses’ demand for change, which is why “Growth!” is the mantra of the Domsday Alliance. But in the long run, indiscriminate growth, increasing the human footprint on the planet, only increases our K and R problems. Be it from WWII or another great flood, another population collapse is inevitable and will come soon. Billions of lives will be cut short. Most of the victims will be Rs, but they are certain to take revenge upon the false leaders, latent homosexuals and priests, that misled them.

*The only alternative to continued savagery and periodic catastrophe is committing to the revolution described above. The only possible way to avoid the coming **catastrophic** population collapse and another dark age, is to start this revolution soon with a **controlled and rational population collapse**, with a 25-year, global moratorium on procreation.*

If we do this, we can also adopt what the Peace Love and Progress Party calls the Stage II System of Marriage and Child Rearing. (See our book, *Stage II of the Nonviolent Rainbow Revolution* or our video, “Social Science 301, the New Socialist Family.”) For this we need to develop baby-face-generating software and what I call “Finding Mr. Right Software” (face recognition software with a couple of modules added to it). The *Stage II* system will enable us to eliminate the Oedipal and Electra (for women) complexes, guarantee everyone love with the perfect partner(s), eliminate violent crime, divorce and promiscuity, make geniuses of our boys and gifted family leaders of our girls. It will empower women within the family as never before. During the 25-Year, Global Procreation Moratorium and Transition Period, we must lower our population, educate the people, eradicate every form of prejudice, complete the spread of English as the world language and create equal opportunity for everyone.

If you understood and enjoyed this book, then please read all the works of the New Social Science. The PDFs are FREE to download at <https://PeaceLoveAndProgressParty.org/downloads>. You can also read our Blogs, on the Blogs Page, and view our videos on the Video Page.

[The Peace Love and Progress Party](#) is the only international party that is guided by the New Social Science, entirely prejudice free and dedicated to the preservation and advancement of our species. You’re already a member!

## LIST OF WORKS REFERRED TO IN THE TEXT

- Albrecht, G., "Magdalénien-Inventare von Petersfels," *Archaeologica Venatoria* 6, Institut für Urgeschichte, Tübingen, 1979.
- Albright, William F., "Babylonia," in *Encyclopedia Americana*, International Edition, v.3, Grolier Inc., Danbury, Conn., 1990.
- Alexander, Hartley Burr, *Mythology of All Races*, Cooper Sq. Publishers, v. XI, thirteen vol. series ed. by Louis Herbert Gray, N.Y., 1964.
- Ancient Pyramid Texts*, trans. R.D. Faulkner, Oxford University Press, 1969.
- Andree, Richard, *Anthropophagie: eine ethnographische Studie*, Von Veit Co, Leipzig, 1887.
- Angier, Natalie, (a) "A Potent Peptide Prompts an Urge to Cuddle," New York Times, Science Times, Jan. 22, 1991.  
(b) "New Debate Over Humankind's Ancestors," N.Y. Times Science Times, Oct. 1, 1991.
- Anderson, Smallwood and Miller, *Pleistocene Human Settlement in the Southern U.S.*, W.S. Maney and Son and the Center for the Study of the First Americans, 2015.
- Angus, Samuel, *Mystery-Religions and Christianity*, University Books, NY, 1966.
- Arens, William, *Man-Eating Myth*, Oxford U. Press, NY, 1979.
- Arrian, *Anabasis of Alexander*, in *Greek Historians* cited herein.
- Atkinson, J.J., "Primal Law," London, included in Lang, A., *Social Origins*, n.p.<sup>117</sup> London, 1903.
- Atkinson, R.J.C., *Stonehenge*, Penguin Books, Hammondsworth, England, 1979.
- Australian Dreaming: 40,000 Years of Aboriginal History*, compiled and edited by Jennifer Isaacs, Lansdowne Press, Sydney, 1980.
- Avila, Francisco de, "Narrative of the Errors, False Gods, and Other Superstitions and Diabolical Rites in Which the Indians...Live," tr. from unpublished MSS by C. Markham, in *Rites and Laws of the Incas* (HS), London, 1873. (The most important early document on the beliefs of the Yunca or coastal tribes.)
- Bachofen, Johann J. *Myth, Religion and Motherright*, Bollingen Series, Princeton, 1973.
- Bahn, Paul and John Flenley, *Easter Island, Earth Island*, Thames and Hudson, London, 1992.
- Bailey, Paul, *Those Kings and Queens of Old Hawaii*, Westernlore Books, Los Angeles, 1975.
- Bainton, Roland H., *The Medieval Church*, Van Nostrand, N.Y., 1962.
- Bandelier, A.F., "Aboriginal Myths and Traditions Concerning the Island of Titicaca, Bolivia," and "Cross of Carabuco," in *Am. Anthropologist*, new series, vi, 1906.
- Bar-Yosef, O., "Geochronology of the Levantine Middle Paleolithic," in Mellars and Stringer (listed herein).
- Bard, Edouard, Bruno Hamelin and Richard G. Fairbanks, "U-Th Ages Obtained by Mass Spectrometry in Corals from Barbados: sea level during the past 130,000 Years," in *Nature*, vol 346, August 2, 1990, p. 456-458.
- Barrett, Clive, *Egyptian Gods and Goddesses: the mythology and beliefs of ancient Egypt*, Aquarian Press, San Francisco, 1991.

---

<sup>117</sup> "n.p." = "not in print"

- Bartram, William, *Travels...*, 1791.
- Bateson, Gregory, *Steps to an Ecology of the Mind: collected essays in anthropology, psychiatry, evolution, and epistemology*, Chandler Pub. Co., San Francisco, 1972.
- Baumann, Hermann, *Schöpfung und Urzeit des Menschen im Mythos der afrikanischen Völker*, Verlag von Dietrich Reimer, Berlin, 1936.
- Beckwith, Martha, *Hawaiian Mythology*, University of Hawaii Press, Honolulu, 1970.
- Begley, Sharon, and Fiona Gleizes, "My Granddad, Neanderthal?" *Newsweek*, October 16, 1989.
- Benedict, Ruth, (1934). *Patterns of Culture*, Houghton Mifflin Co., Boston, 1959.
- Beowulf; and its analogues*, trans. G.N. Garmonsway and Jacqueline Simpson including "Archaeology and *Beowulf*," by Hilda Ellis Davidson, E.P. Dutton & Co., NY, 1971.
- Berger, A., "Milankovitch and Climate," *Rev. Geophysics*, vol. 26, 1988.
- Berry, Erick and Herbert Best, *Polynesian Triangle*, Funk and Wagnalls, NY, 1968.
- Bibby, Geoffrey, "Bronze Age," in *Encyclopedia Americana*, International Ed, vol. 4, p. 602, Grolier Inc., Danbury, Conn., 1990.
- Bible, New American*, Catholic Bible Press, Nashville, 1986.
- Bible, New American Standard*, Thomas Nelson Publishers, N.Y., 1977.
- Bickerton, D., *Roots of Language*, Karoma, Ann Arbor, Michigan, 1981.
- Bierhorst, John, *Mythology of North America*, Wm. Morrow & Co, NY, 1985.
- Black, J. and A. Green (eds.), *Gods, demons and symbols of ancient Mesopotamia: an illustrated dictionary*, ill'd by Tessa Richards, British Museum Press, London, 1992.
- Blakeslee, Sandra, (1993a). "Evolution of Tabby Cat Mapped in Brain Study," *Science Times* of New York Times, January 12, 1993.
- (1993b). "Scanner Pinpoints Sites of Thought..." *Science Times* of N. Y. Times, June 1, 1993.
- (1995). "How the Brain Might Work: a new theory..." *Science Times*, March 21, 1995.
- Boas, Franz, (1930). "Religion of the Kwakiutl Indians," *Columbia University Contributions to Anthropology*, vol. 10, Columbia University Press, NY.
- (1917). "Folk Tales of Salishan and Sahaptin Tribes," in *Memoirs of American Folk-Lore Society*, vol. XI, 1917.
- Bokenkotter, Thomas, *A Concise History of the Catholic Church*, Doubleday, NY, 1977.
- Bolby, John, *Attachment and Loss*, 3 vols, Basic Books, NY, 1969/82, 1974, 1980.
- Bondarenko, Grigory, "Fintan Mac Bóchra: Irish Synthetic History Revisited," retrieved on May1, 2015 from Academia.edu.
- Boorstin, Daniel J., (1961). *Image*, Atheneum, NY, 1975.
- Bordes, F., *Typologie du Paléolithique, Ancien et Moyen*, Delmas, Bordeaux, 1961.

- Bothmer, Dietrich von, *Amazons in Greek Art*, Oxford University Press, 1957.
- Botteró, J., in *Reallexikon der Assyriologie*, 5, 14-17.
- Bouvier, J.M., *Gisement Préhistorique: La Madeleine*, Pierre Fanlac, Périgueux, 1977.
- Bower, Bruce, (1988). "Pelvic Angle to Neanderthal Dispute," *Science News*, April 9, 1988.
- (1989). "A Tiny Bone Rekindles Arguments Over the Roots of Speech and Language," *Science News*, July 8, 1989.
- Brain: A User's Manual*, Berkeley Books, N.Y., 1983.
- Brickman, J.A., *Materials and Studies for Kassite History*, which is vol. I, Oriental Institute of the University of Chicago, 1976.
- Bridges, E. Lucas, *Uttermost Part of the Earth*, E.P. Dutton, NY, 1948.
- Brinkman, J., "Forced Laborers in the Middle Babylonian Period," *Journal of Cuneiform Studies*, 32, 1980, 17-22.
- Broad, Alfred Scott, "Aboriginal Life in Australia," *Adelaide*, Feb, 1886.
- Broad, William J., "Hot Vents in the Sea Floor May Drive El Niño," *Science Times of N.Y. Times*, April 25, 1995.
- Broecker, W.S. *et al.*, "Routing of Meltwater...", *Nature*, 341, 318-321, Sept. 28, 1989.
- Brown, Lester R. *et al.*, *State of the World 1991* W.W. Norton and Co, NY, 1991.
- State of the World 2000*, (Worldwatch Institute) W.W. Norton and Co, NY, 2000.
- Brown, Norman O., *Life Against Death*, Random House, N.Y., 1966.
- Love's Body*, Wesleyan University Press, 1959.
- Brown, Peter Lancaster, *Megaliths and Masterminds*, Chas Scribner & Sons, NY, 1979
- Brumfield, Elizabeth M., "Specialization, Market Exchange, and the Aztec State: a view from Huexotla," *Current Anthropology*, 21(4), 459-478, 1980.
- Brundage, Burr Cartwright, *Fifth Sun*, University of Texas Press, Austin, 1979.
- Buck, Carl Darling, *A Dictionary of Selected Synonyms in the Principal Indo-European Languages*, University of Chicago Press, 1949.
- Burgess, Colin, *Age of Stonehenge*, J.M. Dent and Sons Ltd, London, 1980.
- Burkert, Walter, *Ancient Mystery Cults*, Harvard Press, Cambridge, Mass., 1987.
- Burns, John F., "Bangladesh, Still Poor, Cuts Birth Rate Sharply," *NY Times*, p. A10, 9/13, '94.
- Burton, Harry, *Discovery of the Ancient World*, Books For Libraries Press, Freeport, N.Y., 1932.
- Buxton, L.H. Dudley. (1925). *Peoples of Asia*, Dawsons of Pall Mall, London, 1968.
- Cabeza De Vaca, *Shipwrecked Men*, Penguin, London, 1530.
- Cadogan, Gerald, *Palaces of Minoan Crete*, Barrie and Jenkins Ltd, London, 1976.
- Caesar, Julius, *Conquest of Gaul*, translated by Jane F. Gardner, Penguin Books, NY, 1980.
- Call, Richard Ellsworth, "Life and Writings of Rafinesque," Prepared for the Filson Club and Read at its Meeting, Monday, April 2, 1894, Filson Club Publications, No. 10, Louisville, KY.
- Cameron, Eugene N., *At the Crossroads: the mineral problems of the U.S.*, Wiley, N.Y., 1986.
- Campbell, Joseph, (1959). *Primitive Mythology*, PenguinBooks, N.Y., 1976.
- (1962). *Oriental Mythology*, Penguin Books, NY, 1976.
- (1964). *Occidental Mythology*, Penguin Books, N.Y., 1976.

- (1986). *Power of Myth*, with Bill Moyers, on video tape, Program 6.
- Campe, Joachim Heinrich, Hernando Cortés, Project Gutenberg, <http://Gutenberg.org>, 2019.
- Cann, R. L., Stoneking, M., & Wilson, A. C., "Mitochondrial DNA and human evolution," *Nature* 325, 31–36 (1987).
- Cantor, G.N., and M.J.S. Hodge, *Conceptions of Ether*, Cambridge Press, 1981.
- Carneiro, Robert L., (1962). "Scale Analysis as an Instrument for the Study of Cultural Evolution," *Southwestern Journal of Anthropology*, vol. 18, p. 149-69.
- (1970). "A Theory of the Origin of the State," *Science*, vol. 169, p. 733-8.
- Carney, J., "Invention of the Ogam Cipher," *Ériu*, 26, 53-65.
- Cassandra Conference*, ed. Paul Ehrlich and John Holdren, University of Texas Press, 1987.
- Casson, Lionel, *Ancient Egypt*, Time-Life Books, N.Y., 1965.
- Cattle Raid of Cooley (Tain Bo Cuailnge)*, trans. from the *Yellow Book of Lecan* by L. Winifred Faraday, Nutt, London, 1904.
- Chadwick, H.M., *Heroic Age*, Cambridge, 1912.
- Chadwick, H.M. and N.K., *Growth of Literature*, 3 v., Cambridge, 1932-40.
- Champion, Timothy, Clive Gamble, Stephen Shennan, Alasdair Whittle, *Prehistoric Europe*, Academic Press, London, 1984.
- Chatters, James C., *et al.* "Late Pleistocene Skeleton and mtDNA Link Paleoamericans and Native Americans," *Science* 344, 750 (2014).
- Cieza de León, Pedro de, *Travels of Pedro de Cieza de León...*, notes and intro. By Clements R. Markham, n.p. London, 1964.
- Cipolla, Carlo M., *Economic History of World Population*, Pelican Books, Harmondsworth, Middlesex, England, 6th ed., 1974.
- Cipolloni Sampo, Mirella, *Dolmen: architetture preistoriche in Europa*, De Luca edizioni d'arte, Roma, 1990.
- Clark, Ella E., *Indian Legends: from the Northern Rockies*, U. of Okla. Press, Norman, 1988.
- Clark, J.Desmond, (1954). *Excavations at Star Carr*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge.
- (1989). "Origin and Spread of Modern Humans: a Broad Perspective on the African Evidence" in Mellars and Stringer, p. 565-588.
- Clark, R.T. Rundle, (1959). *Myth and Symbol in Ancient Egypt*, Thames and Hudson, N.Y., 1991
- Cobo, Bernabe, (1653). *History of the Inca Empire*, trans. Roland Hamilton, University of Texas Press, Austin, 1983.
- Comay, Joan, *World's Greatest Story: the epic of the Jewish People in biblical times*, Holt Rinehart and Winston, New York, 1978.
- Condos, Theony, "Katasterismoi of the Pseudo-Eratosthenes: a mythical commentary and English translation," University Microfilms, Ann Arbor, Michigan, 1971.
- Coon, Carlton S. (1963). *Anthropology A-Z*, Grossett and Dunlop, NY.
- (1977). *Story of Man*, Alfred Knopf, N.Y.
- Cooper, Jerrold S., "Return of Ninurta to Nippur, using materials prepared by E. Bergmann," which is *Analecta Orientalia* 52, Pontificum Institutum Biblicum, Rome, 1978.
- Cotterell, Arthur, *Dictionary of World Mythology*, Oxford University



- Press, Oxford, 1986.
- Crossley-Holland, Kevin, *Norse Myths*, Pantheon Books, N.Y., 1980.
- Crumph, Martha L., "You Eat What You Are," *Natural History*, Feb, 1991.
- Cumont, Franz, *Mysteries of Mithra*, Dover Press, N.Y., 1956.
- Curtin, Jeremiah, (1890). *Myths and Folk Tales of Ireland*, Dover Publications Inc., NY, 1975.
- (1890b). *Myth and Folk-Tales of the Russians, Western Slavs, and Magyars*, Benjamin Blom Inc., N.Y., 1971.
- (1894). *Hero Tales of Ireland*, University Press, Cambridge, Massachusetts.
- (1899). *Creation Myths of America*, Bracken Books, London, 1995.
- (1909). *Journey in Southern Siberia*, Arno Press and the New York Times, N.Y., 1971.
- (1940). *Memoirs of Jeremiah Curtin*, vol. 2, State Historical Society of Wisconsin, Madison.
- (1943). *Irish Folk-Tales*, ed. with intro. by Seamus O'Duilearga, Folklore of Ireland Society and Educational Co. of Ireland, Dublin.
- (?). *Irish Fairy Tales*, reprint of an Alfred Nutt book by Barnes & Noble Books, N.Y., 1993.
- Cushing, Frank Hamilton, *Zuñi Folk Tales*, University of Arizona Press, Tucson, 1986.
- Darwin, Charles, (1859). *Origin of Species*, Harvard U. Press, Cambridge, Mass, 1964.
- (1871). *Descent of Man...*, vol. 1 and 2, Princeton Press, Princeton, NJ, 1981.
- Davidson, H.R. Ellis, *Scandinavian Mythology*, Paul Hamlyn, NY, 1969.
- Davidson, I. (1974). "Radiocarbon dates for the Spanish Solutrean," *Antiquity*, vol 48, p. 63-65.
- De Blacam, Aodh, *Irish Literature*, Kennikat Press, NY, 1934.
- De Paola, Tomie, *Fin MacCoul: the Giant of Knockmany Hill*, Holiday House, NY, 1981.
- De Vernal, Anne, Claude Hillaire-Marcel and Guy Bilodeau, "Reduced Meltwater Outflow from the Laurentide Ice Margin..." *Nature*, vol. 381, Issue 6585, p. 774-777, June 27, 1996.
- Deacon, H.J., "Late Pleistocene Palaeoecology and Archaeology in the Southern Cape, South Africa," in Mellars and Stringer, below.
- Denham, Dixon & Hugh Clapperton, *Narrative of Travels and Discoveries in Northern and Central Africa in the years 1822, 1823, and 1824, 1826*, n.p.
- Diaz, Bernal del Castillo, *Conquest of New Spain*, J.M. Cohen, trans. Harmondsworth, Middlesex, England, Penguin Books, 1963.
- Diehl, Richard A., *Tula: Toltec Capital of Ancient Mexico*, Thames and Hudson, London, 1983
- Dillon, Myles, *There Was a King in Ireland; five tales from the oral tradition*, University of Texas Press, Austin, 1971.
- Diodorus of Sicily, *Discourses*, English trans. by C.H. Oldfather, Harvard University Press, after Wm Heinemann Ltd., London, 1946.
- DiPeso, Charles, *Casas Grandes: a Fallen Trading Center in the Gran Chichimeca*, 8 vols., Dragoon, Arizona, 1974.
- Doherty, Earl, *Jesus Puzzle*, Canadian Humanist Publications, 1999.
- Donnelly, Ignatius, *Atlantis: the Antediluvian World*, Gramercy Publishing Co., NY, 1985.
- Atlantis*, with intro. by E.F. Bleiler, Dover, NY, 1976.

- Atlantis*, with intro by Paul M. Allen, Harper Bros., NY, 1949.
- Duffy, William, *Sugar Blues*, Warner Books, N.Y., 1975.
- Dundes, Alan, *Flood Myth*, University of California Press, Berkeley, 1988.
- Durán, Diego, (1581). *History of the Indies of New Spain*, University of Oklahoma Press, 1994.
- (1579). *Book of the Gods and Rites and the Ancient Calendar*, trans. By Doris Heyden and Fernando Horcasitas, University of Oklahoma Press, Norman, 1971.
- Durkheim, Emile, (1915). *Elementary Forms of Religious Life*, trans. Joseph War Swain, McMillan, NY, 1965.
- Earth Report*, ed. E. Goldsmith and N. Hildyard, Mitchel Beazley Publishers, London, 1988.
- Eblaïtica: Essays on the Ebla Archives and Eblaïte Language*, ed. Cyrus H. Gordon Gary A. Rendsburg and Nathan H. Winter, Eisenbrauns Publishers, Winona Lake, Indiana, 1987.
- Eliade, Mircea, *Sacred & the Profane: the nature of religion*, Harcourt Brace, NY, 1959.
- Ellis and Oliver, *Polynesian Researches*, London, 1831, n.p.
- Ellis, Peter Berresford, *Dictionary of Irish Mythology*, Constable and Co. Ltd., London, 1987.
- Engels, Friedrich, (1878). "Anti-Dühring," in *Selected Works of Marx and Engels*, Progress Publishers, Moscow, 1974.
- (1876). "Role of Labour in the Transition from Ape to Man," *op.cit.*
- Evans-Wentz, W.Y., *Fairy-Faith in Celtic Countries*, Citadel Press, N.Y., 1990.
- Fawcett, Melissa Jayne, *Lasting of the Mohegans*, Mohegan Tribe, Uncasville, Conn., 1995.
- Feil, D.K., *Ways of Exchange: the Mae Enga Tee of Papua New Guinea* University of Queensland Press, Queensland, Australia, 1984.
- Fiore, Silvestro, *Voices from the Clay: the development of Assyro-Babylonian literature*, University of Oklahoma Press, Norman, 1965.
- Fitzpatrick, T. J., *Rafinesque; a Sketch of his Life with Bibliography*, the Historical Dept. of Iowa, Des Moines.
- Flower, Robin, *Irish Tradition*, Oxford Press, London, 1966.
- Ford, J.A., and Webb, C.H., "Poverty Point, a late Archaic Site in Louisiana," Vol.46: part 1, *Anthropological Papers of the American Museum of Natural History*, New York, 1956.
- Fornander, Abraham, "Collection of Hawaiian Antiquities and Folk-lore," ed. Thomas G. Thrum, Bernice Pauahi Bishop Museum, Honolulu, Memoir 6, 1916-1919.
- Foster, Benjamin R., "Late Bronze Age Palace Economy: a view from the East," in *Function of the Minoan Palaces*, below.
- Frazer, James George, *Golden Bough*, Macmillan, NY, twelfth printing, 1972.
- Freud, Sigmund, (1895). *Obsessions and Phobias*, and Appendix: "Freud's Views on Phobias," the latter by editor James Strachey, in the *Standard Ed.*, Hogarth Press and the Psychoanalytic Institute, 3, London, 1962, 74-84.
- (1900). *Interpretation of Dreams*, Standard Edition, vols. 4&5, Hogarth, London, 1953.

- (1901). *Psychopathology of Everyday Life*, trans. Alan Tyson, Norton, NY, 1960.
- (1905). *Jokes and Their Relation to the Unconscious*, trans. Strachey, Norton, NY, 1960.
- (1905b). "Three Contributions to the Theory of Sex," in *Basic Writings of S. Freud*, trans. and ed. by A.A. Brill, Modern Library, NY, 1995.
- (1907). "Obsessive Acts and Religious Practices," in *Character and Culture*, edited and with an introduction by Philip Rieff, Macmillan, NY, 1963.
- (1911). "On the Mechanism of Paranoia," in *General Psychological Theory*, edited and with an introduction by Philip Rieff, Macmillan, NY, 1963.
- (1913). *Totem and Taboo*, trans. Strachey, Norton, NY, 1950.
- (1916). *Leonardo Da Vinci: a study in psychosexuality*, authorized translation by A.A. Brill, Vintage Books, N.Y., 1947.
- (1916). *Introductory Lectures on Psychoanalysis*, trans. Strachey, Norton, NY, 1966.
- (1921). *Group Psychology and the Analysis of the Ego*, trans. Strachey, Norton, NY, 1959.
- (1922). "Psychoanalysis," in *Character and Culture*, edited and with an intro. by Philip Rieff, Macmillan, NY, 1963.
- (1926). *Inhibitions, Symptoms and Anxiety*, trans. Strachey, Norton, NY, 1959.
- (1927). *Future of an Illusion*, trans. Strachey, Norton, NY, 1961.
- (1929). *Civilization and its Discontents*, trans. J. Strachey, Norton, NY, 1961.
- (1933). *New Introductory Lectures on Psychoanalysis*, trans. Strachey, Hogarth Press and Institute of Psychoanalysis, London, vol. 22, 1933.
- (1932-36). *Standard Edition of the Complete Psychological Works*, general editor James Strachey, Hogarth Press and the Institute of Psychoanalysis, London, XXII.
- (1937). *Moses and Monotheism*, trans. Katherin Jones, Vintage, NY, 19167.
- Fuller, R. Buckminster, *Education Automation: freeing the scholar to return to his studies*, Southern Illinois Press, Carbondale, 1962.
- Function of the Minoan Palaces*, Proceedings of the Fourth International Symposium at Swedish Institute in Athens, ed. by Robin Hägg and Nanno Marinatos, Stockholm, 1987.
- Gamble, C. 1983. "Culture and Society in the Upper Paleolithic of Europe," in G. Bailey (ed.) *Hunter-Gatherer Economies in Prehistory*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 201-11.
- Garcilasso de La Vega, "El Inca," *Commentarios Reales que Tratan del Origen de los Yncas, etc.* 2 parts, Lisbon, 1608-09. trans. of first part, C. Markham, *Royal Commentaries of the Yncas* (HS), 2 vols, London, 1869, 1871.
- Gehlbach, F., "Discussion," in A. H. Esser, ed. (q.v.), *Biology of Termites*, vol. 2, p. 393-448.
- Gero, F., *Cannibalism in Zandeland; Truth and Falsehood*, Editrice Missionaria Italiana, Bologna, 1969.
- Gibbon, Edward, *Decline and Fall the Roman Empire*, illustrated and abridged, Crescent Books, N.Y., 1995.
- Gibson, Frances, the Seafarers: Pre-Columbian Voyages to America, 1974.
- Gifford, Douglas, *Warriors, Gods and Spirits from Central and South American Mythology*, ill. by John Sibbick, Schocken Books, N.Y., 1983.
- Gilbert, O., *Meteorologischen Theorien des griechischen Altertums*,

- Leipzig, 1907.
- Gimbutas, Marija, *Language of the Goddess*, Thames and Hudson, London, 1989.
- Goethe, J.W. von, *Israel in der Weste*, vol. VII, Weimar ed., p.170.
- Goodrich, Norma Lorre, *Priestesses*, Franklin Watts, N.Y., 1989.
- Gould, Stephen Jay, (1987). "Bushes All the Way Down..." *Natural History*, June, 1987.
- (1977). *Ontogeny and Phylogeny*, Harvard Press, Cambridge, Mass., 1977.
- Grant, Michael and John Hazel, *Gods and Mortals in Classica Mythology: a dictionary*, Dorset Press, N.Y., 1979.
- Graulich, Michel, "L' Arbre Interdit Du' Paradis Azteque," in *Revue de l' Histoire des religions*, 207(1), 31-64, (France), 1990.
- Graves, Robert, *Greek Myths*, vol. 1, Pelican Books, 1986.
- Graziosi, Paola, *Paleolithic Art*, Mc Graw-Hill, N.Y., 1960.
- Greek Historians*, in two vols, ed. Francis R. B. Godolphin, Random House, N.Y., 1942.
- Green, Alice Stopford, *History of the Irish State*, Macmillan, N.Y, 1921.
- Grimm, Jacob, (1883). *Teutonic Mythology*, trans. from the 4th ed. by J.S. Stallybrass, vol. 1, Dover Press, N.Y., 1966.
- Grinnell, George Bird, *Pawnee Hero Stories and Folk-Tales*, University of Nebraska Press, Lincoln, 1961.
- Guerber, H.A., *Myths of the Norsemen: from the Eddas and Sagas*, Dover Pub's, N.Y., 1992.
- Guthrie, W.K.C., (1950). *Greeks and Their Gods*, reprinted by Beacon Press, Boston, 1971.
- (1962). *History of Greek Philosophy*, Cambridge, vol. 1.
- Hadingham, Evan, *Lines to the Mountain Gods: Nazca and the mysteries of Peru*, Random House, N.Y., 1987.
- Halliday, W.M., *Pollatch and Totem and the Recollections of an Indian Agent*, J.M. Dent and Sons, London, 1935.
- Hallpike, C.R., *Bloodshed and Vengeance in the Papuan Mountains: generation of conflict in Tauade society*, Oxford Press, 1977.
- Hamilton, T.M., *Native American Bows*; with an appendix by Bill Holm on making horn bows, Missouri Archaeological Society, Columbia, Missouri, 1982.
- Hardin, Garrett, *Limits of Altruism*, Indiana University Press, Bloomington, 1977.
- Hardin, Terri (ed.), *Legends and Lore of the American Indians*, Barbes and Noble, NY, 1993.
- Harland, W.B. and A.M. Spencer, "Ice Age," in *Encyclopedia Americana*, Deluxe Edition, Grolier Inc., Danbury, Conn., 1991.
- Harner, Michael, "Ecological Basis for Aztec Sacrifice," *Am. Ethnologist*, vol. 4, p 117, 1977.
- Harner, Michael, and Alfred Meyer, *Cannibal*, Morrow, NY, 1979.
- Harrison, Shirley, *who is Father Christmas*, David and Charles, London, 1981.
- Hassig, Ross, "Aztec Warfare," as reviewed in *History Today*, Feb. 1990.

- Hawkins, Gerald S. and John B. White, *Stonehenge Decoded*, Doubleday, N.Y. 1965.
- Heaney, John J., *Psyche and Spirit*, Paulist Press, Mauwah, N.J., 1984.
- Heaven Born Merida and its Destiny; the Book of Chilam Balam of Chumayel, trans. and annotated by Munro S. Edmunson, University of Texas Press, Austin, 1986.
- Hedges, S. Blair, Sudhir Kumar and Koichiro Tamura, "Human Origins and Analysis of Mitochondrial DNA Sequences," *Science*, vol. 255, Feb. 7, 1991, p. 737.
- Heidel, Alexander, *Gilgamesh Epic and Old Testament Parallels*, University of Chicago Press, 1949.
- Hernández, Francisco, *Antigüedades de la Nueva España*, Editorial Robredo, Mexico City, 1964.
- Herodotus, *Histories*, in two vols, trans. George Rawlinson, Dutton, NY, 1910.
- Herskovits, Melville, *Economic Anthropology*, 2nd ed., Alfred Knopf, NY, 1952.
- Hess, Eckhard H., *Imprinting: early experience and the developmental psychology of attachment*, with a foreword by Konrad Lorenz, Van Nostrand Reinhold Co., New York, 1973.
- Heyerdahl, Thor, *Aku-Aku: the secret of Easter Island*, Rand McNally, Chicago, 1958.
- Hildebrand, Alan R. and William V. Boynton, "Cretaceous Ground Zero," in *Natural History*, p. 46-53, June, 1991.
- Hill, Malcolm W., "A Recent Study of Atlatls in Use with Darts of Various Sizes," *Tennessee Archaeologist*, IV, 4, 1948.
- Hindu Myths*, trans. and intro. by Wendy Doniger O'Flaherty, Penguin Books, London, 1975.
- Holmes, Oliver Wendell Jr., *Common Law*, Little Brown and Company, Boston, 1881.
- Holtzmann, Adolph Sr. (1845-7) *Indische Sagen*, Moriz Winternitz, Jena, 1920-1.
- Homer, *Iliad*, trans. W.H.D. Rouse, Mentor Books, NY; first pub'd by Thomas Nelson and Sons Ltd., 1948. (*H Homeric citations in this text refer to line numbers of translations that are more literal than these of Rouse.*)
- Story of Odysseus*, trans. W.H.D. Rouse, Modern Age Books Inc, NY, 1937.
- Hourani, Albert, *History of the Arab Peoples*, MJF Books, NY, 1991.
- Howarth, David, *Tahiti: a paradise lost*, Viking Press, NY, 1983.
- Howells, W.W., *Skull Shapes and the Map*, Papers of the Peabody Museum of Archaeology And Ethnology, Harvard University, vol. 79, Cambridge, Mass.
- Howitt, A. W. and Fison, *Native Tribes of South-East Australia*, Macmillan, London, 1904.
- Hubbe, Mark, *et al.* "Cranial Morphological Diversity of Early, Middle and Late Holocene Brazilian Groups..."; *Am J of Phys Anthro* 155.4 (Dec 2014): 546-558.
- Hyde, Douglas, *Beside the Fire; a collection of Irish Gaelic folk stories*, D. Nutt, London, 1890.
- Imhotep, David, *The First Americans were Africans*, Author House, Bloomington, 2011, 2012.
- Intersections with Attachment*, J.L. Gewirtz and W.M. Kurtines eds, Lawrence Erlbaum Associates Publishers, Hilldale, NJ, 1991.
- Jackson, Kenneth Hurlstone, *Oldest Irish Tradition: a window on the Iron Age*, Cambridge University Press, 1964.

- Jacobsen, Thorkild., *Harps That Once...*, Yale Press, New Haven, 1987.  
(1976). *Treasures of Darkness: a history of Mesopotamian religion*, Yale University Press, New Haven.
- Jennings, Gary, *Aztec*, Editorial Planeta, México, D.F., 1983.
- Joesting, Edward, *Kauai: the separate kingdom*, University of Hawaii Press, Honolulu, 1984.
- Johanson, D., and E. Mailand, *Lucy: the beginnings of mankind*, Simon and Schuster, NY, 1981.
- Johanson, Donald, Lenora Johanson and Blake Edgar, *Ancestors: in search of human origins*, Villard Books, New York, 1994.
- Journal of American Folk-Lore*, volumes 6, 11, 13 and 15.
- Joussaume, Roger, *Dolmens for the Dead: megalith-building throughout the world*, trans. Ann and Christopher Chippindale, Cornell University Press, Ithaca, N.Y., 1988.
- Jurmain, Robert, Harry Nelson and William A. Turnbaugh, *Understanding Physical Anthropology and Archaeology*, third ed, West Publishing Co., NY, 1987.
- Karlgren, Bernhard, *Legends and Cults in Ancient China*, Bulletin of the Museum of Far Eastern Antiquities, No 18, 1946.
- Kavanagh, P., *Irish Mythology: a dictionary*, Goldsmith Press, Newbridge, Ireland, 1988.
- Kennedy, Patrick, *Bardic Stories of Ireland*, Mc Glashan and Gill, Dublin, 1875.
- Kenton, W., *Astrology, the celestial mirror*, 3rd ed., Thames and Hudson, London, 1974.
- Ker, W.P., *Epic and Romance*, 2nd. ed., London, 1908.
- Kern, Otto, *Orphicorum fragmenta*, Berlin, 1922.
- Kim, Won-Yong, *Art and Archaeology of Ancient Korea*, Taekwang Publishing Company, Seoul, 1986.
- King, L.W., *Babylonian Religion and Mythology*, Kegan Paul Trench, Trubner and Co., London, and Henry Frowde, N.Y., 1899.
- Kirch, Patrick V., *Evolution of the Polynesian Chieftdoms*, University Press, Cambridge, Mass., 1984.
- Kirk, G.S. and J.E. Raven, *Pre-Socratic Philosophers*, Cambridge U. Press, 1964.
- Kirk, G.S., *Homer and the Oral Tradition*, Cambridge U. Press, 1976.
- Knauf, Bruce M., *Good Company and Violence: sorcery and social action in a lowland New Guinea society*, University of California Press, 1985.
- Koldewey, Robert, *Excavations at Babylon*, Macmillan, London, 1914.
- Krupp, E.C., *Echoes of the Ancient Skies: the astronomy of lost civilizations*, Harper and Row, N.Y., 1983.
- Kühn, Herbert, *Auf den Spuren des Eiszeitmenschen*, F.A. Brockhaus, Wiesbaden, Germany, 1953.
- Kuhn, Thomas, *Structure of the Scientific Revolution*, University of Chicago Press, 1970.
- Landa, Diego de, *Relación de las Cosas de Yucatan*, ed. Alfred M. Tozzer, Papers of the Peabody Museum, Harvard Press, Cambridge, 1941.

- Lang, A., *Secret of the Totem*, London, 1905.
- Langdon, Stephen Herbert, *Semitic Mythology*, which is vol. V of Alexander's *Mythology of All Races*, Marshall Jones Co., Boston, 1931.
- Langs, Robert, *Interactions: the realm of transference and countertransference*, Jason Aronson Inc., N.Y., 1980.
- Las Casas, Bartolomé, de, *Los Indios de México y Nueva España*, Antología, ed. Edmundo O'Gorman, Editorial Porrúa, Mexico City, 1966.
- Leakey, Richard, *Making of Mankind*, Dutton, N.Y., 1981.
- Legge, James, (1895). "Li Sao Poem and Its Author," *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society of Great Britain and Ireland*, 77-91; 571-599; 847-864; London.
- (1899). *Sacred Books of China: the texts of Confucianism*, Part I *Sacred Books of the East*, vol. III, 2nd ed., Clarendon Press, Oxford.
- Leland, C. G., *Algonquin Legends of New England*, Houghton, Mifflin and Co., Boston, 1884.
- Lenin, V.I., *Materialism and Empirio-Criticism*, in *Collected Works*, vol.14, Progress Publishers, Moscow, 1977.
- Lenormant, François, *Contemporary Review*, Nov. 1879.
- Leroi-Gourhan, André, *Treasures of Pre-Historic Art*, Sarry N. Abrams, NY, 1968.
- Lewis, David, *From Maui to Cook: the discovery and settlement of the Pacific*, Doubleday, Sidney, 1977.
- Lewis, I. M., *Religion in Context: cults and charisma*, Cambridge Univ. Press, Cambridge, 1986.
- Lieberman, Philip, "Origins of some Aspects of Human Language and Cognition," in Mellars and Stringer (below), p. 391-414.
- Linares, Fernando Orozco, *Conquest of Mexico*, trans. Plaister, Panorama Editorial, S.A., Mexico, D.F., 1980.
- Lovejoy, Owen, "Evolution of Human Walking," *Scientific American*, November 1988, p. 118-125.
- Luce, John Victor, *Lost Atlantis: new light on an old legend*, McGraw-Hill, NY, 1969.
- Lysaght, P., *Banshee: The Irish supernatural death messenger*, Glendale Press, Dublin, 1986.
- Mabinogion*, trans. by Lady Chalotte E. Guest, Dover Publications, Mineola, N.Y., 1997.
- Maccoby, Hyam, *Sacred Executioner*, Thames and Hudson, NY, 1982.
- Mahābhārata*, ed. J.A.B. van Buitenen, vols. 1-3, University of Chicago Press, 1973.
- Marcus, Joyce, "First Dates: the Maya Rediscovered," in *Natural History*, p. 26-29, April, 1991.
- Marshall, Eliot, "Paleoanthropology Gets Physical," *Science*, vol. 24, Feb 16, 1990.
- Martin, Paul S., (1967). "Prehistoric Overkill," in *Pleistocene Extinctions: the search for a cause*, P.S. Martin and H.E. Wright Jr. eds., Yale Univ. Press, New Haven, p. 75-120.
- (1973). "Discovery of America," *Science* 179, p. 969-74.
- Massola, Aldo, *Aborigines of South-eastern Australia: as they were*, Wm. Heinemann Australia Pty Ltd, Melbourne, 1971.
- Mauss, Marcel, *Gift: the form and reason for exchange in archaic societies*, W. W. Norton republished the 1950 French ed., 1990.
- McCarthy, J.K., *Patrol into Yesterday: my New Guinea years*, F.W.

- Cheshire, Melbourne, 1967.
- McCutcheon, Mark, *Final Theory*, Universal Publishers, Boca Raton, 2004.
- McLuhan, Marshall, *Medium Is the Message*, Random House, NY, 1967.
- Meadows, D. H., D. L. Meadows, J. Randers and W. W. Behrens III, (commissioned by the Club of Rome), *Limits to Growth*, New American Lib, NY, 1972.
- Mee, Charles L. Jr., "Black Death," *How It Works: science supplement for 1991*, Franklin Watts, p. 254-62.
- Meggitt, M.J., (1972). "System and Subsystem: the tee exchange cycle among the Mae Enga," *Human Ecology*, 1:11-23.
- (1974). "Pigs Are Our Hearts," *Oceana*, 44:165-203.
- (1976). "A Duplicity of Demons: sexual and familial roles expressed in western Enga stories," in *Man and Woman in the New Guinea Highlands*, eds. P. Brown and G. Buchbinder, 63-65, Special Pub of the *Am. Anthro. Ass.*
- (1977). *Blood Is Their Argument: warfare among the Mae Enga tribesmen of the New Guinea highlands*, Mayfield Publishing Co, Palo Alto.
- Mellars, Paul and Stringer, Chris, (ed's.), *Human Revolution: behavioural and biological perspectives on the origins of modern humans*, Princeton University Press, Princeton, 1989.
- Mendieta, Gerónimo de, *Historia Eclesiástica Indiana*, Ed. Chavez Hayhoe, Mexico City, 1945.
- Menzies, Gavin, *1421: the Year China Discovered America*, Harper Perennial, 2004.
- Meyer, Karl E. and Newsweek Book Division eds., *Teotihuacán*, Newsweek Book Div., NY, 1973.
- Michell, John, *Traveler's Key to Sacred England*, Knopf, NY, 1988.
- Milner, *the Mound-Builders, Ancient Peoples of Eastern North America*, Thames and Hudson, London, 2004.
- Mitchell, F. [G.F.], *Irish Landscape*, London, 1976.
- Mitchell, G.F., and Sieveking, G. de G., "Flint Flake, Probably of Paleolithic Age, from Mell Townland, Near Drogheda, Co, Louth," *Journal of the Royal Society of Antiquaries of Ireland*, 102, 174-177, 1972,
- Mitchell S. and M. Rosen ed's., *Need for Interpretation*, Continuum International Publication Group, Athlone, 1998.
- Moerenhout, J.A., *Voyages aux Iles du Grand Ocean*, Paris, 1835, n.p.
- Morrison, Tony, *Pathways to the Gods: the mystery of the Andes lines*, Academy Chicago Publishers, Chicago, 1988.
- Moseley, Michael E., *Incas and Their Ancestors: the archaeology of Peru*, Thames and Hudson Ltd., London, 1992.
- Mosimann, James E., and Paul S. Martin, "Simulating Overkill by Paleoindians," *American Scientist* 63, p. 304-13.
- Munro, N. G., *Ainu Creed and Cult*, ed. B.Z. Seligman, Columbia Univ. Press, N.Y., 1963.
- Murphy, B., "A Handaxe from Dún Aenghus, Inishmore, Aran Islands, County Galway," *Proceedings of the Royal Irish Academy*, 77C, 257-259, 1977.
- Nash, D., "Reconstructing Poseidonius' Celtic ethnography," *Britannia*, vol. 7, 11-26, 1976.
- Need for Interpretation*, ed. S. Mitchell and Michael Rosen, Athlone Press, London, 1983.



- New American Standard Exhaustive Concordance of the Bible: Hebrew-Aramaic and Greek Dictionaries*, Robert L. Thomas, Thd., general ed., Holman, Nashville, Tennessee, 1981.
- New How It Works: encyclopedia of science and invention*, Stutton, Westport, Conn. 1987.
- Nicholson, Irene, *Mexican and Central American Mythology*, Paul Hamlyn, London, 1967.
- Null, Gary and Steven, *Poisons in Your Body*, Prentice Hall, NY, 1977.
- Nuytten, Phil and David Doubilet, "Money from the Sea," *National Geographic*, vol. 183, no. 1, January, 1993, page 109.
- O'Grady, Standish, *Silva Gadelica*, Williams & Norgate, London, 1892.
- O'Kelly, Michael, J., *Early Ireland*, Cambridge Press, Cambridge, 1989.
- Oliva, Père Arellou, *Histoire du Pérou*, French tr. from MS, H. Ternaux-Compans. Paris, 1857.
- Oliver, Douglas, *Ancient Tahitian Society*, University of Hawaii Press, Honolulu/Canberra, 1974.
- O'Rahilly, T.F., *Early Irish History and Myth*, Dublin Institute For Advanced Studies, 1946.
- Ornstein, Robert and Paul Ehrlich, *New World New Mind*, Simon and Schuster, New York, 1989.
- Orpheus: Metamorphoses of a Myth*, ed. John Warden, University of Toronto Press, 1982.
- Orwell, George, *1984 (Nineteen Eighty-Four)*, Secker and Warburg, London, 1949.
- Oxenstierna, Eric, *Norsemen*, Graphic Society Publishers, Ltd., Greenwich, Conn., 1965.
- Oxford Illustrated History of Ireland*, ed. R.F. Foster, Oxford University Press, N.Y., 1989.
- Parker, Derik and Julia, *New Compleat (sic) Astrologer*, Crescent Books, NY, 1990.
- Parrot, André, *Arts of Assyria*, trans. Gilbert and Emmons, Golden Press, N.Y., 1961.
- Peters, E. (1930). *Altsteinzeitliche Kulturstätte Petersfels*, Beno Filser Verlag, Augsburg.
- Peyer, Bernd, *Hyemeyohsts Storm's Seven Arrows: fiction and anthropology in the American novel*, Franz Steiner Verlag GMBH, Wiesbaden, 1979.
- Pfeiffer, J., "Current Research Casts New Light on Human Origins," *Smithsonian*, p. 94-95, June, 1980.
- Piddocke, Stuart, (1965). "Potlatch System of the Southern Kwakiutl: a new perspective," *Southwestern Journal of Anthropology*, 21: 244-64.
- Piggott, Juliet, *Japanese Mythology*, Peter Bedrick Books, N.Y., 1991.
- Piggott, Stuart, *Druids*, London, 1965.
- Plato, *Republic*, trans. Jowett, Prometheus Books, Buffalo, NY, 1986.
- Timaeus and Critias*, trans. Desmond Lee, Penguin Classics, NY, 1977.
- Plutarch, *Fall the Roman Republic*, trans. Rex Warner, Penguin Classics, NY, 1958.
- Popol Vuh: the definitive edition of the Mayan Book of the Dawn of Life and the Glories of Gods and Kings*, trans. and commentary by Dennis Tedlock, Simon and Schuster, N.Y., 1985.
- Posnansky, Arthur, *Tihuanacu, the Cradle of American Man*, J.J. Augustin, NY, 1945.
- Powell, T.G.E., *Celts*, London, 1958.
- Prideaux, Tom, *Cro-Magnon Man*, Time-Life Books, NY, 1973.

- Pukui, M. K. and S. H. E., *Hawaiian Dictionary*, U. of Hawaii Press, Honolulu, 1986.
- Rak, Yoel, "On the Differences Between Two Pelvises of Mousterian Context From the Qafzeh and Kebara Caves, Israel," *American Journal of Physical Anthropology*, 81:323-332, Mr., 1990.
- Reader, John, *Africa: A Biography of the Continent*, Alfred A. Knopf, NY, 1998.
- Reinach, S., (1905-12). *Cultes, Mythes et Religions*, 4 vols, Paris.
- Reinhard, John, "Peru's Ice Maidens: Unwrapping the secrets," *National Geographic*, 189:6:62-81, June, 1996.
- Rogerson, J. and P. Davies, *Old Testament World*, Prentice-Hall, Englewood Cliffs, NJ, 1989.
- Rohner, R and E Rohner, *Kwakiutl: Indians of British Columbia*, 1970.
- Rolleston, T.W., *Myths and Legends of the Celtic Race*, Dover Pubs, N.Y., 1990.
- Roop, Peter and Connie, *Stonehenge; great mysteries, opposing views*, Greenhaven Press Inc., San Diego, 1989.
- Rosman, Abraham and Paula Rubel, *Feasting with Mine Enemy: rank and exchange among Northwest coast societies*, Columbia U. Press, NY, 1971.
- Russell, Josiah Cox, *Late Ancient and Medieval Population Control*, American Philosophical Society, Philadelphia, 1985.
- Rutherford, Ward, *Druids and Their Heritage*, Gordon and Cremonesi, London and N.Y., 1978.
- Sahagún, Bernardino de, *Florentine Codex: general history of the things of New Spain*, 2 vols, trans. by Arthur J. O. Anderson and C. Dibble, School of American Research, Santa Fe, 1951-69.
- A History of Ancient Mexico*, trans. by Fanny R. Bandelier from the Spanish version of Carlos Maria de Bustamante, Fisk University Press, Nashville, 1932.
- Salcamayhua, Juan de Santa Cruz Pachacuti-Yamqui, (1620). *Relacion de antigüedades deste Reyno del Perú*, ed. Jiménez de la Espada, Madrid, 1879. trans. C. Markham in his, *Account of the antiquities of Peru*, in *Rites and Laws of the Yncas* (HS). London, 1873.
- Sanders, Tao Tao Lu, *Dragons Gods and Spirits from Chinese Mythology*, ill. Johnny Pau, Schocken Books, NY, 1980.
- Sarich, V.M. and A.C. Wilson, "Rates of Albumen Evolution in Primates," *Proceedings, National Academy of Sciences*, vol. 58, p. 142-48.
- Sarmiento de Gamboa, Pedro, *History of the Incas* (HS), trans. of segunda parte de la *Historia General Llamada Yndica* (MS in the library of the University of Göttingen, the text of which was published by R. Rietschmann, *Geschichte des Inkareiches von Pedro Sarmiento de Gamboa*, Berlin, 1906) by C. Markham, Cambridge, 1907.
- Schafer, Joseph, "Place and Date of Jeremiah Curtin's Birth," in *Wisconsin Magazine of History*, XXII, p. 344, 1939.
- Schiffman, Lawrence H., "Has the Exodus Been Disproven?" (Professor of Hebrew and Judaic studies at New York University) <http://www.dovidgottlieb.com/comments/Exodus.htm>.
- Schneider, Laurence A., *Madman of Ch'u: the Chinese Myth of Loyalty and Dissent*, U. of California Press, Berkeley, 1980.
- Schobinger, Juan and Thomas Besom, "Sacrifices of the High Andes." Besom's article, "Another Mummy," is embedded within

- Schobinger, *Natural History*, p. 633-69, April, 1991.
- Scott, James, *Paleontology*, Kahn and Averill, London, 1973.
- Sellin, Ernst, *Mose und seine Bedeutung für die israelitisch-jüdische Religionsgeschichte*, n.p., 1922.
- Sen Gupta, Sankar, and K. Krishnaswamy, "Fire Festival of India: a new search of south and north Indian fire rites, rituals and festivals with special reference to Tamilnadu and Bengal," *Indian Pubs, Folklore Series*, Calcutta, 1984.
- Sertima, Ivan van, *They Came before Columbus*, Random House, NY, 1976.
- Seven Famous Greek Plays*, Oates, Whitney J. and Eugene O'Neill Jr. for editing and intro., Vintage Books, NY, 1950.
- Shackley, Myra, *Still Living?: Yeti, Sasquatch...* Thames and Hudson, NY, 1983.
- Shipman, Pat, "An Evolutionary Tale: what does it take to be a meat-eater?" in *Discover*, 1988.
- Shreeve, James, "Deepening Conundrum of Neanderthal Man," *Smithsonian*, Dec, 1991. (1994). "Erectus Rising," *Discover*, September, 1994.
- Simpson, A.W.B., *Cannibalism and the Common Law: Story of the Tragic Last Voyage of the Mignoeette and the Strange Legal Proceedings*, University of Chicago Press, 1984.
- Smith, W. Robertson, *Lectures on the Religion of the Semites*, new [2<sup>nd</sup>] ed, London, 1894.
- Sołtysiak, Arkadiusz, *Physical Anthro. and the "Sumerian Problem,"* Studies in Hist. Anthro. vol. 4:2004[2006], p. 145-158, Dept of Hist Anthro and Inst of Arch., Univ. of Warsaw.
- Spate, O.H.K., *Australia, New Zealand and the Pacific*, Oxford U. Press, London, 1969.
- Speck, Frank G., "Functions of Wampum Among the Eastern Algonkian," *Memoirs of the American Anthropological Association*, 6:1, 1919.
- Speiser, E.A., in James B. Pritchard, *Ancient Near East*, Princeton U. Press, 1958. (1935). *Excavations at Tepe Gawra*, vol. I, Published for the American Schools of Oriental Research, University of Pennsylvania Press, Philadelphia.
- Spencer, Baldwin and F.J. Gillen, *Native Tribes of Central Australia*, Macmillan, London, 1899.
- Squier, Ephraim and Edwin Davis, *Ancient Monuments of the Mississippi Valley*, Smithsonian Institution, 1848.
- Stevens, William K., "Evolution of Humans May at Last Be Faltering," N.Y. Times Science Times, March 14, 1995, page C1.
- Stocker, Terry, "Why Were the Aztecs and Mayas Stuck in the Stone Age? Obsidian, a Kind of Volcanic Glass, May Be the Answer," *Earth Science*, 32, summer 1987.
- Stringer, C.B. and P. Andrews, "Genetic and Fossil Evidence for the Origin of Modern Humans," *Scientific American*, Mr 11, 1988.
- Stuart, Anthony J., "What Happened to the Giant Mammals?" *How It Works: science supplement for 1988*, Franklin Watt, Westport, Conn., 1986.
- Sullivan, Walter, "New Theory on Ice Sheet Catastrophe Is the Direst One Yet," Science Times of the New York Times, May 2, 1995.
- Suttles, Wayne, (1960). "Affinal Ties, Subsistence and Prestige among the Coast Salish," *American Anthropologist*, 62:296-305.
- Tainter, Joseph A., *Collapse of Complex Societies*, Cambridge U. Press, 1988.
- Templeton, Alan R., "Human Origins and Analysis of Mitochondrial DNA Sequences," *Science*, vol. 255, Feb. 7, 1991, p. 737.
- Tierney, J.J., "Celtic Ethnography of Posidonius," *Proceedings of the Royal Irish Academy*, vol. 60c, 189-275, 1960.
- Tierney, Patrick, *Highest Altar: the story of human sacrifice*, Viking, NY, 1989.

- Tigay, Jeffrey H., *Evolution of the Gilgamesh Epic*, U. of Pa. Press, Phila., 1982.
- Torquemada, Juan de, *Monarquía indiana*, 3 vols., Editorial Leyenda, Mexico City, 1969.
- Townsend, Richard F., *Aztecs*, Thames and Hudson, London, 1992.
- Trefil, James, "Seeing Atoms," in the 1992 science supplement to *New How it Works: Science Encyclopedia*, Franklin Watts, Westport, Conn., 1991.
- Trinkaus, Erik, *Shanidar Neanderthals*, Academic Press, 1983.
- (1984). "Neanderthal Pubic Morphology..." in *Current Anthro*, 25:509-14.
- Trompf, G. W., *Melanesian Religion*, Cambridge U. Press, 1991.
- Tyrrell, William Blake, *Amazons: a study in Athenian mythmaking*, Johns Hopkins University Press, Baltimore, 1984.
- Ulansey, David, *Origins of the Mithraic Mysteries*, Oxford University Press, N.Y., 1989.
- Underhill, Ruth M., *Red Man's Religion: beliefs and practices of the Indians north of Mexico*, Univ. of Chicago Press, Chicago, 1965.
- Updike, John, *Couples*, Fawcett Crest, N.Y., 1968.
- Upton, John & Climate Central, "Ancient Sea Rise Tale Told Accurately for 10,000 Years," Retrieved from <http://www.scientificamerican.com/article/ancient-sea-rise-tale-told-accurately-for-10-000-years/> on 4/4/2015
- Urton, Gary, *At the Crossroads of the Earth and the Sky*, University of Texas Press, Austin, 1981.
- Vaillant, George C., *Aztecs of Mexico: origin, rise and fall of the Aztec nation*, revised by Suzannah B. Vaillant, Harmondsworth, Middlesex, England, Penguin Books, 1966.
- Vayda, Andrew P., "A Re-Examination of Northwest Coast Economic Systems," Transactions of the NY Academy of Sciences, Series 2, Vol 23, No. 7, p. 618-24, 1961.
- Vidal, Gore, *Creation*, Random House, N.Y., 1981.
- Von Hayek, Friedrich H., *Collected Works of ...*, Chicago University Press, Chicago, 1989.
- Von Mises, Ludwig, *Human Action: A Treatise on Economics*, Yale U. Press, 1949.
- Vonnegut, Kurt, Private conversations with Kurt, my idol, fellow Hoosier and neighbor (in NYC) for many years.
- Wade, Nicholas, "Of Smart Mice..." Science Times of NY Times, Sept. 7, 1999.
- Wakefield, Jay S, "The Manufacturing of Copper Oxides...", <https://ancientamerica.com/poverty-point-the-manufacturing-of-copper-oxides-for-the-atlantic-copper-trade/#more-6305>.
- Walam Olum* (the Bible of the Delaware Native Americans),
- (a) trans. by Constantine Rafinesque in *American Nations*, 1836.
- (b) compilation of Indiana Historical Society of Indianapolis, Lakeside Press, Chicago, Ill., 1954.
- (c) trans. by Joe Napora, Landlocked Press, Madison, Wis., 1983.
- (d) trans. by Daniel Brinton, *Lenâpé and their Legends: With the Complete Text and Symbols of the Walam Olum*, 1885.
- Walcher, G., "Über die Entstehung von Brachy- und Dolichocephalie durch willkürliche Beeinflussung des kindlichen Schädels," *Zentralbl. f. Gynakol.*, vol. 29 (1905), p.193-6.
- Walker, Jim, "Did a Historical Jesus Exist?" <http://www.nobeliefs.com/exist.htm>.
- Wallace, Paul A., *Indians in Pennsylvania*, Pa. Historical and Museum

- Comm., Harrisburg, 1968
- Waters, Tom, "Traveling Man," *Discover*, June, 1990.
- Watson, Bruce, "Salem's Darkest Hour: did the Devil make them do it," *Smithsonian*, April, '92.
- Weigand, Phil C. (1978). "Prehistory of the State of Zacatecas: an interpretation," *Anthropology, State University of New York*, Stony Brook, Part I: 2(1), 67-87; Part II: 2(2), 22-41.
- Wells, H.G. (1968). *Time Machine*, Bantam Books, NY, 1979.
- Wells, Spencer, *Journey of Man; a genetic Odyssey*, Princeton U. Press, 2002.
- White, R., "Early Aurignacian Bead and Pendant Manufacture," p. 366-90, of Mellars and Stringer, cited herein.
- Whitehead, Alfred North, (1929). *Process Reality: an essay in cosmology*, Free Press, NY, 1978.
- Williamson, R.W., *Social and Political Systems of Central Polynesia*, Cambridge University Press, Cambridge, 1924.
- Wilford, John Noble, (1993a). "Mysterious Mexican Culture Yields its Secrets: scientists explore the ancient enigma of Teotihuacan," *Science Times of the New York Times*, June 29.
- (1993b). "Collapse of Earliest Known Empire is Linked to Long, Harsh Drought," *NY Times Science Times*, August 24.
- (1994a). "Fog Thickens on Climate and Origin of Humans," *NY Times Science Times*, May 17.
- (1994b). "Toolmaker's Thumb Not Unique to Humans," *NY Times Science Times*, September 13.
- (1995a). "Human Ancestors' Earliest Tools Found in Africa," *NY Times Science Times*, April 25.
- (1995b). "Evidence Shows 2 Centuries of Drought Linked to Maya Decline," *N.Y. Times*, January 1.
- (1996). "Geologists Link Black Sea Deluge to Farming's Rise," *N.Y. Science Times* December 17.
- (1997). "Ancient Graves of Armed Women Hint at Amazons," *NY Times Science Times*, February 25.
- Wilkens, Iman, *Where Troy Once Stood*, St. Martin's Press, N.Y., 1990.
- Wilson, Allan C., Rebecca L. Cann and Mark Stoneking, "Recent African Genesis of Humans," *Scientific American*, April, 1992.
- Wilson, Edward O., *Sociobiology: the new synthesis*, Harvard U. Press, Cambridge, 1975.
- Wilson, Samuel, "Columbus My Enemy," in *Natural History*, Dec, 1990.
- (1992). "Columbus's Competition," in *Natural History*, Jan. 92.
- Winstone, H.V.F., *Uncovering the Ancient World*, Constable and Co Ltd, London, 1985.
- Wong, K., "Digging Deeper: Q&A with Peter Brown," *Scientific American*, Oct 27, 2004.
- Wood, Carl P., *Sporting Dogs*, DBI Books, Northbrook, Illinois, 1985.
- Wood, Tim, *Aztecs*, Viking, N.Y., 1992.
- Woolley, Sir Charles Leonard, *Art of the Middle East*, Crown Pub Inc, NY, 1961.
- (1935). *Development of Sumerian Art*, Faber and Faber Ltd., London
- (1954). *Excavations at Ur*, Ernest Benn Ltd., London.
- Woolridge, Adrian, *Measuring the Mind*, Cambridge U. Press, Cambridge, 1994.
- Wunderlich, Hans Georg, *Secret of Crete*, Macmillan, N.Y., 1974.
- Xenophon, *Hellenica* and *Anabasis of Cyrus*, in *Greek Historians*, herein.
- Zimmer, Heinrich, *Art of Indian Asia*, edited and completed by Joseph Campbell, Pantheon Books, Bollingen Series XXXIX, NY, V, I, 1955.



## CONNECT WITH DAVE

My connections are limited but very reliable:

Favorite my Smashwords author page:

<https://www.smashwords.com/profile/view/DavidHuttner>

Connect on LinkedIn:

<https://www.linkedin.com/in/DavidHuttner?trk=hp-identity-photo>

Visit the Peace Love and Progress Party where you can download FREE copies of my books and master social science. (Then build a party cell):

<http://www.PeaceLoveAndProgressParty.org/>

Email me: [drhuttner@gmail.com](mailto:drhuttner@gmail.com)

